



# LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 01

*Xia Fei Shuang Jia*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

# Synopsis

---

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Shiroyukineko @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1 – Into Another Dimension

---

Yue Yang saw a person flying in the sky, stretched his neck upwards and shouted, “Dear, come out quickly and see God!”. The shadow carried a sword and tumbled as he flew, looking like he was going to fall. Yue Yang shouted again, “Bro, don’t fly too fast, your pants are dropping off...”

The person flying in the sky fell on the ground head first...

Yue Yang, a normal high school student, didn’t even bother to ask if the person who fell down was okay, but instead picked up the sword that shone with a golden light. He yelled, “Master, this flying sword is a treasure, you’ll break it if you fling it randomly like that. What will happen if it accidentally hits small kids? Even if it didn’t, it’s also not good if it hit the nearby flowers and grasses. How about letting your disciple take care of this sword? And the Universal Pouch? Such a powerful and intelligent immortal like master shouldn’t be carrying an old pouch like this on your waist...This disciple will help you to safeguard them...”

The old Daoist priest that fell to the ground almost coughed blood. Having lived for thousands of years, it was the first time he met such a shameless person who had randomly acknowledged him as his master.

“Master, your disciple has reached a marriageable age, but still had no match yet. Do you have a granddaughter by any chance? I won’t care much about her looks or age, I’m not a picky person...” Yue Yang chuckled lewdly. Finally, the enraged priest couldn’t take it any more and kicked him on the butt, shouting: “Get lost!

Get lost you brat!”

Just like that, Yue Yang was kicked into another dimension...

---

“Ah! His eyes moved, he’s awake! Xiao San-gege is finally awake!” Yue Yang eyes had not fully opened when he heard a voice as clear as bells ringing at his ears.

“Shuang Er, don’t be rude towards your brother...” Then, he heard a warm and gentle, motherly voice that carried an air of motherly love with them.



As Yue Yang opened his eyes, the old Daoist Priest had gone away, instead, an adorable and lively girl sprang into his view. She was a small girl wearing a bluish-green chinese gown, her pale white arms stuck out of the sleeves. Her hair was braided with red ribbons on two sides and flowed down to her waist. Her pearl white wrist was adorned with a silver bracelet that had a small bell.

The small girl mischievously reached out her hands to pinch Yue Yang’s nose.



As her soft, supple arms moved, the bells on her bracelet jingled, sounding much like her crisp and clear giggles.

Eh?

Yue Yang felt strange. Is this girl that old Daoist Priest's granddaughter? Such a high quality lolita! As he was preparing to make a move on the girl, suddenly a pair of arms reached out from behind and held onto the mischievous girl, swatting her small hands lightly. Thinking that that punishment for being mischievous was enough, the girl was then drowned in the arms embrace. The small girl was not even afraid and thought that it was fun; giggling away in her mother's embrace. Grimacing at the cute scene in front of him, Yue Yang thought about the strangeness of it all. His gaze swept across the room and fixed upon the woman behind the small girl, and his heart unconsciously let out a small sigh.

Oh my, what a beautiful wife...

A thirty year old young woman was sitting in front of Yue Yang.

She had delicate features, her complexion white as the moon and her eyes clear as spring. Her small mouth bloomed into a smile that was as gentle and refined as flowing water.

Her lustrous black hair was pulled up high into a bun, barely decorated with a single purple phoenix hairpin, simple and elegant but yet still stylish. Looking at her as a whole, her expression

seemed to appear even more beautiful and full of wisdom. Adorned in a sky blue gown and a jade bracelet on her wrist that was hugging the small girl, she was a sight for Yue Yang to see!

If I could marry such a woman, I wouldn't want anything else.



The beautiful woman saw that Yue Yang was awake and her smile disappeared. Her jade-white complexion was filled with a grieved and guilty expression, “San-er, don't be so rash again next time. Who gives you the notion to drown yourself in the river when things get hard? Luckily we managed to save you in time, otherwise, how would I... how would I face my older sister? When big sis entrusted you to me, Si Niang, I had already thought of you as my own child. San-er, so many years past, I could never have the heart to punish you. This time you made a big mistake and if I don't make you remember the lesson today, I would be letting my big sister down. Next month, wait until your Fourth Uncle comes back, ask him for a beating as your punishment.”

The small girl twitched her little nose and followed along, “Ask him for a beating, “papapa”, let him beat you until your butt is



swollen!”

Ah?

Yue Yang was bewildered. When did he ever try to drown himself?

Where is this? Where did the old Daoist Priest kicked him to, is she mistaking him as someone else?

A strange thought flew past his mind: Could it be that someone that looked like me and I had drowned in the river together, and this beautiful woman saved me instead of the other guy, letting that unlucky chap drown and became fish food?

His forehead dripped with sweat thinking of that.

This misunderstanding is too big!

The guy who was transported to another dimension was scared that he would say the wrong thing if he opened his mouth. He did not dare to explain the misunderstanding, let alone ask where that place was.

If the other party realised that he was not her precious San-er, she could throw him back into the river. That's not good.

The beautiful woman looked at the nervous Yue Yang, whose

forehead was filled with beads of sweat and face pale as sheets. She thought that he was feeling guilty and looked very cute, so her voice became much gentler, “San-er, it’s okay if you understand your mistakes. Young people shouldn’t be afraid making mistakes, but it’s a problem if they don’t learn from their mistakes. Si Niang has watched you grow up and knows that you know what’s good and bad for you. It’s just that the matter of the daughter of the Xue Family rejecting your engagement had hit you too hard and made you do something rash. San-er, even though Xue Family’s daughter is good, if her heart is not set on you, let the engagement go. If you can’t share your troubles and happiness with your wife and support each other in troubled times, then you shouldn’t even get married. Look at our Yue Family, we are one of the big four families. There are so many girls in this world, did you think you won’t be able to find one?”

“Yes...” Yue Yang decided to feign himself as the fool who drowned himself on the river. After the crisis was over, he would wait for an opportunity to explain.

“San-er, it’s good if you understand. Si Niang is relieved now.” The beautiful woman had been prepared to persuade him for a long time, but the boy had unexpectedly came around after jumping once into the river. She thought that miracles did exist.

The beautiful woman then told Yue Yang to rest well.

She released the small girl and stood up, preparing to leave the room.

Yue Yang’s heaved a sigh of relief in his heart, luckily he had

managed to hide the truth. But now he had to find a way to slip away, just in case that chap who drowned himself didn't die and came back. Everything would then be exposed.

The beautiful woman held the small girl's hands and walked towards the door, then suddenly turned back and asked, "San-er, will you promise me that you wouldn't try anything rash? You may look weak but you have a strong mind inside. Even though you might look agreeable on the outside, you have a stubborn heart, that I know. Please don't wait until I'm gone and do foolish things behind my back again... You really won't do anything rash again, right?"

"No, I won't," Yue Yang shook his head like a rattle-drum.

Why would he kill himself? He still need to find that old Daoist Priest to seek revenge!

The beautiful woman looked at Yue Yang's face that was full of sincerity and her heart felt much better, "Si Niang trusts you, San-er. Don't ever try to kill yourself again. Your parents are not here anymore. Your Fourth Uncle had no sons and I'm infertile, Bing-er is a girl and Shuang-er is still so young. Your father and fourth uncle didn't have anyone else to continue our family's line, so it's all up to you now. Remember this, okay?"

Yue Yang sweated profusely, thinking: no, you can't leave it up to me, I'm not your San-er. Your San-er had already become fish food...I'm afraid that this matter of continuing bloodline won't ever be fulfilled...

But of course, he couldn't say it out loud. He simply nodded and muttered a small "yes".

The small girl was getting bored, so she let go of the woman's hands and jumped out of the door, scampering away in an instant.

The beautiful woman called out at the small girl but she didn't listen, so she had to chase after the small girl. Even as she walked out the door, she turned back again and said worriedly, "San-er, don't be too depressed. Even your stupid uncle only managed to fulfil his first contract 1 month before his twentieth birthday. Don't you still have 3 months left? You had worked hard for so many years. It's still not the end yet, do you want to give up now? Nobody from our Yue Family had ever failed to make a contract with a summoning grimoire. Trust me, you won't be an exception...I think, maybe it was because your parents sealed your grimoire when you were young. They didn't want you to successfully make a grimoire contract at such a young age and then become arrogant. Continue to train hard, okay? Otherwise, with the talent you displayed since you were young, how could you not make a contract? Believe in me, you have your parents' blood flowing through your veins, you'll definitely be a talented and outstanding person in the future. You will be successful, so you must not be discouraged and try even harder...!"

Grimoire contract?

What the heck is a summoning grimoire?

Maybe the bloodline of that drowning guy was good, but he was not him, he was just a normal guy.

If he had any outstanding aspects, it could only be his good skills in playing games, especially the games from overseas.

Yue Yang didn't know how to make a contract with any grimoire, but after listening to the beautiful woman, he could guess that the guy who looked like himself decided to commit suicide because he had given up all hope.

That guy didn't have any parents and couldn't succeed in making a contract with whatever grimoire for so long, then her fiancée refused their engagement. He must have thought life was too hard to live on and drowned himself.

The sadder thing was that although he tried to drown himself, the one who was saved was actually another person who looked like him...In the end he himself was brought back here, and that pitiful 18 something guy had probably bought a free, express ticket to the bottom of the ocean.

The only thing that Yue Yang didn't understand was how could he himself be in the river?

Is it because that old Daoist Priest kicked me into the river?

Why would he kick him into the river? Or did that old geezer wanted him to be reborn as this pitiful guy?

Yue Yang thought until beads of sweat flowed down his forehead.

This joke went too far...

“San-er, you should rest first. These are my thoughts... Even if you can’t make a contract with the grimoire, you are still my precious San-er. I think of you as my own son, so even if we had to sell all of our wealth, we’ll think of something for your future. Your Fourth Uncle may not say it out loud, but he also thought the same way. San-er, just concentrate on recovering. Maybe tomorrow you could suddenly make a contract successfully.” The beautiful woman then repeatedly asked him to rest before turning her body and walked out of the room.

Yue Yang was moved by her words.

Although her concern wasn’t directed towards him, she was really kind towards that pitiful guy. He thought it was foolish of him to commit suicide.

Such a good stepmother, how could you find another in the world?

Instead of cherishing what he had, that pitiful boy drowned himself for his failed engagement. Serves him right! Yue Yang’s heart was not thinking objectively anymore. He had wanted a person who loved him that much, but he couldn’t even have one.



He looked at the beautiful woman exiting the room and heaved a sigh of relief. If only he was that San-er and had such a nice stepmother. Unfortunately, he wasn't that pitiful guy.

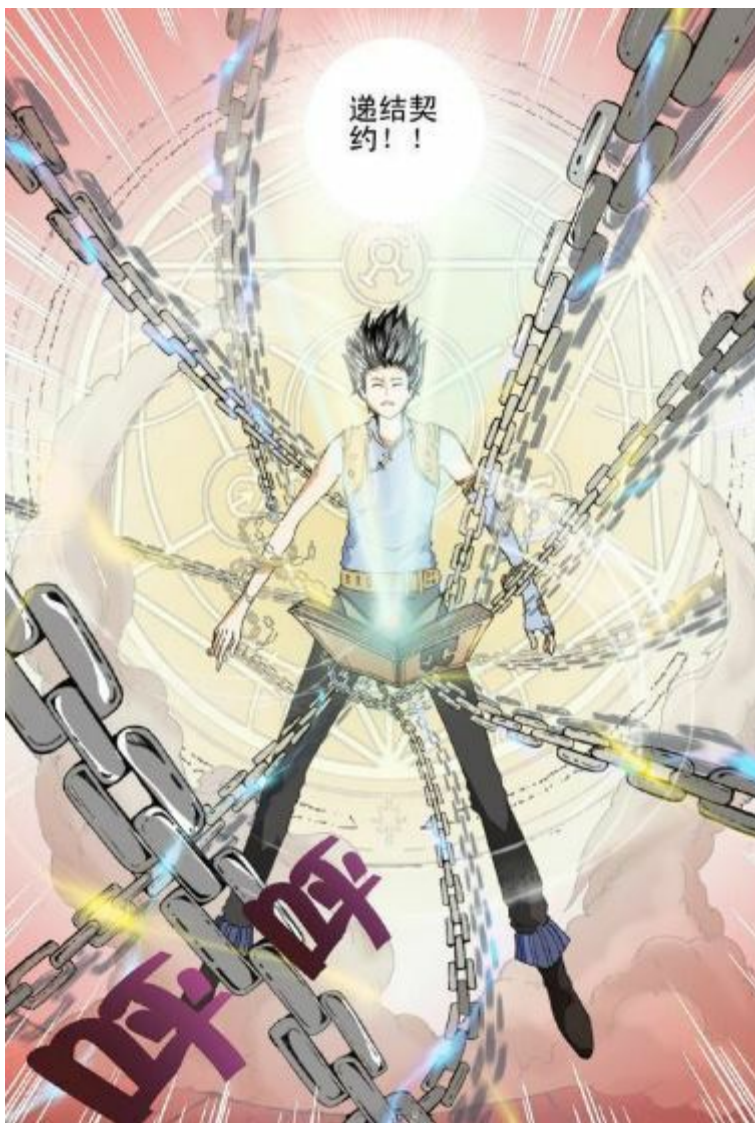
Lying back in his bed, his gaze fell unto a huge book with a gold cover on the table.

It looked a little bronze, its colour faded and old. It was strangely thick, two or three times thicker than a normal book. The cover was even filled with strange, ancient characters.

Yue Yang felt a strange attraction towards that book.

There seemed to be an unknown being who slowly called him forth. That kind of feeling felt just like the anticipation of installing a game, waiting impatiently to scroll the mouse and clicking on the start button...Yue Yang subconsciously reached his hands out, wanting to touch that strange looking golden book. Unbeknownst to him, the moment his fingers touched the book, that book suddenly shone with a golden light.

The whole room was filled with a golden light.



Under such a bright light, Yue Yang used his other hand and covered his eyes. He almost couldn't open his eyes due to the strong light.

Suddenly, an endless flow of knowledge surged into his brain violently. Furthermore, it was so strong that it couldn't be stopped. Yue Yang didn't even have the time to react as his brain was stuffed with strange knowledge to the brim. On the other side, the book was still emitting a strong light, like there were still even more knowledge to be transmitted.

His mind seemed to understand countless of things, but also not comprehending them. He couldn't grab the main knowledge and was unable to understand clearly the knowledge he had learned.

Now, Yue Yang was in a situation where he seemed to understand, but not to understand, seemed clear but not too clear, such a confused state.

Inside his body, there seemed to be a change. It seemed like something had awoken.

It felt like a mysterious power that had slept inside him for all this while was awakened. The revelation seemed like heralds of angels singing at heaven's gate, causing Yue Yang to tremble all over.

Although his ears couldn't hear it, his heart heard the "voice" very clearly. Indeed, a mysterious power was calling to himself from within his body. But he didn't understand what it meant and only heard the mysterious power call. It was such a unique experience, the voice sounding even more heavenly than an angel's song, immersing him deep within. That kind of beautiful voice can move a person's soul, like a mother's lullaby you heard when you are sick as a kid. Thousands of words would not be able to describe that feeling...At the same time, in the midst of his consciousness, Yue Yang saw a flying sword emitting a strange light. It was mysteriously spinning on its own, the strangeness of it all can't be described in words.

The flying sword was then held in the hands of a fairy. It looked like she was singing and dancing gracefully, freely moving across the empty space.

What, what the heck is all this?

The golden light engulfing Yue Yang slowly disappeared, returning back into the book, barely shining in between of Yue Yang's fingers and the book itself.

The silence returned as the mysterious call disappeared. That flying sword also started to disappear without trace. Yue Yang snapped back into reality and was surprised to find that his fingers were shinning with light.

Yue Yang froze and wriggled his fingers. The golden light slowly disappeared.

However, that bronze coloured book that looked really heavy unexpectedly started to float in the air and stopped in front him. The feeling it gave Yue Yang right now was not that of a heavy golden book, but something that was a part of him, like his own arm or legs.

At the door, the beautiful woman stood awestruck, her face full of tears.

She leaned on the sides of the door, using the door to support her trembling, emotional body. Then, her body seemed to lose strength as she fell onto the ground.

She had watched everything, her face showing an extremely surprised but happy expression. Her tears flowed like a stream of

water, dripping unto her clothes.

“San-er, you, did you succeed in making a contract with a summoning grimoire? Is, is this real? Am I dreaming? Heavens above, this is all thanks to big sis’ blessings. Big sis, did you see that San-er had succeeded in making a contract? I’ve said it before, San-er is not a good-for-nothing...Thank heavens that he’s not, I thank you from the bottom of my heart on behalf of our San-er....” The beautiful woman kneeled on the ground, her emotions flowing uncontrolled. She kowtow-ed sincerely, thanking the heavens for their blessings.

Her white forehead had become red due to her kowtows, and the floor wet with her tears.

But the beautiful woman didn’t mind the pain and continued to kowtow and give thanks.

Yue Yang quickly came over and tried to help Si Niang up. Although he was a fake, he was still moved by the beautiful woman.

At the door, the small girl had returned too, her hands holding a big red pin-wheel. She tilted her head and asked, “Mom, why are you crying on the floor?”

## Chapter 2 – Twin Star Inherent Skill

---

The small girl's question snapped the beautiful woman back to reality.

She quickly wiped her tears that drenched her whole face. As Yue Yang watch her face which was a total mess, he felt warm tears pooling in his eyes. He took in a deep breath and calmed his emotions, then tried to help her wipe her tears.

The beautiful woman didn't let him help her and moved his hands away. She then hurriedly ran out of the room.

Yue Yang stared at her disappearing back for a long while.

“Xiao San-gege, why was mom crying on the floor?” the small girl asked curiously, but she didn't relay pursue the matter further. Instead, she raised the big pin-wheel in her hands and said, “Look, isn't my pin-wheel pretty? I bought it on a street market. There are even sweet rock candies selling on the streets, but mom didn't buy it for me.... Xiao San-gege, I want to learn how to ride a horse. My pin-wheel would only turn faster if I was riding the horse fast enough...”

Yue Yang sweated, why is this girl so mischievous?

Riding horse?

Could it be that pitiful guy who drowned himself always took her



for a ride? He shouldn't let this small girl found out that he was not the same person.

But he also couldn't let her ride a horse, what would happen if she fell?

But he didn't have to reject the small girl's request, he just need to play with her. Yue Yang picked the girl up, raised her up high in the air and bring her down again, making her giggle with happiness. After a few times of that, the small girl had already forgotten her request and leapt happily into his arms.

Ha, it was a small task for Yue Yang to subdue the little girl.

Outside the door, the beautiful woman who had washed her tears away had returned. Yue Yang quickly put the small girl down.

But the small girl didn't let go of her small hands, still wanting to be carried in his arms. The beautiful woman then pulled the small girl away from Yue Yang and said happily, "San-er, quick, let Si Niang see your [Inherent Skill] and [Guardian Spirit]...San-er, I've said it before that you would definitely succeed...Ah, this is so good, after working hard for so many years, you have finally succeeded. San-er, you have finally become an outstanding person! Quick, open the summoning grimoire and let Si Niang look, I'm so excited to see it!"

[Inherent Skill]?

[Guardian Spirit Beast]?

Yue Yang's head was filled with questions once again, just like the time when he was stuffed with knowledge by the mysterious light.

Earlier, he had understood one thing. He had been transported to another dimension. This is not earth, this is another world.

In this world, the Soaring Dragon Continent, there were a group of people that were called the Rankers. Rankers were strong powerhouses that had succeeded in contracting grimoires. Many of these talented Rankers had come from the renowned clans and households that had held their reputations for thousands of years. They are the Three Royal Households, Four Major Houses and Four Great Sects. Aside from the Three Royal Households that would cultivate the next emperor, there were Four Major Houses of Feng (wind), Xue (snow), Yue (earth) and Yan (fire). There were also the mysterious Four Great Sects. The Four Great Sects gathered many strong Rankers to pursue the heaven's way, and didn't usually concern themselves with the things in the mortal world. But they would send their disciples out from the mountains once every three years, as their final training.

Amongst the many Rankers, besides the people from the Royal Households and the Four Major Houses, there are only a handful of talents who managed to make a contract with a very special kind of treasure, the summoning grimoire.

The superiority of a summoning grimoire depended on its user. Everyone would have the chance to reach the pinnacle of all

Rankers.

No, actually there was very little chance to reach the pinnacle of Rankers.

Yue Yang found out that in this Soaring Dragon Continent, it's almost purely a summoner's world.

There were no magic nor inner energy, only summons.

Summoning skills in this continent could be anything. There were element summoning skills that were like magic, and also strengthening type summoning skills that would increase your strength like inner energy. There were also beast spirit summoning type. Anyway, summoning skills in this world, were as normal as students going to school. There were even schools specializing in teaching summoning.

Although almost everyone can summon, not everyone can possess a summoning grimoire. On the contrary, a grimoire user could be hardly seen in this world.

Taking an analogy, a summoning grimoire user is like the one in a hundred million students who could enter Harvard or Cambridge.

Everyone wanted to have a grimoire, but it was the privilege of a handful of talents.

When making a contract with a summoning grimoire, every grimoire user would try to awaken an [Inherent Skill] sleeping within their bodies. They would also obtain a guardian spirit most suitable for the user.

“Ahh, okay, but I’m not really sure what’s my Inherent Skill.”

Yue Yang was also curious with the knowledge in his mind. What Inherent Skill could the summoning grimoire actually awakened?

He mouthed a prayer and hoped it wasn’t instant noodles, AV, games, lacy lingeries or, see-through censored related stuff, otherwise he’d be finished. Please don’t let it be a NEET-related Inherent Skill, otherwise he’ll be dead if the beautiful woman saw it.

When Yue Yang turned his summoning grimoire, he realised that the first page was his own portrait.

Hmm, he looked rather handsome.

Below it, his status was written: Level 1-Beginner [Apprentice].

Under the “Apprentice” words, there was a simple line of Rank Description.

Apprentice: You are the weakest existence in this world, but with hard work, as a grimoire user, you still have hope to become stronger.

Yue Yang cringed the moment he saw that. The weakest existence are ants, okay? No matter how weak he was, he was still stronger than ants. Such a belittling description made him feel really bad. Skipping over the rank description, the next half page described his Inherent Skill. According to the knowledge passed to Yue Yang by the grimoire, everyone had their own unique Inherent Skill. Only a handful of people would have an identical Inherent Skill, but almost everyone's Inherent Skills were totally different.

Of course, this might be because there were not many people who had a summoning grimoire.

The moment he saw his Inherent Skill, Yue Yang was flabbergasted.

His Inherent Skill was not instant noodle, AV movie or games, but it was an Inherent Skill that caused Yue Yang to sweat in nervousness.

To be precise, it was an unusual, very rarely seen, very mysterious, very jealousy-inducing Twin Star Inherent Skill. Originally, everyone's Inherent Skill will appear as a picture below the summoner's portrait, but Yue Yang's Inherent Skill picture was two pictures joined into one.



On the left was a mysterious figure, that could be vaguely recognized as Yue Yang's figure.

On the right was a shadow of a person's side view, hidden in darkness. If there wasn't another figure to compare, it would be difficult to recognize that it was Yue Yang. The features on his face weren't clear, other than a wolf-like eyes, there were no other recognizable face characteristics. The whole picture was dark and blurry, other than the eyes that were shining like a star, there existed no other light.

The thing that drove Yue Yang mad was the Twin Star Inherent Skill's Description.

[Camouflage]: You are as cunning as a fox and as treacherous as a poisonous snake. You are like an usurping chameleon who live under a camouflage. You are a facade, nobody can see through your heart. Your Inherent Skill will increase with your level. Your Inherent Skill current level is 1.

[Divine Vision]: You have eagle-like eyes and sage-like reactions. You are like a death god that sees through living things' soul. You have an all-seeing vision that sees through the world, so you'll be



immune to illusionary or fake debuffs. Your Inherent Skill will increase with your level. Your Inherent Skill current level is 1.

“Woah...” Yue Yang almost fell to the ground. Was he that cunning and treacherous?

Although he liked to watch censored adult videos and would try to use his eyes to see through the pixels, this skill was something that all perverts can do.

When it comes to vision, Yue Yang didn't think that he was actually that good, because usually when actresses wore different clothes and put on their makeup, other than Sora Aoi, Akiho Yoshizawa and Yuma Asami, he wouldn't recognize anyone else.

Was this even counted as [Divine Vision]?

As for [Camouflage] , it was even harder to explain. He don't even know how to apply make-up and so on, and at the most, he would just lie a little.

Furthermore, who had not lied before? Even a kid would lie if his parents asked whether he had watched a sex tape...

This Twin Star Inherent Skill...

Yue Yang was so depressed that he wanted to hide in a corner and draw circles on the ground.

“San-er, it’s okay if you don’t have an Inherent Skill. As long as you work hard, I believe that you could be a strong Ranker like your father...” the beautiful woman comforted Yue Yang as her eyes turned red, her voice choked with emotions.

“Ah?” Yue Yang was bewildered, he obviously had the Twin Star Inherent Skill, why did she said that there was none?

Could it be that she couldn’t see my Inherent Skill?

Could this be the effect of the [Camouflage] skill? So it is a passive skill? It couldn’t be...Yue Yang jumped and pointed at the picture on the summoning grimoire. He gulped nervously as he asked, “Can’t, can’t you see the picture here? You really couldn’t see the words written here?”

## Chapter 3 – Mythical Beast's Special Ability

---

Si Niang is not actually her real name. It technically means Fourth Godmother, but it sounds weird if I used that every time Si Niang is mentioned...

Hearing Yue Yang's question, the beautiful woman was startled.

From her point of view, below San-Er's portrait, the summoning grimoire only showed a blank space.

There were not even a single picture or words. But San-er did not look like he was lying, could it be that his Inherent Skill was actually active? An Inherent Skill that she couldn't see?

"San-er, don't lie to Si Niang. Do you really, really have an Inherent Skill? Si Niang can't see it, what kind of Inherent Skill is it?" The beautiful woman felt like her heart was at her throat and her eyes almost popping out as she nervously held Yue Yang's hands.

"Uh...It's [Camouflage], my Inherent Skill is [Camouflage]!" Yue Yang rubbed the back of his head as he told a lie. He realised that he was really as cunning as a fox.

"It's good if you really have an Inherent Skill. Oh my, I was so scared!" The beautiful woman was relieved.

Her pale hands patted her chest as she closed her eyes and took a

deep breath. Every grimoire user would have awakened their own Inherent Skill. If San-er didn't have it, then he would definitely be looked down upon and be labeled as a good for nothing. No matter what Inherent Skill it was, it was fine as long as you had one.

San-er's unseen [Camouflage] Inherent Skill could even be an extremely good Inherent Skill!

The beautiful woman happily reached out her hands and patted Yue Yang's head, "San-er, Si Niang is really happy for you. With this [Camouflage] Inherent Skill, you would definitely be successful in the future!"

The small girl, watching her mother patting Yue Yang's head, also reached out her soft, white and small hands towards his head.

The moment she saw her causing trouble, the beautiful woman quickly put her down from her arms.

The beautiful woman calmed her heart and then signaled Yue Yang to turn the page of his summoning grimoire, "Turn over to the next page, San-er, look at your Guardian Beast... Shuang-er, stay still, let your older brother turn the page. Be good, stand here beside me okay? Aih, is this mist? It's all white... Is your Guardian Beast a mist-type beast? Not bad, although element-type beasts take a long time to grow, they are really strong. Although in the beginning it is not as strong as the strengthening-type and fighting-type beasts, at a later stage, they would become much stronger. As long as it is not the special-type beast then it's okay! Aih, San-er, your Guardian Beast is really good!"

(TLN: so there's element-type, strengthening-type, fighting-type, and special-type beasts)

The beautiful woman happily clapped her hands, smiling excitedly.

Yue Yang was dumbfounded instead.

Because what he saw was definitely not a white fog, but a dark shadow of a figure.

A shadow that looked exactly like his shadow!

Below the shadow, there were a few lines of description. It was the description of his [Guardian Beast].

Phantom Shadow: Special-type, level 1. You can control your own shadow. Each shadow will have half of your strength. Shadows can be joined together to increase their size.



Yue Yang slowly put his hands on the [Phantom Shadow] picture as a golden light began to glow underneath his fingers.

“Is that so...”

At the same time, a knowledge about summoning the [Guardian Beast] flashed across his mind.

In the Soaring Dragon continent, as long as you train hard, you would still be able to learn one or two summoning skills or make a contract with Beasts, even if you were a normal warrior. But because they don't have a summoning grimoire, the number of beasts they could summon is limited. Normally, a warrior could only make a contract with one Beast. Only a handful of talented warriors might be able to make a contract with two.

However, a grimoire user would not have a limit in making contracts.

Every page in the summoning grimoire was open for a Beasts contract, until all pages were full.

However, the best thing about a summoning grimoire was not the limit in making contracts, but allowing a grimoire user to have his own [Guardian Beast]. This type of [Guardian Beasts] were not the same as the normal Beasts. They would never die nor betray their master. Guardian Beasts would also grow alongside its master, there was no need for other conditions to be met. As long the user's power increased, or that the summoning grimoire level



increased, the [Guardian Beast] would also be stronger.

“Eh?”

Yue Yang had actually wanted to summon a shadow, to see what it looked like.

But what confused him was that he couldn't summon them out.

.....

From the knowledge in his memories, the reason that the summoning failed was because his mana wasn't enough. Yue Yang could also feel it in his heart that summoning his [Phantom Shadow] would need at least ten times as much mana as the normal Beasts.

“What's wrong?” the beautiful woman looked at Yue Yang's surprised expression and asked with concern, “What happened?”

“It's nothing. My mana is not enough to summon my Guardian Beast right now.” Yue Yang shook his head as a thought flashed across his mind. This Guardian Beast Phantom Shadow should be kept a secret. Even if he could summon it later on, he shouldn't summon it in front of others that easily.

That Beast should remain his secret weapon.

“Ah? San-er, don’t worry. Summoning an element-type Beasts require quite a lot of mana, it’s normal if you can’t summon it in the beginning. Your Guardian Beasts will definitely help you as you grow!” The beautiful woman quickly comforted Yue Yang.

“Yes, I will train hard so that I could summon it quickly!” Yue Yang said that but he had a different thought in his heart.

Through the knowledge in his memories, he knew the normal mana required for summoning Beasts.

If it was simply summoning a normal element-type Beast, Yue Yang was confident that he could definitely summon them.

However, his own [Phantom Shadow] had required ten times more mana than a normal Beast. It was simply too high! Right now it was only level one, if it leveled up more, he was afraid that the mana requirement will be even more....However, this was not really a bad thing, because the more mana it required, the more powerful his summoned [Guardian Beast] would be. For example, Yue Yang’s [Guardian Beast Phantom Shadow] that required ten times more mana compared to normal Beasts, would have a power difference like a rifle compared to an arrow. Although both weapons are long ranged, they had a great difference in power!

Through the knowledge in his memory, Yue Yang also found out that the biggest difference between his [Phantom Shadow] and other people’s Guardian Beasts was not its power.

It’s the summoning duration!

A normal warrior's Beast summon would disappear within 1 hour every time they were summoned.

On the other hand, talented warriors might last up to 2 to 3 hours.

And then, there were a handful of talents who could manage to summon for up to 5 hours. But this type of people were extremely rare.

Yue Yang touched the picture of [Phantom Shadow] on his grimoire. Although he could not summon the beast, he could still feel the shadow's power. He could feel its power resonating within his heart. After closely feeling the shadow, he was surprised to find out that his shadow could last up to 10 days if it was summoned.

“Wo Cao...” (TLN: Similar to wtf) Yue Yang was suddenly nervous. This secret must never be known by others. Otherwise he could be regarded as a monster and kidnapped to be experimented on in a laboratory.

“Xiao San-gege, what does “wo cao” mean?” the little girl blinked her curious doe-eyes and asked innocently.

“Ah, that is a special ability of an extremely strong Mythical Beast. It is extremely strong, when unleashed, it would intimidate the enemies. It could even cause the enemy to get crazy, demented, beat their chest wildly, grab people's hair, stomp their feet, bang their heads on the walls and other sorts of stuff mentally

challenged people will do. This ability will be more effective against ladies, but it won't be effective against people who have really thick skins or high mental defense... You know, this kind Mythical Beast usually lived in the depths of a desert. They love to eat grasses and bask under the sun. They would especially love to lie (wo) in a deep troughs (cao) and eat the grasses that grew there... Such a Beast, why is it so powerful then? It is extremely powerful! Other than the peerless Mythical Beasts such as the Celestial Crab\*, it won't lose to anyone. It can even be on par with Mythical Beasts such as the Jacques Lizard\* and the Elegant Butterfly\*! Alright, I will only explain so much, it's not good if we talk too much into detail!”

(\*TLN: 天朝河蟹 tian chao he xie (lit. Celestial Crab). However, it was actually a pun for 天朝和谐 – China's internet censorship. Forums and internet are heavily regulated in China, making it very hard for people to curse. For example, if you write “fuck” in the chinese forums (in chinese of course) it would appear as “\*\*\*\*”. Hence various slangs have appeared, such as 雅蠅蝶 ya mie die (lit. Elegant Butterfly) – yamete~.

雅克蜥 ya ke xi (lit. [Jacques Lizard](#)))

Yue Yang explained tirelessly to the curious little girl.

The beautiful woman had thought that this boy had been so nervous that he accidentally cursed in the beginning.

But after watching him explaining sincerely and decently, she had almost thought that there were really such a weirdly-named Mythical Beast in this world. Furthermore what he said had made

sense.

Of course, she also knew that Mythical Beast were not that easy to summon. Even top summoners could only manage to summon a few of these Mythical Beast, let alone a level 1 apprentice. Thus such a high ambition is intolerable.

She quickly warned Yue Yang, “San-er, all these Mythical Beast are all powerful beasts, so they won’t make a contract with a weak summoner. Don’t think about them now, train your summoning abilities first and work hard to increase your mana... It may be too late this year, but next year, your uncle and I will send you to a school. You should work hard, I know that you’ll be successful in the future!”

“Yes, yes.” Yue Yang wiped off his cold sweat. Luckily she didn’t hear him curse, otherwise he would receive a slap across his mouth.

After he sent away the beautiful woman who was in good mood and the small girl who was reluctant to leave, Yue Yang could finally sigh a breath of relief.

He had managed to hide his identity. She didn’t recognize him as ‘fake goods’.

However, what will happen to him in the future?

## Chapter 4 – Heavenly Sword Goddess?

---

Right now he could still pretend, but later on if he met that Fourth Uncle or other relatives and friends and yet could not recognize them, he would definitely be found out. Yue Yang hurriedly searched for the things that drowned pitiful guy had possibly left over. There could be stuff that would explain the drowned guy more, best if it was a diary or something along that line.

After looking for the whole day, the table, wardrobe and everything else in the room was all flipped over.

There really was a diary, but it didn't help much.

The pitiful guy had only written about his summoning meditation and also his Yue Family's Spear Technique training journal.

Yue Yang realized that the pitiful guy was actually quite hardworking. He was not able to make a contract with the summoning grimoire, but his Yue Family's Spear Technique training was progressing well. However, from this diary, Yue Yang found out that the pitiful guy didn't reveal his training progress to the others. He had wanted to surprise his family on the day he managed to make a contract with his summoning grimoire. It was due to this that everyone had thought he was good for nothing.

The pitiful guy had also noted that the Yue Family Spear Technique was a weapon art technique that was handed down

through the generations of Yue family. When combined with a strong fighting-beast type Spirit Beast, it would become extremely powerful.

He also wrote in his diary that it was really regrettable that half of the the Spear Technique Manual was lost, because of a villain who had killed a Yue Family ancestor, who was an extremely powerful martial artist expert, a thousand years ago. If the Yue Family had owned the whole Spear Technique Manual, he believed they wouldn't have merely ranked third amongst the four big houses. They would have been the first.

Even with only half of the technique left, the Yue Family's Spear Technique was still a reputable weapon art. Although it was not the most powerful technique, the technique had produced many strong, undefeatable warriors.

For example, the pitiful guy's father was the strongest warrior in the Yue family, a talent that came once in a hundred years.

It was a pity he left this world early, halting the abrupt rise of the Yue Family.

“Spear Technique?” Yue Yang was big headed when he saw it.

Although he was a shut-in and never practiced martial arts before, he knew quite a bit about martial arts techniques. There was a poem that says: “It takes a month to learn how to wield a stick, a year to wield a blade, and a lifetime to wield a spear. But a treasure sword would not even be mastered in a lifetime.”

Amongst the difficulty level of weapons, spears were the hardest to master. If not for a long time of harsh training, it would be hard to yield any results. There were a lot of spear techniques and every family's or school of spear technique would have their own specialties. It could be said that there would not even be enough time even if you use your whole lifetime to master the spear.

But this Spear Technique...

The pitiful guy had studied it for a few decades, yet it was still in its early stages of training.

Yue Yang decided to forget about the Spear Technique first. What he needed right now was an ability, not a weapon art that he would need to spend his whole life training with. Furthermore, the importance of weapon and martial arts in the Soaring Dragon continent had dwindled. Mastering a martial art technique, even a normal one was extremely difficult. It would be hard to break through the 3rd mastery level no matter how hard you train. Because of that, even the most powerful techniques such as the Yue Family Spear Technique, were not as powerful as last time. Furthermore, the Yue Family Spear Technique needed to be complemented with a suitable Spirit Beast before its full power could be displayed.

Weapon skills were like China's Ancient Martial Arts skills, you could improve your physical abilities with training.

However, summoning was similar to shooting. Your power depends more on the type of gun you hold, no matter how good your skill was.



Summoning did not need harsh training. You would be powerful if your Spirit Beast was powerful.

Even a person who have trained a weapon technique for decades might not be able to master it. In a battle, that person who had trained for over a decade might even lose to a person who had just successfully made a contract with a Spirit Beast.

This was because the person would only need to summon a poisonous snake or a Wind Wolf that to kill the person who trained for weapon arts.

Under these conditions, no one was willing to spend their time and hard work to learn a weapon technique. Everyone would rather train their summoning skills.

In addition, the most powerful weapon skill had already been burnt in a fire 3000 years ago. The only weapon skills that were passed down through the years were either the performance kind or the simple and easy to learn weapon skills. Even the secret Yue Family's Spear Technique was actually the fifth oldest weapon arts in Soaring Dragon continent. This could only prove how low the weapon and martial arts had fallen.

In the history of the Soaring Dragon Continent, previously, the strongest among the three big countries was actually the Jun Royal Family, who focused their strength on weapon arts.

However, because they still focused on their weapon arts until

now, they became the weakest family amongst the three big countries now. It was difficult to catch up to with the new age...

“Eh? He actually had two rivals in love?”

Even after reading the diary the whole day, Yue Yang still didn't really understand the situation of his family.

But he found out the pitiful guy's arch-enemies.

One of them was his cousin called Yue Yan, the fourth oldest in the family. He was born a few days later than the pitiful guy. But because of that, he missed the chance to get engaged with the daughter of Xue Family. Having lost the chance to get engaged just because of a few days difference had made Yue Yan bitter and dissatisfied. Thus, he frequently ridiculed and bullied the pitiful guy.

The other arch-enemy was the the son of the Dao Feng Mayor, Xue Qian Ren.

This Xue Qian Ren was said to be a genius. He displayed an extraordinary [Inherent Skill] when he was 6, and at 10, he successfully made a contract with a summoning grimoire. But even with such a powerful resume, he was ruthlessly rejected when his family tried to arrange a political marriage with the Xue Family. He was still rejected even when the engagement between the pitiful guy and the daughter of the Xue family was broken. Hence, it could be said that that Xue Qian Ren hated the pitiful guy to the bone.

Having read his diary to the end, Yue Yang felt that the pitiful guy's life was really pitiful.

He couldn't marry his wife, yet made two arch-enemies out of it.

"Only a beauty who had the ability is a beauty. If a guy has no abilities, then he is just a person that bring harm to others" Yue Yang decided that he would not think about the Xue Family's daughter at all. Even if she looked like a goddess, he would simply ignore her.

There were a lot of beauties in the world, why should he be fixated on one? Why should he gave up the forest just for one tree?

If he had the abilities, which beauty would not want him?

The reason for Xue Family's daughter breaking the engagement, wasn't it because the pitiful guy was a good-for-nothing?

If the pitiful guy was an emperor, he could have thousands of beauties in his harem. If he was a corrupt official, he could simply pretended to do his job and still have a mistress. If he was a rich businessman, having a mistress would be normal, he could even have a threesome if he want. But if he was a nobody, for example a farmer, it would be weird if the Xue family daughter didn't make a ruckus or try to cut his little brother if he tried to have an extramarital affair.

But of course, the pitiful guy had no chance for this anymore.

Xue Family's daughter had broken the engagement, and the pitiful guy had become fish food in the river.

However, the lesson to be learned was that you should try your best to get rich and successful first, and then choose you could choose a person to share your life with.



As Yue Yang indulge in his fantasy, he slowly fell asleep.

Hazily, he thought he had entered the imaginary space in his mind when he made the contract with his summoning grimoire earlier. When he was thinking of ways to bring the flying sword out, that shining flying sword suddenly turned into a beautiful goddess wearing a white, heavenly gown. Its long, white sash danced in the wind and as her slender, beautiful legs danced lightly on the ground. Gracefully moving her wrist, her long dainty fingers danced in the air. Her slim waist moved beautifully as the unmatched beauty danced in front of Yue Yang. Watching such a magical scene, Yue Yang's drool almost turned into a waterfall, his

mouth opened wide without any sign of stopping.



Heavenly Sword Goddess?

That flying sword that he snatched from the old Taoist priest was actually a Heavenly Sword Goddess?

The white-gowned goddess continued to dance gracefully, as beautiful as lotus flowers in a pond. As her hands danced a thousand moves, her beauty could not be described with words.

A big, beautiful rainbow appeared behind the goddess suddenly as thousands of fresh flowers bloomed, drifting in the wind like a butterfly. Yue Yang had thought that it was the magnificent ending to the goddess' dance performance and was preparing to give her a standing ovation, when suddenly that goddess unleashed an transparent sword Qi from her fingers through the empty space. The attack was extremely powerful, able to separate the heaven and earth. Seeing how the beautiful goddess had a power that could shake the earth, Yue Yang was dumbstruck. Was this

her power? So frightening!

In reality, the frightening thing had yet to come. Suddenly, the goddess turned her beautiful body and in a flash, she was right in front of the dumbstruck Yue Yang.

Her pearl white hands that had the power to destroy the heavens, suddenly seemed to condense the power of thousands of swords in it.



And her finger was pointed at Yue Yang's forehead...

“Wa!” Yue Yang was scared to death, as he cried out in fear and suddenly woke up.

He only realised that it was just a dream after quite a while. There was no goddess who was pointing a ‘bomb’ towards his head. However, when he tried to remember the goddess, he found out that a mysterious technique had been quietly hidden in the depths of his mind. As Yue Yang thought about the event just now, an unfamiliar name flashed across his mind: Innate Invisible Sword Qi...

## Chapter 5 – [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi

---

Even though Yue Yang was an idiot, he knew he had gotten himself a treasure.

There was no need to say much, the word “Innate” could already show the prowess of this sword skill.

If one had mastered the Yue Clan’s Spear Technique in its full power and reached its pinnacle, he could be considered to have an [Innate] ranked skill. However, right now, don’t even ask if there was anyone in the Yue Family who had an [Innate] ranked skill, there hadn’t been anyone since thousands of years ago. Previously, the pitiful guy’s father had had the most potential of breaking through the Innate rank, but unfortunately, he died early. Yue Family had lost a talented warrior with an enormous potential.

Right now the only warriors who had an [Innate] ranked skills were from the Heavenly Imperial Guardians that protected the Three Royal Households and two from the Feng and Xue Major Clans each.

However, from the gossips by the common folks, the two [Innate] rankers in the Feng and Xue Family were those kind of old geezers who had lived for four to five hundred years.

Nobody would ever knew the truth...

The most important thing to Yue Yang was that amongst all the [Innate] rankers, they did not achieve the [Innate] rank all by

themselves.

[Innate Rankers]. The reason why they could enter into the [Innate] realm was because they had a Holy Beast or a Mythical Beast. With the assimilation of Holy Beast and Mythical Beast, one's strength and growth potential would skyrocket. It would be easier to enter the [Innate] rank this way. However, this process was extremely slow and would take at least a hundred years. Some people would even need two to three hundred years to truly enter the [Innate] realm and become an [Innate Ranker].

However, every Soaring Dragon Continent's warrior would need to train for at least a hundred years to master a prerequisite skill before they could start mastering an [Innate] skill.

Yue Yang realized that he could simply start mastering this [Innate] skill.

The [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi Skill that the Heavenly Sword Goddess taught him in his dreams did not have any prerequisites.

To enter the [Innate] realm, he would need to assimilate with the earth and the atmosphere, absorbing the [Spiritual Energy] in them. He would wash his body with the [Spiritual Energy] and increase the resolution in his spirit. This would not only change the whole structure of his body from his flesh and muscles to his bone marrows, but also train his Sword Qi Skill to break into the [Innate] realm and attain enlightenment.

“Old geezer, no, Master, this Heavenly Sword Goddess should be



your granddaughter. Since you have betrothed your granddaughter to your disciple, I will take great care of her and let her lead a happy life. Master, if you did not reply me, then I would take that you have agreed. I'll count to three; one, two, three. Alright, you have agreed, thank you, Master." The shameless guy put his palms together and mumbled to himself.

If these words were heard by the Old Daoist Priest, he would probably kick this shameless guy to the netherworld and fried him alive with the flames of hell.

Yue Yang had wanted to sleep a little more and meet with the sword spirit again, but he was too excited too sleep.

He tried hard to calm his heart which was beating wildly, and started to train [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi's first stage....Yue Yang was not a hardworking person in the first place, but this concerned his lifetime happiness. He felt that he needed to master the skill no matter what, and in the shortest time possible.

He would then train during the day and in his dreams at night.

The Heavenly Sword Goddess would instruct him with the skill and then disappear immediately. Yue Yang thought that she was observing her fiance's improvement, so he trained even harder in his dreams.

At first, the process of assimilating the [Spiritual Energy] from the earth and the atmosphere was extremely slow. Even after trying to absorb for the whole day, he only managed to collect a

few drops.

However, Yue Yang found that his mind could better connect with the earth and atmosphere in the mysterious space in his dreams. The [Spiritual Energy] absorption speed also increased by multiple folds. Hence, Yue Yang would usually be fast asleep, training in his dreams. He slept as much as possible until his head ache, before getting up to stretch and continue to train inside his house. For his lifetime happiness, Yue Yang shut himself in his rooms, training diligently.

The beautiful woman visited him a few times but had found him deep asleep. She thought that Yue Yang's body had become very weak after trying to drown himself, so much that he needed to rest and sleep that much.

Sometimes she would see Yue Yang meditating seriously. She thought that he was training his summoning skills diligently, and felt extremely glad.

Every day, she would visit Yue Yang with the small girl.

Today, the beautiful woman told him a good news. "San-er, your Fourth Uncle had heard the news that you had successfully made a contract with a summoning grimoire. He was extremely ecstatic and had went to our Clan's Main Castle to report the good news to our clan elder. He would come back in a few days. Also, with the one thousand gold we had saved these few years, he had managed to buy a [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] from the Floating Mist Market. We believe it would help a lot with your training if you took the pill. You could even be promoted to level 2 and break

into a new realm, advancing from your current [Beginner] rank.”

“[Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill]?” As Yue Yang heard the name, the knowledge in his brain seemed to swirl again, and he suddenly recognized the name.

Amongst the Four Major Clans, if there were talented warriors who could not make a contract with a summoning grimoire, they would usually seek help from the Four Great Sects.

These Four Great Sects would usually have a few [Spirit Pills] for sale, and these pills were extremely expensive.

After taking these pills, the probability of successfully contracting a summoning grimoire would increase a whole lot. Although the success probability was not 100%, but it was at least 30%. Because of this, naturally there would be countless of people after it.

However, the [Spirit Pills] released by the Four Great Sects was a luxury good that commoners could never afford.

First, the amount was limited, and second, the price was exorbitant.

Yue Yang was extremely shocked with the immeasurable love that the beautiful woman and her husband had shown to the pitiful guy. They did everything they could, even to the point of buying a [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] for him.

Based on the currency here, 1 gold is equivalent to 100 silver or 10,000 copper coins.

A thousand gold means ten million copper coins.

The beautiful woman had sold all their family's wealth and even pawned her dowry in order to raise the funds for the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill]. Yue Yang had seen that the beautiful woman had only been wearing simple ornaments in her head. From this, one could only imagine the worth of a thousand gold coins. If not for the inheritance they received from their clan, who would have such a large amount of money to buy a [Spirit Pill]?

The beautiful woman had supported the pitiful guy to such an extreme extent...

“You could give the pill to Shuang-er meimei, I have already made the contract successfully,” Yue Yang couldn't help but felt touched. The beautiful woman was truly benevolent.

“What foolish things are you saying? Shuang-er is still young, how would you know if she could not make a summoning grimoire contract in the future? Maybe next year this girl could even already successfully contracted a grimoire! This [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] is bought for you. Although you have successfully made the contract, you contracted it a little late. If you take the pill, you could catch up to your peers and live up to your Fourth Uncle and my hopes. Your parents would also hope that you would be successful in the future and bring glory to our Yue

Clan. Why are you so stubborn?" The beautiful woman was immediately unhappy hearing Yue Yang's rejection and showed a displeased expression. She advised him with thoughtful words, "San-er, although your Fourth Uncle a low-ranked government official, our family could be considered well-off. But it was not easy to save a thousand gold, so you shouldn't waste our good intentions..."

"Yes, yes...I was wrong." Yue Yang hurriedly agreed. Although the [Spirit Pill] was not bought for him, but he was deeply moved with the beautiful woman's kind feelings.

"I have already written a letter to ask Bing-er to take a leave from her school and come back home. She could teach you some basic summoning skills. I think she would be back by tomorrow, maybe you can check if you need to prepare anything. Si Niang knew you are hardworking, but don't train too much, you have to know your own limits. Rest well tonight, don't meditate anymore."

The beautiful woman didn't know that Yue Yang had been sleeping and eating well these few days. The [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi could only be mastered by absorbing the [Spiritual Energy] from the earth and the atmosphere.

The more Yue Yang trained, the better his body would feel. He would never be too tired from training.

However, in order to not worry the beautiful woman, Yue Yang was forced to go to bed early...



Maybe because he was moved by the beautiful woman buying him the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill], his state of mind went through a change. When Yue Yang trained inside his dreams, he had felt a sudden realization to his skill progress.

All the [Spiritual Energy] in his body had congregated into one flow.

They gathered at his armpits and flowed to his hands. The Spiritual Energy filled his Yun Men acupoint in his shoulders, Tian Fu, Che Zhe and Kong Zui acupoints in his arms, and also the Lie Que, Tai Yuan acupoints in his wrist. (TLN: I gave up searching for english names for these Chinese TCM [Acupoints](#). \_\_.)

Lastly, it filled the Shao Shang acupoint in his thumbs.

The energy surged a few times, and flashes of Sword Qi started shooting off from his thumb.

Seeing such a pleasant change had caused Yue Yang to be

extremely shocked, and he accidentally woke up from his dream.

In the actual world, Yue Yang tried hard to re-enact the experience in his dream.

He kept trying until he saw a flash of Sword Qi pierced through his walls...

Yue Yang finally realized that he had successfully broke through the first energy channel of the first stage of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi skill, the Hand-Taiyin.

The Sword Qi that came from his body was only a few inches long, incomparable to the Heavenly Sword Goddess' 10-meters long Sword Qi that could be swung around. However, although his Sword Qi was still so pathetic, Yue Yang was so ecstatic that he felt like turning into a wolf, looked up to the sky and gave a loud howl...

## Chapter 6 – Yue Bing In Black

---

On the afternoon the next day, the servant girl who would usually quietly withdrew after serving his meals, suddenly spoke out, “Master San, the madame has asked you to come out for lunch.”

Yue Yang followed her out to the residence hall and saw the beautiful woman sobbing endlessly, embracing a girl covered with black clothings.

The usually mischievous small girl acted well-behaved for once, sitting on her chair quietly eating her food. Her little hands held her chopsticks unsteadily as she tried putting grain by grain of rice into her small mouth, sprinkling the rice all over the table and her mouth. Yue Yang saw that the girl in black was actually still young-looking, around 14-15 years old. Her features were a little similar to the beautiful woman's, but hers were a little more childish.

Her doe eyes were a little red as tears poured down her pale white cheeks.

When she saw Yue Yang, she immediately wiped her tears and covered her face with a black veil.

“...” Yue Yang sighed in his heart.

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, other than the rarely seen female robbers or assassin, the only other type of women who



wore black veils to cover their faces, could only be: widows.

This girl in black should be the beautiful woman's first daughter, Yue Bing.

She ranked seventh amongst the nine younger generations in the Yue Clan, barely surpassing her sister Shuang-er and the Second Branch Family's youngest, Yue Feng. She was a talent in the Yue Family, having successfully contracted a grimoire at the age of 8 and a half. It was a pity that the Soaring Dragon Continent valued males more than females, as they regarded that females would only be taken as daughter-in-laws or concubines. Sooner or later they would be married off to another family. Thus, although the Yue Family would still raise her with love, she would never compare to the First Branch eldest son Yue Tian or even the other sons in the family. Furthermore there were indeed a little more talents in this generation of Yue Family. The First Branch eldest Yue Tian contracted the grimoire at the age of 10 and had excellent martial arts skills and Spirit Beasts. The fourth-eldest son Yue Yan contracted the grimoire at the age of 11, while the sixth-eldest son Yue Bao contracted the grimoire at the age of 12.

The weaker ones would be the second eldest daughter Yue Yu and fifth-eldest son Yue Ting, they both contracted the grimoire only at the age of 15.

Thus, comparatively, Yue Bing, who came from the Fourth Branch, was not really that outstanding. Furthermore, her martial arts and Spirit Beasts were the Plant-Type that were not very popular in the summoning world. Amongst the Four Great Sects, only the Immortal Spirit Pavilion Sect who only accepted female

disciples expressed interest in evaluating her, the other three did not even respond.

But because there were so many talents in the later generation of the Yue Family, when the Third Branch and his wife died and the pitiful guy ended up being raised by the Fourth Branch, he could not help but be labelled as a loser when he still failed to contract a grimoire even at the age of 19. Yue Yang thought, it was no wonder that the Xue Family's daughter would ask to cancel the engagement. If she entered into such a talented family yet married a loser for a husband, how could she take the burden?

Getting compared to others continuously really took its toll. After the cancellation of his engagement, the pitiful guy could finally take it no more and drowned himself.

However, Yue Bing who was as unlucky as he was, did not commit suicide.

Certainly, she wasn't rejected by a failed engagement. She married the talented son from one of the Four Major Clans, the House of Feng, through proxy marriage. However, three years ago during his Spirit Beasts training, he was unfortunately killed off by a wild Golden King Beast, turning Yue Bing into a widow before she even joined his family.

The people in the Soaring Dragon Continent were superstitious, and they immediately thought that Yue Bing was a jinx that would bring misfortune to her husband.

That's why, although she was a member of one of the Four Major Clans, House of Yue, nobody wanted to marry her. Everybody treasured their own sons after all, nobody was willing to risk asking her hands in marriage and got their sons killed for nothing.

"San-ge, congratulations." Yue Bing whispered softly as she slowly let go of her mother's embrace. Then, she stood up, intending to go back to her room.

"Your San-ge is not a stranger. Bing-er, don't eat in your room, let us all eat together as a family here." The beautiful woman pulled Yue Bing back to her seat.

"Yes." Yue Bing hesitated a little but pulled off her veil in the end. Holding her bowl and chopsticks, she slowly ate her food mouthful by mouthful. Suddenly, she asked Yue Yang, "San-ge, what kind of Guardian Spirit Beast did you receive?"

"It's the element-type, 'Mist'." Yue Yang realized that every word from his mouth was a lie ever since he was teleported here.

"Element-type... I'm not that good with it. I'm just a part-time student in my school, so I've only studied the fighting-type. I don't know a single thing about the element-type." Yue Bing was silent for a while, and then she continued, "Otherwise, I could teach you basic summoning skills to summon a Spitting Thorny Flower, but that would waste one page of your summoning grimoire."

"That's okay." Yue Yang knew his own capabilities. He had a Guardian Spirit Beast [Phantom Shadow] which could be

summoned for up to ten days and the [Innate] skill, [Invisible Sword Qi]. Losing a few pages in the summoning grimoire and the number of Spirit Beasts wasn't that important to him.

But since this lady wanted to teach him, he wanted to learn from her.

He could fulfil the beautiful woman's wishes and be more familiar with all kinds of summoning skills. Who knows, he could even use the Spitting Thorny Flower during battles in the future.

Yue Bing wasn't a talkative person. She quietly nodded and finished the food in her bowl. Then, the little girl suddenly stood on her chair and reached out her chopsticks to take the smoked fish that was located furthest from her. Looking at her, one hand trying to stretch out her chopsticks and the other hand balancing herself on the table, Yue Yang couldn't help but feel afraid that she would accidentally fall. The beautiful woman hit her hand lightly and scolded her for not having manners. The little girl trembled with shock, but she had still managed to take a big piece of smoked fish. Chest puffing up, she smiled with a pleased expression, then turned her body towards Yue Yang and stuck her tongue out.

Who would know, she was so pleased with herself that she forgot she was still standing on the chair. The chair shook a little and her legs lost their balance, causing her to fall on the ground as she shouted out, "AH!"

Yue Yang immediately put down his bowl and used the kind of catching technique to save a basketball from being out of bounds. He reached out his two hands to support her head and her bum

before the small girl fell flat on the ground.

The sudden movement and weight caused his body to produce a few cracking noises as he caught her.

Luckily his hands was still stable and the small girl did not slip off from his hands.

“San-gege is so cool!” The small girl was so shocked that her whole face turned white, but in just a moment, she had forgotten the whole spectacle of her falling from the chair. Instead, she climbed onto Yue Yang’s body, latching on to him like a koala, giggling happily.

The beautiful woman snapped out from her shock and stood up angrily, intending to scold this little imp.

The small girl didn’t wait for the scolding and quickly ran away.

“San-er, are you injured?” The beautiful woman reached out her hands to help Yue Yang up.

“No, I’m okay,” Yue Yang couldn’t show his weak side to her, and quickly got up from the floor himself... Actually, he wasn’t injured at all, he simply blanked out for a moment just now, shocked at his own reaction speed. He was a NEET with slow reaction time, when did he became so agile? Could it be that this is the effect of training the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi skill? But he had only been training for a few days.

This [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi was indeed awesome!

Yue Yang was extremely excited, yet he pretended that nothing had happened and quietly sat down on the dining chair, continuing his lunch.

Yue Bing who was frozen as she stared at Yue Yang, finally snapped out of her daze and asked, “San-ge, did you practice martial arts? I also practiced martial arts sometimes, but I couldn’t react fast enough just now. San-ge, if you manage to contract a strengthening-type Spirit Beast in the future, with the addition of your ‘Mist’ element-type Spirit Beast, your fighting power will definitely be greatly increased. Looks like it is a ‘Mist’ with an attacking ability. It is indeed suitable for San-ge’s growth.”

When the beautiful woman heard this, she felt extremely proud of San-er who had been diligently training by himself, but she was a little worried.

This is because in her eyes, martial arts were only meant for soldiers, while summoning skills were the most important skills for one to have a bright future.

She gave Yue Yang a delicious smelling piece of pork ribs and said, “San-er, it has been hard on you trying to hide your martial art training from us. You don’t have a summoning grimoire last time, so there was nothing that could be done about it. However, now, you already have a summoning grimoire, so you should place more importance in improving your summoning skills. You could

still train sparingly, but don't train so much that you hinder the progress of your summoning skills.”

Actually, the one who secretly train his martial arts skills was the pitiful guy, not me... These words, Yue Yang did not say it out loud. Instead, he simply nodded and acknowledged the beautiful woman's words.

He also knew that in the Soaring Dragon Continent, people place more importance on summoning skills training rather than martial arts training.

Those that trained martial arts were like those people who could not graduate from junior high school and became farmers or blue collar workers, while those who trained summoning skills were like those graduates from esteemed universities. Even if they both entered the same company and did the same work, they would receive totally different treatments.

After lunch, Yue Bing followed Yue Yang to the courtyard in his residence, as she prepared to teach Yue Yang, the fake San-ge, all the knowledge she learnt in her school...

# Chapter 7 – Summon, Spitting Thorny Flower!

---

The small girl stuck out her head and looked around, thinking of stirring trouble. But unfortunately she was caught by the beautiful woman and spanked in the butt several times.

Yue Bing raised her hands and summoned her summoning grimoire.

Her summoning grimoire was similar to Yue Yang's grimoire, copper in colour. However, after years of practice and battles, she had surpassed the Intermediate Rank and rose up to the Advanced Rank. Her Advanced Ranked summoning grimoire emitted a brighter luster than Yue Yang's Beginner Ranked summoning grimoire. It was also thicker and smoother in texture. The illustration on Yue Bing's Advanced Ranked summoning grimoire also looked more vivid than Yue Yang's. Just from the outer appearance itself, it was obvious that their levels were vastly different.

Of course, no matter if it was Beginner Ranked, Intermediate Ranked or Advanced Ranked, a copper summoning grimoire was still the lowest level of summoning grimoires.

Above Copper, there were Silver, Gold, Platinum and Diamond Grimoires.

"I will now give you the Spitting Thorny Flower...San-ge, you have to receive it in your mind." She touched her Advanced



Grimoire to Yue Yang's Beginner Grimoire and a bright light flickered.

As Yue Yang received it in his mind, his summoning grimoire suddenly turned its pages by itself.



In the previously blank third page, there was an illustration of a weird looking flower. On top of the page, these words were written:

Spitting Thorny Flower – Fighting Type

Level 1

## Uncontracted

When Yue Yang saw this, he felt a weird connection with his soul. Faintly, as if listening to a call, he reached out his hands and touched the Spitting Thorny Flower illustration. In the next moment, a bright light suddenly shone from beneath his hands, and rays of light escaped through the gaps in his fingers. The light then started to envelop the back of his hands and towards his arms. At the same time, the related knowledge of Spitting Thorny Flower Beast appeared in his mind.

“...” Yue Bing’s eyes widened at the sight of this. She hadn’t even told him how to make a contract with a beast in the plant category, how could he contracted it already?

And the weirdest thing was that he did not chant any summoning incantation.

Could it be that San-ge, who was labeled a loser by others, had already attained the realm of chantless contract?

Yue Bing decided to observe quietly.

She felt that her San-ge was not the loser that other people sneered at, he could possibly be an extraordinary genius, the real deal.

“Can you summon the Spitting Thorny Flower?” Yue Bing deliberately did not tell him how to summon the thorny flower.

Although summoning the thorny flower was an easy skill to grasp, it would still be difficult if one did not know the method of summoning. This was because the method to summon a plant category, insect category, animal category, beast category and etc were totally different from each other. A student may be proficient in summoning monsters from all sorts of categories, but if he did not learn how to summon a monster from the plant category, he would still have a hard time summoning them. Even if it was the easiest monster, the Spitting Thorny Flower.

“Alright.” How could Yue Yang knew what his sister was thinking about? He thought that everyone in the Soaring Dragon Continent would be able to do what he did.

He placed his hand on the Spitting Thorny Flower’s illustration and closed his eyes. He then tried to connect his soul with the Spitting Thorny Flower.

A golden light flashes as a purple flower with a green stalk and giant leaves slowly appeared a metre in front of Yue Yang. It grew out until it was around a metre tall before stopping.





Seeing the Spitting Thorny Flower, Yue Yang thought that it looked extremely ugly. Its appearance looked almost like those man-eating flower monsters that usually appeared in games. The flower only had two petals that looked like a beast's mouth, with hundreds of sharp teeth inside. It looked extremely scary. He could see a green and slimy looking liquid inside the flower that smelled very bad. Looks like it was a type of poison.

Other than the flower petals that looked like a beast's mouth, this Spitting Thorny Flower was filled with thorns all over its body. Yue Yang had actually wanted to pat it a little, but seeing that the thorny flower was not adorable at all, he took back his hand.

On the other side, Yue Bing's eyes almost popped out of its sockets.

She thought, San-ge was indeed a genius! He had never went to school before and never learnt the method to summon a monster from a plant category. But he managed to summon the Spitting Thorny Flower out with telepathy!

When Yue Yang looked up at her, the little miss quickly changed her expression, pretending as if nothing had happened. She did not praise Yue Yang nor cried out in surprise. Her expressions was

normal, as if all of these were nothing out of the ordinary.

The little Miss Yue Bing even said, “Your summoning speed is a little slow, but since it’s your first time, it’s okay, I guess...”

Yue Yang was disappointed when he heard that, thinking that he really had no talent at all. Looks like his summoning ability was limited, he’d better train his Innate Invisible Sword Qi instead.

He scratched the back of his head and replied the little miss, “Actually, I think it’s already good that I could summon it out. What should we do next?”

Looking at his reaction, Yue Bing giggled secretly.





But on the outside, she acted like “I am the teacher”, and immediately summoned her Spitting Thorny Flower. When Yue Yang saw that the flower she summoned was ten times bigger than his, he immediately felt respect towards her. She had indeed lived up to the name of the Yue Family’s genius girl. Yue Bing gestured with her hands and pointed towards the walls nearby. “Try to make the Spitting Thorny Flower attack a target. The Spitting Thorny Flower has the ability to spit poison at a chosen target.” This little miss, in order to test Yue Yang, had once again left out the instructions on how to make the thorny flower attack a target.

If it was another person and they did not know the method to order the flower to attack, when they tried to command it in their mind, the flower would probably walk towards the target and chomp it with its sharp teeth instead of spitting poison at it.

Commanding the flower to execute its [Poison Spit] attack was a control skill. This was one of the topics tested in school.

If a student from the Plant Department couldn't get his Spitting Thorny Flower to spit out poison or make it climb more than 3 metres high, he would fail his exam. Hence, making the Spitting Thorny Flower execute its [Poison Spit] attack was one of the most basic control training that the Plant Department students would need to train for. Yue Bing was not even treating Yue Yang as a person who had just contracted a grimoire anymore, she treated him like one of students who was taking an examination instead.

“Attack the wall, Poison Spit.”

At the sound of Yue Yang's command, the Spitting Thorny Flower did not react at all.

This distressed the boy greatly. He could not even execute such a simple command for a [Poison Spit]. Seems like although he had talent, it was extremely limited.

Seeing Yue Bing's austere and solemn looking expression, Yue Yang felt like he was back in his old school, being punished by his teachers. He quickly encouraged himself to do better.

Why can't I do it? Yue Yang thought for a while, and suddenly, the answer flashed across his mind.

He smacked his forehead, ah, he was really an idiot.

Even when training a military dog, they would need a target.

Let alone the Spitting Thorny Flower which was a plant, it would be weird if it could understand his words.

Yue Yang ran towards the wall and grabbed a handful of mud on his way. He made a circle on the wall with the mud, and drew a big cross in the middle.

Then he quickly returned. Not caring about getting pricked by the flower, he put his hands on top of the flower crown. He tried to connect with the flower with his soul, and then he opened his eyes slowly. Looking at the target on the wall, he took the image and tried to synchronize it with the Spitting Thorny Flower's thoughts, ordering it to spit at the target.

Then a "hiss!" could be heard.

The Spitting Thorny Flower had opened its mouth and spat a ball of green slimy liquid out. The spit flew in an arch in the air and splashed on the wall in the end.

Yue Yang was disappointed when he saw this, as the poison was off the target by at least 2 metres. The mud circle was still perfect without a spot.

"Gosh, how could its targeting skills be so bad?" Yue Yang was so



embarrassed that he felt like digging a hole and hiding himself inside.

“...” Yue Bing pretended to be calm, but in reality, she was shocked beyond belief.

# Chapter 8 – Birth Of An Abnormal Genius

---

TLN: This chapter's title is a pun. The author uses the word abnormal(变态) that is also a slang for perverted. So title could also mean Birth of a Perverted Genius. Haha.

---

In Yue Bing's eyes, her San-ge who had never went to school was even better in controlling monsters than the second-year students in her school.

Having not learned any of the controlling techniques, he had learned how to direct the flower to its target all by himself. He had synchronized with the flower and transferred his will into it. This feat was often a big hurdle for all of the students from the Plant Department when they were learning the control technique.

San-ge had managed to do it so easily.

Moreover, he learned it without anyone teaching it to him.

In barely a few seconds, he could order a Spitting Thorny Flower which had just been contracted and summoned for the first time to attack a target with [Poison Spit].

Such a natural and quick thinking skill, once he entered school, he would probably be considered as a genius that only came once in a hundred years by the teachers.

Yue Bing looked at Yue Yang who was thoroughly dismayed. Her

greatest shock was actually not because of his quick thinking skills, but from the fact that this person, who was called a loser by the others, was absolutely not aware of how scary his natural abilities were.

“Ai?” Yue Yang was about to hide in the corner and draw circles on the ground when he suddenly saw the Spitting Thorny Flower in front of him wither and dropped to the ground.

A flash of information floated across his mind and made him smack his forehead again. He was really an idiot.

The advantage of the Spitting Thorny Flower from other monsters was that it does not need to be fed nor be taken care of. It also did not need a particular condition to exist. The monsters from the Animal Category and the Beast Category had to be fed in order to attack with their magic, while the monsters from the Insect Category and Fish Category needed to fulfil several conditions before it could exist in this world. Compared to them, the Plant Category and the Puppet Category were the easiest to manage. If the Puppet Category monsters was broken, it could simply be taken to the Puppet Palace to be fixed. However, if it was destroyed, then it wouldn't be able to be revived. Also, the greatest disadvantage of the monsters from the Puppet Category was that they couldn't evolve.

On the other hand, the monsters in the Plant Category can evolve, but their greatest disadvantage was their movement speed. They were extremely slow.

Furthermore, they lacked intelligence. Rather than training a

Spitting Thorny Flower to spit poison, people would rather train a Wind Wolf, Shadow Leopard and engage in close combat instead...

However, the Spitting Thorny Flower also had its own advantage. Its greatest advantage was that it could devour a dead body and evolve. Other than monsters from the Puppet Category, as long as it was a living thing, it could devour them and digest them slowly. Then, it would evolve and level up using the powers in the dead body.

It's just that in the beginning, this flower was extremely small and weak. One [Poison Spit] would have consumed all of its power, and it would quickly wither.

Of course, this did not mean it was really dead. Only if it was utterly destroyed, then it couldn't be revived.

Amongst all other monsters, no matter if they were Holy Beasts or Mythical Beasts, there was only one type who would never die: the Guardian Beast from the summoning grimoire.

Guardian Beasts were the only type of monster that would die nor betray their summoner. Other monsters would have their own degree of loyalty. If their loyalty was low, the monster could even run away during battles. Worst of all, it could disappear on its own from the summoning grimoire...

"Looks like you have already noticed it. Yes, the monsters in the plant category are indeed different from the others. They have a special ability, and that is 'take root'." Yue Bing then ordered her

Spitting Thorny Flower to spit poison, and it quickly hit the mud target on the wall accurately in the middle of the cross. Her faultless move made Yue Yang red with embarrassment.



She was indeed one of the genius in the family, her skills were top-notch.

Then, Yue Bing's Spitting Thorny Flower started to slowly wither. However, it didn't disappear like Yue Yang's flower did.

Her flower only fell to the ground, and slowly, extremely slowly, it grew once again.

Yue Bing acted like a teacher as she explained it to Yue Yang, “Just now I had just commanded the flower to take root in the soil. As long as it touched the ground, it can replenish its energy from the earth. This flower could then recover in around ten minutes, and would not wither.”

Yue Yang was like a student who was seriously listening to his teacher as he nodded happily, “Alright, let me try again.”

“Eh?” Yue Bing froze when she heard that.

Try again?

Didn't he just contracted a grimoire? New grimoire contractors should only be an apprentice, and an apprentice could at most summon a monster in a day. The Spitting Thorny Flower that he summoned had already withered and disappeared, what was he going to try again on? She had wanted to take the opportunity to educate him, to tell him that he should protect his monsters well and not let them die easily. This was because there was a limit to the number of times a person could summon their monsters. Thus, no matter if it was during battles or normal trainings, he should take better care for his summons...

He, could he still summon another monster?

On the other hand, Yue Yang didn't know what was going on in the little miss' mind. He excitedly tried to summon another Spitting Thorny Flower, and then concentrated hard to order the

flower to take root on the ground.

“It’s a success, I could finally did it!” Yue Yang clapped his hands in happiness. Although he was not a genius, he believed that at least he was not mediocre.

Seeing all of these, Yue Bing almost fell on the ground.

And thus, the astounded sister and the fake brother started to have this banter.

“San-ge, didn’t you just contracted the grimoire? I say, you have only successfully contracted the grimoire a few days ago, right?” The shocked Yue Bing asked agitatedly.

“Yeah, that’s right.” Yue Yang nodded as he replied.

“Then what level are you now? Are you a Level 1 [Apprentice], or a level 2 [Braveman]?” Yue Bing asked again.

“Level 1 Apprentice.” Yue Yang replied truthfully.

“You are a Level 1 [Apprentice] of what rank? Beginner Rank, Intermediate Rank or Advanced Rank? How far are you from Level 2? What I meant is, did you perhaps leveled up to Level 2 without knowing and had became a Beginner Rank [Braveman]?” Yue Bing asked, full of curiosity.

“No, how could it be that fast. Take a look, I’m definitely a Beginner Rank Level 1 [Apprentice]. Leveling to level 2 is extremely hard, that I know.” Although Yue Yang had only been here for a few days, he understood that more or less from the knowledge provided by the summoning grimoire. He turned his Copper Grimoire to his stats page to let Yue Bing see his level and rank by herself. After confirming what she heard, the little miss felt a little faint as she asked, “San-ge, a Level 1 [Apprentice] could only summon one monster in one day, how could you have summoned two?”

“Ah...” Yue Yang scratched his head, “Actually I did not summon two.”

“You didn’t? then what is this?” Yue Bing pointed at the Spitting Thorny Flower that had just been summoned by Yue Yang. Was she only dreaming?

“That was the withered Spitting Thorny Flower I summoned previously.” Yue Yang felt weird. Was there something wrong?

“Even if it was that same plant, it has already withered and died, so you should not be able to summon it today anymore. How could you summon it again?” Yue Bing was so confused that she almost fainted. Could it be that her San-ge was a genius that only come once in a thousand years, which only exist in legends? According to the legends, there exist a genius who had an abnormal growth, who could summon any of his contracted monsters twice.

However, such a talent, let alone in a hundred years, even if it was a thousand years, it was hard to come by.



Could it be that her San-ge was such a talent?

Yue Bing looked at Yue Yang again with a different light. She saw a talent with abnormal abilities.

Yue Yang didn't know that he was different from the others. He tried to explain in confusion, "Actually, the flower did not die. Just now when I first summoned the flower, I divided it into two. I left its main body and only summoned out one of its branch. But the main body and the summoned part has equal powers. Just now the branch had died, but its main body still exist, so it was not affected...Of course, this type of summoning would require strenuous effort..."

"What are you saying? You knew how to do a [Division Propagation] summon?" Yue Bing felt the sky around her turned dark.

# Chapter 9 – The Guy Who Was Up To No Good

---

“Ah, didn’t the flower has the abilities [Poison Spit], [Take Root], [Division Propagation], [Corpse Feeding] and [Spores]? I can’t use [Corpse Feeding] as there are no corpses around right now, and [Spores] require the flower to be of higher level. That’s why I used [Division Propagation]. Wahh! What are you doing?” Yue Yang was flustered as Yue Bing had suddenly grabbed his sleeves tightly.

“You understood [Division Propagation]? Did I hear correctly?” Yue Bing was so agitated that her whole face was red as she grabbed Yue Yang’s sleeves tightly. Her eyes glared at Yue Yang as she interrogated him.

Amongst the plant category, most of the monsters would have the [Division Propagation] ability.

Especially the flowers, vines and mushrooms types. Almost all of them could propagate. However, other plant types such as trees and bamboos may not be able to.

The teachers in the academy would only teach students how to use the skills [Take Root] and [Poison Spit], but [Division Propagation] was not that easy to teach. Some teachers may not even mention the existence of this skill. Yue Bing had seen it executed before, which was the reason why she knew about [Division Propagation]. She had asked her teacher to teach her before, but that greedy bastard hinted that she would need to at least pay him 50 gold before he would be willing to teach her the hidden, almost cheat-like skill. Unfortunately, all of the family’s

fortune had been used to buy the Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill from the Floating Mist Market for Yue Yang.

Having no funds, Yue Bing could only refuse this bribing offer. Hence, she never had the chance to learn the [Division Propagation] skill.

And now, the one who was labeled as a loser could actually execute such a hidden skill without being thought by any teacher.

How could this not agitate her?

“Third Brother, teach me! Teach me how to make this plants do [Division Propagation]!” Yue Bing was excited beyond belief as she shook Yue Yang’s sleeves as hard as she could.

“Alright...First, let me go...Calm down...” Yue Yang was nervous. He thought, this little miss was too eager to learn. Alright, since she had taught him just now, it was his turn to teach her. “Seventh Sister, it is actually very easy. It’s just like normal summoning. First use telepathy and synchronize with the Spirit Beast as one, to the point where you sort of feel that you can totally control the beast summoning. Then command it to execute [Division Propagation]. However, at this point, you should be sure that you have enough spirit power. Then the flower should give you an image, like there were two thorny flower plants, one should be the main body while the other is the secondary body. You should then visualize leaving the image of the main body in your mind and summon the secondary body out...As long as your spirit power is enough and the image of the main body you hold in your mind doesn’t change, then you would have the power to use [Division

Propagation] to summon the flower unlimited times. However, that requires a lot of effort, your brain will be a mess. It's difficult to bear."

Yue Yang told her what the Copper Grimoire had taught him when the knowledge of the Spitting Thorny Flower came into his mind. He also included his own experience.

He knew that even in the Plant Category, there should be an even greater hidden knowledge.

Right now his level was too low, just an Apprentice, hence he couldn't pull out all of those knowledge.

Maybe, he thought, he could understand all of these knowledge because he had the [Divine Vision] skill. That's why he could see through the flower's hidden ability. Otherwise, how could the little miss who had studied for so many years in the Academy, also known as a true genius, had not learnt the [Division Propagation] skill?

"Oh, okay, I'm going to try it immediately." This time it was Yue Bing's turn to act like an eager student as she nodded her head vigorously, her face showing an excited expression.

"Go about it slowly, don't rush it..." Yue Yang had not even finished his sentence before the little miss placed her hands on the flower illustration. She closed her eyes and imagined, testing it out.

There wasn't any reaction for quite a long while and Yue Yang had thought that he taught her wrongly.

Suddenly, Yue Bing's expressions changed into pain as she turned deathly white.

Her small hands started to tremble.

This continued for around a minute, before a golden light started to glow at her fingers. Two Spitting Thorny Flowers appeared in front of her at the same time. The one on the left looked somewhat taller than the right, and its trunk was also slightly thicker. However, other than this, the two plants looked more or less the same, no matter the colour, shape or movements. Their differences were negligible. At these, Yue Bing's forehead started to be drenched with sweat. It was as if she had won a great battle.

She opened her eyes, wiped away the sweat with her hands and gasped for breath

Although she looked extremely tired, but her eyes only showed the excitement and joy of succeeding the feat.

"I've succeeded, succeeded! Thank you, Third Brother! I've always wanted to learn [Division Propagation], but there wasn't any teacher who was willing to teach me. Thank you, Third Brother!" Yue Bing thought about the grievances she had suffered in the Academy, and her eyes started to turn a little red.

But the little miss was extremely strong. She did not cry but instead bowed towards Yue Yang.

Yue Yang immediately shook his head and hands, “No, it’s okay. Seventh Sister, if it wasn’t for you who had given me the Spitting Thorny Flower, I wouldn’t even know about such a skill...”

When he said that, Yue Bing immediately snapped out from her excitement.

That’s right, didn’t Third Brother just gotten the Spitting Thorny Flower monster? How could he know about [Division Propagation]?

Seeing the little miss looking at him with a weird gaze, Yue Yang was deeply confused. He hurriedly tried to lie to her, “Seventh Sister, it’s like this. My Innate Skill is [Camouflage]. This meant that I can find out monsters hidden abilities and attributes. But my skill is only at level one, I can only find out the hidden abilities that were Beginner Ranked.”

“Indeed, I didn’t see your skills just now, so I didn’t notice that. I didn’t know that Third Brother’s skill was such a godly [Camouflage] skill!” Even if Yue Bing was a genius, she was still a teenager. She easily believed Yue Yang’s lie.

“Yeah, but you should never tell others, otherwise, they might get jealous.” Yue Yang was a low-key person and he didn’t like to be the centre of attention. His biggest dream was to be a shut-in millionaire. (TLN: Lol me too!)

“Third Brother, just now, did you say that the flower had the [Corpse Feeding] and [Spore] skills other than [Poison Spit], [Take Root] and [Division Propagation]?” Yue Bing had now truly become Yue Yang’s student. After learning the [Division Propagation] skill that she had very much coveted for many years, she thirsted to learn the other two abilities. Yue Yang only knew now that the knowledge he had was even deeper than a student who had spent four years learning in the Academy.

Yue Yang wanted to put his nose up on the air, wore a scholar robe and grow a long beard, then listened to the beautiful miss Yue Bing sweetly calling him Teacher Yue.

However, after he had finished his imagination, his mischievous nature returned.

Although Yue Bing did not meant him any harm, but if he told her everything, he wouldn’t feel right. He was obviously a shameless bastard, how could he be nice towards her for free?

Thus, Yue Yang decided to keep the secret of the thorny flower hidden.

“The thorny flower’s [Corpse Feeding] ability enable it to swallow a monster corpse whole and digest it slowly. When commanding the flower to commence with [Corpse Feeding], you would be required to be fully synchronized with it. For example, if you ordered the flower to eat an Iron Fur Mice, you yourself must be willing to eat the Iron Fur Mice in your mind.”

Ordering the flower to execute [Corpse Feeding] was nothing much, but did she had to be willing to eat the mice herself?

When the little miss thought about that, she almost puked.

Actually, the guy who was up to no good had used a mouse as an example on purpose. With regards to the [Corpse Feeding] ability, it was definitely not that simple. He had kept the real method secret.



# Chapter 10 – Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen

---

“Hahaha!” Yue Yang was secretly laughing. With his mice example, he managed to hid the secret skills of the [Spitting Thorny Flower].

If the flower feed on corpses that were not suitable for it, it would never evolve.

[Corpse Feeding] allows the flower to to gain a huge amount of energy for recovery. This was extremely beneficial, especially in the long term. The flower had the ability to store excess energy it absorbed from corpses in its body. They would be stored in its fruits, which was called the [Thorny Flower Fruit]. Each and every fruit would hang on the thorny flower, and they had the ability to replenish the flower’s power that was consumed during battle, at any point of time. However, if the [Spitting Thorny Flower] wanted to evolve from [Corpse Feeding], they would have to feed from corpses that had the most suitable attributes to it. The higher the level, the better it would be.

When the flower feed from corpses, there is a big secret to it.

If the flower had absorbed a living thing that had the same attributes in the beginning, then it would not become a “variation”, it would only gain levels.

Conversely, if the flower had absorbed a living thing that did not have the same attributes (e.g. a human body) in the first

absorption, it would not gain levels, but it would evolve to become a “variant”.

Almost all of the monsters in the Soaring Dragon Continent were normal monsters. Only a few monsters would undergo evolution to become a “variation” under certain conditions.

Monsters that had gone through “variation” would be much stronger than normal monsters.

Such “variant” monsters could more easily evolve into an elite monster. When it evolved to an elite monster, its abilities would greatly increase. Similar to the grimoire rankings, the elite monsters ranks are divided into copper, silver, gold, platinum and diamond, five different types of ranks. Every time an elite monster raise in rank, its powers would increase by ten fold. Let alone platinum and diamond ranked monsters, even having a copper ranked monsters was something only normal people could dream of all their lives.

“I think I’ll give up on [Corpse Feeding]...Anyway my Guardian Spirit Beast is not the thorny flower, it’s a [Treant Warrior]. I would only use the thorny flower to practice controlling technique anyway, I’ve never used it for battle.” Yue Bing shook her head as she quickly refused. She couldn’t even stand the thought of eating an Iron Fur Mice, let alone wanting to eat it!

“Such a pity,” Yue Yang laughed inside, he knew that the little miss had lost interest in the [Corpse Feeding] skill.

“San-ge, could you teach me the [Spore] skill instead?” Yue Bing was definitely a bright and eager student, she did not have any ill intentions like his fake brother.

“This is only a skill that a thorny flower who had reached level 4 [Thorny Flower Overlord] could do. Even when a [Spitting Thorny Flower] evolved into a level 2 [Carnivorous Thorny Flower] or a level 3 [Giant Thorny Flower], it still wouldn’t have the [Spore] ability. Only when it has reached level 4 and became a [Thorny Flower Overlord], it could disperse its parasitic [Spores].(TLN: I wanna be, the very best...) These spores would stick on corpses and turn them into [Spitting Thorny Flowers]. If the opponent was a living person, the the spores would enter into the person and devour his internal organs, sucking in his blood. Then it will evolve into a [Carnivorous Thorny Flower] and came out from the person’s body by tearing his stomach apart.” When Yue Yang explained it in that way, the little miss could only cringe as she was unable to endure it anymore.

She was thoroughly traumatized when she thought of a spore entering a person through the mouth, devoured his internal organs and then crawling back out.

A grotesque [Carnivorous Thorny Flower] forcing its way out of a previously healthy person, such a traumatizing scene...

That, that was so frightening!

Although Yue Bing was a genius teenager, her mental age was still a fifteen year old girl. Her pure and naive heart was deeply disturbed with such bloody images.

Of course, Yue Yang had purposely described it with such vivid words.

The real use for [Spores] was not to kill people. Who would be so foolish as to stand still and let the spores take root on their bodies? The main purpose for these spores was to break down corpses. There are some special monsters that would turn into zombies when they die, or resurrect again with several conditions. For example, the monsters in Water Category and Fire Category could be resurrected under a summoner's special skill.

As the owner of the thorny flower, one would not be able to survive against these in a battle.

The thorny flower's [Spores] could finally be used in this kind of scenario.

It could parasitize these monsters corpses and turn them fully into [Spitting Thorny Flowers], interrupting their revival. This interception would definitely weaken the other party's fighting strength.

With regards to parasitizing on living people, it was actually something very difficult to do.

Furthermore, rather than having the spores parasitize on them, wouldn't it be better to order the [Overlord Thorny Flower] to gobble that unlucky person up? Who knows, maybe the [Overlord Thorny Flower] could evolve another rank.

“Thank you Third Brother. Plant type monsters were already the weakest among the monsters, and this thorny flower is the weakest of the weak. It will be difficult to train it into a level 4 [Overlord Thorny Flower]. It’s best if we leave it at that. You should focus more on training your own Guardian Spirit Beast, because that would suit your training the most...What? You couldn’t summon your Guardian Spirit Beast? Ahh... Maybe you are just like me, the oddballs amongst summoners...What a pity. If only Third Brother has the talent to summon other monsters like you have summoned the thorny flower, then your future will be limitless. Such a pity...” When Yue Bing heard about Yue Yang’s inability to summon his Guardian Spirit Beast, she was greatly saddened for him.

She quickly comforted him by assuring him that his Guardian Spirit Beast was definitely the most suitable monster for him.

He might not be able to summon it right now because his spirit level was not high enough.

He could simply raise his spirit level slowly, and there wouldn’t be any problems in the future.

Yue Bing also said that element-type summons require a lot of conditions to summon. In the Academy, she had heard stories about how some of the element-type students couldn’t summon their own Guardian Spirit Beasts in the beginning. She had only wanted to take a load off Yue Yang’s mind. How could she know that her fake brother’s Guardian Spirit Beast was actually a special-type monster, [Phantom Shadow], and not an element-type beast?

Furthermore, with the current spirit level in Yue Yang's body, he should be able to summon the [Phantom Shadow].

He had summoned it two days ago, but kept it a secret.

“Such a pity, Third Brother, your talent are just as useless as mine, the plant-type that has no future. And you could only summon a thorny flower...” Yue Bing shook her head slowly as she sighed. In her mind, thorny flower was the weakest amongst the monsters. It was the monster that was used by the Academy as a teaching tool, so it was fated that there wouldn't be much growth.

“It's alright. As long as I work hard, no matter what kind of monster, even if it's just a weak thorny flower, it would be extremely strong when it reached level 10 and above.”

Seeing the miss became so sad for him, Yue Yang couldn't help but to comfort her with his words.

Actually, based on the knowledge he got from the grimoire, he understood an extremely important point. That is, plant-type monsters might look weak on the outside, however, in reality, it was not weak at all. It was in no way inferior to the most sought-after monsters such as the and beast-type and bird-type monsters. The plant-type monsters appeared to be the weakest one, but on the contrary, it had a huge potential for growth, something that other monster types don't have.

Should there be the king of plant-type monster, it would be this

thorny flower that people had looked down upon.



Three thousand years ago, there was a Ranker called the “Thorny Flower Fairy”, who had evolved her thorny flower to its maximum evolution stage. The thorny flower’s last stage of evolution turned out to be a human like [Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen]. When demons tried to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent, it was this Thorny Flower Fairy and her Thorny Flower Queen who had slaughtered three of the Demon Kings. The flower had also gobbled more than five thousand demon troops. The boundless sea of flower that the Flower Queen had created became a nightmare for the demons. Even the unbeatable Black Dragon Demon King would ran away with tails between his legs at the sight of the Thorny Flower Fairy.

This Thorny Flower Fairy was the only human being who had

the strength to resist and massacre the strong warriors of the invading Demon Legion.



Unfortunately, her lover died in the battle. The Thorny Flower Fairy couldn't bear her loneliness and had chosen to be together with her lover instead.

In the future generations, there had been no one that could uncover the Thorny Flower's secrets.

Countless Rankers had tried, but none could make the thorny flower evolve into a Mythical-Ranked "Humanoid Mythical Beast". In the end, people could only helplessly gave up researching on the thorny flower. On the other hand, beast-types and animal-types, these monsters who had great advantage in the beginning, quickly increased in their popularity with people. And thus, plant-typed monsters lost its former glory and had been long forgotten as the strongest "Humanoid Mythical Beast" who had massacred thousands of demons during the Demonic Legion invasion. It even become the Academy's teaching tool.

"That's right, we warriors should strive for self-improvement



continuously. We must persevere. Third Brother, thank you.” Yue Bing nodded, looking like a model student again as she bowed respectfully towards Yue Yang. “Third Brother, I will go back for today. We can continue our training tomorrow.”

Seeing the little miss retreating back, Yue Yang mumbled to himself, “Since no one cared about this insignificant thorny flower, I’m gonna raise a [Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen]!”

# Chapter 11 – Treasure On A Silver Platter

---

After another week, the beautiful woman's husband, Yue Ling, still had not come back. But he had sent a servant back.

According to this servant, the Yue Clan's Castle was now bustling with excitement. There were lanterns and banners decoration everywhere, and guests filled the house to the doors.

The reason was that the Second Branch Family son, Yue Feng, had successfully contracted a grimoire at six years old. Even the Four Great Sects had come to their house to offer him a place at their Schools. Other than the Fairy Spirit Pavilion who only took in women, Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace, Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect, Western Lion Pagoda and Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion, had all sent people to offer him a place. Even the Emperor and Empress had sent people to congratulate them. All of the government officials had also come to pay their respects. Every member of the Yue Family Clan was busy with the social interactions, even Yue Ling had to remain behind to help out.

With regards to the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] that costs a thousand gold, the Lord of Yue Clan had ordered Yue Ling to give it to Yue Feng as a present.

“Since little Ninth was offered a place with the East, South, West, these three Great Sects, why didn't grandpa (the Yue Clan Lord) and Second Uncle send someone to inform us to join their celebration?” Yue Bing paled when she heard the news. Although she was still young, she had already understood a few of worldly wisdom.

“It’s okay, it’s just a banquet. It doesn’t matter if we don’t go. As long as our San-er can be successful in the future, everything’s okay.” The beautiful woman’s eyes were a little red.

The main house had now shown their contempt to her Fourth Branch Family clearly, but she was not disheartened.

Even as the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] that they had given all their wealth to buy was snatched away by the Second Branch Family, her heart was not dejected.

This was because, she felt, she had gotten all her life’s wish. It was that her San-er had successfully contracted a grimoire. As long as he had a grimoire, he would have great prospects in the future. With regards to whether the Lord of Yue Clan invited them to the celebration banquet, she did not care at all. Although she felt a little wronged and a little sad with this public act of contempt, but she could resign herself to these adversities, cheer up and get over them.

“...” Yue Yang was astonished deep in his heart. Contracting the grimoire at the age of six, he knew very clear what this signifies.

If we take students as an example, people who had successfully contracting a grimoire was like a student who managed to pass the college exam and entered Harvard. If nothing happened in the future, he would probably have a great future.

Amongst the teenagers in the Soaring Dragon Continent, 99% of

them wouldn't be able to contract a grimoire. Only a handful of talents would be able to do it.

Furthermore, amongst the grimoire users, most of the people would only be able to contract the grimoire at the age of fifteen and above.

Taking the students example, it was like successfully passing the college entrance exam at the age of fifteen. This time, Yue Feng had managed to do it at the age of six. No wonder this event had caused the whole clan to celebrate madly, royal families' blessings, and even place offerings at the Four Great Sects. Of course, Yue Yang didn't really envy him. He knew clearly what he had. He had the Twin Star Innate Skill, the secret to evolving the [Spitting Thorny Flower] into [Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen], and that he could summon his Guardian Spirit Beast [Phantom Shadow] for a period of up to ten days.

Most importantly, Yue Yang had an [Innate] skill that even the top rankers of the Soaring Dragon Continent could only wish to learn, the [Innate Invisible Sword Qi].

As long as he could complete his training, he could enter the [Innate] realm.

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, a Level 7 Ranker could start training to enter the [Innate] realm with a Holy Spirit Beast's help. But only a Level 8 Ranker and above could truly say that they are an [Innate] Ranker. Then, how many true [Innate] Rankers are there in this world? People who were as strong as that old Daoist Priest that exist in this world, could be counted with one hand.

Even if they exist, they were all grandpas over hundreds of years old that just couldn't die.

Taking students in modern times as example, the genius Yue Feng who managed to make the whole clan celebrate, received the royal family blessings, and offered places in the Four Great Sects, was like a six year old who managed to pass Harvard entrance exams. On the other hand, Yue Yang was like someone who had never taken any Harvard entrance exams or studied at Harvard, but immediately graduated and started his Master's degree instead.

“Fourth Madam, Fourth Master luck was not that good. When he tried to pick a monster for Third Master in a lucky draw, he only drew this.” The old servant was a little uneasy as he said this. He knelt on the ground and kowtowed a few times, then offered the beautiful woman an embroidered box with trembling hands.



“Quintet Puppet Mice? This, isn’t this a sham? This Quintet Puppet Mice were all level 1 special-type monsters, other than scouting, they had no use at all! Furthermore, even if it is a one-monster-contract, it’s equivalent to contracting five monsters at once, it could only waste the pages in the grimoire. There are countless high quality puppet-type monsters in the Clan’s treasury, there is the level 3 Bronze Battle Wolf and the level 4 Silver Battle Tiger. Why did grandpa give us this monster? Is this First Uncle’s and Second Uncle’s scheme? What gives them the right to give this to Third Brother?” Yue Bing snatched the box and opened it, her face turning pale at once. Her voice sharply turned high-pitched, as she became unusually furious.

“Bing-er, you shouldn’t be rude to your elders.” The beautiful

woman gently reminded her.

She then turned towards Yue Yang and said, “San-er, if this monster is not good, then we could simply don’t contract it. Don’t bury too much grievances in your heart. As the grandson of the Yue Clan, no matter what your elders gave you, they are blessings. You should be grateful for their favour. Don’t be affected by pressures from the outside world too much, and try to improve yourself continuously. This should be the way we live our lives.”

Yue Bing looked down, she still felt that the Clan wasn’t fair towards her family and was indignant.

When Yue Yang took the embroidered box, a flow of information suddenly flashed through his mind, letting him understand everything about the Quintet Puppet Mice.

Six hundred years ago, the Quintet Puppet Mice was created by one of the Three Renaissance Hero, the Ghost Genius Yue Gong. The Yue Clan had become weaker with every generation because of the loss of more than half of the Yue Clan Spear Technique. At this time, three geniuses were born and together, they revived the Yue Clan. Thus, the younger generations of the Yue Clan had dubbed them as the Three Renaissance Hero. It was them who had saved the Yue Clan from drowning, once again reinstating the Yue Clan’s glory as one of the unshaken Four Major Clans. One of them was the Ghost Genius Yue Gong, world renowned for the special-type monsters in the puppet category he specialized in. Outsiders might not know about Yue Clan’s Spear Technique, might not know about the Earth Bear, a strengthening-type monster that was passed down the generations of Yue family, and they might also

not know about [Wu Mu Art of War] technique that only the Yue Clan Lord could learn. But the whole world would definitely know that the Yue Clan specialised in puppet-type Spirit Beasts.

No matter if they were mercenaries, warriors, blacksmiths, merchants or even the low ranked soldiers in the army, they all admired and respected the Ghost Genius Yue Gong.

This was because this Ghost Genius Yue Gong wrote a lot about the puppet-type monsters. This had allowed people to choose a suitable puppet-type monster and use them effortlessly, be it in their lives or in battles. It had created an enormous difference in their convenience and efficiency.

This Ghost Genius Yue Gong was rewarded by the Royal Families the title of “Work of Gods” and was worshipped as one of the three [Sages] in their Hall. The commoners had even dubbed him the “ancestor of all Mechanical Puppets”.

How could such an outstanding person created such a useless Quintet Puppet Mice? This question had baffled the Clan’s people for a long time.

Unfortunately, this Ghost Genius had a weak body and always overworked himself, hence he died at a young age in the Puppet Palace. He did not have the chance to complete his lifetime’s wish of a “Puppet Grimoire”, and also left a lot of puppet-type monsters that no one could understand. For example, one of them was this Quintet Puppet Mice, that the Ghost Genius had treasured regardless of its uselessness.



The clans member didn't dare to speculate too much, they only thought that the Ghost Genius had particularly loved the Quintet Puppet Mice because it was one of his maiden works, hence he had special feelings for them.

In these six hundred years, there was no one who were willing to accept the Quintet Puppet Mice, the useless monsters that would only take up the pages in the grimoire.

Until today, where they were unfortunately won by Fourth Uncle Yue Ling's bad luck, and fell unto Yue Yang's hands.

"Since this is an elder's blessing, I wouldn't dare to reject this Quintet Puppet Mice. I will accept it, thank you Fourth Uncle, and thank you for your teaching, Fourth Aunt." Yue Yang acted like an obedient child on the outside, but if not for knowing that the Quintet Puppet Mice was a treasure with his [Divine Vision], it would be world's end if he was willing to accept it. Right now, this treasure that everyone would seek but fail to find was thrown on a silver platter right in front of him, of course he would be secretly exalted.

"Heavens have eyes, they would definitely open a path for San-er." Seeing Yue Yang being so obedient, the beautiful woman was truly happy. She quickly nodded and praised him.

"Third brother, don't contract it at all cost. The Quintet Puppet Mice looked the same as other monster summons on the surface, but once it was contracted successfully, it would take up five places

in the grimoire for the Five Elemental Mouse: Metal, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth. In a Copper Grimoire, there were only ten pages. You have spent the first three pages, since you even have the useless [Spitting Thorny Flower]. You would only have two pages left. Listen to me, Third Brother, this is a plot by some people..... They are afraid that you would be successful, they are afraid that we the Fourth Branch would become stronger than them. You should never form a contract with this Quintet Puppet Mice!” Yue Bing was flustered as she took Yue Yang’s hands, forbidding him to create a contract with the Quintet Puppet Mice.

## Chapter 12 – Quintet Seeking Golden Mice

---

“Bing-er, what nonsense are you talking about? What do you mean by ‘they are afraid that we will be stronger than them’? We are one family, so we must be united and live in harmony.” The beautiful woman glared at her daughter.

However, she was also afraid that Yue Yang wouldn’t know what was important and contracted the Quintet Puppet Mice in a moment of rashness.

Moving closer, she placed her snow white hands on Yue Yang’s shoulders, “San-er, let’s leave the Quintet Puppet Mice alone first. Let’s research them carefully, we can still contract them when we understand their abilities. Uncle Zhong, please return to the Lord of Yue and deliver him the Fourth Branch’s daughter-in-law and San-er’s gratitude for this reward. If San-er became famous in the future, he will definitely return this act of kindness. He will not let the efforts that the Lord had poured into raising him be wasted.”

Listening to the beautiful woman’s words, the servant, known as Uncle Zhong, nodded his head and assured her that he would do as she said. Then, he bowed to her respectfully as he took out a signed piece of banknote decorated with silver lines.

This money was the Yue Clan’s reward from the elders for every family member who had successfully contracted a grimoire.

With this piece of signed banknote, Yue Yang could go to any bank in the big cities to withdraw one hundred gold.

A hundred gold, that was not a small amount of money.

Since he was offered money, Yue Yang would naturally accept it without feeling bad. However, Yue Bing felt that it was not fair. She knew that the official amount of reward is a hundred gold, but in reality, when the members from the First and the Second Branch succeeded in contracting a grimoire, they would receive at least 150 gold, some would even receive 200 gold. Even she herself received 120 gold. Now that it was Third Brother's turn, why did he only receive the minimum amount of a hundred gold?

This, doesn't this show their disdain towards him?

"Seventh Sister, don't be angry. Receiving a hundred gold reward is already not that bad." Yue Yang thought that since he was not even the real pitiful guy in the first place, he should be grateful to receive the reward with his fake identity.

With regards to the Clan's people cold treatment towards such a kind-hearted and virtuous daughter-in-law, Yue Yang felt that he should go to the castle and teach these arrogant people a lesson one day, once he had attained all of his skills. He should avenge all of the grievances that this Fourth Branch daughter-in-law had received throughout the years, in order to pay back the boundless love she had showered upon him all this time.

Although he was not the pitiful guy in reality, he had deeply felt her love towards the pitiful guy.

Although he didn't say it out loud, Yue Yang was already planning to avenge the beautiful woman's grievances.

After the old servant, Uncle Zhong, left, Yue Bing warned Yue Yang again. She told him not to contract the Quintet Puppet Mice under any condition. Those monsters were just trash that would only waste the limited pages of the Copper Grimoire.

Yue Yang nodded on the outside, but he was actually thrilled inside.

The Quintet Puppet Mice, one of the Ghost Genius Yue Gong's invention, was probably the most amazing Puppet Monster that the genius had ever created. How could it be trash? Furthermore, the Quintet Puppet Mice could unite as one and would only take up one page of the Copper Grimoire. However, nobody understood the Quintet Puppet Mice hidden ability, so they could only separate these mice into five different bodies. Separating them into five different bodies was actually the most foolish thing to do for this monster.

In reality, this Quintet Puppet Mice actually had a different name.

Its original name was actually the "Quintet Seeking Golden Mice". It had the ability to seek and discover any kind of ores, goods and artifacts, pitfalls and traps, and even identify different kinds of force fields.

For example, if there was a gold mine, they would be able to

detect it within an area of a hundred feet.

Another example, if there was a buried treasure or forgotten godly weapons buried underground, they would also be able to detect it...

Most importantly, this Quintet Seeking Golden Mice would be able to use their abilities in any kind of terrain and situation, as long as they were within the attributes of wood, water, fire, earth and metal. It did not matter if it was inside a hot burning molten lava nor an icy cold waters, the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice would have a special machinery in its body to counter those situations. At the same time, as they were all level one puppet monsters, they had zero attacking power and vitality. Hence, even in Spirit Beasts Fights, they wouldn't be attacked.

It could be said that this five mice were a priceless treasure for item identification and treasure hunt!

On the other hand, even during Spirit Beasts fights, they could still be used to find hidden traps and force field barriers.

If they weren't so amazing, why would the Ghost Genius Yue Gong love them so much?

Yue Yang sighed. The later generations didn't recognize such a treasure and had treated them as rubbish for hundreds of years. It was really a sad joke.

Of course, even though Yue Yang knew the secret of the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice, he would never say it out. He only smiled and nodded his head, and promised Yue Bing that he wouldn't contract the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice.



Yue Yang waited until the beautiful woman and Yue Bing had left, and then quickly contracted the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice. With a flash of a golden light, five cute little mice, all with different colours, appeared on the fourth page of the Copper Grimoire. In the middle, the five elements metal, wood, water, fire and earth formed a circle and flowed together in perfect harmony. On the perimeters of this circle, the illustration of five adorable little mice puppets was beautifully drawn, their tails connecting together to form an outer circle.

“Alright, let's see if there's any treasure buried around here...” When Yue Yang tried to summon the five mice, he discovered that they could be summoned altogether. They were not limited by the daily one-summon limit.

A golden light flashed and the five little puppet mice appeared, all with different colours.



Then, all of the mice had gathered at a specific place in the room, squeaking noisily.

On an empty space at the fourth page of the grimoire, a line of words magically appeared, “Gold Detected, Amount: Little. Jade Stone Artifact Detected. Amount of powers contained in the Artifact: Huge...”

Yue Yang was elated beyond belief.

He had always wondered if the pitiful guy who had committed suicide had some valuables hidden, because he couldn’t find a single piece of gold in his room. The pitiful guy couldn’t have drowned together with all of his savings, right? His savings should be somewhere in this house, but Yue Yang didn’t know where the pitiful guy could have hidden his savings in. He couldn’t find them even after searching for more than half a month. Now everything would be fine. Once the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice was dispatched, he was able to find the pitiful guy’s valuables. But the thing that had made Yue Yang even happier was that these mice even had the ability to deduce the quantity and general descriptions of the items that they found. Their abilities were not as simple as finding a hidden treasure.



With these five little monsters, his treasure hunting days in the future would be a breeze.

Yue Yang dug up a wooden chest that was hidden under the place that was shown by the mice. Opening the chest, indeed, he found all of the pitiful guy's 'inheritance'.

It was a total of 15 gold and 62 silvers. There were also a few hundred copper coins inside a small pouch. Other than that, there were also the pitiful guy's toys and clothes when he was young, and two diaries left by his parents. There was also an ordinary looking necklace with a black coloured jade pendant.



If not for the deduction abilities that the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice had, Yue Yang wouldn't have believed that this ordinary looking jade pendant was an artifact that contained a huge amount of power.

Even with Yue Yang's [Divine Vision] skill, he still couldn't find out any information about this necklace.

“This, this should be an heirloom that the pitiful guy’s parents had left behind for him. It was a pity that they had died young and did not manage to explain its powers to the pitiful guy. The pitiful guy must not have known that this pendant was an artifact, treating it as rubbish and placing it together with his old toys and clothes. Alright, it is mine now!” Yue Yang had been worried that he did not possess anything that could prove that he was the pitiful guy. Now he could prove it with the black jade pendant, so he immediately wore it on his neck.

Keeping the gold and the diaries, he left the old toys and clothes in the box and buried them under the ground again.

Flipping through the pitiful guy’s parents’ diaries, there were only mundane words such as how they were missing their son and their lives’ ups and downs. However, with Yue Yang’s [Divine Vision], he deduced that these two diaries were not that simple.

They had probably used some concealing potion or some secret spell to record an important information.

It was a pity that Yue Yang’s [Divine Vision] level was too low to break through the concealment.

“Thank you, two elders. I will cherish the fruits of your labour.” The shameless NEET held the two books in his embrace. He had already regarded himself as their own son.

Taking over all of the pitiful guy’s wealth, Yue Yang was especially in good mood.

He also had a peaceful sleep and a sweet dream.

In the sweet dream, the Sword Goddess that he missed day and night mysteriously appeared, after disappearing for quite a few days.

## Chapter 13 – Target: Innate Realm

---

The Sword Goddess didn't see the overjoyed Yue Yang, it was like she couldn't see Yue Yang at all.



Her lily-white soft hands was holding that black jade pendant, her eyes observing it curiously...However, before Yue Yang could run towards her with arms stretched, shouting “My Waifu!”, she suddenly disappeared into thin air.

Yue Yang could only pick up the black jade pendant that she left behind. He was surprised to feel a huge amount of energy from the black jade pendant, boundless like the ocean.

At the same time, as he jumped from the shock of the energy he felt, a sudden thought came into his mind. Could it be that the Sword Goddess had helped him to break the seal of the black jade pendant?

With the black jade pendant, Yue Yang's training in his dreams proceeded with twice the effect. Wearing the pendant, he could absorb the [Spiritual Energy] from the earth and the atmosphere very easily. Furthermore, he could even absorb the abundant Spiritual Energy stored up inside the pendant itself.

This time, he managed to absorb ten times more energy than he could ever have in his dreams before.

Unconsciously, his second energy channel, the Heart Meridian, was now linked together. Yue Yang thought that at this rate, he would be able to link all of the 12 energy channels in his body in less than a month. Once he managed that, he would be able to complete his [Innate Invisible Sword Qi]'s first stage, and truly enter the Innate Realm.

(TLN: Explanation about the skill: This skill is called "Invisible Sword Qi", it is of the [Innate] Rank, the highest rank among skill OP-ness. In order to master the "Invisible Sword Qi", one would need to master X amount of stages – that has not been explained. Currently, Yue Yang is trying to master the first stage of the "Invisible Sword Qi". In order to that, he would need to link all 12 energy channels he has on his body. To link the energy channels, he must absorb spiritual energy from the earth and atmosphere. In chapter 5, Yue Yang managed to link his first energy channel, the Lung Meridian Channel of the Hand Tai-Yin – it's actually a valid acupuncture point in traditional chinese medicine. This allowed him to condense spiritual energy in his fingers and shoot it out like a bullet. Now, he managed to link the second energy channel, the Heart Meridian Channel of Hand Shao-Yin. Once he managed to link all 12 energy channels, he would be able to say that he learnt an [Innate] ranked skill, (since it's like Invisible Sword Qi – LV1)

and be known as an [Innate] ranker.)

When Yue Yang woke up the next morning, he discovered something weird.

When he look at the black jade pendant that he wore on his neck, it still looked as ordinary as it was previously. It was still thoroughly pitch black, unlike its appearance in his dreams. He also couldn't feel the boundless body of pure Spiritual Energy he felt in his dreams...Could it be that he could only use the pendant in his dreams? Or could it be that this pendant's seal could only be broken by the Sword Goddess inside his dreams?

This thing was really full of mystery. Normal people would probably never knew about it or be able to use it. Why would the pitiful guy's parents wanted to leave this for him?

Would there be any information hidden in the two diaries?

What kind of treasure could this piece of black jade pendant be? What could it be actually used for?

No matter how hard he tried to figure it out, Yue Yang still couldn't understand this mysterious black jade pendant.

However, according to Yue Yang's usual thought process, he would simply stop thinking about things that he could not figure out. Anyway, there were already tons of other things that he couldn't figure buried within his mind.

Time passed by.

Yue Yang didn't feel that he changed a lot, but in the eyes of the beautiful woman and Yue Bing, he was changing every single day.

In the period where he absorbed the Spiritual Energy inside the black jade pendant, Yue Yang's body was bursting with health and vigor. His whole body became an inexhaustible source of energy. They had thought that Yue Yang was in a good mood since he had successfully contracted a grimoire, which was the reason why his complexion was good. However, within a few days, Yue Yang's skin suddenly started to peel off. First was the skin in his hands, then his legs and body, and finally his face. Every inch of his skin peeled off to reveal a new skin underneath. After his skin peeled off, Yue Yang's skin became bright and white as jade. They looked as white as Yue Bing's snow white skin. It even glowed with radiance and vigor.

Yue Yang's had also turned even more secretive with the passing of the days.

If the beautiful woman had not seen his growth every day, she would never believe that San-er had changed so much in less than half a month.

"San-er, are you sick? Maybe you should rest a few days, I'm afraid your body will not be able to take it if you trained so hard. Wouldn't you be tired to death this way?" When the beautiful woman first saw Yue Yang shed the skin in his hands, she had

thought that he had contracted some disease. Or maybe he had trained too hard that his body couldn't take it and produced a kind of side effect. In the end, it was only when she saw him looking much better and renewed when he had shed all of his skin, did she somewhat feel at ease. It was almost like watching a caterpillar metamorphosize into a butterfly. She thought that it couldn't be that bad.

"I'm fine, I'm fine..." Yue Yang knew that this was a side effect of stepping into the [Innate] Realm.

Through absorbing a large amount of pure Spiritual Energy from the black jade pendant, he had almost completed mastering the first stage of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi. That would also mean that he had almost reached the [Innate] Realm already. That was the reason why his skin started to peel off and the impurities in his bones and flesh were washed out. It signified a rebirth effect of stepping into the [Innate] Realm.

Skin peeling off and looking full of vigor, these were all the changes that can be seen from the outside.

But Yue Yang's body was turning even stronger, even more powerful and even more perfect with each day on the inside. These were the changes that they could not see.

Furthermore, Yue Yang's muscles were not like those of a bodybuilder's, they simply became even more perfect and healthier. Right now, his muscles were slowly building up, his stomach becoming more taut and there were no more excess fat in his body anymore. His four limbs were still as lanky as before, but



they were getting stronger and tougher with each day. Yue Yang could see it himself when he bathed. Ever since he trained the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi skill, his body was changing everyday.

He became even more perfect with each day.

He didn't have any muscles although he possessed an enormous amount of power. Yue Yang was not that surprised with that kind of change. This was because he had already seen it for himself that the Sword Goddess, even with such a slim and slender hands, could possess such destructive powers. Since he was also training the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, it was normal that he did not build any muscles.

[Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, this was not a simple skill that any third-rate warriors can learn.

Yue Yang was overjoyed every day, as he made improvements with each day.

It was just that this brat kept the whole thing as secret, never saying anything towards the beautiful woman and the others.

Time passed quickly and after a month, Yue Yang finally linked all twelve energy channels; the Hand Tai-Yin, Foot Tai-Yin, Hand Tai-Yang, Foot Tai-Yang, Hand Shao-Yin, Foot Shao-Ying and other energy channels. Yue Yang was currently on the verge of completing [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi's first stage. He was only left with the last step, which was to connect all twelve energy channels together. Only then would he truly complete the first

stage of the skill and enter the [Innate] Realm that every Soaring Dragon's Ranker could only dream of.

Even the most talented Ranker in the Soaring Dragon Continent would need at least a hundred years to be able to step into the [Innate] Realm.

However, the time needed for Yue Yang to complete his training on this [Innate] skill, Invisible Sword Qi, was not even three months. He was able to reach into the realm of [Innate] rankers that normal people would take hundreds of years to train...From this, it could be seen that the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi was indeed an amazing skill.

Taking into example, the Yue Clan's Spear Technique that was widely recognized as a high-leveled technique in the Soaring Dragon Continent, was as simple as a Primary Four or Five textbook to him now who was like someone who had already graduated from University. Now if compared to those third-rate leveled skills that the soldiers learned, it was like kindergarten level to him. Yue Yang reckoned that even if it was a genuine [Innate] ranked skill, if it wasn't lost throughout the generations, they would only be at junior high or high school level. They were totally incomparable to the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi that he had learnt.

Right now, Yue Yang was suddenly curious about the Sword Goddess. Who was she exactly?

Comparing her and the Rankers in this world, then where did she exist and what would her rank be?

“Third Brother, I would need to go back to the city to take the Academy Test. I will depart tomorrow. With regards to the basic summoning technique, you are already quite familiar with it. You could straight away join the second year of the Academy with no problems. Third Brother, the only regretful thing right now is that you still had not summoned your Guardian Spirit Beast “Mist” yet. Training your Guardian Spirit Beast that will never betray you nor disappear is the most important thing to do. After I left, don’t summon the Spitting Thorny Flower anymore, you should buy a better Spirit Beast with that one hundred gold you received. The best kind would be the beast-types or the bird-types such as the Wind Wolf, Flaming Lion, Thunder Bird or Golden Falcon... Aih, if only that [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] was not snatched away by Second Uncle to be used by Little Ninth Brother, Third Brother would have probably succeeded in summoning your Guardian Spirit Beast...They are such a bully. Next year in the Clan’s Match, I would definitely not show them any mercy and teach them all a lesson. Otherwise, Grandfather and these other Clan Elders would just belittle us the Fourth Branch...”

Before Yue Bing departed, she repeatedly warned Yue Yang.

In her heart, she really pitied Yue Yang, because she felt like she was watching herself, a genius who was held in contempt by his own family.

She had suffered much with the Soaring Dragon Continent’s culture of regarding men to be more superior than women, and also the addition of her status as a widow despite her young age. She didn’t dare to protest last time, but Third Brother was now her family’s future. If he was a good-for-nothing, then she wouldn’t

say anything. But he was clearly a genius, yet he was despised by the family and treated so unfairly. These made her felt so wronged.

Yue Yang stroked Yue Bing's head but didn't say anything.

He knew his own capabilities, and that his Guardian Spirit Beast was actually not "Mist" but "Phantom Shadow". He would probably not be able to summon out a "Mist" Guardian Spirit Beast until the world's end.

However, in reality, "Phantom Shadow" was ten times better than "Mist".

He could summon a shadow for an extended period of ten days, which also meant that he could summon ten shadows to overlap with each other. Combining the ten shadows together, it will increase their abilities by 50%. With the addition of completing the training into the [Innate] Realm, even he could not imagine how high his fighting capabilities would rise to.

Seeing Yue Bing off, Yue Yang was in no hurry to buy any kind of Wind Wolf, Flaming Lion, Thunder Bird or Golden Falcon.

In his eyes, Spitting Thorny Flower was so much better than any Wind Wolves or Flaming Lion.

Right now, the most important thing was to complete the first stage training of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi. He was only left with the last step before he could enter the [Innate] realm.

# Chapter 14 – Chaos, Concealed Tracks, Mysterious Secret

---

Once he mastered the first stage of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, he would enter into the [Innate] Realm.

He didn't know about the others, but in this small White Stone City that he lived in, there was definitely no other [Innate] Rankers.

Even if he didn't have enough Spiritual energy and could only use the Invisible Sword Qi technique a few times, with the power of an [Innate] ranked skill, he should be able to defeat all of his opponents with one attack. From the knowledge that he had gotten from the Copper Grimoire, only a Level 6 Elder Rankers and above would be able to endure an [Innate] ranked skill. Even if it was just a simple attack, an [Innate] ranked skill power would be able to break through any low-ranked warrior's skills such as [Protection] or [Body Strengthening].

In the eyes of an [Innate] Ranker, any Rankers below level 6 were all insects that were not even worth to be mentioned.

Of course, there were not many [Innate] Rankers in the world.

That was why, almost all of the Level 6 Elder Rankers were important ministers and officers in the government. They would at least be promoted to a General or even a Marshal rank in the Military. At the very least, they would hold a key position in the government.

For example, in the White Stone City that Yue Yang was living in, the mayor of the city was a level 6-Beginner Junior Elder. The Yue Clan Lord, Elder Yue Hai, the pitiful guy's grandfather, was a level 6-Advanced Senior Elder who was previously knighted by the Emperor as the Great Marshal of the National Military. However, he was old and had numerous injuries from wars, losing both his left arm and right leg, thus he retired from the position and went back to his family.

There was also the pitiful guy's First Uncle Yue San and Second Uncle Yue Ling who were the General and Major Minister of the country respectively. First Uncle Yue San was a level 6-Intermediate Elder while Second Uncle Yue Ling was a level 6-Beginner Junior Elder.

(TLN: those who are confused, every level is divided into 3 sub-ranks, Beginner, Intermediate and Advanced. Each sub-ranks had their own titles. E.g., for level 6, it is:

1. Level 6-Beginner [Junior Elder]
2. Level 6-Intermediate [Elder]
3. Level 6-Advanced [Senior Elder].

For now, the author only mentioned 4 titles so far, that is – Level 1 [Apprentice], Level 2 [Braveman], Level 6 [Elder] and Level 7 [Overlord]. These are ranks for Rankers, different from ranks for Skills – Invisible Sword Qi is a skill that is ranked [Innate], presumably the highest rank among all the skills out there.)

Only the pitiful guy's father, Yue Gang, a talent that comes only once in a hundred years, was able to attain the level 7 rank of

[Overlord], overtaking everyone in the whole clan.

Unfortunately, this talent had passed away fifteen years ago.

As long as Yue Yang mastered the first stage of the Invisible Sword Qi, in theory, he would not need to be afraid of any opponents below level 6... Of course, in a battle, everything would be unpredictable. He could only use the Sword Qi twice currently. With his zero battle experience, Yue Yang felt that he should prioritize his safety and be careful with this secret. Anyway, with more time, he could increase his skill mastery. Only then would his safety be guaranteed.

Sword Qi was an extremely powerful skill, it had the ability to penetrate through any forms of defense. It could even kill his enemies immediately, but he could only use it twice with his current Spiritual Energy Level.

How would he be able to protect himself if he meet three strong opponents at the same time...?

Hence, Yue Yang felt that he shouldn't be too complacent right now, he had to keep a low key.

His current goal was to master the first stage of the Invisible Sword Qi and enter into the [Innate] Realm, becoming an unbeatable opponent for a level 6 ranker and below.

Yue Yang knew that the [Innate] realm was extremely strong and

powerful, but he never thought that there would be such an effect once one had mastered it.

When all twelve energy channels were finally connected to each other, Yue Yang felt his soul shook as his body entered into a state of perfection. It was like he was swimming in an ocean of boundless energy, free as a bird. He felt Spiritual Energy from the earth entering his body from the Yong Quan Acupoint at his feet, and out from the Bai Hui Acupoint at his head. The energy then rose through the clouds until it reached its limit, then it returned back down and entered the Acupoint in his head. The energy from the atmosphere would then flow throughout his body, then exit from the Yong Quan Acupoint on his feet out into the earth. With this cycle, his whole body felt like being washed anew by the energy from the earth and the atmosphere. So this was what “shedding one’s skin” truly meant...At this time, Yue Yang’s body did not feel heavy anymore, instead, he felt that he could fly. His body had become extremely agile and nimble.

Suddenly, the Copper Grimoire flashed brightly and a pillar of golden light shone down from the sky, breaking the darkness of the night.

If Yue Yang had not chosen to train in the middle of the night, everyone within five hundred metres would have seen that pillar of light.





As he entered the [Innate] Realm, Yue Yang felt a surreal feeling in his mind. It was almost godly; a feeling like he could leave the mortal world, reach out his hands and touch the skies or stomp his feet and cause an earthquake...

However, such a feeling only lasts for a few seconds.



The heavenly sound that he heard in his heart when he contracted his grimoire resounded once again as Yue Yang felt that the energy that fully filled his body was sucked away by a mysterious being in his body. Finally, he couldn't endure it

anymore, a “boom” resounded in his head as he fainted to the ground. When he was unconscious, he felt like he saw an illusion of a seven coloured, brightly shining Golden Phoenix descended upon the ground.

As his mind drifted apart, the golden pillar of light shining down on the grimoire also slowly faded into the air.

As the pillar of light disappeared, the Copper Grimoire flew towards Yue Yang side without a sound.



There was no change in the pages.

However, right at the back of his status description – “Level 1- Beginner [Apprentice]”, there was one extra word, [Innate].

Yue Yang slept like a log that night, however, the whole empire of Da Xia was in uproar.

Even the Emperor Jun Wu You was suddenly awakened from his sleep and he quickly went to the Imperial Hall, where a State Elder and two Heavenly Imperial Guardians were waiting for him. Everyone was in such a shock that they were still in their sleeping robes. A single news made the Emperor of Da Xia Empire shout with joy that he couldn't believe his own hearing...An [Innate] Ranker finally appeared in the Da Xia Empire! Furthermore, the golden pillar of light that shone down on this [Innate] Ranker was even more powerful than previous [Innate] Rankers. The golden light was so strong that it split the dark curtain of the night and everyone within a radius of five hundred metres could see it clearly. Through the records kept by the Innate Ranker Crystal, this was the 81st [Innate] Ranker in the whole of Da Xia Empire since the beginning of the history. This was also the seventh [Innate] Ranker who was still alive in this world.

“Your Majesty, it was extremely regretful that there was no records on this Ranker. I'm afraid it could be those hermits that lived in the mountains. Currently, there wasn't any information on this new [Innate] Ranker.” The State Elder shook his head regretfully.

“Don't tell me that there was not a single information about him even in the Innate Ranker Crystal records?” The Emperor Jun Wu You asked disbelievingly.

“Yes, Your Majesty. This [Innate] Ranker has the ability to hide his own identity. The Innate Ranker Crystal could only record basic information such as “Male Human”. Even his age was concealed, let alone his Sect, Technique Name or Spirit Beasts. We reckoned that this [Innate] Ranker has the inherent ability of concealment, hence the Innate Crystal couldn't display his

information at all.”

(TLN: Another explanation here. When I first translated chapter 2 where Yue Yang successfully contracted the grimoire, I wrote that he received twin star innate skill – I have changed this to twin star inherent skill to prevent any confusion. These skills are skills that will automatically be given to a grimoire contractor, but the Invisible Sword Qi is a skill that had to be learnt. The State Elder was referring to Yue Yang’s inherent skill [Counterfeit], presumably.)

“Where did that pillar of light appeared? Who was the eye-witness? This is a huge opportunity for the Da Xia Empire to increase its power, we must find that [Innate] Ranker.” The Emperor almost went insane with anxiousness. They finally had an [Innate] Ranker in their empire, yet nobody knew the identity of the Ranker. This was so frustrating!

“According to my [Reveal] Inherent Skill, the general location should be in the Southern Part of the Yun Wu Mountains. That would include the White Stone, Red Forest, Black Cliff cities. It will be very difficult to guess a more accurate position. However, since the pillar of light shinning down on that [Innate] Ranker was extremely large, there would definitely be an eye-witness, especially those assassins and bandits that mostly appeared at night. Somebody would definitely have seen it. As long as we offer a large amount of reward for someone who could report seeing such a large pillar of golden light, investigate it properly and follow all the clues, we should be able to find his location.” The State Elder’s Golden Grimoire was opened wide as it showed the map of the Da Xia Empire. A golden dot was shining brightly like a star near the Yun Wu Mountains.

However, when he tried to zoom in on his map, that golden star had mysteriously disappeared.

The two Heavenly Imperial Guardians thought that this wasn't due to the State Elder's fault, it was because of the concealing ability that the [Innate] Ranker had. Furthermore, they reckoned that his concealing ability was extremely strong.

The Emperor, State Elder and the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians discussed their next plan of actions the whole night, and in the end, they decided to offer one thousand gold coins to the Mercenary, Assassin and Bandit Guilds to find this [Innate] Ranker. Also, anyone who had seen that pillar of light and knew the exact location for it would be able to receive a reward of fifty gold coins.

At the same time, the Three Royal House, Four Major Clans and Four Great Sects were immediately contacted. Was the new [Innate] Ranker one of their members?

When Yue Yang woke up the next morning, the whole of Da Xia Empire was in chaos, even the secluded Four Great Sects were also shocked.

An [Innate] Ranker amongst the commoners appeared, how could this be?

This was a person who did not rely on the Four Great Sects and Four Major Clans, not even receiving the Royal Family's support.

He managed to master and enter into the [Innate] Realm all by himself. The Four Great Sects immediately sent an envoy to check on the information displayed on the Innate Ranker Crystal... Amongst the Four Great Sects, a Ranker with the [God's Eyes] Inherent Skill from the Northern Moon Fairy Pavillion Sect, the famous Elder called Ming Xin, said something that had shocked the whole world.

## Chapter 15 – Huge Bounty

---

“My [God’s Eyes] tell me that this Ranker is an extremely young person. He couldn’t be more than 30 years old. He had shrouded himself in dark shadows, hence I can’t see his face very clearly. His whole body was pitch black, I could only see his two eyes shining brightly like stars in the sky. I can’t see through him at all, it’s as if there is a strong Holy Spirit that was protecting him.”

Elder Ming Xin’s words had turned the whole world of Rankers into chaos. Everyone was shocked beyond belief.

If a Ranker had reached the [Innate] realm, attained immortality and eternal youth, it was still believable if the Ranker looked twenty to thirty years old although he was 400-500 years old.

However, if somebody said a person who was not even thirty years old managed to attain the [Innate] realm, this was too unbelievable.

What godly pill did this guy eat? If he reached the [Innate Realm] before thirty years old, then what would happen as he grow older? Even the Four Great Sects who had countless Legendary Potions and Heavenly Spirit Beasts would need at least a hundred years of training to enter into the [Innate] Realm. With this in mind, wasn’t this brat’s training speed much too fast?

What was his training method, exactly?

Immediately, every single Rankers in the world only wished for

one thing: Find that that young [Innate] Ranker as soon as possible and learn his [Innate] skill training method.

However, with regards to all this, Yue Yang was completely in the dark. He didn't know that he had turned the whole of Da Xia Empire upside down with chaos.

The Mercenary, Assassin and Bandit guilds had all went crazy, especially the mercenaries in the White Stone City, Red Forest City and Black Cliff City. They were all so regretful that their faces had turned green. Why would they sleep that night? Even if they had gotten up in the middle of the night to pee, they could have seen that pillar of golden light and received 50 gold. It was such a huge reward!

Even if one killed a level 3 Thunder Panther without a scratch on its fur, the fur could only be sold for at most 60 silver coins, that's not even one gold.

If they were lucky and killed a "Variant" Thunder Panther that has a demon crystal, that would only be worth five gold coins.

However, against a Variant Thunder Panther, a five men mercenary team would simply be throwing their lives away. Even a ten men mercenary team might not be able to touch a single fur on its body. In order to kill a Variant Thunder Panther, they would need at least a hundred men team...

Fifty gold coins reward, that would be equivalent to killing ten Variant Thunder Panthers.



But now, they would be able to get fifty gold coins just by seeing the [Innate] Ranker's pillar of golden light. How could all the mercenaries in these three cities not beat their chest in regret?

The strangest thing was that there really weren't anyone in the White Stone City who saw the huge golden pillar of light that shone down on Yue Yang's residence that night. Although fake reports came in huge numbers, there was a State Elder with the [Reveal] Inherent Skill to determine the authenticity of these fake reports that the greedy mercenaries had the audacity to say. In his anger, he had beaten all of these greedy people into pulp.

Yue Yang continued to train diligently at his home. Barely coming out from his house, he had no idea of the pandemonium that was happening outside.

Instead, everyday, he would play with the little girl. A grand, majestic and honourable Ranker had actually turned into a "Little Horsey" as the small girl begged him to carry her in his shoulders.

In the day, he would either be crawling on the ground with the small girl to count the little ants crawling by or accompany her to catch Red Dragonflies. There were also times where he would teach the little girl how to summon the mighty "WTF" and "WTH" monsters of the online-type, with her middle finger. In other words, he had ruined that girl's language.

"WTF and WTH are extremely strong Heavenly Spirit Beasts. Remember, you can't summon it near people that are on our side.

You can only use it with bad people or our enemies, do you understand? That's right, remember to raise your middle finger up high, WTF and WTH both love to be summoned this way....That's right, when you say WTH, you have to say with anger and gusto... Yeah, you can also say it gently and innocently...You are indeed a good little girl..."

If anyone found out that the new [Innate] Ranker was someone like Yue Yang, they would probably bang their head to the ground.

The beautiful woman scolded him a few times, saying that he lacked manners.

But seeing him spoiling the little girl so much, she was also secretly pleased with him.

After mastering the first stage of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, Yue Yang found that he had indeed entered into the [Innate] realm.

Now, his target was to master the second stage.

However, mastering the second stage was not as easy as the first stage.

To master the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi's second stage, not only he had to link up all 108 acupoints in his body, he had to link the Ren (Conception) Vessel and the Du (Governing) Vessel together with the 12 energy channels. He had to connect all his energy channels into one thread and let energy flow equally

through his body without obstruction. Once he mastered the second stage, other than a further increase in his strength, he would be able to emit Sword Qi from every part of his body. No enemies would be able to guard against such an unprecedented attack based on their own judging capabilities, as Yue Yang would be able to attack them with his Sword Qi from any part of his body.

Compared to last time, the Yue Yang who had mastered the first stage right now had already become so much more stronger than before. He was so strong that he could simply stop training to master the second stage and wander around the world.

He could fight in battles and train at the same time, waiting for the opportunity to break through the second stage.

Furthermore, with the help of the energy from the black jade pendant, mastering the second stage would simply be a matter of time. Yue Yang was definitely not in a hurry.

It was just that during his second stage mastery training, an illusion of an extremely powerful skill keep appearing in his mind. It made Yue Yang anxious to master the second stage. In any case, even if he had power and strength, his overall fighting abilities would not be that strong if he didn't have a strong skill to complement it.

Another month passed by. In those peaceful days, Yue Yang would bring the little girl out to the market during the day. He had wanted to understand the Soaring Dragon Continent's cultures and environment more. At night, he would train diligently, every single day, to master the second stage of Invisible Sword Qi. After

some time, finally, he had learnt the second skill of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, the “Mysterious Three Styles”. That night, Yue Yang, who was extremely excited having mastered the skill, decided to go out and register at the Mercenary Guild and find an opponent to measure his abilities. He wanted to test out his newly learnt skill, the “Mysterious Three Styles”.

The Yue Yang right now was full of confidence of his own abilities.

After entering into the [Innate] realm, Yue Yang was able to use the Invisible Sword Qi three times at one time. That should be enough against a low-ranked mercenary soldier.

He couldn't say much if it was a group fight, but if it was a one vs one battle with a person under the level 6 rank, he should be unbeatable.

Furthermore, he wouldn't need to use such a strong attack like the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi that could possibly kill his enemies in one attack. He could use the second stage skill, “Mysterious Three Styles” to deal with any enemies or any kind of difficulties.

Even if it was too late to use the “Mysterious Three Styles”, Yue Yang could still use the Yue Clan Spear Technique that he had learnt before. That should be enough to defeat the mercenary soldiers.

Yue Clan's Spear Technique. Although in Yue Yang's eyes it was as simple as a primary school technique, it was much stronger than

the kindergarten techniques that the mercenary soldiers had trained for.

It was a pity that the pitiful guy did not have the full version of the Yue Clan Spear Technique. There was only six volumes. He had only received those Yue Clan's Spear Technique Manual. The most important part of the technique was lost since thousands of years ago, and the Clan had also kept three volumes private. Only those of the Yue Clan members who had reached the level 4 rank of [Hero] could learn them. Otherwise, Yue Yang's mastery with this Yue Clan Spear Technique would probably be much higher.

If he still couldn't defeat the kindergarten techniques of the mercenary soldiers with his university degree of "Mysterious Three Styles", he should follow the pitiful guy and jump into the river.



That night, Yue Yang didn't train like he did the previous nights. Instead, he secretly sneaked out from his house and went to the

Mercenary Guild in the city.

However, upon arriving at the Mercenary Guild, Yue Yang saw the eye-grabbing notice that the Emperor had posted in all Mercenary Guilds in the country. It was only then that Yue Yang realized, with disbelief and shock, that he had become the most famous person in the whole of Da Xia Empire.

He even had a huge bounty...

# Chapter 16 – Requirement For Choosing A Spouse: Bubble Butt

---

Seeing the one thousand gold bounty, Yue Yang nearly went and serve himself on a silver platter.

Even though he might not understand the saying ‘A lone tree might look more beautiful than a forest, but it will be easily destroyed by the storm’, he had heard a lot of stories before. Yue Yang did not feel that telling the world he was the secret Innate Ranker was a good idea. The royal family would of course be delighted that an Innate Ranker had joined their ranks, strengthening the power of their country. But what would the other two great countries think? They would probably have him assassinated before he could grow to become a top tier Ranker..... He was already an Innate Ranker at such a young age, additionally, he had never eaten any elixirs and furthermore lacked a Mythical Beast. Even an idiot would know that the Innate technique he practiced was superb, thus other Innate Rankers would definitely covet it.

Therefore, unless someone had achieved invincibility, he should try his best to keep a low profile and act in secret. After all, you should keep quiet about your wealth to better safeguard it.

YueYang laughed as he pulled up his black mask to cover his face before swaggering into the Mercenary Guild.

The room was full of mercenaries, but nobody could’ve possibly known that this masked youth would be the Innate Ranker that the entire world had been looking for. They continued to drink

and bet as they had been the whole time.

Anyone could tell with a single glance that a person clothed in black with his face covered like Yue Yang was obviously thief wanna-be who had only just started in this line of business.

Aside from watching over their money more closely, there was no other reaction.

“Excuse me, could you tell more about the steps needed to register as a mercenary?” Yue Yang asked politely. In a mercenary guild, if one was more polite, it meant that he was weaker, and would be easier to be looked down upon. Yue Yang wanted the entire world to see him as a weak person. That way, he would be able to keep his skills hidden and better safeguard his secrets. Thus, he put on an ‘I’m weak, please don’t bully me’ facade.

“Pay up, then fill out this form. If you have extra money, you can buy a ‘Mercenary Heavenly Badge’. Every time you complete a mission, it’ll record your accumulated points, and naturally raise your Mercenary Rank. However, this would cost an additional fee of 10 silver coins.” The mercenary guild’s receptionist was not a gorgeous beauty that Yue Yang had imagined. He was just a greasy-faced, bald old man.

“I...I don’t know how to write. Can you help me fill it out? I, I’ll pay 1 silver coin.” Of course, Yue Yang could write, but he didn’t want others to recognize his writing.

The Rankers in the Soaring Dragon Continent had all types of



Inherent skills.

If a person skilled in distinguishing handwriting came along, wouldn't his cover be blown?

Paying the old man to fill it out was comparatively safer. These things weren't important anyways; as long as he could use the Mercenary Guild to get a few missions that offered bounties, he would get the money back.

The old man had met many mercenaries that couldn't write before. However, he would usually cheat strangers. Immediately, he determined that Yue Yang was a naive chick that had just hatched from his egg. How could he be willing to pay 1 silver coin for someone else to fill a form for him? A silver was equivalent to 100 coppers! This youngster seemed to throw out money casually. If this youth wasn't someone with more money than sense in his head, what else could he be? The old man didn't bother holding back, and coldly snorted: "I can help you fill it out, but you need to pay me 3 silver coins."

Yue Yang extremely despised this greedy old man in his heart. However on the outside, he showed a pitiful expression and begged, "Three is too much. Two silver, I'll pay two silver. Can you please help me to fill out this form?"

The mercenaries in the room all watched the old man bully the amateur, and began to laugh out loud. Bullying amateurs was a mercenary guild's first-rate tradition.

At that moment, a slim youth with a masked face and bright eyes walked over from the door. The youth shot out an arm lightning fast and grasped the pen and paper in Yue Yang's hand. She softly chided: "Offering two silver to ask someone to fill a form for you, was your head kicked in by a mule? He's a staff member; from the beginning, he had the duty to help fill our forms for people who can't write like you. An idiot like you wants to become a thief? You'll die of starvation first. What's your name?"

"You'll help me fill it out? Thanks, brother. Thank you so much." Yue Yang's expression was full of gratitude as he reached out to hug the other party.

"Stop, otherwise I'll kick you out through the door... Idiot, tell me, what's your name?" The thief with bright eyes immediately gave an angry look at Yue Yang when he heard 'brother'.

"My name is Titan." Yue Yang regretted that he hadn't moved fast enough, since he was unable to hug the opposite party. He pretended to look at the other party currently filling out the form, as he neared the bright-eyed thief. At the same time he was able to smell the fresh scent on the youth's body. Good, this 'brother's' scent was pleasing to the nose. It refreshed his soul, like how the smell of the legendary 'Virgin's Delicate Fragrance' would refresh his spirit. On the outside, Yue Yang's expression didn't change; but a certain place below had disgracefully woken up.

"Titan? What kind of weird name is that? I feel like I've heard it somewhere before..." The bright-eyed thief knitted her beautiful brows.

“Titan is the name of a type of dwarf, right, they’re extremely short, and they’re a group of failures. After being defeated by their opponents, they were even tossed into hell....” Yue Yang explained.

“That doesn’t seem quite right. If it’s like you say, then why would you choose to name yourself after such a failure of a dwarf?” The bright eyed thief asked in curiosity. The thief was quite intelligent, and had sensed that something wasn’t quite right. However, if Yue Yang had answered the ‘brother’s’ question truthfully, then he wouldn’t be called the counterfeit guy anymore. His eyes laughed and he assumed a manner of profoundness: “It’s exactly because it represents a failure of a dwarf that I chose this name. It is to firmly remind myself that from now on, I shouldn’t fail the same way.”

“.....” The bright eyed thief was speechless at this. If that was true, then mentally remembering it was good enough. Why was it necessary to make such a lamentable thought into a name?

However, the fact that the failure of a dwarf was called Titan still felt a bit off.

The bright eyed thief cunningly smiled at Yue Yang and lightly snorted, then fluidly helped him fill out the form with his name, gender, and occupation. The thief then asked: “How old are you this year?”

Yue Yang counted on his fingers, and replied with a sincere voice, “200 years old, but I haven’t married yet; I’m on a journey to find my true love. My conditions for finding a spouse aren’t too high, my girlfriend only has to be as beautiful as a goddess, curvy, had a

slim waist and a bubble butt.”

Hearing this, all the mercenaries in the room spit out their wine.

Was this brat lovesick?

The legendary story of a toad dreaming of eating a swan meat was probably someone like this brat.

The bright eyed thief also rolled her eyes: “Why didn’t you say that aside from having a bubble butt, she also needs to love you for 10,000 years?”

Yue Yang had an expression of undeniable finality: “Loving me for 10,000 years is the shortest time limit; if she could love me for 100,000 years it’d be better. Even a million years wouldn’t be too much.”

“Love you my ass” The bright eyed thief slapped the daylights out of Yue Yang, as she wondered to herself why she had even bothered to talk with a lunatic tonight, feeling extremely depressed. Yue Yang was unexpectedly still in a good mood as he reached out to pat the bright eyed thief on the shoulder: “Thank you, brother. The words “Love you my ass” are quite good. They were very precise, and quite magnanimous. True men just have to be that passionate with love. Perhaps if said with an expression of intimacy instead, it would be better. Next time if I pick up a girl, I’ll use that. Are you done filling the form? I thank you very much, brother. I’ll invite you to eat a midnight snack at a new inn in the eastern part of a city that has a newly arrived girl with \*\* as large

as footballs. Come, let's go grab a few drinks together. At the same time, we can refresh our eyes with the beautiful view."

"You...football? What's football?" The bandit glared at Yue Yang with sinister eyes, but she was also interested in the unknown term that he had said, so she tried asking him instead.

# Chapter 17 – Wonderful Classification Technique

---

“Ah, football is a special term used to describe a woman’s chest. For example, if a girl is flat-chested like you, no, even flatter than yours...Well, what I meant is that if a girl has a chest flat as a wall, then they will be called “blooming small buns”. Otherwise, they may also be called Princess Tai Ping (TLN: Princess Tai Ping is an important political figure in Chinese history, but Tai Ping if taken literally can also mean super flat). If a girl’s breast is extremely small, like yours, maybe a bit smaller than yours, like a breast that was really really small and barely had a bump, then their breasts would be called a sunny side-up. If their breasts are just a bit larger, like yours, it’d be called an apple... No please don’t pull out your dagger, I misspoke. Please don’t get angry. I know you’re a male, but I needed someone to use as a comparison. Alright, I won’t use you as an example anymore...”

“Then if the breasts are larger than apples, it would be footballs?” The bright-eyed thief pointed her dagger at Yue Yang’s neck, with a fury as if the thief would kill Yue Yang at any moment.

“No, there’s another type that’s larger than apples. Look at how much experience in this you’re missing. There are still many things above apples: pears, papayas, and even coconuts. Only after that are volleyballs and footballs. There are many classifications. This is all knowledge that I normally don’t tell others!” Classmate Yue Yang said in a scholarly manner.

“Makes sense!” When all the mercenaries in the room heard this,

they all praised Yue Yang in unison for his “Chests Classification Technique”.

for people to remember, making a great impact on the audience. It seemed that this small thief, Titan, really did have quite extensive experience with women’s \*\*. Hearing this, Yue Yang became proud, like an honor student at school that had just issued an insightful and unique theory in front of thousands of students.

The bright-eyed thief barely suppressed her rash urge to kill the brat at her blade point. She ferociously stamped on Yue Yang’s foot, then shoved the form into his hand, turned around and stormed away.

Yue Yang quickly tossed the form at the old man, paid money and received the Mercenary Heavenly Badge. Then , he quickly hooted on the bright-eyed thief.

“Brother, come on, I’ll treat you to a drink. Listen to me... That girl’s chest is really huge...Ai, you run so fast. It’s so obvious from the first glance that you have never done this before!” By the time Yue Yang raced out of the door, the bright-eyed thief had already disappeared like smoke.

It was as if the thief had never appeared.

As Yue Yang whistled loudly and left in a swagger, the bright-eyed thief unexpectedly glinted in the darkness, with a bright dagger in her hand. She had wanted to throw the dagger at Yue Yang’s back many times, but she had suppressed the urge in the

end.

The bright-eyed thief lightly spat at the direction that Yue Yang's figure had left in, then once again disappeared in a flash.

Facing the gentle evening breeze, Yue Yang was smiling corner to corner.

He was smiling especially happily that his smile emits radiance

White Stone City, Assassin Guild.

Like all the other Assassin Guilds in any other world, White Stone City's Assassin Guild gave people a sinister and frightening feeling. There were lights within the building, but they were as small as peas. It gave people the feeling that the lights could go out at any moment. It'd be fine if the lights were simply dim, but they were also strangely eerie and dusky. Yue Yang pushed the door to the Assassin Guild slowly, and upon seeing the room's conditions, he was astonished.

The Assassin Guild had no people, aside from an old man in hemp garments that was sleeping on the table.

The old man had grizzled hair, his figure lying on the table looked extremely small. It looked like his body and mind had gone senile, having withered and rotten away. It made him seem extremely weak.



Of course, simply judging by the outer appearance, this old man that seemed to have one foot in his grave looked like he could be blow away with a single breeze. Moreover, the way the way he was sleeping made him seem like he had already fallen into eternal sleep. However, Yue Yang internally felt a strange feeling. He, who had already reached the [Innate] realm, could use the “Mysterious Three Styles” and the Invisible Sword Qi, probably couldn’t defeat this lazily sleeping old man, even with a sneak attack.....Yue Yang secretly thought to himself that this old man was even scarier than a sleeping lion. He seemed more like sleeping dragon!

“Hello, I would like to apply to join the Assassin Guild.” Yue Yang had faked his manners back at the mercenary guild, but he had said that with a respect that had came straight from his heart.

“Youngster, an assassin is a bloody and violent profession. Have you really prepared yourself?” The old man slowly lifted his head. His appearance was extremely normal, his face covered in scars. Even if a person saw him 10 times on a street, they would most likely not be able to remember his existence, let alone his appearance.

His dark, aged eyes peered into Yue Yang.

Despite this, Yue Yang maintained his calm and controlled his breathing. He even smiled sincerely with his eyes.

Although he couldn’t see through the old man, Yue Yang knew that this old man was also still inspecting him, meaning that he had not seen through Yue Yang either....

Yue Yang naturally caught the attention of the old man carefully inspecting him. Yue Yang smiled cheerfully and said, “Youngsters will always be attracted towards blood and violence, right?”

The old man closed his eyes, neither agreeing nor disagreeing. He then said emotionlessly, “Entering the Assassin Guild doesn’t require money or filling out any forms. Verifying your identity isn’t necessary either. The only thing you need to do is pass a test. You can choose to take a written test, or a practical test.”

“What’s the written test? And what’s the practical test?” Yue Yang really found it strange. Assassins had to take written tests? It’s not as if he was applying for college!

“The written test will consist of questions about murdering techniques; the practical test is directly killing people. If you want to take the practical test, you would need to go to the Black Mountain fifty kilometres away from the city at dawn. There will be a few outlaws there, as long as you bring any one of them back, you’ll pass.” After the old man finished speaking, Yue Yang hurriedly shook his head and hand, indicating that he wanted to take the written test.

To Yue Yang, the thought of killing people was not a big deal.

This Soaring Dragon Continent, aside from beauties, Yue Bing, and young girls, all people were like game NPCs in Yue Yang’s mind. Killing him would not make him feel guilty at all. In addition, his original intention was to go kill some mercenaries

that had bounties on them from enemies. While testing his combat abilities, he could also improve his [Spitting Thorny Flower] techniques.

However, Yue Yang was extremely lazy.

The practical test required him to journey throughout the whole night and run out 50km from the city to cross over a mountain to kill a few mountain bandits. Then he had to carry a person back as fast as possible.

There was no way he'd do that!

If it wasn't for his desire to earn the title of 'Vengeance Hunter' in the Assassin Guild, there was no way Yue Yang would've even come to a place like this Assassin Guild.

The Assassin Guild was different from the mercenary guild. The people here all had real strength. The longer he stayed here, the easier it'd be for people to uncover his identity.

"If you choose the written test, then please make a choice: Let's say want to kill a person. In front of you, there is a sharp legendary sword, a powerful Spirit, and a piece of blank paper. Which would you choose as your killing weapon?" The old man asked.

# Chapter 18 – Vengeance Hunters

---

“That depends on who the target is...” Yue Yang furrowed his brows.

“If the target is a Mercenary, what would you choose?” The old man asked.

“I...would choose the blank white paper.” Yue Yang laughed. This type of question wasn’t asking about killing techniques, but killing knowledge? How would that be difficult?

“How would you use a piece of paper to kill someone?” The old man frowned slightly.

“Simple. I’d pretend it is a secret, precious piece of art. After handing it to the target, I’d notify everyone that he had a this art, and I wouldn’t have to kill the mercenary at all. Countless people would fight to kill him in order to get their hands on the item.” Yue Yang shrugged, replying confidently.

“If the target wasn’t a Mercenary but a Merchant, what would your choice be?” The old man slowly nodded, and changed questions.

“I’d choose the blank piece of paper.....I would pretend it was a financial balance that had been calculated wrong. Once the target merchant is completely absorbed in calculating the assets and revenue lost, I’d kill him.” Yue Yang replied. Hearing this, the old man’s thin and frail hands suddenly stopped trembling. He asked,

“What if the target was an Official? Would you still choose the blank piece of paper as your killing weapon?”

“Why not? I can pretend it’s the emperor’s decree. After the official kneels down to accept it, I’d offer him a cup of poisoned wine.” Yue Yang had watched many TV shows and movies, and no matter how just and famous the generals were, they could never resist the emperor’s decree, nor a cup of poisoned wine in their bodies.

If the monarch wants his subject to die, the subjects would have no choice but to die.

This law had existed since ancient times. It would always be correct, no matter what the situation was.

This did not only apply to Feudal Chinese, it also applied to China Dynasties and the Soaring Dragon Continent. Here, it would be regarded as a wise saying.

The old man lifted his eyelid open, and astonishment coloured his pitch-black eyes. He looked at Yue Yang for a few seconds, his expressions changing for an instant, but he recovered his composure quickly. In the end, he nodded his head in amazement, approving the brat’s shameless poison plot.

Yue Yang was secretly delighted, believing that he had already grasped the qualifications become an assassin.

However, he hadn't imagined that the old man would continue to ask, "If your target is a woman, what would you choose?"

Hearing the word 'woman', Yue Yang's pervertedness began to stir, as he started to think lewdly. "That depends on how young and pretty she is. If she's both, then I'd still choose the blank piece of paper...."

"What will you pretend it is this time?" The old man asked.

"No, I won't be pretending. I will sincerely write a letter pleading for her love on the piece of paper. However, if she doesn't agree, then I will kill her, and complete the mission" Yue Yang said with a tone of regret. The old man inquired, "What if she does agree?" Hearing this, Yue Yang immediately brightened and said, "If she agrees to love me, then why would I kill her? I'd directly bring her home and marry her so she could become my wife."

"...." The old man was speechless.

Although he had lived for quite a long time, he had never met a fellow as shameless as Yue Yang.

The thick-skinned Yue Yang didn't realize that he had such a contented expression on his face that made one feel the urge to punch him at first glance.

The old man muttered to himself for a bit, then slowly said, "Last question. If you receive a mission with your close relative as the

target, what would you do?”

Hearing this, Yue Yang’s smile didn’t waver, but a profound look flashed in his eyes, “In my heart, only 2 types of people exist in the world. The first is people who are alive, and the second is people who are dead. My relatives belonged to the former; I will kill anyone who tried to hurt them...”

The old man opened his eyes and looked at Yue Yang. With a strange smile on his lips, he said, “An assassin with a weakness for love and emotions is not a good assassin.”

“In my opinion, whether or not I’m a good assassin doesn’t matter. As long as I’m an assassin that can live, it’s fine.” Yue Yang raised his brows, arguing in a serious tone, “I’ve heard these words before: Love and hate both are powers that had the ability to make people do unfathomable things. Weaknesses are like a double-edged blade. If they can be fatal to a person, they can also help a person improve.”

“....” Hearing Yue Yang’s words, the old man didn’t speak for a long time.

Yue Yang walked out of the Assassin Guild with not only the qualifications to become an assassin, but also receiving a ‘Vengeance Hunter’ [Bloodrose Map] for free.

The Bloodrose Map could be absorbed into the summoning grimoire to provide reports on anything related to the ‘Vengeance Hunters’ at any given time.

Even without the grimoire, the user could still activate the map once a day. As long as it's at night, they could see the locations of the targets locked by the Vengeance Hunters as floating red dots throughout the map.

After choosing a target, the red dot on the map enlarges, and a bloodrose symbol appears at the target's location, accurately pinpointing it out.

The targets for the Vengeance Hunters were normally evil murderers.

Once a warrior becomes an evil murderer, if the person he killed managed to use a 'Vengeance Scroll' before death, the murderer's appearance could get recorded. At the same time, the murderer's name will also appear on the Assassin Guild's Vengeance List, or the Bloodrose Map. The victim's family can also go to the Assassin Guild to place bounties on the murderers to get Vengeance Hunters after them. The time limit for Vengeance Hunters was normally half a year; if the murderer was successfully eliminated, or if the victim's family is no longer pursuing the murderer, then the murderer's red-listed name will disappear from the Vengeance List and the Bloodrose Map.

Yue Yang wasn't willing to help others out of the kindness of his hearts, he just wanted the extremely useful map for free.

In addition, the evil murderers were normally quite powerful. If he could use them to cultivate the Spitting Thorny Flower's



evolving requirements, that would be wonderful.

After obtaining the Bloodrose Map, classmate Yue Yang began his first job as Vengeance Hunter. He aimed to get a fellow with the nickname 'Rock'. Although he didn't know what kind of bloody atrocities this fellow had done, Yue Yang knew that there were at least 8 families joining up to chase after him for vengeance, and the bounty was 5 gold.

The reward money wasn't that much, but it wasn't a little amount either. 5 gold at the mercenary guild was the price of killing a Variant Thunder Panther.

If converted to RMB, it was equivalent to around 500,000 Yuan.

Converted to RMB, based on the country's black market prices, cutting off the murderer's hand cost 2000, stripping off the legs cost 5000, and killing a person was pretty much 30,000-50,000. Of course, in the Soaring Dragon Continent, these prices were only the lowest sums of money offered to Vengeance Hunters. Normally, the highest bounties offered on the Vengeance List would be thousands of gold. However, Yue Yang couldn't have access to these people with such high bounties yet. He was still an amateur assassin, with absolutely no reputation or experience.

Yue Yang had the mentality that even mosquito's legs were meat; five gold wasn't little. Anyways, when fighting monsters to level up, one has to start from the weak monsters. Who would go fight the BOSS in the very beginning? Wouldn't that just be seeking death?

Rock, who was on the Vengeance Hunters wanted list, didn't actually hide himself. He publicly walked around on the streets, casually drinking some yellow wine.

If it was another murderer on the Wanted List, perhaps they'd be afraid an Assassin would come to take their lives.

However, he was a strong mercenary that had a high-ranking supporter behind him. A normal Assassin would not be willing to go through the trouble of killing him for only five gold. Thus, he had always been living quite comfortably. He had only betrayed and killed some of his companions for money, this barely meant anything. With money offered in front of them, who wouldn't do something like that? In the future if he had time, he'd probably rape his deceased companions' wives and then kill off their children. Let's see who would still dare to chase him for vengeance...

Rock was extremely proud of himself. He had already gotten tipsy after too many glasses of drinks, and now he felt like he a powerful Ranker.

A Ranker would be able to do whatever his heart pleased, right?

Just as Rock was proudly smiling at himself, he noticed a small masked thief was standing on the deserted street. The thief's eyes twinkled like stars, and with a voice as clear as water, he asked. "You, are you the Rock on the Vengeance List?"

## Chapter 19 – Element-Type, Stone Skin

---

“Are you an assassin? Have you come to exact vengeance on me?” Rock immediately awoke from his drunken stupor.

Although his demeanor reeked of arrogance, he wasn’t exactly stupid and had absolutely zero interest in adding his name to the list of those idiots who had succumbed to their negligence.

Though Rock’s appearance suggested that he had engaged in quite a few hours of drunken revelry, he still retained a calm and lucid mind and quickly composed himself. As a mercenary, particularly one that had betrayed his comrades, he did not desire to meet his maker before he had enjoyed all his ill-gotten gains. As one who usually took advantage of others’ drunk state, he prided himself on not making the same mistakes as his victims.

Just because there hadn’t been any assassins on his tail recently, didn’t mean that he had lowered his guard. “Always be alert” was a mantra that all the mercenaries drilled into themselves, especially those who wanted to maintain their ‘alive’ status.

Yue Yang displayed a relaxed disposition and requested him in a friendly manner. “If you don’t mind then I would like to borrow your head for a while . . . and exchange it for some gold. If you have any last words, you can say them now. I am in no particular hurry”

“You brat! You intend to take me on all alone. HAHA.” Rock began to convulse into laughter as if he had heard the world’s

funniest joke.

“Oh, those are your last words? You indeed have the virtue of being concise and precise. Now then allow me to send you to the afterlife.” Yue Yang lazily stretched his arms and began to draw closer to Rock.

“Stone Skin” Rock yelled out as he produced a black crystal from his pocket and began chanting.

Immediately a large amount of black light began condensing in the crystal into some type of fog. It rapidly rushed out to form an enormous and dark-skinned stone man that opened its arms and ‘embraced’ Rock’s body.

Within a blink, it merged with Rock’s body and his body reflected the resultant transformation. His body had gained the same dark shade as the stone man and evidently his skin had transformed into armor.

Yue Yang didn’t bother to use any sneak attacks. Instead, he stood silent, calculating.

He realized that his first opponent was an Element-type mercenary who could summon Spirits. It seemed to be the Element-type, Stone Skin.

The Elements could be classified into three main types : Fighting, Strengthening, and Special type beasts. Among them, the Special

type beasts mainly used the life skills or reconnaissance skills to gather intelligence. Most mercenaries didn't opt for these as the Element type beasts had extremely high requirements which was beyond their capabilities.

For the mercenaries, Strengthening-type and Battle-type beasts were ranked higher on their lists. The Strengthening-type could directly boost the body's combat abilities and hence were crucial to their survival. Battle-type used the beasts' bodies directly to make their attacks against the enemy more powerful and added that extra bit of sting. A formidable battle type beast meant an amazing support and ensured an outright victory in a fight.

Mercenaries ranked below Level 8 always made the strengthening type beasts their number one priority as they spent their days being cut by knives. Protecting their lives was given the highest priority.

If someone could summon 2 beasts, then almost always the second choice would be the fighting type beasts. Even among these beasts, there were some which had clear advantages over others of their class, such as the avian class.

This 'Rock' guy in front of Yue Yang had shockingly summoned an elemental type beast contrary to Yue Yang's expectations.

This unusual state of affairs meant one thing: this 'Rock' person's strength was quite good and far surpassed the ordinary mercenary's.

The Vengeance Hunters had estimated Rock to be a Level 2 Upper-ranked Braveman.

Evidently that information was incorrect. Just by comparing their apparent manifested strengths, Rock was at least 5 ranks higher than the amateur Level 1 Lower Rank Yue Yang.

If it was anyone but Yue Yang, then it would have meant an insurmountable difference. Ostensibly it should be an uneventful battle not throwing up any surprises; considering the difference in level and rank, it should be a straightforward victory for the higher rank.

“Come Brat, come and take my head” Rock sneered, pulling out his axe.

His body had become invulnerable, and he was a 100 times more confident now.

Even one strike from his axe would mean a fatal blow for his opponent.

Rock’s strong defense, unreasonable strength, and penetrating attacks meant that pretty much no mercenary was willing to provoke him. The puny masked thief in front of Rock obviously must have overestimated himself and come seeking death. It seemed that the little guy didn’t know that axes like his were meant to cut off legs of such thieves.

Surprisingly Yue Yang smiled. He didn't lose his head and charge over recklessly. And even more surprisingly, or perhaps not, he took to his heels.

This action stumped Rock.

What? The brat saw the unfavorable situation and wanted to escape?

Rock's lips curled and he sneered.

He immediately gave chase to the thief. Although he was slower than Yue Yang, he felt no fatigue as a result of his Stone Skin. He was now a machine, a killing machine. He might not win any sprints but in a long chase, the thief's legs would begin to give away and then he would be turned into mincemeat. This was Rock's usual strategy. At least 20 other enemies had fallen prey to him in the same manner. No one had ever successfully eluded Rock. And today would be no different.

After chasing him to a desolate farm, Rock's blood thirst grew as he watched his opponent tire and slow down.

Rock launched his axe at Yue Yang's back.

Yue Yang dodged to the side and came to a halt.

He looked around and nodded, "This place is not bad. Quiet and dark – the ideal location to kill."

“Exactly. You have chosen a good place for your grave.” Rock was enraged as he saw Yue Yang acting cocky without any chance to flee. Clearly, this brat doesn’t know the difference between life and death.

“If you bribe me some gold, like maybe 100, I would consider letting you off with your meager little life.” Yue Yang felt that 5 gold was really a paltry sum. If his victim was wealthy, extorting some from him would be a better idea.

“This is getting more ridiculous by the moment.” Rock spat in contempt. “Why don’t you make me kneel and beg for mercy.”

“I usually don’t let others have the chance to beg for mercy . . .”

Yue Yang used his foot to flick the axe into his hand.

He strode towards Rock and before he could even react had sent the axe smashing into Rock’s chest.

DING!

The axe seemed to have collided with iron and a stream of sparks flew outwards.

Aside from sporting a grey sheen, Rock’s chest showed no sign of sustaining any injury.



The elemental type 'Stone Skin' was indeed worthy of its name.

Yue Yang looked at the axe in his hand. Its edge had been actually chipped...

Rock traced the marks left on his chest and scorned, "Brat, now do you understand how powerful I am. My body is invulnerable. Even fierce tigers and lions would chip their fangs if they tried to take a bite out of me. How could a little son of a bitch like you who hasn't even gone through puberty yet, kill me?"

## Chapter 20 – No Money? Then Sorry

---

“Your skin is indeed Stone Skin, but your inner organs probably aren’t as hard, right? When you let me cut you, your outside skin wasn’t injured at all, but you reached out to rub your chest right now. And this means? You probably felt some hidden pain in your chest? In that case, you can probably get stunned too.” Yue Yang didn’t show any hint of fear. On the contrary, he laughed out loud.

He dodged Rock’s fists in a flash, leaping into the air.

He skillfully rotated the axe with his wrist, and the thick axe flew down towards Rock’s shiny bald head. He exerted all of his Innate energy, and fiercely struck down.

Immediately, another sound like colliding with metal rang out.

Rock’s body swayed. His thick hands cradled his head. He was feeling incomparable pain, and wanted to loudly cry out.

However, before he even had the time to make a sound, his eyes had already rolled to the back of his head, and his body fell to the ground with a thud.

If it had been anyone else slamming his head down, perhaps Rock would’ve been able to endure it. However, for people like Yue Yang who was an Innate Ranker with Innate strength, his Stone Skin was as defenseless as a piece of tissue paper; the energy directly went through his head.

Although his skull hadn't split apart, the inside of his head had been badly shaken.

From before the battle began, Yue Yang was the victor. He threw the deformed metal axe away, and nonchalantly brushed off his hands, as if he had done a very insignificant thing. However, if other people had been watching this amateur fell a Level 2 Upper-ranked Braveman, the White Stone City's valiant and famous Rock, in a single attack, their jaws would drop to the ground.

But to an Innate Ranker, the fact that an Innate Ranker defeated a Level 2 Braveman is not surprising in the least. That was something as simple as eating a pie.

[EN – Translation says as simple as eating peas 😊 we just americanized it]

“Alright, let me see. I've defeated the first monster. I wonder how much money there will be” Yue Yang's attitude was like that of killing monsters for treasure, rather than hunting people for vengeance.

When Rock felt a ton of ice cold water get dumped on his face, he dazedly awoke, and suddenly realized that he had been tied up with palm fibre rope.

He wanted to resist.

However, Rock discovered that his bonds were tied extremely skilled, and were extremely annoying.

His arms and legs were tightly tied, with a stick behind him to pull him straight, making it impossible to bend. He was unable to summon any energy, so there was no way he could pull the bonds apart.

Just as Yue Yang was checking all of Rock's belongings, he saw that the fellow had awoken, and said in discontent, "You poor bastard, aside from the little bit of money on you, do you have any other places where you've hidden away over 100 gold? If you do, then I'll consider letting you live..." Yue Yang didn't have the heart of Buddha; he only wanted money.

"I'm going to kill you." He cursed, Rock was getting angry enough to explode.

"I can understand your emotions, but a man must uphold his dignity towards reality, so why don't we continue our talk about the ransom? Have you really no savings hidden away?" Yue Yang asked.

"Let me go right now. Do you know who I am? I'm the number one most capable person in the Violent Beast Mercenary Group. If you dare kill me, then the leader, Tie Kuang, will hunt you down for vengeance, and the Violent Beast Mercenary Group will exterminate your entire family." His attitude was still as arrogant as before.

“Eh? You’re going to exterminate my entire family? I’m starting to feel a tiny bit afraid now.” Yue Yang laughed.

The Violent Beast Mercenary Group was one of the three great mercenary guilds in White Stone City. Yue Yang had obviously heard of it before; moreover, he also knew that the guild leader, Tie Kuang, was the city’s number one tyrant.

However, no matter how terrifying Tie Kuang was, this was only from the point of view of the average person.

Even if Tie Kuang found out that Rock had been killed by Yue Yang, he wouldn’t dare confront a member of the Yue family, one of the four great families, for revenge.

There were many benefits to his family’s influences. Perhaps the family’s wouldn’t treasure every descendent, or care for each grandson. However, if anyone dared to look down on the great family’s power, and killed any member, even if the member was just a coward, the whole family’s elite forces would be dispatched to gain back their place and their face that had been sullied. The military forces guarding the family were both imposing and glorious.

Yue Yang had never thought of using his family’s name to do anything. Moreover, in his opinion, Rock was a type of little monster that had absolutely no power.

Besides, if the number one Violent Beast Mercenary Group was only this skilled, it seemed that their awesomeness was very

limited.

“Let me go, or else I’ll tear you alive.” Rock said in response to Yue Yang’s words, and felt extraordinary shame and humiliation. He had never in his life suffered from being looked down upon like the opposite party was doing to him right now. He wasn’t even seen as a person; he was only a pitiful bug.

“It seems that our discussion has ended. You don’t have money? Then I’m sorry, but you’ll become fertilizer for my Thorny Flower. It’s time for its meal.” Yue Yang commanded the Thorny Flower to swallow Rock. Because Thorny Flower gained more energy from eating people alive rather than corpses, the probability of variation would increase. This was especially true for warriors that were still united with their Beasts. After the Thorny Flower ate someone and goes through variation, there would be little chance that the Thorny Flower would gain the enemy’s Beast’s abilities, or the Thorny Flower would greatly increase its own original powers.

That’s why Yue Yang had not killed Rock earlier, and decided to make Thorny Flower swallow the fellow alive.

“Ah?” Rock looked above him. The Thorny Flower had its terrifying mouth gaping wide open, and he saw its mouthful of sharp teeth preparing to swallow him. In that instant, he was scared out of his wits.

Although death was scary, with a Kacha, his head fell down to the ground. Just like that, it was over.

Now it wasn't as simple as just dying. The Thorny Flower's gaping mouth had to swallow him alive, and slowly digest him into its own body. This was really too terrifying; he had no clue how long the digestion would take until he would actually die.

This was torture; dying would be better.

Rock didn't try being brave anymore, and immediately began piteously crying for mercy.

If this brat wanted to use the axe to kill him, he definitely wouldn't be merciful. The opposite party couldn't use the axe to defeat his Stone Skin and kill him, but continuing to live this way was too frightening.

Yue Yang indifferently waved his hand, "Sorry, you need to pay me money for me to kill you. If you don't have 100 gold, then don't bother speaking."

Rock felt that a bolt had suddenly struck down from the blue. Where would he possibly get 100 gold?

If he had 100 gold, why would he be working as a mercenary? He would just directly buy a residence in the countryside, and enslave some girls under him as an old rich man and forget about everything else. When he saw the Thorny Flower's gaping mouth prepared to swallow his legs, he cried out in panic, "Let me go, let me go, I'll give you 100 gold. By morning tomorrow, I'll definitely have 100 gold."

“The Rock who didn’t even have a total of 10 gold on his body, please don’t just randomly spout bullshit. Lying isn’t right.” Yue Yang would never get tricked by something like this; he had no tolerance for empty words. He rubbed Thorny Flower’s head and commanded, “You should swallow him head first, otherwise, this fellow will start crying out. If the surrounding neighbors are woken up, then it won’t be good. People still have to go to work in the morning. Speaking of which, I’m a bit hungry. You slowly enjoy your meal, while I go eat a midnight snack....” Rock began screaming out like a pig being killed. However, Yue Yang pretended not to hear, and whistled as he casually walked away.

“Spare me, spare me!” Rock cried.

“I believe that when you were killing others, your victims also begged you for mercy. But have you ever once spared them? No. You’ve done very well, and I should learn from you.” Yue Yang turned around and gave a harmless smile, speaking in a tone of incomparable ease.



# Chapter 21 – Let's Spend The Night Together

---

The next evening, Yue Yang's target was the Level 3-Intermediate [Hero], 'Tie Kuang'.

This person was also the boss of Rock, the person who had been swallowed by the Thorny Flower last night. The Violent Beast Mercenary Group was one of the top three evil tyrants within White Stone City.

Although he has the rank and title of a [Hero], Tie Kuang's nickname, Armored Beast, was gained through many acts of infamy and villainy. In White Stone City, he had committed many crimes, including oppressing the weak, blackmailing and extortion. This bastard was also a murder maniac who had killed many innocents, and was now being hunted by a dozen or so families that had united to extract vengeance.

Because he was one of the descendants from a famous family within the Da Xia Empire, Tie Kuang had the great and powerful protection of the family supporting him from behind. White Stone City's assassin guild had never dared to even touch him, and this further boosted his overweening attitude. Moreover, the current favorite concubine of the Lord of White Stone City had been introduced and presented by Tie Kuang. The Lord was constantly sweet-talked to by this concubine from the moment he slept to the moment he awoke, and so nobody in White Stone City dared to mess with Tie Kuang.

Because Yue Yang's first mission had gone so smoothly, without any difficulty at all, he decided that he wanted to try something a

bit more challenging tonight. He decided to attempt an assail on the infamous Tie Kuang that nobody else dared to touch!

Tie Kuang was not at all the same as the Level 2 [Braveman], Rock; Tie Kuang was a Level 3 Intermediate [Hero].

In Soaring Dragon Continent, everybody, even the prince or the princess, was called [Apprentice] if they were only at Level 1.

Once they reach Level 2, they become [Bravemen]; only if they rose to level 3, then they would be called a [Hero]...

The title of a Level 3 [Hero] was the real dividing line between the warriors of Soaring Dragon Continent. If a warrior was forever unable to climb up to the [Hero] level, then he was labelled mediocre, and would be resigned to be cannon fodder for the rest of his life. On the other hand, one that did become a '[Hero]' would be known as a ranker, as they surpassed normal warriors by far.

Although a level 3 [Hero] didn't appear to be that high of a level on the outside, in reality it was not such an easy task to achieve.

Any warrior that wanted to become a [Hero] must not only have enough strength, but must also successfully go through the 'Death Refining'. Only then will the country award the warrior with a '[Hero]'s Medal'. With this, one can become the [Hero] that everyone admires!

If one was a Level 1 [Apprentice], with extreme luck or with

special circumstances, he would still have a chance to defeat a Level 2 [Braveman].

However, it was unheard of for a Level 2 [Braveman] to even think about defeating a Level 3 [Hero]. That was because Level 3 [Hero] was the first step on the road to becoming a Ranker.

You can be called a Ranker only after you have risen to a Level 3 [Hero]!

Of course, a Level 3 [Hero] is only strong in the eyes of ordinary people.

In the eyes of Innate Rankers, warriors that ranked below a Level 6 [Elder] were all insects that were not even worth mentioning.

When comparing those Innate Rankers from the Soaring Dragon Continent who had spent hundreds of years cultivating profound skills, Yue Yang who had barely cultivated his skills for 3 months as an Innate Ranker, was still very far behind. However, he was still an Innate Ranker!

Tie Kuang, who was also nicknamed the Armored Beast, was a renowned expert within White Stone City's mercenaries, and it would be laughable to compare ordinary mercenaries with him. However, if he suffered even a single blow of Yue Yang's [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, it would definitely result in a fatal injury. This is the difference between an Innate Ranker and an ordinary Ranker... However, Yue Yang had no intention of using the Invisible Sword Qi to kill Tie Kuang. He wanted to capture Tie

Kuang alive so that he could join his comrade Rock in becoming fertilizer for Thorny Flower.

Although the Thorny Flower's strength increased quite a bit after digesting that Level 2 Ranker Rock, it was unfortunately not enough for it to jump a rank and evolve.

Even after devouring a live person, it had still not attained the Bronze rank.

It seems that it was not easy to raise a [Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen], a Mythical Beast with a human form.

Fortunately, the Soaring Dragon Continent had no lack of villains.

Yue Yang had never worried about the fertilizer situation .

Putting the entire Soaring Dragon Continent aside, White Stone City alone had a Vengeance List of more than 100 people. One could only imagine just how rich the fertilizer supply was. Being a Vengeance Hunter had allowed him to refine his battle experiences, raise his Thorny Flower and even earn some allowance. Who would turn down such good benefits?

Yue Yang went to the Eastern Tavern and entered, but after looking all around, he was unable to find any girls with \*\* as round and big as a soccer ball.

However, he was able to find a few girls with \*\* as big as papayas.

He had barely beckoned before a few ‘papaya ladies’ surrounded him, pleasantly surprised: “Is Young Master looking to have some fun? What would you like to play? Do you want a twosome or threesome?”

“Looking down on me? This Young Master had you all covered!” Yue Yang tossed out a handful of silver coins, causing the surrounding women’s eyes to light up. A few of the ‘papaya ladies’ shrieked like a \*\* upon seeing the money. Aside from snatching the falling money with a thief’s speed, they excitedly began to surround Yue Yang in a sea of breasts, practically suffocating him to death.

Seeing that Yue Yang had then went out out of the door with the army of big-breasted ladies, all the men in the tavern were extremely envious of that little thief’s luck with women.

An orgy?

Not bad!

At the same time, they were a bit worried about the little thief’s body. They inwardly thought, wouldn’t this little fellow be completely drained by these girls’ insatiable lust?

The men inside the tavern began to laugh heartily. If that was so, then the cleaning staff would probably have to throw his little

skeleton body out the next day. Even if that little thief survived this ordeal, he probably wouldn't be able to get up from bed for at least another month...

As for the 'papaya ladies' vitality-sucking \*\* skill, they had all experienced it before. Enduring one of them alone was pretty difficult, let alone a group of them!

If the ladies rushed at him from all sides, he will have no choice but to arrive at death's door!

At the corner of the tavern, the little bright-eyed thief that helped Yue Yang fill out the forms yesterday night quietly sat. When the bright eyed thief saw Yue Yang struggling happily in the sea of breasts, she spat in disdain.

However, suddenly, everyone saw the (condemned to die) little thief walked back in, before they could even finish one cup of wine.

No way?

That fast?

Did he has some divine skills?

Even if this thief was a quick shot, this was still too darn fast!

If he finished that quickly, why did he want so many girls? Wasn't one enough?

“Brother, did you even take off your pants?” One of the men asked in curiosity, while another shouted loudly, “You are too wasteful. If you can't do it yourself, you can ask us for help! We would gladly help you. Brother, don't you think that you're wasting money this way?”

“My dear older brothers, I am just an errand boy who was helping someone to call those ladies... How could I engage in an orgy, such a good occasion?” Yue Yang snickered as he replied.

“Tsk!” Everyone clicked their tongue.

They had thought that he was a rich young master, and been jealous of him for so long. They hadn't expected that he was only an errand boy.

However, once they thought about it, they realized this made sense as well. If this scamp really had money, it would be weird if he was willing to spend it all on these girls for an orgy!

Yue Yang understood how to win people's hearts. He fished out 2 silvers, threw it on the table, and loudly declared, “Meeting everyone together here today was fate. Hence, I'll use the commission I gained tonight to treat all of you brothers to a drink. At the same time, let's pray that bastard dies from excessive ejaculation...”

Everyone smiled in satisfaction at these words.

Everyone thought this little thief had a glib tongue and was quick-witted.

Since he was treating them to a drink, they would definitely not hold back. They all raised their glasses and cheered.

The bright-eyed thief sitting in the corner inwardly snorted to herself. She didn't try to take any liberties with the sexily-dressed bar girls who showed their cleavages and wore rabbit ears as they went about serving the wines.

Suddenly, Yue Yang sat on the opposite side of her table, laughing heartily as he said, "Brother, I knew that I would be able to find you here. How's everything? That voluptuous girl, isn't she a magnificent sight? Don't be embarrassed, an inexperienced virgin such as yourself should study as much as you can. Moreover, this is the way human relationships are formed. Confucius once said, 'Appetite and lust are only natural.' Did you see how great this saying is?"

"..." The bright-eyed thief rolled his eyes at his words. She really wanted to kick this lecherous-minded hound to death.

"Brother, I simply can't watch without doing anything. We'll book a room tonight. Whatever is said, you will lose that virginity of yours tonight! If you don't have the money, don't worry about it. It's my treat!" Yue Yang magnanimously patted the bright eyed thief's shoulder.



## Chapter 22 – Please Don't Casually Fall For Me

---

The bright-eyed thief mumbled “ridiculous” and brushed away Yue Yang’s hand. She then stood up and turned to leave.

“How is this ridiculous? A man and a woman’s romantic passionate love is the most meaningful thing in the world.” Yue Yang quickly chased after her, hot on her tail. At the same time, he laughed, “Brother, don’t feel embarrassed. If you don’t know anything about skills in bed, I can teach you. Even though I don’t qualify as being that experienced, we can slowly research the topic together.... If you have anything to say, let’s talk it through... Don’t take out your dagger.”

The bright-eyed thief was fuming with anger, and she began to quickly move.

With a whirl of her hand, the dagger flashed in front of Yue Yang.

Yue Yang stared at the dagger held up against his throat, and meekly raised his two hands up into the air, indicating his surrender.

“Get lost! I’m not the same type of person as you.” The bright-eyed thief was trying hard to suppress her urge to kill the brat, as she coldly squeezed out the words through her teeth.

“No way? You don’t like women?” Yue Yang said with an extreme expression, “Could you possibly be the legendary chi chi man?”

“What chi chi man?” The bright eyed thief asked in confusion.

“In this world, people are split into ‘attackers’ and ‘defenders’. The attackers are responsible of sowing the seeds, which is arduous work. On the other hand, the defenders are just in charge of moaning in pleasure. This is a comfortable and terrific job.....Aiya, don’t hit me.” Yue Yang hadn’t even finished his words before he had been punched in the face by the bright-eyed thief.

“Let me warn you now, if you see me in the future, you’d better keep your distance. Otherwise, I’ll kill you.” The bright-eyed thief said indignantly. However, Yue Yang had to admit that this fellow’s angry appearance was quite attractive.

There were people like this in the world; no matter whether they were laughing or fuming, their appearances were still extremely attractive.

Everyone couldn’t help but to like them.

On the other hand, there were some people that were the complete opposite. No matter whether they were happy or angry, their appearances were always extremely disgusting. People would have no other option but to vomit at their sight. If one looked at their appearance for too long, they’d have the urge to go bang their

heads into the wall and kill themselves.

Yue Yang felt that this bright-eyed thief was the former type of person, and one that people would only like more and more. When he saw the bright-eyed thief get angry, he wasn't afraid of her; instead, he smiled even more brightly and said, "Don't worry, I'll hide far away. Otherwise, I'm afraid that a man-lover like you will fall in love with me."

The bright-eyed thief originally wanted to send Yue Yang flying with a kick and then leave, but after she heard his words, she immediately began to question the the brat's sanity.

"What did you say? I'll end up falling in love with you?" The bright-eyed thief repeated, as if she was unable to believe her own ears.

"Of course, such an outstanding and handsome man like me is welcomed by both beautiful men and women. But please take note: although I am loved by everyone, I only like beautiful women. I have no interest towards beautiful men, so please do not fall for me." Yue Yang, nose high up in the air, praised himself complacently.

"...." The bright-eyed thief almost fell flat on her face from hearing these words.

She had met narcissists before, but it was her first time meeting one on a level this high.

Even the White Stone City's walls were like a piece of paper compared to his thick skin. The bright-eyed thief felt that even if all the narcissists in the world were combined into one person and compared to this brat, their narcissism would not even reached a tenth of this brat's.

The bright-eyed thief was secretly glad that she wasn't a narcissist. Otherwise, she would have probably felt completely inferior to the brat in front of her and killed herself with her own dagger...

Heaven knows how there could be such an abnormal existence in this world.

That's right, aside from abnormal, there was no other way to accurately describe the extremely narcissistic, pervert minded fellow standing right in front of her, who currently wore a large grin across his face.

"Although many beautiful men have confessed to me before, my heart can only be taken by beautiful women for eternity."

"Don't worry, I won't ever like an outstanding toad like you, especially not for eternity." The bright-eyed thief sneered at Yue Yang and referred to him as a toad that had wished to eat a swan's meat, indulging in his wild fantasies.

"I feel relieved then, brother. I have always worried about this problem. Now it's all good, it turns out that you don't actually like men. Just like me, you like beautiful women. Hu, now that I've

finally relieved myself from this pressure since I know that you like women, not men, then everything's fine. This is great; we have a common language and common tastes. Come come come, let's go on an adventure together. I, who was extremely knowledgeable about girls and multi-talented, had always wanted to write a book to demystify a girl's mysteries and guide millions of lost youths in this world. I was just missing a companion." Yue Yang patted his chest, and exaggerated how his worried heart had finally been reassured. He then intimately twined his arms on the bright-eyed thief's shoulder, as if he had finally found a fellow enthusiast to accompany him on his battles.

"I say, a knowledgeable and multi-talented person like you should be able to complete your book about girls' mysteries on your own. I have things to do, so I won't be accompanying you." The bright-eyed thief smiled coldly, having great disdain for the self-proclaimed knowledgeable and multi-talented fellow, thinking that this brat really had nothing but perverted thoughts in his mind.

"It seems that you doubt my genuine talent. Brother, you've completely misunderstood. If you could just understand even 1% of the boundless knowledge I have, I believe that you will be completely captivated by my profoundness. Before, I was just worried that you would love me despite my male gender, and so for the sake of preserving our relationship as friends, I didn't reveal my inner depth. Do you understand now? Brother, did you really think I was just a normal person? No, I'm a genius." Yue Yang's words were just a bit short of literally writing the word genius on his forehead.

"You are a genius? More like a natural idiot."

The bright-eyed thief had never seen such an arrogant narcissist in her life before, to think he even dared to call himself a genius.

If geniuses were all like him, then the human race would be completely eradicated.

“Since you have sworn that you definitely won’t be captivated by me, then I can just show you my ways...I have no choice but to let you know of my true formidability. Let me tell you, normal people aren’t anything compared to me; even the Immortal Poet, Li Bai, often plagiarizes my poetry, as does the Poet Sage, Du Fu. Otherwise, how could they have gotten to the point where people say that ‘Li Bai and Du Fu’s literary works cast their radiance far and wide’? What you don’t know is that it’s because of me that they are here today. Do you get it now?” Yue Yang said earnestly, with complete certainty. His expression was extremely serious as well. The bright-eyed thief stared at him for a while; could this brat really write poems?

“The Immortal Poet, [Li Bai](#)? Who is he?” The bright-eyed thief had never heard of this God of Poetry Li Bai.

“Child, you must study well and improve yourself everyday. Not even knowing who the Immortal Poet Li Bai is, no, this won’t do at all.” Yue Yang patted the bright-eyed thief’s shoulder, speaking as if he was old, wise and experienced, putting on an expression that said you would regret it later if you are lazy now.

“What’s so good about this Immortal Poet, Li Bai? Why do I need

to know him?” The bright-eyed thief snorted in disdain. But her words seemed to lack some of her previous confidence.

“Could it be that you haven’t even heard of the ‘Quiet Night Thought’ that he copied from me? That’s a classic work. How could you have never heard of it?” Yue Yang looked as if he had just encountered a strange creature that couldn’t read.

“‘[Quiet Night Thought](#)’? Never heard of it. What kind of poem is it?” The bright-eyed thief tried hard to recall, but couldn’t find any memory relating to the poem.

(TLN: Quiet Night Thought is basically the first poem every children in China will learn in schools. The poem was written by Li Bai, one of the most famous poet in Chinese Literature.)

## Chapter 23 – A Pair Of Shoes

---

“Before my bed, the moon is shining bright, resembling a touch of frost upon the ground. Raising up my head to look at the bright moon, I lowered my head and think of home.

(TLN:床前明月光, 疑是地上霜; 举头望明月, 低头思故乡 Chuang qian ming yue guang, yi shi di shang shuang, ju tou wang ming yue, di tou si gu xiang)

Although he plagiarized my work, the concept is still fine, especially the way he raised his head to look at the moon. That kind of “looking up to the round moon in the sky” and “lowering your head and thinking of home”, it broke through the hearts of the millions of people in the world that longed for their own hometown. A faint sense of nostalgia, paired with the silence of nature, reverberating continuously through one’s heart, an expression that cannot be expressed. It is at this point that silence triumphs sound in embodying this feeling... However, if you just listen to my original works, then you will be even more surprised. That is because, my original works, are of supernaturally fine craftsmanship, to the extent of shocking the world and making the Gods cry! I dare to say that once I recite a poem, you will jump with emotion, forget where you are and pat my back in awe...” Yue Yang emphasized that his own work is original, and that the content is awe-inspiring to the point of shocking the world and making the Gods cry.

As a result, this aroused the bright-eyed thief’s curiosity.

Could it be that this fellow could actually compose poems?



“Alright then, go ahead and recite your Quiet Night Thought.” The bright-eyed thief felt that this brat would not be able to compose a poem, but she decided to give him a chance.

“Make sure you stand firm and listen closely. My poem is this: Before my bed, there is a pair of shoes, there are clothes on the floor. I raise my head and look at the bright moon, I lower my head and think of my lady... ..” Yue Yang hadn’t even finished speaking before the bright-eyed thief’s fists flew towards him.

(TLN: The joke got lost in translation...but basically, the poem consist of 5 letters per line, and Yue Yang only changed a few. You can see it here: 床前鞋一双, 衣是地上霜; 举头望明月, 低头思姑娘. Chuang qian xie yi shuang, yi shi di shang shuang; ju tou wang ming yue, di tou si gu niang)

The bright-eyed thief thought that even the most innocent things would be defiled in this bastard’s mind.

When hearing the Quiet Night Thought, she had thought that the concept was extremely beautiful. It was simple enough to understand yet it had incited such complex feelings in her heart. Compared to those poems filled with flowery and magnificent words, Quiet Night Thought was much more touching.

The bright-eyed thief had intended to forgive him at first, but who knew that this fellow was naturally deserved to be beaten!

Yue Yang was extremely thick-skinned and didn’t seem to mind.

He jumped back up with mirth in his eyes: “Actually, this is only the first draft. You must know that good poems are all modified, like the saying “Mincing each word and finding the right rhymes, immersed in literary works till one dies.”. Don’t be too anxious, I still have another edited version of the Quiet Night Thought.”

The bright-eyed thief laughed coldly: “Don’t say anything else about the pair of shoes in front of the bed. You can slowly savour it by yourself!”

If not for hearing what he said afterwards about “Mincing each word and finding the right rhymes, immersed in literary works till one dies”, and finding it interesting and profound, that bright-eyed thief would have already stabbed him and left a long time ago.

Now, there seemed to have been a change for the better.

Could it be that just now he was just teasing me on purpose?

Could it be that this fellow, such a frivolous person by nature, was actually a really talented poet?

Yue Yang immediately raised his voice to oppose: “It’s changed; of course its not a pair a shoes before the window, it’s now: Before my bed, there are two pairs of shoes. Shedding clothes on the floor, I raise my head and look at the bright moon, then I lowered my head and kiss my lady! Wahh! Heavens, if there’s anything you want to say, say it nicely, gentlemen speak with their mouths and not their fists!” Yue Yang ran once he finished speaking, because the bright-eyed thief had already picked up her dagger, vowing to

stab this shameless fellow who dared to tamper with the classics.

(TLN: Same thing. 床前鞋两双, 脱衣地上放; 举头望明月, 低头亲姑娘  
Chuang qian xie liang shuang, tuo yi di shang fang; ju tou wang  
ming yue, di tou qin gu niang)

After chasing him down nine streets, the bright-eyed thief still refused to let him off.

In the end, Yue Yang was left with no choice but to use the finishing blow, thus shouting loudly: “Everyone, quickly come and see, there are beauties running around naked on the street!”

This one shout drew countless mercenaries out to take a look, the bright-eyed thief couldn’t take it anymore and decided to disappear after catching up to Yue Yang and giving him a flying kick at his back.

Yue Yang patted his backside and muttered to himself: “The Old Daoist Priest kicked my backside, and in payment gave me his granddaughter the Heavenly Sword Goddess as my wife. Now that I get kicked by you, I shouldn’t make exceptions either. Although you cannot compare to the Heavenly Sword Goddess, I can make an effort to keep you as my mistress... Very well, it’s about time, let’s go see what that fellow Tie Kuang has died from excessive ejaculation yet!”

At first, Yue Yang only planned on spending a little money to get a few girls to tire Tie Kuang out so that he would sleep soundly.

There were many ways to kill a person, one way was to ‘use female charms to lure a man and kill him.’ This method was one of the most effective, as well as one of the most formidable ones.

As the old sayings go: Liquor is the sword that pierces your intestines, lust is the blade that scrapes your bones.

Yue Yang reckoned that if Tie Kuang had drank so much liquor and had so much sex but was still standing, then he could become a superman in person.

Thus, Yue Yang whistled and swaggered, as if walking through a front courtyard leisurely.

When he reached the house in which Tie Kuang stayed in, suddenly he saw that there was a woman with particularly well-developed breasts, actually waiting for him in the darkness of the doorway.

“Young Master, not only did we get Tie Kuang to drink till he’s asleep, we’ve even tied him up, you can go in any moment to kill him!” This big-breasted woman immediately knelt down and kowtowed to him.

Her words really gave Yue Yang a big shock.

These prostitutes, how did they know that he was going to kill Tie Kuang?

It was a good thing that they did not alert Tie Kuang, otherwise, there would probably be a trap lying in wait for him once he went in.

From what this big-breasted woman is saying, do these prostitutes bear animosity for Tie Kuang? Yue Yang was secretly astounded by his own luck; fortunately, he was able to succeed with a stroke of luck!

As she kowtowed, the big-breasted woman tearfully said, “While this lowly servant keeps watch outside, I plead that Young Master quickly goes in and kills Tie Kuang. If you take too long, Tie Kuang might wake up, and the situation might change. Tie Kuang’s summoned beast spirit is very formidable. Young Master must be extremely careful!”

“How did you know that I want to kill him?” Yue Yang was baffled. It looked like these girls weren’t just large chested bimbos!

“If Tie Kuang wants women, he wouldn’t pay for it. Our husbands were all killed by him. Many of my sisters were forced into a living hell by becoming prostitutes to earn money for him. We are his tools to make money. Do you think that in such a situation, he would still spend money to get women? Earlier, when you said that you were a mercenary from the Violent Beast Mercenary Group and had come here to invite prostitutes for Tie Kuang to serve him, we already knew that it was definitely a false pretense.....in addition, we can tell from Young Master’s eyes that you are not his subordinate; you don’t have that arrogance towards us, nor the humility towards him. You held a clear gaze that hid a deep sense of profoundness, with an unyielding expression of self-

satisfaction. You seem more like a young master of a higher status! How could someone like you run Tie Kuang's errands for just a bit of money? This is obviously impossible! The only explanation is that you are an assassin that is planning on killing Tie Kuang; a Vengeance Hunter assassin. You, a great hero that is daring enough to do anything to protect justice, must have come to aid the powerless and segregated people like us.....Young Master, you shouldn't doubt us. Actually, the families that placed Tie Kuang on the Vengeance List are our sisters. We've never given up on enacting our revenge against Tie Kuang these past few years in hope that a great hero like you would appear!"

The big-breasted woman said this with a tear-stained face while constantly kowtowing her head to express her thanks to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was shocked by her sensitive power of perception.

It seemed that he really had underestimated the people of Soaring Dragon Continent! This big-breasted woman had managed to come up with such audacious reasoning with so little clues; moreover, her reasoning was extremely accurate. This was really not a simple feat!

Now that he had gained a clearer understanding of the situation, why hadn't they reported to Tie Kuang?

It was because Tie Kuang was their target of revenge. He was the murderer of their husbands; this enmity was completely irreconcilable!

However, he still had some doubts, “If you’ve already gotten him drunk and tied him up, then why don’t you women kill him yourselves? Isn’t this something that would only require the lifting of a hand?”

---

Shiro’s Chinese 201: Advanced Poetry – Learning famous poems and sayings to show off to Chinese people

1. 床前明月光，疑是地上霜；举头望明月，低头思故乡

Chuáng qián míngyuèguāng, yí shì dìshàng shuāng; jǔ tóu wàng míng yuè, dītóu sī gùxiāng

The moon is shining bright before my bed, resembling a touch of frost upon the ground. Raising up my head to look at the bright moon, I lowered my head and think of home.

2. 寻章摘句老雕虫，晓月当帘挂玉弓

Xún zhāng zhāi jù lǎo diāo chóng, xiǎo yuè dāng lián guà yù gōng

Mincing each word and finding the right rhymes, immersed in literary works till one dies

3. 二八佳人体似酥，腰间仗剑斩愚夫。虽然不见人头落，暗里教君骨髓枯。

Èrbā jiā réntǐ shì sū, yāo jiān zhàng jiàn zhǎn yú fū. Suīrán bùjiàn réntóu luò, ànlǐ jiào jūn gǔsuǐ kū.

A sixteen year old girl’s body seemed tender and soft, but the sword hidden behind her waist would kill a foolish husband. Although lecherous men are not everywhere, men could still unconsciously fell onto a women’s trap.

4. 酒是穿肠剑，色是刮骨刀。

Jiǔ shì chuān cháng jiàn, sè shì guā gǔ dāo

Liquor is the sword that pierces your intestines, lust is the blade that scrapes your bones.



## Chapter 24 – Assassin At Night

---

The big-breasted woman lifted up her tear-filled face and shook her head slowly, “We can kill him, but we don’t have enough power to endure the revenge that the authorities behind him would inflict upon us. My sisters aren’t like me who is a childless widow, they all had sons and daughters, even elderly parents. If Tie Kuang died, his clan would definitely enact revenge, and once they found out about us, we would probably be punished heavily and thrown into jail. In the jail, we would probably be tortured to death. Our parents, sons and daughters would also be killed...We don’t dare to take revenge ourselves, we could only hope for the appearance of a hero who would not submit to tyranny...Young Master, if your powers are not enough to take on the Tie Clan and the White Stone’s City Lord, then please leave this place quickly. We will untie Tie Kuang and continue to serve him when he wakes up. We will do our best to stop him from suspecting something from this matter.”

“How long have you guys put Tie Kuang on the Vengeance Hunter’s List?” Yue Yang asked his last question.

“Three years. We’ve never given up all this while.” The big-breasted woman gave Yue Yang a resolute gaze. “Although we don’t have money, even if we have to save on our food and living expenses, we will never give up this vengeance.”

Hearing this, Yue Yang slowly nodded his head.

As weak and lowly prostitutes whose dignity had been crushed to bits, even after being looked down upon and stepped down upon

by so many, they still held on to their vengeance. All their hard-earned money would need to be handed over to their manager, so they could only sneak a little amount of money out into their pockets. Yet they were still able to save fifteen gold coins every half a year to continue on putting Tie Kuang on the Vengeance List. Their determination and willpower for vengeance really deserved respect and admiration.

With regards to being hunted down by the Tie Clan after killing Tie Kuang, Yue Yang didn't care about it at all.

This was because he could get into a space gap, based on the knowledge he got from the Copper Grimoire.

Firstly, Tie Kuang had not used any Vengeance Scroll on him to record his appearance. Because of this, his name wouldn't appear on the Vengeance List. Even if it had accidentally been recorded by the Vengeance Scroll, the name that would appear on the Vengeance List would only be the 'Titan' that he had previously recorded, not his real name.

If Yue Yang really killed Tie Kuang, the Tie family would probably seek him for revenge, and sent a Vengeance Hunter after him.

However, this couldn't possibly happen.

This was because of the loophole that Yue Yang had created. He hadn't personally killed the other party; at most, he was only an accomplice.

The Vengeance List would at most only recorded the Thorny Flower that had swallowed Tie Kuang. However, Yue Yang hadn't given the Thorny Flower a name, so only a strange, anonymous person would appear on the Vengeance List. And before Yue Yang summons the Thorny Flower from the Copper Grimoire, its red dot wouldn't appear on the Bloodrose Map either.

It was exactly because of this loophole that Yue Yang felt that (putting Tie Kuang aside) anyone, no matter how powerful their background was or how amazing their strength was, would only turn into fertilizer...

Before he pushed the door open to enter, he gave the big-breasted girl a calm smile.

"In the future, you don't need to pay money to the assassin guild anymore. The money would just be a waste, since not every assassin enjoys earning money. If you're willing, you can come find me. I'm an assassin that will kill anyone for money. No matter who you want to kill, I'll do it, as long as you pay a fee."

The big-breasted girl behind him was suddenly overwhelmed with her emotions that her shoulders were shaking.

She silently cried, her emotions in a complete mess.

In less than 10 minutes, Yue Yang walked out.

He held a rather large leather pouch and tossed it next to the big-breasted woman's feet, "There are some copper coins in that pouch for you. I need you to do something for me, there are some gold and silver ornaments inside this pouch; I want you to find an appropriate seller in the black market to pawn these things off for gold coins that I can use... If the seller dared to trick me, I will kill him too. I will not tolerate anyone ruining my plans....Do you have any other targets of revenge? If you do, say them now. If you complete this exchange for me, although I won't do anything for you for free, I will consider giving you on a loan, and slowly collect interest."

The big-breasted woman trembled as she continued to kowtow. She stuttered, "There are still two people. One is called 'Chang Dao', the other is called 'Xie Huo'. Although I don't know their actual names, I've seen that Tie Kuang speaks to the both of them with respect. Xie Huo periodically comes to White Stone City. Based on my calculations, Chang Dao might come in a few days. We don't know anything about him, just that his blade is extremely fast. Even as he sits down and drinks liquor, he could kill dozens of people in succession with only a wave of his hands. Normally, he doesn't come to White Stone City very often; he appears and disappears unpredictably. However, this Chang Dao has a very obvious distinctive feature; his right hand that holds his blade is much larger than his left; at least twice its size."

Yue Yang laughed at this. He turned around and his words floated in the breeze, "If you help me complete this exchange, the next time you see them, those two will be dead."

The big-breasted woman kowtowed fiercely once more in thanks.

When she lifted her tear-filled eyes, the figure in front of her had already long since disappeared with the wind.

By the next morning, Yue Yang, an assassin that could kill a person without batting an eye, had returned to the role of the beautiful woman's beloved San-er. If she knew that the San-er she loved dearly had climbed over the walls of their manor, went out and used his Thorny Flower to eat two people alive, who knows what she would've thought.

If Yue Bing was still practicing summoning techniques with Yue Yang in the small courtyard, she would've definitely noticed that the Thorny Flower that Yue Yang summoned was now a little different.

The Spitting Thorny Flower was currently still level 1, but its grade had already changed from ordinary to bronze.

Its breed has also changed to 'Bloody Tongued Spitting Thorny Flower'.

Currently, the Thorny Flower was around 2 meters tall, and its stalks were as thick as a human's arm. Thorns densely covered its entire body, and its monstrous mouth-like petals had grown larger; its teeth had become even sharper. The greatest difference of all was that it had grown a long blood-red tongue. It would stick out its tongue and continuously flicker it back and forth, like a snake. The beautiful woman had not noticed this different appearance at all. She held the small girl and sat under the rays of the sunlight, cheerfully reading the letter that her daughter had sent home.

“San-er, Bing Er sent you a greeting through this letter.” The beautiful woman felt that everything happening within her family was now changing for the better.

Her originally quiet daughter was now getting closer to her San-er.

Normally, her letters home would definitely not inquire about her third brother. Now she mentioned him multiple times in her letters, and even subtly asked for his studies' grade report. This confirmed the fact that this little girl still wanted a powerful older brother deep in her heart.

“Did Bing Er's test go smoothly?” Yue Yang put away his Bloody Tongued Spitting Thorny Flower. After his Thorny Flower had risen to Bronze rank, it was at least 10 times more powerful, yet it hadn't increased in level. This proved that his secret wasn't wrong; the evolution path that his Thorny Flower was following couldn't be more correct. At the very least, the first step towards its progress had been successful. He believed that the Thorny Flower would continue to raise in rank to Silver rank and Gold rank. Then, from Gold rank, it would undergo a new evolution process, changing into a humanoid Bronze ranked Thorny Flower Demon.... The Thorny Flower Demon would then continue to raise in ranks from Bronze to Silver, Gold, Platinum all the way to the Diamond rank. After three evolutions, it would finally change into a Bronze-ranked intelligent humanoid Thorny Flower Queen. It will then continue onto another path of evolution. Only then would it become the legendary humanoid Mythical Beast 'Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen'.

Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's path of maturation required three levels of evolution. This process would probably be extremely long and arduous.

However, it had already taken the right first step forward.

As long as the Thorny Flower continued to swallow living people as fertilizer, its growth rate would be much faster than any beast-type or avian-type, even with the help of demon crystals. Its evolution would only endlessly skyrocket forward. In the future, the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen would become any monster's worst nightmare on the battlefield.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen from 3 thousand years ago would no longer be only a legend; it would become a true story.

'Bing Er's test went extremely smoothly. Next year, she can enter the fifth grade advanced class. She also registered you as second grade, since the school regulations state that one cannot register for anything above the third grade. Therefore, San-er, for the moment, you can only enter the second grade. Bing Er said in her letter that after studying there for a few months, if your grades are excellent, you can jump straight to the third grade." Then, the young girl in the beautiful woman's arms began to shout loudly as she shouted that she wanted to attend school as well. The beautiful woman saw that she could no longer keep the girl still, so she could only release her. The girl then jumped into Yue Yang's arms like a spoiled child. After the beautiful woman finished reading the letter, she looked hesitant as she sighed. "Bing Er said she won't return home for the next three months. She wants to go to Tong

Tian Tower and go through a test there....”

“Tong Tian Tower? A test?” As Yue Yang listened, his eyebrows slightly creased.



## Chapter 25 – The Beauty

---

According to the information given to him by the Copper Grimoire, Tong Tian Tower was an unusual place.

Tong Tian Tower had been around since ancient times, and legend has it that the ancient gods built it. Its position is at the central point of the Soaring Dragon Continent, and it is also known as the ladder that the ancient gods left for humans to ‘ascend to heaven’. No one knows exactly how tall the Tong Tian Tower is, as it reaches through the clouds, and the ancient gods created and arranged it such that its surroundings were enshrouded. No one can climb the outside, it is necessary to climb the interior of the Tong Tian Tower level by level.

In every level of the Tong Tian Tower, there is a portal. After the portal, is a single separate realm, anyone can go in to cultivate.

The conditions to climb up are to first obtain a unique token from a lower floor before going up to the next floor.

“Bing Er is only going to the first level, barely entrance-level testing, moreover, teachers from the school will be leading them in groups, so there should be no danger, but I still worry a bit for that stubborn girl!” The beautiful woman knew her daughter’s personality well, she was solitary and taciturn, disliking social activities, unable to communicate well and did not have any close friends in school, thus whether it be day to day life or during the testing process, it is easy to be at a disadvantage. By any chance if she is in danger, there might not be any one to help her and she can only flounder without any support.

“Nothing will happen, please be reassured, Seventh Younger Sister can take good care of herself!” Once Yue Yang heard that it was the first level that Bing Er was going to, and the test she was taking part in was the entrance examination, he quickly used several kind words to comfort the beautiful woman.

Tong Tian Tower’s first and second levels’ test has almost no risk toward lives, only after reaching the third level, will it become a real Death Refining.

Of course, everything has a chance of having an unexpected mishap occurring.

For example, that youth from the Feng Clan that Yue Bing had an arranged marriage with, was actually instantly killed by a wandering Gold King Beast in the Second Level of Tong Tian Tower. It’s just that, this type of accidents happened very rarely, to the extent that it can be overlooked and disregarded. Over the last few hundred years, apart from that one accident, there still hadn’t been a second case. That was because even in the Third Level of Tong Tian Tower, the Gold King Beast would only within its area of domain, it wouldn’t wander around aimlessly...

Due to worrying about her daughter, the beautiful woman was a bit absent-minded today, even for someone as skilled as she is in needlework, has already gotten her finger pricked by the needle a few times.

Seeing the beautiful woman pricked finger dripping blood, Yue

Yang suddenly had a flash of inspiration darting through his mind.

It is possible, that his own Black Jade Necklace needed blood to confirm its owner!

Black Jade Necklace was ordinary and unassuming in the daytime, nobody could tell that it was a treasure and Yue Yang had never been able to find out what this object's real purpose was.

Yue Yang's state of mind was stirred up, once the beautiful woman and the little girl left, he immediately took the Black Jade Necklace off his own neck, using a needle to prick himself and draw blood, and dripped a little on the necklace surface.

After half a day, there was no response from it at all.

“Ok, ok, I admit it. I've read too many game novels!” Yue Yang had originally thought that this item would've been like those in game novels that would require a drop of blood to recognize its owner. This would bind it to the person, and then make it so that it would never wear down nor drop. It could also level up along with the owner, making it an extremely amazing godly weapon.

Who knew, the Black Jade Necklace still did not respond even after half a day, causing much pain to Yue Yang's heart.

Forget it, one day I'll understand it!

Yue Yang stretched out his hand, prepared to clasp the Black Jade

Necklace onto his neck. Suddenly, he discovered that there was a black dot on the necklace that was rapidly getting larger. In the blink of an eye, it had turned into a terrible black hole with endless attraction force. Yue Yang was practically swallowed into it.

Like that, Yue Yang had almost been finished off.

He found out that his entire body was almost torn up by the black hole. In the instant that he was being swallowed up by the black hole, it was as if skin, flesh, bones and even his spirit were all becoming fine powder, being painfully annihilated. When Yue Yang thought that he was about to die, suddenly in the depths of his spirit lit a large number of unusual fires of life, giving Yue Yang another strange feeling of resurrection. He quickly realised that he didn't actually die, in fact he was in a quiet place with no light at all... ..

Exactly what was going on? How could he get out?

Yue Yang thought that this was really a brain that was larger than three others. It seemed that this method of using a drop of blood to recognize an owner couldn't be tested so casually. Now it had caused so much trouble!

“Eh? You actually haven't died yet? You're such a strange human boy. Wa, you're even an Innate, there's such a young Innate?” Just as Yue Yang was unsure of what to do, a graceful yet astonished female voice rang out.

Before even having the time to react, Yue Yang discovered that

he had been lifted up by an irresistible force.

Following that, a pair of warm, soft, and creamy lips kissed him on the mouth.

The beauty had given him a kiss?

The first thought he had was that he finally got a kiss, but then was terrified to find out the ‘beauty’ that was enthusiastically kissing him was a scary vampire, she was in a frenzy to take his inner energy... ... All the energy that was cultivated for a month in the second level was sucked out by her in a few seconds. If she did not release her cherry coloured lips, Yue Yang had no suspicions that he would become a dried up corpse.

“It’s been 10,000 years, but this is the first time I’ve ever felt so comfortable! This is really refreshing. Although the amount is a bit lacking, it’s extremely pure. Not bad!” The beauty that had kissed him said with a gasp of admiration from within the darkness.

“Fuck!” Yue Yang discovered that he had been drained so that his body now felt weak. His legs were like jello when he stood; it was like the feeling he got when he masturbated too much.

After a moment of dizziness passed, Yue Yang made the unusual discovery that he could actually see in the dark.

Even without a trace of light, he was able to see clearly enough to know that his own body was bare, not wearing a single piece of

clothing on his bare self, exactly like a streaker. Standing in front of him was a beauty over 2 metres tall, her complexion was able to cause the downfall of a city, with creamy skin, blue sapphires for eyes, unblinkingly staring at him, full of surprise and curiosity. This beauty had a long mane of gold hair, demurely cascading down her shoulders to cover the two erect peaks on her chest that was like snowy jade. Yue Yang resisted with great difficulty the urge to cop a feel, and looking downwards, could only see the slender waist, one of nature's greatest works. Supernaturally finely crafted statues could not show the perfection of this natural delicate body.

Even if he had died and dropped to the degenerate 18th level of hell to suffer, Yue Yang still wanted to see even further down....

This was an extremely rare chance. If he couldn't see the bare beauty in front of him, Yue Yang might as well have changed his name to [Liu Xia Hui](#). (TL: Liu Xia Hui is a chinese figure that was said to have been so virtuous that he showed no immorality even when a woman was on his lap)

However, when Yue Yang used his predator-like vision to look downwards, he cried out in shock, "My god, you, why are your legs a snake's tail?"

Hearing this, the golden-haired beauty smiled. Her smile was like a lustrous sea of stars, capable of causing the downfall of a city and causing the heavens and earth to collapse. Her smile made Yue Yang's soul float outside of his body and forget about staying on earth.

She had six arms extending outwards behind her mane of golden hair, swinging in an extremely beautiful way. One snow white hand lifted Yue Yang's lower jaw lightly, and those sapphire eyes were filled with laughter: "Cute little human boy, this is not strange, I am a Serpent Empress, of course I look different from humans, don't you think that my serpent tail is also very beautiful?"

## Chapter 26 – Fei Wen Li, Her Majesty The Empress

---

The bottom half of the golden haired beauty's body was a snake tail that measured a few metres in length. It was akin to white jade in color and was truly beautiful, with a sort of grace that could not be explained. However, it was still a snake tail.

If it was a pair of human legs, Yue Yang would probably like it more.

That swaying six arms on her shoulders, were indeed a bit too much, if only there were only a pair of jade arms, that would be wonderfully perfect.

Yue Yang stared at the golden haired beauty's snake tail and six arms. After a long time, he responded. Grabbing one of the golden haired beauty's white jade hands, he asked with a cheerful smile on his face: "Are you Bai Su Zhen, [Madame White Snake](#)? I have looked forward to meeting you, I am Xu Xian."

"What nonsense are you talking about? My name is Fei Wen Li, please call me the world's most beautiful Serpent Empress." The golden haired beauty let out an extremely confident smile.

"My greetings, Your Majesty." Yue Yang had assumed the air and style of a refined and courteous gentleman.

"You should have added an additional 'World's most beautiful' in



front when greeting me. It will make me happier. Now let us have a little chat, cute little human boy. Can you tell me how you were able to break through this Black Hole Seal? Furthermore, how could you be an Innate when you are still so young?" The golden Serpent Empress Fei Wen Li asked curiously as she blinked her big beautiful eyes, looking into Yue Yang's eyes.

"Nothing I can do about it, I'm a genius." Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders in an unrestrained manner. Although his entire body was bare, he didn't seem to mind, since the other party was also naked. Now both parties could be frank with each other. It was a pretty good feeling.

Of course, if it was possible to push her down or have her push him down, that would've been even better.

Problem was, Yue Yang also knew his own strength well enough to know that he would be unable to defeat even one of Her Majesty Fei Wen Li's hands, so he temporarily restrained his perverted tendencies.

Empress Fei Wen Li's golden eyebrows plunged into a frown as she unexpectedly nodded and agreed, "You are indeed a genius; no, actually, you are a perverted genius. I have never met anyone like you among the human race. I was confined in a deep sleep for ten thousand years. I was unable to come out of this everlasting dreamland for thousands of years, yet your blood had awakened me instantly... No matter what kind of life comes in, this Black Hole Seal will reduce everything to ashes and smoke. I tried all kinds of method I could but was only able to ensure that my soul did not disappear. My physical body was unfortunately devoured

by the Black Hole. However, you, a mere little human boy can somehow stand perfectly well, in front of me, unscathed. I can't understand how you could do it. You probably have a natural automatic resurrection ability, in addition, you are even able to resist the Black Hole's engulfing ability... Most amazing of all, I have never seen such a young Innate Ranker. If in this endless, deep magic world, I say that I am the second, no one would dare to claim that they are first. Even so, I used 50 years to prepare myself before I started to cultivate in the Innate Realm. Entering the Innate Realm took me a hundred years more. To reach your state, I had used a total of two hundred years. However, since your life has a glow to it, you must still be an unreasonably young human boy... ”

Hearing this, Yue Yang's jaw dropped. It was not because of hearing her praises; it was due to another reason.

For example, in a deep sleep for ten thousand years?

Just now when she seemed to have said ten thousand years, but at that time he was still a little dizzy, so he didn't hear clearly.

Now, Yue Yang had heard her very clearly and distinctly.

Just how old is Her Majesty?

“Just now you said that your body had been devoured by the Black Hole and became nothingness?” Yue Yang was sharp enough to seize upon the topic's main issue. This Empress Fei Wen Li was obviously standing in front of him naked, her body was the color of

white jade from head to toe, how could she say that she had no body?

“What you see is a body that is a cross between a mirage and reality... Even though I had slept for ten thousand years, my body still hasn’t even recovered half of its former glory.”

Empress Fei Wen Li’s face became mournful as soon as she heard his question.

Yue Yang extended his hand recklessly, and as if passing through a mass of water, his fingers smoothly passed through the Empress Fei Wen Li’s body. As expected, her body was not physical, but it was also not a shadow. Empress Fei Wen Li moved her fair hand and lifted Yue Yang’s entire body up as her beautiful eyes glared at him, “Idiot, don’t touch a woman’s body as you like! Not to mention that I am an Empress, you shouldn’t do this even to a normal girl.”

He laughed, and reached out his hand again to touch her fair arms. He realised that her hand had more substance than her body; the feeling was like touching cotton.

Empress Fei Wen Li dodged before he could reach out to touch her face: “Do not be rude, my neck and above are the same as yours, its living flesh and blood. You sure have guts. Aren’t you afraid of me killing you, take over your body and escape from this Black Hole Seal?”

When Yue Yang heard this, he laughed.

His laugh was incomparably brilliant.

“Would you refrain from killing me if I’m afraid?” Yue Yang thought that feeling scared would not be of any use. Even if she had really wanted to kill him, there would be no need for superfluous words. She could have killed him immediately, when he first came in. Why would she even ask if he was scared or not? The most important part was that after Yue Yang had calmed down, there was a strange feeling in his heart, as though the Empress Fei Wen Li in front of him was completely harmless. He was sure that she definitely would not harm him.

That kind of feeling was extremely strange.

Yue Yang couldn’t explain it, but in his heart he knew that she appeared to be closer than a kin, and was someone who seems to be a part of him.

Empress Fei Wen Li gently put Yue Yang down, extended her small fist and rapped it on his head gently, “I also wanted to kill you, but I can’t do it because we already signed the Spirit Blood Contract... Strange little human boy, what exactly are your blood vessels? How could your blood awaken me from my eternal dream? How could your blood invade my spirit and forcibly sign the Spirit Blood Contract? I really have no way to understand. Within the three worlds, how could there be such a strange existence like you? Little fellow, are you really human?”

“What is Spirit Blood Contract?” Yue Yang had no recollection of

this aspect of knowledge. This was something the Copper Grimoire did not impart to him, so it was a new knowledge.

“A type of contract that only gods can sign, but you obviously are human, so could you explain that a little bit?” Empress Fei Wen Li had the look of a child’s curiosity on her face.

“I also don’t know ...” Yue Yang shook his head.

After traveling to this dimension, there were too many inconceivable things happening to him. He was also unable to understand these situations.

However, Yue Yang did not bother to dwell on these.

As long as it’s not something bad, then it’s fine.

The Empress Fei Wen Li’s expression was slightly dejected: “How could I have signed a Spirit Blood Contract with a human? If you died, I would also die. This is really too pitiful.”

“My heart is as vast as the sky, I wouldn’t mind having a beautiful Empress to accompany me and protect me.” Yue Yang said this in order to test the Serpent Empress, to see if she could leave the Black Hole Seal. Right now his strength was still not powerful enough. Even though she wouldn’t harm him, letting such a strong Empress by his side would only push him down and made his heart feel heavy. Apart from her pushing him down on a bed, Yue Yang had his pride as a man, and he couldn’t bear to let a

woman stronger than him stand next to him all day His masculinity and could not bear the shame.

“I probably cannot leave for eternity... Having no real solid body, there is no way to leave the Black Hole Seal. Even if you are killed by a strong opponent, I can only accompany you in death powerlessly ...” Empress Fei Wen Li’s face was full of sorrow that it could almost break people’s hearts.

When Yue Yang heard this, he was secretly happy.

It was a good thing that she couldn’t escape the seal.

“Don’t worry, I will protect myself well, and I will protect you at the same time. Do you have anything useful such as artifacts or anything similar to it? Can you lend me a few to use?” Yue Yang asked shamelessly with his big mouth.

## Chapter 27 – Serpent Demon

---

“Greedy little fellow, don’t you know that artifacts choose their master, once they choose their master, then only their master can use them?” Empress Fei Wen Li laughed.

“Then give me a hundred Mythical Beasts!” Yue Yang felt that his demands were not too high.

“Are you not afraid that the Mythical Beasts would not accept your orders, or even turn on you and eat you up? Little fellow, borrowing strength from others is not a good idea; it is in fact the dumbest and most foolish method. If you had trained such a powerful, mysterious power that even I am unable to see through, once you upgrade your skill to the utmost, the Mythical Beasts will be akin to a small dog or even as insignificant as an ant in front of you. Why would you want Mythical Beasts and take a detour in getting strong?” Empress Fei Wen Li shook her head lightly, and gently continued: “Right now, you are like a small eagle that has only just grown its feathers and has not learnt how to fly; like a young tiger that has grown its fangs but still has not learnt how to hunt ... In front of you, there is a boundless sky for you to soar through and a vast and wide land for you to run in, you only need to be brave and come out of your shell! Furthermore, do you really need my help with your masculine pride? Little fellow, in front of you, I am not a Serpent Empress, but merely a weak woman without even a physical body...”

“You are a weak woman?” After Yue Yang heard this, in his heart he had a secret urge to bash his head into the wall.

“To others, I am very strong, but in front of you, I’m completely a weak woman. Just now, even when you used your hand to forcefully molest me, I had no way to stop you!” Empress Fei Wen Li’s exceptional face had the pitiful air of a bullied wife.

“Molest?” Yue Yang felt foolish, something of that extent was also counted as molestation?

He was just curious so he had touched her a little.

Fine, even touching was counted as molestation. She was THE Empress after all!

Empress Fei Wen Li gave a faint sigh: “I would rather be a normal human female with flesh and blood than a Serpent Empress, and have the freedom to run under the sun. Even if it means losing everything, it is still better than sleeping in this empty Black Hole! Little fellow, perhaps after you leave this place, you won’t be able to enter again for a year, because the Black Hole Seal would be even stronger than ever. If your ability does not advance by leaps and bounds, perhaps you may even need ten years, or even a hundred years, before you can see me again. In this period of time, I will linger in this solitary dreamworld on my own....”

Yue Yang did indeed have some sympathy for this Empress. Losing one’s freedom truly was a scary thing.

Especially since the Empress was trapped in the Black Hole for ten thousand years already, and was still unable to earn her freedom until now. If it were him, he’d probably be insane already!



“What do you need help with? Can I do anything to help you?” Seeing Empress Fei Wen Li’s eyes full of sadness and dejection, a masculine urge and desire to protect suddenly surfaced in his heart. He felt that although this beautiful Empress may seem strong, in truth, she was living the life of a prisoner. Without even mentioning other aspects, being forced to sleep for ten thousand years was bad enough.

“Please be stronger, stronger than me, stronger than the person who sealed me in this Black Hole Seal. Only then you can release me from this prison!”

Yue Yang was about to faint when he heard Empress Fei Wen Li’s reply.

Saying it was easy, but doing it was extremely hard!

Yue Yang felt that he’d better leave first and not stay too long, or he might even end up being trapped in the Black Hole space as well.

After that thought flashed through his mind, he quickly asked Empress Fei Wen Li: “How do I get out of this place?”

Realizing that Yue Yang wanted to leave, an extremely reluctant expression surfaced on Empress Fei Wen Li’s face immediately. But she quickly recovered with ease as she smiled and nodded: “I can send you out of this place immediately, but if this happens, I will need to use up a large amount of Spiritual Energy. It is even

possible that my body that is still recovering slowly would be affected to a great extent and I will sink into sleep again... Do you have to leave now?"

As she said her last sentence, she looked like she carried unspeakable sorrows in her heart, like a weak woman who was watching her male protector leave her alone heartlessly.

Hearing the Empress's tone which was full of hidden bitterness, Yue Yang's heart softened for a few seconds.

Come to think about it, she was quite pitiful.

Moreover, she treated him pretty well. She had welcomed him with a kiss and even put up with him molesting her body. And she was still able to magnanimously see him off.

However, staying behind to accompany her here was something he would never do, because Yue Yang was not generous to that extent.

"Is there any wish you want to fulfill in the outside world? Perhaps I can think of a way!" Yue Yang felt that if this Empress had many beautiful female subordinates in the outside world that needed him to take care of, there would be no problem at all.

"I've been sleeping for ten thousand years already, I'm afraid that my nation has already disappeared. Furthermore, you are a human living in the Soaring Dragon Continent, and I am a Serpent

Empress with a large pool of magic. Even if I have a wish, you would also not be able to fulfill it. Moreover, my only wish is to gain my freedom.” Empress Fei Wen Li smiled a smile that could bring the downfall of a nation, causing Yue Yang to feel intoxicated by that smile after witnessing it. Before preparing to send Yue Yang out, Fei Wen Li suddenly remembered something: “Oh yes, since your blood is similar to [God’s Blood], to the extent that it may be even more mysterious and unusual, perhaps it may be able to resurrect her... ..”

Empress Fei Wen Li raised a fair hand and summoned a rainbow colored pet’s egg directly without using a Grimoire.

Seeing this, Yue Yang’s eyes shone in excitement.

If one was able to learn to summon a beast directly instead of using a Grimoire, wouldn’t it be possible to have more hidden tricks up one’s sleeves? Enemies would definitely think that he was not a Grimoire Contract Holder and thus underestimate him! This move was simply an essential skill that could be used to kill people to prevent them from spilling secrets even in an unforeseen circumstances!

Looking at that rainbow colored pet egg again, Yue Yang’s heartbeat accelerated quickly. Could it be that this was the dragon egg from the legends?

“This is?”

“She is my Guard Captain. She died protecting me before I was

sealed, and I had no way to resurrect her, so I could only turn her back to her former state! If your blood can resurrect her, then she could probably help you with small matters. But I cannot guarantee if she retained her battle experience!” Fei Wen Li first bit her thumb and drew a strange rune on the surface with her blood, then gestured at Yue Yang to extend his hand towards her.

She cut open a small wound on Yue Yang’s palm, then softly laid the shining rainbow coloured egg on the small wound.

That egg was like a little vampire frantically absorbing Yue Yang’s fresh blood.

Yue Yang was almost sucked dry...

When Yue Yang was having a dizzy spell, a strong light suddenly arose, leaving behind an image of a demon serpent warrior that was over ten metres tall. The image disappeared in less than a second, as the light was sucked away quickly by the Black Hole space.

The egg that had sucked enough fresh blood dissolved and disappeared, becoming a pattern of blood. It wriggled on Yue Yang’s hand until it reached his chest, and an exquisite pattern of a demon serpent appeared on his skin. The demon serpent pattern had its six arms raised high, each holding a different weapon. Its long serpent tail twisted and coiled around Yue Yang’s waist and lower abdomen. Before Yue Yang managed to see it clearly, that pattern moved as if it was brought to life, and flew out of his body in a path of rainbow coloured light in an instant. In an instant, it entered Empress Fei Wen Li’s body.

“Goodness gracious!” Empress Fei Wen Li let out a sound of surprise, six arms all raised in unison, as if to block the rainbow coloured light from entering her body.

However, her a flash of hesitation appeared on her expression.

In the end, she stopped blocking and allowed the rainbow coloured light to enter her body.

Within moments, the Empress’ body started to emit a fragrance that seemed to refresh Yue Yang’s mind. Within the shining light and fragrance, a petite, small loli started to appear on the exquisite pattern of a demon serpent that Empress Fei Wen Li had on her lower abdomen.

This girl looked exactly like Empress Fei Wen Li, but she was her smaller version.

They had the same six arms and snake tail, but she looked a little young and inexperienced.

The body was about Yue Shuang size, and her height was about Yue Yang’s waist.

The little loli demon serpent seemed like she was struggling to stand steadily. Her six arms extended and hugged Fei Wen Li’s snake waist, but that head full of blond hair was looking back at Yue Yang. A sapphire-like big eyes stared at Yue Yang

unblinkingly. The feeling was like a little girl seeing a distant father who returned, wanting to recognize yet not daring to, wanting to hug yet not daring to extend her hands, having a cute yet slightly shy appearance.

“This is?” Yue Yang just continued looking stupefied. Just... Just what was going on here?

## Chapter 28 – Is She My Daughter Or A Beast?

---

“Heavens, after this little fellow was revived by your blood, it actually went as far as to come back to suck out my life energy.....I’m doomed, my body is doomed. I might even be unable to recover even after sleeping another 1000 years.” Empress Fei Wen Li began to tremble, her face pale and wan, as if she had just given birth. She was beyond exhausted, and beads of sweat had slowly formed on her forehead.

She practically didn’t even have the strength to stand anymore.

Yue Yang noticed that her serpent tail had begun to blur, and gradually becoming like fog.

However, her six jade-like arms still refused to let go of the baby loli serpent demon. She continued to tightly hug it towards her, as if she were carrying her own darling baby.

Seeing that her entire serpent’s tail had become a white mist, and was gradually being sucked in by the black hole, Yue Yang could not help but ask in astonishment, “Are you ok? Your body seems to be disappearing... ..”

“This little fellow is sucking away all of my spiritual power and life energy. I can’t even maintain my body right now. You should hurry up and prepare yourself, otherwise I won’t even have the energy to transport you out later. Heavens, I need to sleep immediately, or else the part of my body that I had managed

painstakingly recovered will be completely destroyed. Please carry her, I can't take it much longer." Empress Fei Wen Li summoned a large, sparkling and translucent grimoire. It looked like a crystal, and it constantly flashed with a bright glow, dazzling Yue Yang's eyes. Under his gaze, that 3 meter long and 2 meter wide grimoire had actually transformed into a mysterious, see-through crystal coffin.

Empress Fei Wen Li's expression looked beyond exhausted. It looked as if the smallest movement would completely drain all of her physical strength.

She took back the baby serpent demon loli into her arms, and lightly kissed it.

Then she once again passed it over to Yue Yang, gesturing for him to take it back.

The baby serpent demon loli was a bit hesitant, and appeared to be reluctant to leave. However, after seeing Yue Yang's stretched out arms, its six small arms shifted to tightly pull itself closer to his body.

Empress Fei Wen Li's body swayed slightly; her physical strength had seemed to reach its limit, barely able to keep her from falling onto the ground. She breathed heavily as her chest quivered."You should quickly leave, my life energy is almost gone. I must immediately go to sleep...if my strength suddenly increases in a year from now, and I want to test whether or not I can break through this black hole's seal, I will need your spiritual power as support."



As she spoke, Empress Fei Wen Li's six jade arms suddenly flashed brightly, blazing like the sun itself.

An enormous shadow that was ten meters tall appeared behind her. Her six arms moved in unison, forming an unusual seal. Then she suddenly shattered into pieces with a bang, bursting into streams of stars.

Yue Yang felt a great force attack his body, pushing him back with an irresistible force. This gave Yue Yang the illusion of having crossed dimensions. It seemed that during that one split second, he had passed over mountains and rivers, flying a distance of millions of kilometers, even passing through the universe.

“Bring her outside. If she maintains her battle memories, anything that you encounter and don't understand, you can ask her about it.”

Empress Fei Wen Li's last thread of consciousness resounded in Yue Yang's head.

When Yue Yang opened his eyes, he discovered that he had actually already returned to the real world. Everything that had just happened seemed like a mere dream.

The baby serpent demon loli he was originally hugging tightly had unknowingly vanished. If it weren't for the existence of the baby serpent demon loli's pattern on his bare body, Yue Yang wouldn't have believed that everything that had just occurred was

real.

The large amount of the familiar fragrance around him was a much milder version of the fragrance on Empress Fei Wen Li's body.

A rainbow light flashed.

Amidst the brightness and the fragrance in the air, the baby serpent demon loli gradually floated out from Yue Yang's body, becoming a real blood and flesh body. Its six arms were stretched open, like a small octopus, and tightly hugged Yue Yang's body. Its large, sapphire eyes looked unblinkingly at Yue Yang, looking like a shy child that had seen its father but didn't dare to call his name. It was extremely cute....

"Be obedient and come down. Let me first put on my clothes." Yue Yang was sweating; great, he didn't even have a wife, yet he had already gained a 'daughter'.

The baby serpent demon loli did as he said, and let go of him.

Its large eyes looked around the room, as if it was amazed by everything it saw.

After hurriedly finding and putting on some clothes, Yue Yang began to contemplate: does this tiny loli count as his own daughter? Or does it count as a beast?

He summoned his own Bronze Grimoire, and flipped open the originally blank fifth page. As expected his guess was not wrong; this baby serpent demon loli did indeed count as his summoned beast. Moreover, it qualified as a Guardian Beast, exactly like his Phantom Shadow. However, what was different about it was that the tiny loli didn't have the limits of having to be summoned; theoretically, it could exist forever.

Yue Yang stared at the fifth page's contents with intense concentration, and became completely shocked.

The originally blank fifth page currently had the design of the baby serpent demon loli. It looked like it had a spirit, extremely life-like.

The difference between designs of the Phantom Shadow, Thorny Flower, Quintet Seeking Golden Mice and the design of the tiny loli was that the latter was sparkling brightly. It even seemed to move around on its own as if having its own spirit.

When Yue Yang was looking at it, the tiny loli that had originally been showing its profile had now turned its body. Its small face and eyes seemed to be looking at Yue Yang, as if it could sense his gaze. Yue Yang lowered his head, and discovered that the actual tiny loli was doing the same; it was currently looking upwards as it stared unblinkingly at him. Its actions were exactly the same as that of the design's.

If Yue Yang shifted his gaze, then the design would return to its undisturbed, originally motionless image of its profile.

When Yue Yang looked at the description written underneath the design, he was dumbstruck.

Mysterious Serpent Demon:

Larva State, Sentient, Humanoid Beast.

Level 1 – Diamond Rank, Guardian Beast.

Unlimited Vitality, Life Force tied to Summoner's.

Possesses a grimoire.

(TLN: 生命共享 – Life Force tied to Summoner's. Essentially similar to the Soul Blood Contract mentioned in Chapter 26, where it dies if the Summoner dies.)

Diamond rank?

Unlimited vitality? Life Force linked to Summoner's? Possesses a grimoire?

Yue Yang practically burst a vein. Exactly what kind of existence was this baby loli?

“You also have a grimoire?” Yue Yang felt dizzy. Could it be that this little thing preserved its items from before it died protecting the Empress? The summoning grimoire from her previous life still existed? And what were her Innate Skills and Guardian Beast? If she also had a summoning grimoire, then what exactly was she: a beast, or his daughter?

“... ...” The baby serpent demon loli only blinked her large eyes in silence.

With a touch of her small hand, she summoned an exquisite sparkling and translucent grimoire. It was slightly similar to the grimoire owned by Empress Fei Wen Li, as it was also similar to a crystal. However, the designs of the profound mysteries were somewhat different. It also didn't have the brilliant and sparkling rainbow glow that Empress Fei Wen Li's grimoire had.

Yue Yang looked down to inspect it closely, and his jaw practically dropped to the ground.

He saw that 'Diamond Grimoire' was written on top of it. This tiny loli's grimoire was actually Diamond-ranked. Even his pitiful self's own grimoire was a mere beginner's Bronze Grimoire.

He once again flipped through this grimoire and studied the baby loli's Innate Skills and Guardian Beasts, and Yue Yang was completely speechless.

Binding Innate Skill: Innate skills can be simultaneously released during times of attack. Incorporeal binding chains can cause the target's body, consciousness, spiritual power, vitality, and spirit to be bound. Before the Binding is released, the target cannot budge. The bindings are dependent on the user's abilities and innate rank. Currently, this Innate Skill is level 1.

“My god” Yue Yang suddenly began sweating. This...wasn't this

the legendary attack that couldn't be countered?

Once again inspecting the tiny loli's Guardian Beasts, Yue Yang practically wanted to vomit blood.

She was not like other people who only had one Guardian Beast; she had a total of 4.....the second page of the design had split into four portraits of different life forms. Only after seeing the words below, then did he know that they were a Stone Element Medusa, a Storm Mermaid, a Thunderbolt Naga, and an Ice Serpent Demon.

No wonder the Empress Fei Wen Li had chosen her as the Captain of the Guard. When this baby loli grew older, she'd be unfathomably formidable.

Only, was she really Fen Wen Li's Captain of the Guard?

Yue Yang mind was skeptical, could this girl really be his daughter? Or could she be the Empress' doppelganger?

Of course, there was no way to find out the truth right now.....in Yue Yang's opinion, he thought the baby loli was more like his own daughter.

Right now, the baby loli was still a larvae. However, the Yue Yang that had the Innate Invisible Sword Qi skill still wasn't confident that he could defeat her. If she matured, how formidable would she be? It was a good thing that this little thing was his own 'daughter', as well as his own guardian beast. Otherwise, Yue Yang

would've been beyond jealous. After thinking about this for most of the day, Yue Yang finally regained his senses, and patted his chest in relief.

So dangerous, he had almost been scared to death by this little thing.

“San-er, are you still meditating? It's dinner time. I have called for you many times earlier.” The beautiful woman's voice rang out from the other side of the door.

“Ok, I'll be out soon.” Yue Yang hurriedly shouted in reply.

Just as he was going to make the baby serpent demon loli return, before he could even stretch his hand out, he felt a resistance within his mind. Frightened by the idea, the baby loli tightly hugged Yue Yang's thigh with all six of her arms. It pitifully looked up at Yue Yang with its large eyes, unwilling to return to the Bronze Grimoire.

Hey, this little thing could even resist his will?

Just as Yue Yang prepared to coax her, the wood door suddenly made a sound as Yue Shuang, that little girl, called her third brother happily while pushing the door open to enter...

## Chapter 29 – Xiao Wen Li

---

“What a nice smell” The little girl Yue Shuang sniffed around randomly. She thought Yue Yang had been hiding something delicious in his room.

“Phew, that was close.”

Yue Yang wiped away his imaginary sweat.

As the small girl pushed the door and entered, the little lolita suddenly changed into a beam of rainbow light and flew into his body. Yue Shuang that little girl didn't take note of the rainbow light, but was attracted by remnants of the attractive fragrance. Bouncing into the room, she took Yue Yang's hand and demanded he take out the delicious food, acting like a spoiled child. When Yue Yang was about to pick up the girl up and carry her, a surprising piece of information suddenly flashed through his mind.

Apparently, that surprising information was him wondering if he could use the Chains of Binding?

Yue Yang's mind was startled, could it be that after the little loli Serpent Demon entered his body, he could use her Innate Skills?

The beautiful women entered the room, and picked up the little girl that was bothering him by acting like a spoiled child, chastising her: “Silly little girl, since when did Big Brother not give you delicious food when he has some? This is probably the



fragrance of the Thorny Flower? Only thinking about delicious food the whole day, you glutton!”

“Little Sis Shuang Er, if you eat your meal like a good girl, later I’ll bring you to buy sweet brown rice pudding... ..” Yue Yang had the skills to coax children.

Once he said that, the little girl immediately shifted her attention.

She nodded happily, raising that pair of soft white hands that were akin to lotus roots, cheering ‘Long Live Third Brother’, determinedly throwing herself into his embrace and kissing him.

The beautiful woman seeing this little girl being so greedy, was really unable to decide in her heart whether to laugh or cry.

At first, Yue Yang thought that he could hide the little loli Demon Serpent from the beautiful woman and Yue Shuang the little girl, but who would have known, that on the second day they already found out. It was not because of Yue Yang’s carelessness, but it was because he forgot one thing – that the little loli was able to move about freely. Getting rid of two of the Vengeance Hunter mercenaries, continuing to raise the Thorny Flower, thus he ended up waking up slightly later in the morning. After opening his eyes, that little girl Yue Shuang and the little loli Demon Serpent were sitting at the table eating, with her mouth dirty from the food, while the beautiful woman was sitting opposite them, using a wet handkerchief to gently wipe their little mouths clean, constantly chiding them to eat slower, so as to not choke on the food.

Yue Yang was stupefied seeing this, weren't they scared of the little loli with six arms and a snake tail?

Seeing Yue Yang get out of bed, the beautiful woman first set in front of him a hot and steaming bowl of porridge, then asked: "This child is your Guardian Beast 'Mist'? San Er, you finally managed to summon your Guardian Beast? Seems that you cultivated pretty well, there are big improvements, Fourth Mother is really happy for you."

This, this was a great misunderstanding.

The little loli Demon Serpent had no relationship at all to Mist, she didn't even know how to release mist...

However, this misunderstanding was a little timely, it was a good thing that the beautiful woman misunderstood, with this stroke of luck, just right to get rid of her suspicions, if not Yue Yang really did not know how to explain this.

"Third Brother, why does she have six arms? Also having a small tail that is so long, shall we just call her Little Monster?" The little girl's curiosity would get a hundred points, but her naming sense had nothing good to be said about it. Yue Yang quickly rejected it, he thought to himself, since it's the 'daughter' of Empress Fei Wen Li and himself, looking exactly the same, just a mini version, might as well just call her Xiao Wen Li.

The Black Jade Necklace's Black Hole was already completely

sealed, even dripping blood on it caused no reaction.

Yue Yang didn't know what state he would need to cultivate himself to before he could go in to see the sleeping Empress Fei Wen Li again, so he decided to first give the little loli a name that was similar, this would also count as a bit of remembrance for her.

Seeing the little girl making a din, Yue Yang quickly waved his hands to correct her: "Little Sis Shuang Er, she's not called Little Monster, she's called Wen Li, Xiao Wen Li."

Once he named her, another piece of information flashed through Yue Yang's mind, on his Copper Grimoire's page, the Serpent Demon pattern that had no name, was now inscribed officially with the name. This was the first time Yue Yang officially gave one of his Summons a name.

The little loli tilted her head, looking at Yue Yang.

Her big eyes kept blinking, and it was not known whether she was satisfied or dissatisfied with the name she was given.

Yue Yang had no way of figuring out what she was thinking, but knew that this little thing knew how to feel jealous. When the little girl threw herself into his embrace and acted like a spoiled child, she also quickly swam over and hugged his thigh tightly, using those big sapphire eyes to look at him pitifully, her expression was exactly like a favoured daughter hoping for her father's embrace, that gaze was really unbearable.

The Demon Serpent Xiao Wen Li's appearance made the little girl extremely happy, because this little girl that liked to spend the whole day playing and causing trouble now had a companion.

She was just like a big sister, carrying Xiao Wen Li all around the courtyard the whole day, chasing butterflies, catching dragonflies, climbing trees, picking flowers, showering ants with mud, making thorough searches for delicious food, all the things she enjoyed doing.

Of course, the action she was most proud of was teaching Xiao Wen Li to speak.

"You've grown so big yet you still don't know how to speak? Stupid, I'll teach you" Yue Shuang that little girl proudly acted like a teacher and taught Xiao Wen Li how to speak all day.

"... .." However, her efforts were all in vain, Xiao Wen Li still did not say a word.

Yue Yang didn't feel that a baby that had been born for only three days could speak. Although Xiao Wen Li looked to be about Yue Shuang that little girl's age, strictly speaking, she was still a baby.

When it became night time again, Yue Yang went to the Eastern Tavern to take a look.

In the darkness, the big breasted woman from before was waiting

in the corner, handing over a small bag of gold coins quickly, reporting in a low voice: “Young Master, there are still two precious ornaments that haven’t been pawned off, the smaller items were changed for 35 gold coins, please check that it’s all there. Xie Huo came yesterday, he was at the Assassin Guild to place a Vengeance Trail, but we do not know if you are the one he’s looking for. Young Master, it’s better for you to leave the White Stone City first, the Tie clan will also send people to take revenge for Tie Kuang, they’re just sitting in the Tavern drinking, making inquiries and looking for news about the situation.

Putting aside the fact that he now had Xiao Wen Li as a Diamond Rank Guardian Beast, even before that, Yue Yang had no worries at all.

Who could the Assassin Guild place the Vengeance Trail on?

An anonymous Thorny Flower?

With the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, Mysterious Three Styles, the Phantom Shadow’s blessing, Xiao Wen Li’s Binding Innate Skill, even with more people, they would only become fertilizer as well.

“Where is that Xie Huo?” Yue Yang was really looking forward to having a strong opponent to fight with, so that he could judge his own strength and see just what level it was at.

“I heard that he is at the West of the City’s Merry Forest. Young Master, please take great care.” The big breasted woman softly

warned.

“It’s alright.” Yue Yang waved a hand.

White Stone City’s Merry Forest was not full of trees, rather, it was an enormous building. Branches of Merry Forest could be found throughout the Da Xia Empire, and was the entire country’s number one in the entertainment market. The main building of the Shang Lin Garden in the capital city of Shang Jing was rumoured to have been built by the State Master, Left Minister and the Da Xia Empire’s most powerful and wealthy man, Shen Shi, working together. Its dignified air was barely below that of the Royal Imperial Garden, and among the common folk, there was even praise of ‘Shang Lin is first while the Imperial Garden is number one’.

Let alone this Shang Lin Garden in Shang Jing, even the White Stone City’s Merry Forest could not be entered by just anyone on the street.

Only those who were strong Rankers or wealthy merchants could enter.

Those envied Level 3 Hero Rankers, even in a small place such as White Stone City, there would still always be one of them standing at the Merry Forest’s door, they are the Merry Forest’s Captain of the Guard. If comparing the City’s main government guards’ strength with those of the Merry Forest’s the White Stone City’s governor would not dare to claim that his private troops were definitely stronger than the Merry Forest’s troops. This was the power of a branch in the White Stone City. 15 years ago, in order to

award the Merry Forest's troops for their outstanding military service when attacking the Wei country for land, the Da Xia Emperor bestowed upon Shen Shi a golden waist pass that had 'Second' engraved on it, and the other one with 'First' engraved on it was hanging on the waist of Wan Gu Ku, Commander of five thousand Imperial troops.

In other words, Merry Forest's military strength was equal to the second branch of Imperial troops.

If not for the Merry Forest's military strength being so great, the big breasted woman would not be worried for Yue Yang to such a large extent.

When Yue Yang stood before the dazzling and majestic Merry Forest, his face unexpectedly showed a smile: "Merry Forest? Nice place, hm! Hey! Brother, you are here too? It really is one of life's coincidences. Come, come, big brother here invites you to come in and drink Flower Wine."

The bright-eyed thief was originally staring at a shadow at the balcony with enmity in her eyes, when suddenly her shoulder was patted by someone, causing her to jump in surprise.

However, shortly after turning around, the one that came into view was that shameless male, Yue Yang.

Then immediately a fist flew towards him...

## Chapter 30 – Expert? You’re Just A Stepping-Stone

---

Yue Yang used one hand to catch her delicate fist and smiled: “Brother, I know you missed me, but this way of expressing it is too unusual. If you gave me a passionate hug instead, then I’d be even happier. The girls inside are all bathed and stripped naked waiting for us to love them intimately, so what are we still standing around for? Let’s go.”

The bright-eyed thief almost went mad with anger, using her strength, she struggled and got free of the shoulder that Yue Yang had been holding with his hands.

She was about to lift her leg and give this loathsome, shameless male a flying kick.

Instead, Yue Yang actually grabbed her small hands and pulled her along very quickly, involuntarily pulling her directly towards the dazzling entrance of the Merry Forest.

“Please wait a moment you two, Merry Forest has a rule that if your attire is inappropriate, we will not admit you.” A Level 2 Braveman guard courteously blocked Yue Yang and the bright-eyed thief.

“As a rich, suave young man and future VIP, I must criticise you. How can you look at our attire and declare that it does not adhere to the requirements? As the saying goes, ‘A rich White Stone City youth owned many shops and saddled many beautiful white



horses. But he dressed like a beggar entering into the Merry Forest.' We came here to give you respect because we heard that Merry Forest is the best, only to find out that your reputation gave you too much credit. Merry Forest even allowed idiots that don't recognize their betters to guard the entrance, instead of fragrant and silver-tongued beautiful women to welcome their customers; it really does kill the mood. Do you know what it means to act out a role? For example, if a famous, talented celebrity like this Young Master – who is extremely popular with beautiful women – goes around with my real identity exposed, wouldn't it a big problem? Won't the girls inside get so excited that they will start screaming wildly or even faint, overwhelmed by my presence? This One had spent so much effort to move about undetected. I had never thought that my fun would be ruined by a filthy slave who has the eyes of a dog. Forget it, forget it. I say, little brother, there are plenty more fish in the sea, the Merry Forest is just one of them, let's go." Yue Yang scolded them with a bunch of bullshit and turned around, looking as he was about to pull the bright-eyed thief away from the place.

Perhaps he was the first guest in all of history since the Merry Forest's opening that had rebuked them so angrily at the entrance.

If it was any other person, the guard would have probably thrown that fellow into the sewers already.

However, Yue Yang had scolded with such flowery words that it shocked the Guard Leader, who was currently accompany other guests nearby. The Guard Leader quickly abandoned his guests and immediately slapped his subordinate, before turning towards Yue Yang and giving him a respectful bow. "Both Young Masters, a grand welcome to our humble abode. I apologize for my

subordinate's inability to recognize your elegance and for offending you. There is no need to lower yourselves to argue with this commoner. Honored guests, this way please."

The guard that had blocked their way earlier was scared to the point where his soul was about to escape from his body. He hurriedly knelt down to beg for forgiveness.

While it was uncommon in White Stone City, it was not so in the capital Shang Jing where certain families' youths liked to dress and act like poor students with no power or influence. Some even went as far as pretend to be beggars in order to stroll around the streets as they pleased, while making fun of the common folk that liked to judge based on attire.

There were many experts and even officials, who enjoyed pretending to be depressed mercenaries or robbers while having sex with women in Merry Forest for some fun.

The more famous or more powerful they were, the more likely they were to enjoy playing these types of games.

Even the King himself had times when he himself went out on inspection in commoner's clothes.

Being a Level 3 Hero, the Guard Leader has seen many of these young masters that like to dress up in Shang Jing. Hearing Yue Yang's eloquent speech that was out of the ordinary, he was convinced that Yue Yang was the talented son of a noble family.

“I don’t know who you are, however, this fledgling is someone who tried to assassinate me half a month ago.”

From the balcony, another person suddenly jumped down, glaring at the bright-eyed thief coldly.

He was of a tall and thin stature, and he wore a set of beautiful brocade robes with a golden eyed black hawk embroidered on the chest area. The pair of hands peeking out of the sleeves were as pale as ghosts and his nose was as sharp as an eagle’s. His bright, glistening long eyes were narrow and perceptive, piercing through you like a needle.

The bright-eyed thief humphed as she secretly pushed Yue Yang away with her hands: “You go, I have a few things to take care of today.”

Hearing this, Yue Yang cracked his fists together like a fighting maniac: “A fight? I can help.”

Seeing Yue Yang’s warlike figure, the bright-eyed thief became speechless. Contrary to her expectations, this fellow surprisingly didn’t run away and abandon her when a battle was about to happen. The bright-eyed thief thought that Yue Yang would say something like, “I’m going to eat supper first. You have fun battling, next time we can go find girls together” or something along those lines. Who knew that this shameless fellow still had some sense of brotherhood in his bones.

Seeing that something interesting was about to happen, the

passing mercenaries all began to gather around.

A crowd quickly formed, and even the guests within Merry Forest ran to their windows and balconies after hearing the news.

“Ahem, Mr. Wu Yi, perhaps there is some sort of misunderstanding. Would it be possible for you to set aside your desire for vengeance and allow us to get a better understanding of the current situation? All the guests within Merry Forest are esteemed customers and we really do not wish for the two parties to fight...” The Guard Leader tried to softly persuade the lanky man. He was hoping to confirm the two’s identities before they started fighting.

“This fledgling killed my clan master’s favoured prostitute. In his rage, my clan master commanded us to bring this fledgling to him, either dead or alive. So this matter is not something that involves Merry Forest. Furthermore, they still have not passed through the Merry Forest’s main entrance, so how can you count these individuals as Merry Forest’s honoured guests? I’ll simply kill these two at the entrance. Afterwards, I will be sure to send a jar of wine as apology to the owner of this pavilion, Master Golden Blade.” The lanky man rejected any possibilities of settling the matter in a peaceful way with no hesitation, giving the Guard Leader a ‘secret gesture’.

After seeing this, the Guard Leader’s face changed and he quickly stepped aside.

This matter was not something that a small Guard Leader like him could take care of. The only thing he could do now was to keep

one eye open and the other one closed.

“Go away quickly.” The bright-eyed thief glared at the tall and thin man vehemently as she reached out to push Yue Yang away, urging him to leave.

“I think his body barely has any muscle in them, he looked like he will fall apart by a mere gust of wind. When facing this type of opponent, is there anything to be scared of? You don’t need to do a thing, I can defeat him alone. I will beat him up until he has to look for his own teeth scattered on the floor. Stand aside, I’ll take care of it.” Yue Yang decided that he was going to reveal a few of his skills.

What kind of man would he be if he had the ability but didn’t show off in front of a beautiful woman? Wouldn’t it be the same as ‘showing off one’s clothes in the middle of the night’, or in other words, a complete waste?

Now was a good time for him to show off his skills and earn some points.

In addition, that sharp-nosed, skeleton-like fellow was really asking for a beating. Yue Yang felt that if he did not give that guy a good beating, then he would really be disappointed in himself.

The bright-eyed thief, however, was starting to feel a bit helpless. “You idiot, do you even know who he is? He is a Level 3 Hero, Wu Yi the Ghost. He definitely isn’t someone who an insignificant thief like you can handle... You, just get lost. If not, just stand on

the side and cheer for me. No, actually just stand behind me and don't even get within 3 meters of his range."

"Are you saying that this guy is actually an expert?" Yue Yang was starting to feel lucky. It was really starting to seem like they were acting out "Beauty rescues the Hero."

"Although I don't want to admit it, truthfully, he really is a formidable expert." The bright-eyed thief nodded.

"Don't worry, experts are all stepping stones for me." Yue Yang comforted her.

"Weak little ant, just try and step on me... .." The lanky man called Wu Yi laughed coldly. Taking out a black crystal rock, he muttered a few words, and a black light began to fill the air. A Rock Golem that was over 6 metres in height was summoned.

When this enormous Rock Golem was summoned, the surrounding mercenaries drew out their breath in unison.

A fourth grade rock golem didn't appear commonly in mercenary hunting areas, but on battlefields. This kind of full-bodied Rock Golem weighed over ten thousand kilograms and was a war machine more effective than swords and spears, an invincible existence that could kill its enemies in many ways. Apart from the rarer Mammoth, Earthquake Dragon, and other enormous war-oriented beasts, most other beasts were crushed into mincemeat when facing the Rock Golem.

The Rock Golem was a war machine that was not available for sale within the country. Apart from the army and special mercenary teams, no other person was allowed to possess one.

Yue Yang and the bright-eyed thief were facing a Rock Golem that was over 6 metres in height and more powerful than swords and spears. How would they fight this battle?

# Chapter 31 – Booked Virgin

---

“Summoning Grimoire!”

The summoner was not Yue Yang, but rather the bright-eyed thief.

A wave of golden light burst into view from between the bright-eyed thief’s fingers, immediately forming a pale orange dome that covered both Yue Yang and the bright-eyed thief’s bodies. Summoning Grimoire users were different from ordinary people. When in battle, the Summoning Grimoire would automatically generate a defensive ability in the form of a dome, called the Halo Shield. This dome would not break even if attacked by extremely strong outside forces, and would protect the user until either the summoned beast died or until the time limit was up.

The time limit for a Copper Grimoire was 10 minutes.

The Silver Grimoire’s time limit was twice that of the Copper Grimoire’s.

The Grimoire that the bright-eyed thief summoned was a Silver Grimoire, and was above Yue Yang’s Beginner level Copper Grimoire by 3 sub-ranks.

In other words, if the bright-eyed thief’s summoned beast did not die within the next 20 minutes, then even the extremely powerful Rock Golem couldn’t do anything to the Halo Shield.



“You’re actually a Grimoire Summoner?” The lanky Wu Yi’s eyes began to twitch, and his face’s complexion became even uglier.

“Wah, a Grimoire Summoner, heavens, this thief is unexpectedly a Grimoire Summoner, and it’s even a Silver Grimoire... .. Red, Orange, Yellow, Light Green, Green, Blue, Purple. The Halo is Orange, and there’s a flashing gold star, this thief is a Level 4 Champion! No way, the White Stone City has a Level 4 Champion?” The crowds watching from afar exclaimed in surprise. One should know that Grimoire Summoners were rarer than diamonds. All of them were either genius warriors that surpassed ordinary people or they were children of major clans with outstanding bloodlines.

Everyone’s attention was currently on that young thief, who was unexpectedly a Level 4 Champion that possessed a Silver Grimoire.

She was obviously not someone from a normal family.

No one would believe that this bright-eyed thief could rise to a Level 4 Champion without any major clan or country’s support even if they were beaten to death.

At first, the spectators felt that the fight between the two thieves and Wu Yi wasn’t going to be an interesting show to watch. Faced with a 6 meter Rock Golem, all it would take was 2 fists to beat these two into pulp.

Now that a Silver Grimoire appeared, the spectators’ views

completely changed.

No matter how strong ordinary warriors were, they were still helpless before the genius Grimoire Summoners... after all, Grimoire Summoners had the Halo Shield protecting them, thus enabling them to focus on defeating their opponents' beast summons, and destroying their tactics.

No matter how many beast summons an ordinary warrior had, there was no way he could have more than a Grimoire Summoner.

To ordinary people, the Rock Golem was an unequalled existence.

In front of a Grimoire Summoner, however, there were many ways to deal with it.

All Grimoire Contractors had a Guardian Beast that could be revived when it died. As long as they controlled their Guardian Beasts carefully, the Halo Shield would definitely hold out until the time limit!

Now as long as the bright-eyed thief summoned a beast that could attack Wu Yi directly, she wouldn't need to care about the slow-moving Rock Golem. She didn't even need to care about any of Wu Yi's attacks, summoning a beast to help her kill him would be more than enough.

“Summon: Bewildering Butterfly.” The bright-eyed thief's lily-white hands flipped the Silver Grimoire open to a specific page and

pressed her palm lightly on it.

Golden light brightly shone out of the pages through her fingers, dazzling all those who were watching.

Meanwhile, Yue Yang didn't notice what was going on at all and was happily enjoying the beautiful view from behind the bright-eyed thief's body... Although her chest that belonged to the cute apple category wasn't very big and still had a lot of space for development, her buttocks were nicely rounded. Since the clothes were worn to prevent detection while moving around at night, they were tight-fitting, revealing her perfect curves. As it enticingly rose up and down, Yue Yang swallowed his saliva to prevent him from drooling.

He truly regretted that his [Divine Vision] was only at level one, so he couldn't see through clothes, otherwise...

When Wu Yi saw that the bright-eyed thief had summoned a rainbow coloured butterfly as big as her palm, his expressions turned worried.

If the Rock Golem had any weaknesses, that would be their zero intelligence!

The Rock Golem had no intelligence and ability to think, it only had fighting capabilities. Following its master's orders, it will instinctively attack the opponents that were closest to it. There was no way to order it to attack a specific target.

The bright-eyed thief had summoned the Bewildering Butterfly, which had no fighting capability at all.

However, it was the Rock Golem's natural nemesis.

The Bewildering Butterfly was capable of affecting the Spirit Connection between the combat machine and its master. As long as it stayed on top of the Rock Golem's head, the Rock Golem would not be able to receive any of its master's commands. Hence it would not be able to fight normally, instead, it would only stagger as if it was drunk, dithering around uselessly... Seeing the Bewildering Butterfly appear, the Guard Captain who had more experience and knowledge, also changed his expressions.

This kind of Bewildering Butterfly was rare, apart from ones within the realms of Tong Tian Tower, they could only be found in the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers.

Could it be that the real identity of the bright-eyed thief, who had the intention of assassinating Wu Yi's clan head, was someone from the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers?

The Guard Leader couldn't continue watching this battle anymore, as he immediately ran inside the pavilion.

Now that the situation had escalated this far, it was not something a small Guard Leader like him could control anymore.

If he did not immediately invite the White Stone City Merry

Forest's person in charge – Master Golden Blade – to quickly take charge of this situation, the consequences would be disastrous. People from the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers should definitely not be provoked!

“Summon: Battle Eagle.” Wu Yi was anxious, he knew that if he did not quickly get rid of the opponent's Bewildering Butterfly, then his own Rock Golem would be wasted.

Wu Yi took out a bright yellow crystal rock. Muttering a few words, he immediately summoned a golden-coloured Battle Eagle with a wingspan of over 2 metres.

Battle Eagles were the kings of the sky when it came to flying-type beasts. They were the best at hunting down and killing flying-type beasts.

Their speed was as fast as lightning.

Facing a completely defenseless Bewildering Butterfly, all it would take was a few seconds to tear it into pieces, for a Level 3 Battle Eagle had claws that could even slash apart tigers and leopards... However, when Wu Yi summoned the Battle Eagle, the bright-eyed thief coldly snorted and in response, summoned: “Summon: Spider Witch!”

The Silver Grimoire's pages automatically flipped to a page and a burst of green light shone through the bright-eyed thief's fingers, filling the air.

A beast, who had the appearance of an ordinary human girl on its upper body but a spider on its lower half, appeared on the battlegrounds in an instant.

“Wah!” Many of the surrounding mercenaries scattered in all directions.

“I’m going to faint, isn’t that a magical beast, a spider demon that absorbs vitality? It’s a man’s natural enemy!” A bold mercenary persisted in staying behind, but was so scared that his complexion turned pale.

“This is definitely a beast from the Tong Tian Tower. I say, its definitely a demon brought back from the Tong Tian Tower. It’s finished, that Battle Eagle is definitely finished!” Among the guests spectating on Merry Forest’s balcony, there was a warrior who recognized the origin of the Spider Witch. Looking at the Battle Eagle hovering in the air, he could only shake his head and sigh. At this moment, Wu Yi’s face was filled with despair. He desperately tried to command the Battle Eagle to fly higher, but it was all too late.

A stream of white spider silk was shot out from the Spider Witch’s mouth. As the wind blows, it spread wide open into a white spider net, enveloping the Battle Eagle in it.

As the Battle Eagle got caught, it lost its ability to fly and fell to the ground heavily.

The Spider Witch pounced on the Battle Eagle nimbly, and in the

Battle Eagle's struggles, the Spider Witch attacked it rapidly and ruthlessly. Two terrifying spider fangs pierced into the Battle Eagle's body, injecting dark green spider poison into the Battle Eagle's body. In two seconds, the struggling Battle Eagle began to stiffen and became a living corpse, like a stuffed animal.

Yue Yang caught hold of the bright-eyed thief's small hands, surreptitiously taking advantage of her, but pretended to be extremely moved on the surface as he shouted: "You're really awesome, we've won!"

Instead, the bright-eyed thief shook her head: "No, saying that we've won now is still too early. Our opponent is a Level 3 Hero; that Battle Eagle couldn't be his strongest beast. I reckon he's still holding back, he should still be able to summon a powerful beast... ..."

"Xie Huo, come down and help me stall for time!" Wu Yi suddenly shouted, fishing out a fist-sized red crystal rock, beginning to summon for a third time.

"If you give this fledgling's first night to me, then there's no problem at all! Isn't it just a Bewildering Butterfly and a Spider Witch? To me, Xie Huo, this level of beasts don't even count as mediocre!" At Merry Forest's entranceway, a person's shadow appeared like he was an illusion. With a hideous looking triangular-shaped eyes like a poisonous snake's, he looked at the bright-eyed thief's body lewdly as he laughed evilly.

"... .." Yue Yang remained calm and collected on the surface, yet he was exploding in anger internally. How daring, this precious

virgin was something he'd booked in advance, this bastard actually dared to have presumptuous ideas about her? Looks like he had lived long enough, he was really seeking death!



## Chapter 32 – Bronze Barbaric Bull

---

“Summon: Phantom Panther.” The bright eyed thief quickly placed her palm on the Silver Grimoire, preparing to summon her third Beast.

“Too late.”

The triangular-eyed man who had just flashed out from the gate said in an extremely pleased voice.

Without a single summoning movement, a small creature enshrouded in black flames appeared behind him. Yue Yang had seen illustrations of different types of Beasts in the books that Yue Bing had brought back from school before, and so he knew that the small creature in front of him was slightly similar to the the illustration of a Fire Essence Beast. According to the description underneath that Beast illustration, the Fire Essence Beast didn't have a very strong attack, but it was good at creating fireballs. The Fire Essence Beast was a product of profound magic, and such evil life forms didn't exist in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Seeing that the Fire Essence Beast followed the triangular-eyed man without a summon made all of the mercenaries clamor loudly.

Rather than gasping in awe at his strength, they despised it.

Both mercenaries and warriors had an unwritten rule. At the beginning of an official duel, both parties must use open and candid summons to face off.

Only despicable and shameless bastards would secretly summon a Beast to mount a sneak attack on their opponent.

This man with the triangular eyes called Xie Huo had definitely summoned this Fire Essence Beast secretly in Merry Forest's building. He had simply kept the Beast and himself hidden, and waited for Wu Yi to be at a disadvantage before conveniently revealing his Beast. In spite of the one-on-one face-off, the fact that there had been an interference was annoying enough. On top of that, he even summoned a Beast beforehand; this was really something that people couldn't put up with. If it weren't for the fact that the mercenaries recognized the bastard and knew that they were no match for him, they would've definitely charged over and killed him.

When another Devil Bee materialized behind Xie Huo again, everyone was so sick and tired of his dishonesty that they didn't even have energy to expend on cursing him. Such a shameless bastard should be struck by lightning; such people shouldn't even be allowed to live in this world.

If Xie Huo said that his Fire Essence Beast hadn't been purposely summoned to go against the bright eyed thief's Bewildering Butterfly, perhaps a few of the dumber mercenaries would have believed him.

However, now that black and yellow striped Devil Bee had appeared as well, even idiots would be able to understand what happened.

An exceptionally wretched moral character like this trash, Xie Huo, had obviously summoned monsters to especially counter against the bright-eyed thief. Combined with his earlier declaration of demanding the right to her first night, everyone suddenly felt that even if they, themselves, weren't good people and had done a mass of bad deeds, they were still practically saints compared to this Xie Huo.

They had seen such trashy moral characters before, but never such an extreme case.

An insect-type Beast like the Bewildering Butterfly was most afraid of flames and ice. The Fire Essence Beast could definitely kill the defenseless Bewildering Butterfly in an instant.

Also, the valiant Spider Witch's only natural enemy was the Devil Bee.

The Devil Bee could nimbly dodge a spider's web, and was also unafraid of a spider's poison. Its stinger could paralyze the Spider Witch and even kill it..... Seeing Xie Huo's two Beasts, the bright-eyed thief began to tremble nervously. Following her command, the Bewildering Butterfly quickly flew up, preparing to return and fly back into the Halo Shield to be recalled back into the Silver Grimoire. However, it was all too late.

The Fire Essence Beast spat out a black fireball, which arched in a wide parabola and chased after the Bewildering Butterfly. Eventually, it exploded at the Bewildering Butterfly's wings.

“Boom!”

The Bewildering Butterfly combusted into scorched fragments, leaving behind scattered ashes and smoke.

Having lost the Bewildering Butterfly that was controlling it, the Rock Golem immediately began to move. It strode over and raised its enormous rock fists, smashing heavily into the Phantom Panther that the bright eyed thief had just summoned. It wasn't very likely that its sluggish movements would hit the Phantom Panther, which was well known for its ability to conceal itself. However, the Phantom Panther also didn't have any way of countering the Rock Golem, and thus it could only dodge around quickly.

The Rock Golem's heavy fists struck the ground.

With an explosive, thunder-like sound, the ground began to tremble.

On the other side, the Spider Witch shrieked in fear, and began to run as fast it could towards the Halo Shield. After a series of jumps, it finally managed to take cover within the Halo Shield before the Devil Bee could catch up.

Although it had managed to run away, it still couldn't stop trembling in fear. It was evident that the Spider Witch was extremely afraid of its natural enemy.

“So summoned beasts fight like this. Interesting.” Yue Yang watched with great pleasure. He had finally gotten the chance to watch a battle between summoners using their beasts.

A duel not only requires combat strength, but wits as well.

The beasts weren't all-powerful, and using them with appropriate tactics was the most important thing to do.

For example, a Bewildering Butterfly would never be able to beat a Battle Eagle, but it was extremely effective against a Rock Golem. The Spider Witch was the nemesis of flying-type Beasts, but the Devil Bee was the exception. On the other hand, the Fire essence Beast could instantly kill the Bewildering Butterfly with a mere fireball, but its actual combat strength wasn't even 1% of the Rock Golem's.

After watching this duel, Yue Yang came to a conclusion.

For every monster, even a seemingly invincible one, there exists another that can subdue it.

There was no such thing as an unmatched, invincible Beasts in this world. There were, however, a countless combination of battle and countering tactics to fight against different Beasts.

Yue Yang now understood why warriors using Summoning Grimoires had such great advantages.

The reason was simple. Firstly, warriors with Summoning Grimoires all had an eternally loyal Guardian Beast that could be revived when it died. Secondly, with a Summoning Grimoire, the contracted Beasts didn't have many restrictions. They were able to utilise more Beasts to carry out counters as a battle strategy. In this battle, if it were not for Xie Huo's sudden interference, Wu Yi would have been ripped into pieces by the Phantom Panther in the overall clash of tactics.

As for now, the bright eyed thief's situation was far from good...

"Hurry up and go. Wu Yi will soon summon an even stronger Beast; I can't hold on for much longer." The bright eyed thief was unable to appease the Spider Witch, so she quickly passed Yue Yang a delicately made scroll, "This is a 'Delivery Scroll'. If you open it and input spirit energy into it, you can release something similar to a typical summoned Beast."

"Summoned Beast?" Yue Yang feigned innocence as he blinked at the thief with eyes as bright as stars.

"Ah, you don't even know how to summon a Beast?" The bright eyed thief felt as if a bolt had just struck down on top of her head. She inwardly thought to herself, "Could it be that this brat normally spent all his time picking up girls? He doesn't even have a single Beast to summon?"

No wonder he had only just applied to be a mercenary a few days ago.

This time, they were doomed.

“You want to leave? It won’t be that easy.” Xie Huo sneered.

He made an extremely strange gesture, and then used a dagger to cut open his palm, and dripped his blood onto an illustration.

The illustration flashed with a red light. Two specks of light shot straight up into the sky and exploded like fireworks, causing bits of red light to scatter in all directions. At the same time, a wave of thought was suddenly transmitted to Yue Yang’s mind: Your enemy is forcing you to carry out a ‘Death Match’. Before one of the two parties dies in battle, one cannot leave the perimeter of the ‘Realm of Blood and Death’. Otherwise, God’s punishment will descend upon you. All the meridians in your body will be ruptured and you will die.”

The bright eyed thief’s hands began to shake. It was evident that she had received the exact same message about Xie Huo’s ‘Death Match’.

Xie Huo had also needed to fulfill certain requirements to initiate this Death Match. His face was as white as a sheet of paper, and his bloody hand seemed to have been swallowed by some invisible creature. The wound constantly bled, and it even begun to rot, releasing a vile odor.

“You should be honored that you are going to die for me, hahaha.” Xie Huo pressed his bloody hand onto the Fire Essence Beast’s head. It exploded with a bang, sending blood and flesh

flying in all directions.

“Good job, keke, I can finally summon it. It is finally time....for you to die.” Wu Yi began to bleed from all openings on his face. It looked extremely horrifying. His spirit power began to overflow, and the extremely powerful summon made his body deteriorate rapidly. The strange part was that the blood coming out of his body turned into rays of light that flowed into the red crystal that was in his palm. Finally, after the red crystal had absorbed enough blood and spirit power, it began to emit a demonic red light. The glow spread throughout the air, dyeing it a blood red.

The nearby mercenaries all began to feel a strange fear and the more cowardly mercenaries’ jaws had begun to tremble uncontrollably.

The mercenaries shivered as if they were in a world of ice and snow.

The powerful Beast summoned with Wu Yi’s blood finally appeared successfully after 3 minutes.

“MOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO”

A terrifying howl made the Devil Bee that was previously hovering above everyone’s heads so scared that it fell to the ground. Trembling, it began to squirm and crawl around, seemingly unable to fly back into the air. Even the Spider Witch, which was currently hiding under the safety of the Halo Shield, couldn’t withstand the fear. It turned into a flash of green light,



and voluntarily re-entered the Silver Grimoire. It had completely abandoned its owner, and fled from the battlefield.

Yue Yang saw that Wu Yi had summoned an enormous bull covered with dark green patches of snake skin and blood red eyes.

The frightened mercenaries all scattered in different directions; not a single person dared to stay any longer.

Even the spectating warriors standing on the Merry Forest's balconies turned pale with fear. They cried out in fear, "Heavens, that fellow Wu Yi even went as far as to summon the Bronze Barbaric Bull."

"Bronze Barbaric Bull?" Yue Yang curiously asked the bright-eyed thief, "Is this the legendary Bronze Barbaric Bull who had the Doom Eyes that could kill anyone with just a glare?"

## Chapter 33 – Miracle?

---

“Yes... Wu Yi has actually summoned a Bronze Barbaric Bull. It is a bronze-ranked Beast. This time we are done for.” The bright-eyed thief’s voice was charged with fear: “My Guardian Beast is a Flower Fairy that does not have any attack power. It is simply not a match for the Bronze Barbaric Bull. If I had known this earlier, I would have summoned the Phantom Panther at the beginning to do a surprise attack. Maybe then it would have been possible to kill Wu Yi.....now, tell me, what should we do?”

The bright-eyed thief looked at Yue Yang helplessly, as if he was her final hope.

At this moment, Yue Yang could see that the pair of bright eyes looking at him were filled with dread and fear. Such a pitiful yet adorable look was similar to the look that Empress Fei Wen Li, who was trapped like a prisoner inside the Black Hole, had given him previously.

Hou! The moment for the hero to rescue the beauty had finally came.

In an instant, Yue Yang exploded with a heroic sense of protection.

He held the bright eyed thief’s frail shoulders gently and comforted her in a soft tone: “Isn’t it just a bull? This fearless hero shall slaughter it in your place.”

Yue Yang's comforting words didn't have the intended effect but instead caused the bright-eyed thief's eyes to turn red, brimming with tears. Her voice was choked with emotions as she said, "You fool, this is no ordinary bull. If that Bronze Barbaric Bull even glared at us, we would surely die, what do we do now? We have to think of a way out, or else we both will die at this place. I...I don't want to die...I still have not avenged a deep enmity. I really don't want to die...You, aren't you a genius? Quickly think of a good solution."

"Rest assured. I have already figured out a plan to counter it." Yue Yang brought forth a tiny knife, which was used for peeling fruits.

"You want to charge in blindly?" The bright-eyed thief thought that Yue Yang wanted to rush out blindly to kill Wu Yi. If Wu Yi died then his summoned Bronze Barbaric Bull would disappear immediately, ceasing to exist.

However, at this moment, would killing Wu Yi be that easy?

Not to mention of Xie Huo, how could a small thief who had just become a mercenary a few days ago be able to go against Wu Yi's fighting skills?

The bright-eyed thief felt that if Yue Yang really rushed out blindly, it will be equivalent to seeking death.

Even if he didn't get run over to death, stomped to death or glared to death by the Bronze Barbaric Bull and was able to avoid

being crushed by the Rock Golem's attack, he could still be torn apart to pieces by the Battle Eagle who had regained its health.

Even if he somehow managed to successfully reach Wu Yi, against such an expert Level 3 Hero, what could a mere thief wielding a fifty-copper small dagger, who had only recently become a mercenary do? Most probably, he wouldn't be able to touch even a single hair on Wu Yi's body and get killed on the spot...Leaving the protection of the Halo Shield and rushing out blindly was definitely the most foolish and sure shot way of committing suicide. This was what the bright-eyed thief thought, as she grasped at Yue Yang's arms tightly, and said in a stern voice, "I still have another attack, but its probability of success is extremely small. You should run away from this place with all your might. If you are still alive after escaping from this Realm of Blood and Death, do me a favour. Go to the 'Valley of Butterflies and Flowers' and tell the Valley Lord, tell him that I...I have died in a battle."

"Trying to run? Stop your wishful thinking!" Xie Huo's looked at them sinisterly as he let out a blood-curdling laugh.

She took out a black crystal and held it in her hands. Muttering a strange chant, she then spat a mouthful of blood on the black crystal.

The Devil Bee cowering on the ground suddenly exploded into pieces with a loud boom. Dark green blood and pieces of flesh splashed out in all directions. Turns out that there was a hiding Phantom Leopard that could blend in with the darkness of the night. The blood splatter caused its hidden body to be revealed.

The Rock Golem immediately raised its fists up high.

In the air, the Battle Eagle, which was much faster than the Rock Golem, had already swooped down for an attack. Since the Spider Witch had fled from the battleground, both the spider poison and spider net had disappeared. Although its fighting abilities had weakened a little bit, it didn't decrease by much. The Battle Eagle was still a strength to behold.

The Battle Eagle swooped down like a hurricane and slashed at the Phantom Leopard's back, inflicting deep wounds that reached its bones.

"Rumble rumble..." The Bronze Barbaric Bull's pounded the ground with its hooves, signalling its imminent charge towards the Phantom Leopard.

A flash of fire suddenly burst forth from the Bronze Barbaric Bull's nose, exploding at the Phantom Leopard's hind legs with a loud boom.

Following that, the Bronze Barbaric Bull chased after the injured Phantom Leopard, and its rock-hard skull and pair of horns unleashing a colliding attack that had the force of a giant hammer.

The Phantom Leopard wailed painfully as its whole body was ruthlessly blown away by the impact of the collision, its body couldn't stop whirling in mid-air. When the Phantom Leopard finally fell hard on the ground, the Bronze Barbaric Bull had

already caught up to it. With its big red eyes, it stared fiercely at the Phantom Leopard. A red light flashed even faster than lightning, and the Phantom Leopard had suddenly turned into a corpse, collapsing on the ground... In just a short moment, the Phantom Leopard had been killed by the Bronze Barbaric Bull's Doom Eyes.

“Heavens!”

From the windows and balconies of the Merry Forest Pavilion, the surrounding spectating warriors were all so scared that they were completely drenched with cold sweat.

Although the Bronze Barbaric Bull's Doom Eyes' probability of success was extremely small, the existence of an attack that could disregard everything was simply too frightening.

Doom Eyes, other than not having any effect on non-living things such as the Rock Golem, could only be countered by a Guardian Beast from a Grimoire Contractor. Normal warriors and Beasts did not have any chance of survival if they received the Bronze Barbaric Bull's Doom Eyes attack.

The bright-eyed thief who was summoning her strongest Beast in a desperate move hadn't even managed to finish her summoning before the Phantom Leopard was killed by the Bronze Barbaric Bull.

A jolt of thunder suddenly shook her mind.

The death of a Beast has a huge effect on the mind of the master it was connected to.

It was already hard for the bright-eyed thief to endure it normally, but this time she was in the midst of summoning with all her heart, hence her mind was dealt a huge impact.

Vomiting a mouthful of blood that stained her mask, the bright-eyed thief's body shook violently. Before she fainted and collapsed on the ground, she reached out towards Yue Yang and said, "Quick, run..."

Yue Yang immediately reached out his hands and grasped her soft, tender and sweet-smelling hands. If he had made a move earlier, the bright-eyed thief wouldn't have received such a shock to her mind that and cause her to faint. However, Yue Yang didn't wish to reveal his abilities to this "brother" of his. At the very least, he did not want to reveal his abilities right now, so he only planned to make a move as the last resort. With regards to the spectators in the Merry Forest Pavilion or that Wu Yi and Xie Huo on the other side, they were just corpses in Yue Yang's eyes.

Along with the bright-eyed thief's unconsciousness, the Halo Shield disappeared.

The Silver Grimoire turned into a ball of golden light and fluttered into the bright-eyed thief's body.

When the Halo Shield disappeared, the Rock golem, Battle Eagle and Bronze Barbaric Bull all charged madly towards Yue Yang.

“Hahahaha!” Wu Yi and Xie Huo both started laughing happily. Defeating the enemy by working together like this, using underhanded methods, they had done it hundreds of times. They had practiced their mutual understanding. If it wasn’t for too much pressure from facing against a Silver grimoire user who was a Level 4 Champion, Wu Yi wouldn’t even summon the Bronze Barbaric Bull. He summoned it to minimize the risk and danger they were facing.

“So noisy.”

Yue Yang hated people who laugh like this the most.

He felt that an exaggerated laugh had been his signature statement all along. Seeing Wu Yi and Xie Huo laughing so shamelessly, he felt extremely uncomfortable, thinking that these two hideous fellows had actually plagiarized his signature laugh.

Yue Yang pointed with his fingers and summoned his Copper Grimoire.

A faint red light appeared immediately, forming a faint red-coloured Halo Shield around the bright-eyed thief and him.

The Bronze Barbaric Bull charged into the red-coloured Halo Shield, its huge force of impact causing ripples on the Halo Shield, but the ripples immediately disappeared. On the other hand, the Rock Golem’s heavy smash that could pulverize any rock was also ineffective against the red-coloured Halo Shield.



The Battle Eagle, the weakest amongst the beasts, swooped down from the air, but was blown away from the impact of the collision against the red-coloured Halo Shield.

“Eh, it’s another Grimoire User? But he’s just a Level 1 Apprentice Beginner? Haha, what a fool, you are just a mere Apprentice, why would you struggle against your death? You are really a big joke...Thorny Flower? AHAHAHAHAHAHA, I can’t... I’m going to laugh to death. He actually summoned a Thorny Flower, oh heavens, I’d really like to see how he is going to use a Thorny Flower to kill my Rock Golem and Bronze Barbaric Bull!” Wu Yi roared with laughter, holding his stomach with both of his hands. He laughed until tears flowed out of his eyes.

“I’d rather face against an expert, killing small fry doesn’t have any meaning.” Xie Huo immediately disregarded Yue Yang when he deduced that Yue Yang was a mere Apprentice.

“Haha, I’m your exact opposite. I love torturing small fries to their death, especially listening to their miserable wailings upon their imminent death. It really leaves a rich aftertaste.” Wu Yi licked his lips, like he was a hungry malevolent ghost seeing delicious dishes in front of him, and prepared to dig in. In his eyes, Yue Yang, this level 1 Apprentice, was a perfect small fry for him to torture to death.

Even if Yue Yang was a Grimoire Contractor, Wu Yi still disregarded him.

An Apprentice could only summon one Beast every day.

Facing this little thief who had already summoned a Thorny Flower, for the oncoming battle, even a fool wouldn't think that he could use such a weak Thorny Flower to kill the invincible Rock Golem and Bronze Barbaric Bull that possessed the Doom Eyes.

Every single warrior on the Merry Forest Pavilion balconies shook their heads and sighed helplessly. Right now, even if the Gods themselves descended upon the earth, they wouldn't be able to turn this little thief's defeat into victory.

This little thief would definitely lose against Wu Yi.

Furthermore, there was still Xie Huo behind him who was stronger than Wu Yi.

As soon as the time limit of the Halo Shield was up, those two little thieves would be pulverized into meat paste by the Rock Golem and the Bronze Barbaric Bull.

“Isn't it just a bull? What's so good about it?” Yue Yang didn't even stand inside the Halo Shield, instead he swaggered out plain in the open, leaving the bright-eyed thief and the Thorny Flower inside the Halo Shield.

“Ah?”

His move shocked every warrior present, leaving them

dumbstruck.

A Grimoire User shouldn't be able to leave their Halo Shield, otherwise their Halo Shield would disappear. How could this little thief be able to leave his Halo Shield?

This, did everyone become short-sighted suddenly and see it wrongly?

Or is this miracle actually happening in front of them?

# Chapter 34 – Do You Have Anything Else To Show Off?

---

The Bronze Barbaric Bull was the first to rush forward. His gigantic blood-red eyes flashed its [Doom Eyes].

Everyone believed that this little thief was finished, there was no doubt that he was going to die.

The Bronze Barbaric Bull's eyes lit up, indicating that it was about to unleash its rapid killing move, [Doom Eyes]. In the next second, this little thief's soul would be completely annihilated, leaving behind a corpse without a soul... ... The Guard Leader had already shut his eyes closed, unable to watch it any further. Two Grimoire Contract Holders dying in White Stone City would definitely cause a chaos, maybe even shed rivers of blood throughout the city. The powers behind these two little thieves would definitely not let the killers off easily.

Especially the stronger of the two, that Level 4 Champion, she's a Grimoire Contract Holder from the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers.

Raising such a young Level 4 Champion Silver Grimoire Holder, was something unfathomable to the Guard Leader. It must have been a huge investment. For this kind of a genius warrior to be killed, how could the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers not retaliate?

However, even if the Guard Leader knew that they were facing

imminent catastrophe, he had no way to stop Wu Yi and Xie Huo from working together to kill these two unusual little thieves.

This was because the powers behind Wu Yi and Xie Huo were just as strong. These matters were not something a small Guard Leader like him could interfere with. At first, he had hoped that Master Golden Blade who had gone on a trip with the White Stone City's chief would be able to receive news of this incident quickly and could rush back in time to stop this disaster from happening.

But now it seemed that it was already too late.

“Hahahaha!” Wu Yi was beside himself with joy, and the battlefield rang with his laughter. His evil laughter was similar to that of an owl, and hearing it made people's hearts feel gloomy.

However, his laughter was cut off just 3 seconds later.

Before, if someone said that the Level 5 Bronze Barbaric Bull couldn't kill a little thief using its [Doom Eyes], everyone would have thought that that person had gone mad. However, this was proven true right in front of their eyes. Yue Yang's figure flashed once, but then he returned back to his normal state immediately. The entire battlefield was shocked into silence. All the spectating mercenaries were stupefied; their jaws dropped so wide that a beast could be stuffed inside.

Yue Yang himself also felt that this outcome was slightly unexpected.

He had actually thought of a strategy to defeat the Bronze Barbaric Bull, and that was to use his 'Phantom Shadow', a Guardian Beast that can be revived when it died, to guard against the Bronze Barbaric Bull's Doom Eyes.

In that moment, when the Bronze Barbaric Bull activated its Doom Eyes, Yue Yang's real body had already dodged away, only leaving behind his Phantom Shadow.

He had hoped to use this shadow to test the true strength of the [Doom Eyes].

Is it a rapid killing technique?

Or was it just ineffective?

In that one second when he experienced the [Doom Eyes] attack through the Phantom Shadow that had been killed by the [Doom Eyes], Yue Yang could feel in his consciousness that an image had came out from the Bronze Barbaric Bull's soul with an unimaginable speed, like a bolt of lightning, charging directly towards his consciousness in one mysterious moment. It then immediately disappeared.

In the space within his conscious mind, that Grim Reaper-like image seemed as if it had wanted to capture the Phantom Shadow, but was unable to. Furthermore, it was clearly oblivious to the presence of Yue Yang's soul who was watching the entire scene closely. When the attack fell through, that Grim Reaper-like image dematerialized quickly, becoming nothing.

In that moment, Yue Yang gained a flash of insight to many strange and wondrous things in the universe, and he was internally moved by this 'Breakthrough of Truths'.

Having gone through this breakthrough, his [Divine Vision] skill had mysteriously risen.

An urge rose up involuntarily in Yue Yang's mind: If I had used Binding Chains just now, perhaps I may have been able to capture that 'Grim Reaper image'.

What would happen if he captured the 'Grim Reaper-like image'?

Yue Yang wasn't sure either, but he believed that it was not a bad thing, and it was worth trying out.

It was a pity that he was too cautious just now, and didn't use Binding Chains on the Grim Reaper-like image.

Although he missed that chance to make his move, Yue Yang was indescribably excited in his heart, with his [Divine Vision] skill having risen. Unexpectedly, he was able to see the numerous hidden abilities of the Phantom Shadow. For example, one such ability was to group a mass of shadows together to form a giant shadow.

The duration of time that the giant shadow could exist was short; it was only able to last one minute.

Each time a shadow was added, the time will only be extended for roughly 30 seconds. However, this type of giant shadow with a short time limit, was extremely strong, almost equivalent to that of a Giant Titan. When Yue Yang overlapped 5 shadows on top of each other, turned them into a giant shadow, then used it to strengthen his own body, he was stunned to discover that his own strength had increased by at least a hundred times.

Even if the time limit wasn't even 3 minutes, but the Yue Yang of now, had complete confidence in facing the Rock Golem head on.

“Cool, could it be that Ultraman's transformation felt like this?” Yue Yang wrapped his hands, that had gone through strengthening using the giant shadow, tightly around the Bronze Barbaric Bull's sharp horns. Yue Yang, unable to restrain his emotions, burst out with a matchless, bold and powerful roar: “HAAAA!”

The sound was like a clap of thunder rumbling through the sky, shaking both heaven and earth, causing everyone to turn pale.

The Bronze Barbaric Bull which had a body like a wall had been forcibly overturned onto the floor by Yue Yang's strength.

Since this was Yue Yang's first time using the giant shadow's strength, he had used too much. He also did not manage to grasp hold of the centre of gravity of the Bronze Barbaric Bull. The Bronze Barbaric Bull's horns which were hard beyond comparison had snapped off with a 'pa' sound. Yue Yang's original intention was not to turn the Bronze Barbaric Bull over; it was to lift it and



use its body to smash it against the Rock Golem. But who would have ever known that instead of lifting it, he only managed to turn the Bronze Barbaric Bull over, as he accidentally broke its horns.

No one knew that this was caused by Yue Yang's mistake in making his move. In fact, they thought that he had broken the horns on purpose to show his frightening strength.

For a while, the surrounding warriors were all shocked out of their wits, their faces turning deadly pale.

“Heavens, is this a person's strength?”

“I'm going to faint.”

“Illusion, this is an illusion. I don't believe this, I definitely don't believe this...This is not possible, this is absolutely impossible.” Wu Yi couldn't accept what had just happened; he felt that everything he had just seen was an illusion. It must have been a beast that the little thief summoned, which was capable of using hypnotism and made him see illusions.

A normal human's strength wouldn't be able to overturn the level 5 Bronze Barbaric Bull onto the ground.

It is even less possible to snap off its horns; they were the strongest part of its body, harder than steel by at least 10 times. How could it be possible to snap them off forcibly using only their hands?

Even then, no matter how monstrous the little thief's strength was, there was no way he could live after taking on the Bronze Barbaric Bull's [Doom Eyes]. Only if one's strength exceeded that of the Bronze Barbaric Bull's, and was on par with those Level 6 Elders that were only a breadth away from entering the Innate realm, would they be able to resist the attack. Normal warriors were definitely unable to resist the Bronze Barbaric Bull's attack, [Doom Eyes], which ignored all physical defenses and directly annihilated one's soul... Could it be that this little thief was actually a Level 6 Elder? That's not possible, he's obviously a Level 1 Apprentice.

If he believed that the little thief was a Level 6 Elder, then Wu Yi might as well believe that his own father was a woman.

The next scene left the surrounding warriors petrified into stone as the wind eroded their sense of reality.

Everyone felt that they might as well let a gust of wind blow their petrified ashes away. This kind of result, it was really unacceptable... .. That was because, the Rock Golem that had originally rushed towards the little thief with its giant fists raised, preparing to smash him into a meat paste, had betrayed its original summoner when Yue Yang reached out and stroked it lightly.

The Rock Golem which had no sentience and was incapable of thought, lifted its giant fists to ferociously smash the Bronze Barbaric Bull which had still been lying on the ground.

Once the little thief had reached out his hands, that Rock Golem had become his summoned beast.

This... was not possible.

The puppet-type Rock Golem would definitely never betray its summoner; this was their greatest quality. Since it had no sentience and only had combat instinct, they had no idea about the thing called 'betrayal'. Once the contract had been signed, they would have eternal allegiance to the contract holder.

The thing that made Wu Yi despair the most was that the Rock Golem which was currently beating up that Bronze Barbaric Bull ferociously had not betrayed him at all. The Rock Golem was still his own summoned beast, just that it had been controlled by an unknown external force, such that it would not listen to his orders, operating without permission, and attacking the Bronze Barbaric Bull.

A summoned beast which took up space in the limited amount of Summon Quota yet disobeyed its master's orders, wasn't this Rock Golem his greatest failure in life?

Wu Yi really wanted to cry, but was unable to.

He wanted to die, but there was no time to commit suicide using his dagger.

That was because the little thief whose strength was only that of

a Level 1 Apprentice was already standing in front of him, looking down on him with a condescending attitude.

In that instant, Wu Yi felt extremely small. If one said that his opponent was like a fierce tiger that devoured men, then he felt that he was like a small mouse that was not even worth getting stuck between its predator's teeth... ... In his entire life, this was the first time Wu Yi had felt this small, weak and afraid. This kind of fear was definitely a first.

“Aren't you an expert? Why don't you laugh at me again, pull out something else for me to play with, or boast arrogantly again?” Yue Yang trampled over Wu Yi's body, who was trembling all over, ignoring all the gazes from the surrounding people. Trampling on his body without restraint, he beat him up ruthlessly.

“... ...” Seeing a Level 1 Apprentice beating up a Level 3 Hero, everyone was stunned to their core and rendered speechless.

# Chapter 35 – Supreme Sword

---

Yue Yang gave off a tyrannical air as he traced the edge of his exquisite dagger with his finger.

“You can say your last words now.” Yue Yang looked off into the distance, purposely ignoring Xie Huo. He knew that Xie Huo would not be willing to accept defeat; he was bound to summon an even stronger beast to try and reverse the battle.

Yue Yang wanted to use tonight’s battle as a proper test of his own strength, and determine exactly which realm he had ascended to.

Yue Yang didn’t think defeating Wu Yi and Xie Huo was difficult at all. But he wanted to manipulate the circumstances so that the situation would prove to be more challenging, which would allow him to experience as many battles as possible. Constant training would enrich his battle experience. Bloody battles were fickle things. Even though he had a lot of potential, he wouldn’t be able to achieve a desirable outcome in an encounter with a powerful enemy if he slacked off in his training. It might even prove to be difficult for him to make it out alive.

Yue Yang didn’t know exactly how powerful the experts in this world were. But since he first came out from the black hole space, he had realized one inescapable fact: In the past, the Soaring Dragon Continent had experts that could easily defeat Empress Fei Wen Li and seal her for 10,000 years.

Did all those experts die off?

Yue Yang felt that the answer to this question was most probably no.

Even if there was currently no top Rankers in Soaring Dragon Continent, there would most likely be some in Tong Tian Tower. Legends said that only [Sage]-ranked people could set foot into heaven. If such people existed, how could there be a lack of top Rankers?

Experts like the one that sealed Empress Fei Wen Li for 10,000 years were obviously not people that Yue Yang could go up against. That's why what he needed to do now was to constantly cultivate and grow stronger.

Grow stronger, and then grow stronger even more. He had to become the strongest person in the world.

This was Yue Yang's greatest ambition.

With the Innate Invisible Sword Qi method, Yue Yang had never worried about his future. However, he still wished to improve himself and achieve a greater realm by cultivating diligently and raising battle awareness. People like Rock, Tie Kuang, Wu Yi, and Xie Huo were just stepping stones on his path....by stepping on their bodies, he'd be striding towards his goal of becoming stronger and greater. This was the most important thing he needed to do right now.

“Spare me!” While Wu Yi’s words were still stuck in his throat, the dagger went straight through his mouth and out through the back of his head.

“Wow, these last words were quite concise.” Yue Yang casually shrugged his shoulders.

The surrounding warriors watched, completely speechless.

Everyone knew that Wu Yi wouldn’t be able to survive. However, until now , no one had imagined that a Level 3 Hero like Wu Yi would receive such an ending.

The light in Wu Yi’s eyes dimmed and his wavering flame of life extinguished before he even realised it. The frightened Battle Eagle that had been circling around in the sky the whole time immediately deserted its contractor once Wu Yi died. It flapped its wings and charged off into the darkness, running for its life.

“The only one left is you, Xie Huo.” Yue Yang turned to look at Xie Huo, who had been silent the whole time. That bastard should still have some remaining skills, what kind of unexpected move will he show next? Yue Yang contemplated silently.

“I know that I can’t survive past tonight. However, I will bring you down together with me. Let me tell you, as long as there’s human and some blood, I can summon a terrifying Devil King that can decimate all of White Stone City...hahaha...hahahahahahaha....” Xie Huo evil laughter was extremely sinister, making everyone’s hair stand on their ends.

What exactly was Xie Huo planning?

The observing warriors all shuddered involuntarily. A terrifying devil king that could decimate all of White Stone City?

At the very least, this would mean it had to be a demon of the Golden King Beast level, right?

The Guard Leader quickly reacted. He unsheathed the longsword at his side and bellowed, commanding everyone to charge, attempting to block the already crazed Xie Huo. However, as soon as the soldiers jumped off of the building's balcony, countless black lumps of flames erupted around Xie Huo's body.

These flames were like will-o-wisps from the underworld.

Xie Huo laughed loudly. With a wave of his hands, the countless flames shot out in all directions like meteors, flying towards the surrounding warriors, as well as the female singers on top of the lively tavern platform.

“Ah....”

The people that had been hit by the strange, black flames immediately caught on fire.

The frail female singers cried out in pain, as they each combusted



in the raging flames. Before they could even struggle or beg for help, they had all been charred to death. Fresh blood and ruined limbs exploded outwards, littering the ground.

The most horrifying part was that even the exploded blood and limbs themselves were still burning in an inextinguishable flame.

The ground and the walls that had also been struck similarly erupted into flames, burning ceaselessly.

Some of the warriors had managed to dodge the attacks, but the black flames automatically chased after them as if they were alive. They chased after their targets before smashing directly onto them. No one managed to escape, except for the few warriors with the quickest reaction speeds.

The Guard Leader waved his longsword around, chopping at the black flames.

His sword was also burning as it slashed through the black balls of flames. It directly burned his hand, making it impossible for him to control it properly. Seeing this scene, the few surviving warriors and guards had deathly expressions, “Heavens, this is Hell’s Fire. Inextinguishable Hell’s Fire.... Xie Huo must have summoned a demon from hell. We’re screwed, screwed, we’re all screwed!”

There were also many balls of fire in front of Yue Yang.

He lifted his hand and easily blasted apart the flames with wind, causing them to ricochet to the ground. The surrounding bricks were all set ablaze by the black flames.

In the far distance, he could see that none of the flames managed to enter into the light red Halo Shield. Dozens of fireballs spluttered in front of it, but they instantly disappeared without a trace upon touching the Halo Shield. Yue Yang was relieved to find that the Halo Shield was safe and sound.

Xie Huo looked at Yue Yang and laughed wickedly.

He pulled out a sharp, curved blade from his waist, and walked in front of Yue Yang. Then he slashed at his own abdomen, causing his intestines to spill out onto the ground.

“I offer all lives and fresh blood offerings to the Demon King Ha Xin that I revered. Your lowly follower provides his blood and soul to call on our Lord’s presence, Ha Xin. Decimate this entire area, display your supreme power!” Xie Huo waved his blade, cutting apart his internal organs and scattering them into the air. His expression was beyond crazed, and eyes flashed with a fanatical glint.

“...” Yue Yang knitted his brows. He had completely raised his guard, prepared to meet the summoned Demon Lord with all his strength.

“Kill Xie Huo, hurry, hurry!” The Guard Leader was so anxious that he had begun to tear up.

“WAHHH!” The surviving warriors swallowed their fear, and charged altogether.

“Too late, hahahaha. You will all die with me, and we shall meet once more in hell. When that time comes, I will definitely welcome you hospitably.” Xie Hua laughed madly. His body rumbled, and then exploded into countless fragments of blood and fire. The few warriors that had just been attempting to attack Xie Huo was immediately killed in the explosion, their bodies blasted into millions of tiny pieces.

The Guard Leader had also received heavy damage. He fell to the ground, and vomited blood endlessly.

Out of the hundreds of people in the entire battlefield, aside from Yue Yang and the unconscious bright eyed thief, the Guard Leader was the only survivor...

His right leg was caught in the black flames which began to spread quickly.

“Ah!” The Guard Leader bit down hard, and then forcibly cut off his entire right leg. He used both his arms to support his body, and pull himself away from the blazing floor. He loudly shouted at Yue Yang, “Hurry up and leave the White Stone City immediately. Get as far away as you possibly can; Xie Huo used his life as a sacrifice to summon a demon from Hell. This place will soon turn into hell!”

The air around the place that Xie Huo had self-exploded suddenly split apart, causing the Guard Leader to cry out in shock.

An enormous rift gradually opened up mid air, revealing a portal.

However, what made Yue Yang's heart race even more was that this 10m tall giant portal was still not large enough to allow the Demon King from hell to come out.

He only saw his two hands stretching out from the portal, burning with Hell's Fire. Its giant arms were covered with sharp, blood scales, forcibly forcing the crimson portal open. It seemed to want to pull the portal a bit larger, wanting to quickly leave the distant deep pool of magic and enter the Soaring Dragon Continent. If Yue Yang were to allow this terrifying demon to come out unimpeded, then he would be a huge idiot.

He had been waiting for a chance this whole time; this was exactly the opportunity the heavens bestowed on him to mount a sneak attack.

“Binding Chains!” Yue Yang chanted in his mind, using Xiao Wen Li's Binding Chains to fight against the terrifying demon.

What shocked him was that the Binding Chains that had been able to restrain the Bronze Barbaric Bull and the Rock Golem for ten seconds couldn't even give Yue Yang 1 second of time.

That meant he had to attack within one second. Otherwise, the

Binding Chains would fail.

Without the Binding Chains, that terrifying monster would immediately come out, and White Stone City.....would be doomed.

Yue Yang was confident that he could escape the terrifying demon if it pursued him, but there was no way his godmother and her little girl living in White Stone City would be able to.

“I’ll kill you.” Yue Yang’s eyes flashed like stars. This was the first time he was using his strongest attack since he had transcended dimensions. The Innate Invisible Sword Qi burst out at full strength. Brilliant rays of light flashed from his arms like a rainbow, and they began to revolve around him. All of his Innate Qi had gathered together and formed a sword of destruction. It viciously lashed out at the heart of the terrifying demon’s body still within the portal.

If this attack hit, Yue Yang believed that it would be able to instantly kill an experienced battle-type beasts that had high vitality and resilience, or even a gigantic, enormous beast like this on the spot.

This, was Yue Yang’s Supreme Sword.

What effect would this attack have on the terrifying demon? Would it mortally wound it, or have absolutely no effect?

Yue Yang had no way of determining the answer, but this was

currently the most powerful weapon in his arsenal. With Chains of Binding and the support from his giant shadow that had been strengthened a hundred times, plus the Innate Invisible Sword Qi skill: Supreme Sword...

After this attack, would he win? Or lose?

## Chapter 36 – Level Up

---

The terrifying demon that couldn't come out smoothly from the portal, suddenly started to gradually vanish after receiving Yue Yang's Supreme Sword attack.

This outcome amazed Yue Yang.

Could it be that he could defeat that powerful fellow with just one attack? Really? Xie Huo had used the lives and blood of hundreds of warriors as a sacrifice to summon the terrifying demon, yet it was so easily defeated? With regards to such an ending, Yue Yang couldn't believe it at all... .. Could it be that an attack with the added strength of 'Binding Chains' and 'Giant Shadow', together with a Supreme Sword attack from the Innate Invisible Sword Qi, could really obliterate everything?

Suddenly, a premonition of danger surfaced in his heart.

Yue Yang immediately reacted, moving both of his legs to execute the 'Elegant Sword Dance', one of the Mysterious Three Styles. In an instant, he drew back by 10 metres.

A Beheading Arc Wave that was capable of tearing apart the whole sky and earth suddenly lashed out from within the portal.

Tearing through the sky faster than lightning, with one flash, it almost hit the tip of Yue Yang's nose as he desperately evaded the attack. The slash then lashed the ground at a distance, gouging a bottomless deep crack in it as easily as a hot knife cut through

butter, before it disappeared into the far distance...

The Merry Forest building that was going up in flames was silently slashed into two by the Beheading Arc Wave. In the next moment, a loud, cringe-inducing crashing sound boomed out as the huge pavilion collapsed slowly. The deafening sound exploded as if it were a sound wave attack, making Yue Yang's hair stand on end. It was such a terrifying Beheading Arc Wave; he was almost cut in two by it. If he hadn't evaded it in time, even with his defense, he wouldn't be able to survive that attack that could even split the sky. No, if he had not learnt the unrivalled 'Elegant Sword Dance', one of the Three Mysterious Styles, he would have already died a miserable death from this sneak attack.

“In the past 600 years, you are the first human to injure me.”

Following the furious roar that sounded from within the portal, a Demon's hand tainted with black blood and engulfed in purple flame extended from within the portal.

A cluster of Dark Green Flames condensed in that hand, with power so strong that it could destroy both the heavens and the earth. The Inferno that Xie Huo had summoned previously was insignificant compared to these Dark Green Flames. Seeing this, Yue Yang didn't think that the current him would be able to withstand the next attack. If he let these Dark Green Flames touch him, the consequences would be disastrous. But what else could he do now?

Escape?



Or should he resist to the end?

Maybe it was a pretty good idea to destroy the portal forcefully and stop the terrifying demon from coming out.

But the problem was whether he could evade the Dark Green Flames' attack and destroy the portal behind it. Beads of sweat formed on Yue Yang's forehead. Looking at the ever expanding Dark Green Flames in front of him and then looking behind him... ... In that direction was the beautiful woman's house. Despite the house being quite far away, if this cluster of Dark Green Flames' emitted an energy shock wave, maybe...

Perhaps, Fourth Mother and the little girl were still in dreamland?

Yue Yang gritted his teeth as he started to revolve his arms around each other. Rotating, he formed the remaining Qi in his body into a stream that flowed against the current of Yin and Yang and became a cyclone.

Even though the terrifying demon's powers were too powerful and hard to defend against, Yue Yang still courageously charged forward... ... Yue Yang hardly cared if the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent's people lived or died, but he couldn't simply watch without taking action when the danger could possibly threaten the safety of Fourth Mother and the little girl.

The Fourth Mother who doted on him and the mischievous little

girl, they were his only family.

“Foolish humans.” After extending its hand from within the portal, the terrifying demon let out a blood-curdling laugh.

“Boom!”

As if it knew that Yue Yang would charge forward in a desperate suicidal attempt, the Dark Green Flames suddenly exploded. A pillar of green light suddenly shot out from the terrifying demon’s palm, straight towards Yue Yang’s body.

Suddenly, a light green Halo Shield appeared in front of Yue Yang. Like a circle of rainbows, a beautiful yet mysterious luster that was comparable to the glow of a diamond pattern suddenly appeared on the surface of the shield protecting his body. A Diamond Grimoire appeared at the same time and Xiao Wen Li, who was wielding her Dual Icicle Blades in her small hands, came out from within Yue Yang’s body voluntarily. Her face was full of nervousness. The green pillar of light shot at her Halo Shield, and it shook violently. With a loud booming sound, the Halo Shield was almost destroyed. Yue Yang was shocked. Fortunately, the Halo Shield protection succeeded in dispersing the powers of the green pillar of light. The power contained in the green pillar of light shot out far into the distance and, in the end, disappeared into the air.

Seeing that the Halo Shield was still intact even after its encounter with the green pillar of light, Yue Yang sighed in relief internally.

He had gambled correctly.

The Halo Shield summoned by Xiao Wen Li's Diamond Grimoire could indeed defend against such a destructive attack.

"Ah!" Xiao Wen Li let out a high pitched cry that reverberated through the sky. Yue Yang realized that, unknown to him, the terrifying demon's hand had already pierced through the Halo Shield. Although it was just one finger, Yue Yang was extremely shocked.

Only now had he realized that the Halo Shield was not an absolute defense and had its own limitations. The terrifying demon's fingers had succeeded in piercing through the great defense of the Halo Shield. Yue Yang's natural reaction in the next moment was to hold Xiao Wen Li tightly in his embrace, protecting her even if he would die. He's done for... he's really done for this time!

However, Xiao Wen Li wriggled out of his embrace. Raising her little icicle blades, she ruthlessly hacked at the terrifying demon's fingers.

In an instant, the terrifying demon's hand became frozen in ice.

Even the blazing Inferno near it got frozen and was completely extinguished.

“There’s still hope!” Yue Yang’s reactions completely exceeded his previous limitations. He forcefully concentrated his Qi again and prepared to unleash the strongest attack from the [Mysterious Three Styles], the ‘Supreme Sword Aim’. The Supreme Sword was unleashed yet again, stronger than his previous attack. It ruthlessly pierced into the terrifying demon’s hands that were steadily thawing.

The Sword Qi’s sharpness, which was without equal, didn’t let Yue Yang down.

The terrifying demon’s hands wanted to retreat, but under the unshakable trap of ice, its retreating speed was as slow as a snail’s crawl.

The Sword Qi overtook it in an instant, and with a “shhk”, it pierced right into the centre of the terrifying demon’s palm. A hole appeared on the back of this terrifying demon’s scaly hand.

At this moment, the portal immediately became smaller and smaller.

The terrifying demon’s hand that extended out from the portal didn’t even attempt to attack Yue Yang again, as it retreated quickly, withdrawing back into the portal.

Xiao Wen Li’s snake tail waved back and forth, looking extremely beautiful as it slithered around on the ground. She managed to chase after the terrifying demon’s hands. With a furious look, her small mouth let out a sharp hiss. Yue Yang could feel that she was

unleashing her Binding Chains with all of her strength...

If it was used ordinarily, the effect would not be very big.

After all, the binding duration was only for one second. But right now, it was extremely effective.

The terrifying demon's hand was firmly held fixed in its position by Xiao Wen Li's skill and was not able to move even a single inch. When the portal disappeared, the space was like a sharp blade, immediately chopping off the terrifying demon's arm. Yue Yang was extremely shocked by Xiao Wen Li's battle sense. She had not used her Binding Chains all this while, instead, waiting for the right moment when the portal was about to close, she inflicted serious damage onto the terrifying demon. Such a move was unthinkable for a small fry like Yue Yang.

“Dammit, annoying human Ranker, I'll remember you. We will definitely meet again, just wait and see...”

The portal disappeared along with the terrifying demon's frustrated howl echoing in the darkness.

If they had battled face to face, Yue Yang wouldn't have been able to win with his current power.

However, separated by two different worlds, the terrifying demon couldn't smoothly exit from the portal. It could only attack from a separate dimension. Furthermore, it had underestimated

Yue Yang. Finally, under Yue Yang's innate Sword Qi, Xiao Wen Li's extraordinary Binding Chains and her amazing battle sense, the terrifying demon had suffered a great loss. It had lost an arm... No wonder it was so furious.

Every single bit of Qi in Yue Yang's body was depleted as he weakly dropped to the ground.

He had managed to turn the battle around and win despite the danger.

The Bronze Grimoire that floated beside him silently turned into a bright shining light in the dark night. A white pillar of light suddenly shot out, shooting at least ten metres high into the sky.

Due to Yue Yang's victory in this battle, it had leveled up... ... Inside Yue Yang's mind, a huge wave of information appeared causing him to be indescribably pleasantly surprised. "You have defeated an enemy in a battle that was impossible to win, acquiring a miraculous victory. Hence, your battle experience has reached the full limit of your current level and your Bronze Grimoire has been raised to the Intermediate level. You have also received another blank page. Also, by the laws of the Ancient Code, a godly grace will be bestowed upon you. Your Guardian Beast 'Phantom Shadow' had gained a new ability..."

## Chapter 37 – Barbarian Cow Shadow

---

Yue Yang struggled to get up, forcing himself to stand as he was a little dizzy from exerting too much Qi energy. It felt as if he had no energy left in his body. Reaching out, he hugged the pale Xiao Wen Li who was swaying around on the ground. Her doe-eyes that were filled with exhaustion closed slowly as her six arms hugged Yue Yang back tightly. In the end, she turned into a ball of red light as she entered Yue Yang's body.

If she grew a little more, maybe fighting against the terrifying demon wouldn't be difficult, but she was still just a small kid right now.

Being capable of chopping off the terrifying demon's arms was the limit of Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li's abilities.

“Good girl, rest well.”

Yue Yang breathed a sigh of relief when he received the notification that Xiao Wen Li had gone to sleep.

Although Xiao Wen Li was his Guardian Beast and would never truly die, Yue Yang had unconsciously regarded this little lamia as his own 'daughter'. Yue Yang couldn't bear to see her get injured. Now that he knew she was okay and was only sleeping due to exhaustion, the heavy burden in his heart was finally lifted. Entering into the Copper Grimoire's red Halo Shield again, Yue Yang saw that the bright-eyed thief was still deep asleep. Due to the protection of the Halo Shield, she wasn't affected at all by the

intense battle just now.

There were several times where Yue Yang had thought of pulling down the bright-eyed thief's mask to see her face, but he gave it up in the end. There were some things in this world that would be more beautiful if left as a mystery. If you forcefully poked a hole in a paper door, you would lose something to look forward to in the future instead.

Yue Yang knew that the bright-eyed thief was a girl since the beginning, but he didn't know that she not only had a Silver Grimoire, she had also managed to become a Level 4 Champion. How much human capital and material resources would you need to raise such a girl? Yue Yang couldn't even imagine it. However, it was certain that she did not come from an ordinary family, and she was most definitely not a simple thief.

Disguising herself as a thief, maybe she had her own difficulties.

If she was really a little thief, then it would be okay for him to take a few liberties with her. But she was clearly someone from the Valley of Thousand Flowers and Butterflies. The Valley of Thousand Flowers and Butterflies had a complicated relationship with the Imperial family. If he wanted to make it out on his own, he couldn't afford to get involved in the fight between them and the royal family. Then he shouldn't get involved too deeply with this girl.

Yue Yang sighed slowly and recalled his Spitting Thorny Flower.



Opening his Copper Grimoire that had increased by a sub-rank, Yue Yang had only found out that he could only get experience by summoning the Copper Grimoire out too.

Like that time when he defeated Rock and Tie Kuang, he didn't even get a single experience point.

Now, a few lines of words appeared on his Grimoire page:

In the battle just now, you have used the ability of a Level 1 Apprentice to defeat a Level 3 Hero without incurring any losses. You have defeated all of your opponent's summon beasts. You have shown an extraordinary fighting talent in this battle. You have obtained the [Four Stars – Outstanding] evaluation and received 16 battle experience points.

In the same battle, you have also defeated a level 5 [Grandmaster]-Beginner. You have obtained [Five Stars – Perfection] evaluation and received 25 points.

You have successfully protected your battle partner's safety, thus receiving another 5 battle experience points.

In the end, in a battle that was impossible to win, you have successfully defeated and injured a level 8 Demon King. You have achieved a miraculous victory in this world. You have obtained [Seven Stars – Miraculous] evaluation and received another 49 battle experience points. Even while fighting amidst the destructive battle, you have, yet again, protected your partner. You have received 7 battle experience points. The Copper

Grimoire's battle experience has reached 102 points. Copper Grimoire will automatically rise to intermediate-rank from beginner-rank. The Ancient Law will now grant your beast a unique ability from the Gods...

Flipping to the next page, I saw that Phantom Shadow, my Guardian Beast, had really obtained a new skill, [Possession].

[Possession] – Phantom Shadow can take over any beast's body and possessed it like it's its own body. The target must not be of the same gender as the Phantom Shadow's master. Furthermore, during the implementation of [Possession] skill, the target must be alive. The success rate of implementing the [Possession] skill depends on the strength and willpower of the target.

“What the heck? Doesn't this [Possession] skill have too many limitations?” Yue Yang was slightly speechless.

With so many limitations and requirements, could it be a useless skill?

If Yue Yang could choose by himself, he would definitely ask for an additional ability for Xiao Wen Li. Although Phantom Shadow was not a bad Guardian Beast, it had its own limitations.

When the time limit was reached, after ten days, the shadow acquired through [Possession] would also disappear along with the Phantom Shadow. He would need to use [Possession] again on the same beast if he wanted to get its shadow. That required a lot of effort. It was already hard to fight a Beast, and now the beast must

be of female gender. Furthermore, [Possession] needed \*\*, it was not enough to simply kill it. This was too difficult.

Strong, alive and kicking beasts; Which of these beasts would stay silent watching its body being possessed by another?

It would definitely try to retaliate. Only one word could describe this [Possession] skill, 'difficult'.

Yue Yang felt that this ability was really useless...However, it was still better than nothing. Yue Yang forced himself to receive it.

“Mooo....moo...”

The Bronze Barbaric Bull that had cuts and bruises all over its body suddenly came out from amongst the pieces of the fallen Rock Golem. Forcing itself to get up, it struggled to stand straight. It was still alive even after such a heavy attack. Its tenacious vitality made Yue Yang extremely surprised.

A thought quickly passed through Yue Yang's mind. Looks like this Bronze Barbaric Bull was actually a Bronze Barbaric Cow. Could he possibly take over its body with [Possession]?

Observing closely, it was indeed a female cow.

“Excuse me, this female cow here, can I borrow your body?” Yue Yang walked to the front of the Bronze Barbaric Cow and asked in a courteous manner. The Bronze Barbaric Cow's reply was a nod of

its head in preparation to knock Yue Yang over. If it wasn't for the severe injury in its hind legs, it would have already charged forward and knocked over this shameless boy and trampled him to death.

The Phantom Shadow appeared from Yue Yang's body and opened its arms, immediately embracing the Bronze Barbaric Cow.

Immediately, the Bronze Barbaric Cow struggled and jumped around in pain, its huge body twisting and turning. It suddenly flew up midway into the air and then dropped heavily to the ground, causing a small earthquake on the ground. Following its fall, the Bronze Barbaric Cow howled miserably.

During the implementation of [Possession], Yue Yang couldn't help the process at all.

He could only watch the Phantom Shadow and the Bronze Barbaric Cow battling each other. He had no confidence whether this [Possession] would be successful or not...With regards to the end result, if the [Possession] was successful, he actually didn't really want the Bronze Barbaric Cow at all, but he wanted to experiment on this new skill. He wanted to determine if this [Possession] skill was indeed a useless skill or not, and how to implement it.

“Mooo, MOOOOO!”

Before long, blood suddenly burst out from each of the Bronze

Barbaric Cow's orifices. It looked extremely frightening.

As its will was slowly taken over by the Phantom Shadow's, its soul disappeared slowly. Finally, the Phantom Shadow had successfully taken over its body. The Bronze Barbaric Cow's enormous body transformed in an instant, as Yue Yang watched with his mouth agape, dumbstruck. The Bronze Barbaric Cow had turned into a 3 metre tall female giant. A spotted, weird looking cow leather armor covered her ample breasts. The previously thick cow's hooves had turned into a pair of human arms, but they were muscular and thick. With regards to the cow's hind legs, they almost didn't change at all as she stood up straight. The two horns, on the other hand, including the horns that had been broken by Yue Yang just now, re-appeared on top of the female giant's forehead. They twisted upwards, looking intimidating and savage.

The long cow's tail was also retained.

Looking at this beast that was 90% human and 10% cow, Yue Yang's chin almost dropped to the ground...This, this was the result of [Possession]?

"Avatar?" Yue Yang saw that the female giant looked very similar to the characters in the movie Avatar, but it was ten times more muscular than them. The Avatar giant had a slender and shapely waist, but this Barbarian Cow's waist was thick and shapeless as a bucket. Her body was eight-feet tall, but her waist was also eight-feet wide.

Flipping to the Copper Grimoire's second page, Yue Yang found that there was an extra unique-looking shadow amongst the other

## Phantom Shadows.

Barbarian Cow Shadow: humanoid-type beast, bronze-ranked level 3 half-entity. Guardian Beast with an obstinate character. Owned the skills [Trample] and [Doom's Eyes].

When Yue Yang saw this, his mouth opened so wide that a fist could be stuffed inside, "My goodness..."

## Chapter 38 – Beauty

---

Far in the distance, faint voices could be heard.

Yue Yang was unable to lament any further. He commanded the Barbaric Cow to pick up the demon's dismembered arm and quickly slipped away into the darkness. The Barbaric Cow carried the dismembered demon's arm that was still frozen in ice and followed after him with thudding footsteps. The moment he slipped away into the darkness, Yue Yang looked back again at the bright-eyed thief who was still peacefully lying unconscious on the ground.

A white figure streaked across the night faster than lightning, appearing on the battlefield.

It was a beautiful lady in imperial robes. The lady's snow-white face was lightly covered with a white muslin. The muslin had concealed the lady's features, but it couldn't hide her delicate, snow-white skin.

Those especially clear and luminous eyes were bright, brimming with intelligence. The long, curved eyelashes fluttered in a quick-witted manner would probably attract many people.

Seeing the bright-eyed thief lying motionless on the ground, she immediately cried out in shock, "How could something like this happen when I was gone for only a short while... Fortunately, she only overtaxed her mind... It is not a major problem!" The voices approaching from the darkness drew closer and countless footsteps

could be heard. The beautiful lady clad in palace clothing furrowed her elegant, black eyebrows and frowned. She extended her lily-white arms and waved her slim, snow-white fingers to summon a Gold Grimoire.

With a flash of golden light, an elf with butterfly wings flew outwards, fluttering into the beautiful person's fragrant body.

In an instant, a pair of enormous butterfly wings materialized on her back.

The beautiful lady gently lifted the unconscious bright eyed thief. With a flap of her wings, she danced into the air, looking like an immortal that had descended from the highest of the heavens as she flew away. After she had flown off into the distance, Yue Yang, who had been quietly hiding himself in the darkness with bated breath, gradually appeared. Hearing some messy footsteps approach, he turned around and chose to stride in the direction opposite the one that the beautiful person had gone towards. He left quickly, as agile as a fox, and blended into the darkness once more.

As soon as Yue Yang left, a middle-aged man that had a lion-like presence rushed to the battlefield with a burst of wind.

Seeing that the Merry Forest Pavilion had collapsed, burning merrily within the raging flames, he was so angered that he began to cry out loudly.

The battlefield was an utter mess.



A terrifying, deep gouge had left its mark on the ground, almost cleaving that 100m expanse of land in half. There were small, yet to be extinguished fires dotting the area and some Infernos still ablaze. Some corpses had already been burned into charcoal, while some still had remnants of skulls and ruined limbs. There were no signs of life at all; even the strongest guard, the Guard Leader, had taken his last breath.

The outrage in the powerful man's eyes was evident. He couldn't help but roar upwards at the heavens, "This makes me furious, too furious!"

A few warriors rushed over afterwards. When they saw the scene before them, they were so scared that they felt their legs go weak.

"What are you guys waiting for? Go search for any survivors! Look for any useful clues as well; I want to know exactly who did this immediately!" The man pulled out a thick, golden blade from his back, and began to wildly whack it around in anger, completely destroying the ground.

"Master Golden Blade, the circumstances here... .." A male that looked like a thief discovered some suspicious marks next to the Guard Leader.

(TLN: Master Golden Blade is the owner of the Merry Forest Pavilion)

"Xie Huo? Sixth King?" The angry middle-aged man discovered that before his Guard Leader had died, he had used his blood to

write these four words messily on the rock next to him. After some careful inspection, he was just able to discern the blood spelled out these exact four words. After the man called “Master Golden Blade” finished examining the words, his expression changed greatly. Rage that was difficult to suppress surged within him, as he clenched his fists and shouted, “I don’t care who it is, I must find this perpetrator and exact my complete revenge upon him!”

“There’s a spot unaffected by the battle here, most likely left by a protection circle from a grimoire. There’s probably a summoner warrior still alive....” Another subordinate declared.

“Find him. Offer a plentiful bounty. We, the Merry Forest, will spend all our efforts and resources to investigate the truth of this matter! I will definitely not allow any demon believer to move around Da Xia Empire as he pleases. I definitely cannot accept the type of scum that uses our own citizens as blood sacrifices!” Master Golden Blade nearly burst his lungs, roaring in anger incessantly.

Yue Yang’s courtyard.

The beautiful woman, accompanied by a few attendants, held the little girl, walked up and knocked on Yue Yang’s door and with a panic-stricken expression.

Without caring that Yue Yang was still in his sleepwear, she hurriedly rushed over and handed the little girl to him, “San-er, White Stone City is in chaos. Perhaps the Black Mountain Bandits have attacked the city. Uncle Nan has just returned after scouting the situation; apparently the Eastern part of the city has become a sea of fire. Hurry up and leave with Shuang Er! Quickly! Quickly!”

The little girl, Yue Shuang, was crying in fear, and had refused to leave her mother no matter what. When she saw Yue Yang, she jumped into his embrace and wailed in grievance, “Mommy hit me! Third Brother, I haven’t done anything wrong, but Mommy still hit me....it really hurts, wuaaaa!”

“Shuang Er is a good girl, don’t cry, don’t cry!”

Looking at the woman’s expression, Yue Yang could tell that she had misunderstood.

She definitely thought that the eastern part of White Stone City had been attacked by the Black Mountain Bandits. For the sake of protecting her precious daughter, she had rushed to meet Yue Yang so that he could bring the little girl out of the city and escape before the Black Mountain Bandits started wreaking havoc.

Si-niang was such a great mother!

She didn’t think of her own safety at all, completely engrossed in protecting her son and daughter!

Warmth surged from Yue Yang’s heart, flowing throughout his body. Eventually, it caused his throat to constrict and he was unable to speak.

After taking a deep breath to calm his emotions, Yue Yang lightly patted the little girl’s back and gave the woman a comforting smile, “Mother, don’t worry, there’s no need to fret about the

Black Mountain Bandits. Even if the Black Mountain Bandits really did slaughter their way here, I would definitely protect you and Shuang Er! Mother, believe me, there are no bandits. It was only the warriors from Merry Forest that broke out into a fight. I just surveyed the scene from the rooftop. Aside from a pretty intense fire that burned a few of the houses, nothing major happened!”

“The Black Mountain Bandits really aren’t coming?” Hearing this, the beautiful woman’s expression immediately relaxed, although she still looked doubtful.

“Definitely not. The Black Mountain Bandits are actually White Stone City’s private force. There’s no way they would come attack us!” Yue Yang patiently explained.

“I was so scared just now!” The beautiful woman’s burden seemed to have been completely dispelled, as she patted her chest, easing her lingering fear away. She was so scared that she needed at least this much time to slow down her thumping heartbeat. The servants behind her also started to shout in joy and relief when they heard Yue Yang say that it wasn’t the mountain bandits in such a resolute and unhesitating tone. A disaster had disappeared suddenly, everyone was extremely happy.

In the Da Xia Kingdom, there were many mountains and dangerous lands. The Black Mountain Bandits had turned the Huang Ye Mountain to their fortress and plundered the nearby villages.

As the nation was still too weak, some places were not governed properly. With the addition of outside support and spy activities, a

few mayors or governors of some places had colluded with bandits. Hence although the Black Mountain Bandits was notorious and the Kingdom tried to destroy them again and again, they had grown even more savage through the years. Other than the cities that had city walls to protect themselves, normal villages had to pay taxes to the bandits in order to survive. If they didn't, it wasn't strange if the entire village was massacred. Normally, infamous and exceptionally powerful bandit groups would successfully take over some random small-scale towns and occupy it for around 1-2 months. Only when the empire's army rushed over would they relinquish their control and run away.

A town besieged by the Black Mountain Bandits would typically be destroyed. The usual practice was to massacre everyone in the city for one day, and use them for pleasure for the next three days.

The ugly-looking villagers would be publicly executed, while the beautiful looking young girls would either be raped or sold as prostitutes.

Hence, all girls from renowned families would have a Chastity Pill. The moment they fell into a hopeless situation, in order to protect their chastity, they would consume the Chastity Pill. They would rather end their lives with poison than be tarnished by those bandits.

Inside the small pouch that the beautiful woman carried, there was also a Chastity pill, which was small emerald green in colour. Yue Yang was afraid that she would try to commit suicide, hence he quickly tried to dispel the rumour of the Black Mountain Bandits raiding the village.

After Yue Yang's numerous attempts to reassure her, the beautiful woman finally calmed down a little.

The beautiful woman carried the little girl who had cried herself to sleep and sat inside Yue Yang's room throughout the night, until the old servant, Uncle Nan, who had gone out multiple times to ask about the situation, confirmed that the Black Mountain Bandits were not going to raid the town. When it was almost daybreak, she finally went back to her own residence to sleep. After such a scare, the beautiful woman was unable to sleep peacefully for several days. She was even panicky during the day, afraid that the Black Mountain Bandits would come to hurt them.

Although she didn't say it out loud, Yue Yang could see it with one glance. Si Niang had probably experienced a traumatic accident before.

When Yue Yang saw her beautiful face that was wasting away, he inwardly made up his mind.

The next day, the old servant Uncle Nan came to report with great delight, "Madame, young master, there is an extremely joyous news! The Black Mountain Bandits from the Black Mountain had angered a Ranker and were decimated in just one night. The whole group was annihilated..."

As expected, the beautiful woman's anxiety didn't require any medicine to fix. Her snow white face recovered its original smile.

White Stone City's leader was naturally furious. However, his pent up, bitter grievances remained unspoken, and he couldn't find the specific criminal to enact revenge on.

If Yue Bing was still practicing summoning techniques with Yue Yang at home, she would've discovered that Yue Yang's Thorny Flower had already become a Silver ranked 'Devil Mask Spitting Thorny Flower'.

Although the Black Mountain Bandits didn't have any extraordinary warriors, they were superior in numbers. After the Spitting Thorny Flower devoured 100 people in succession, it had smoothly left the Bronze rank and evolved into the Silver rank. The only thing Yue Yang felt was disappointing was that there wasn't a single Level 3 Hero among the Black Mountain Bandits. Otherwise, the current Thorny Spitting Flower could probably have easily advanced to a Gold Thorny Flower.

After devouring 100 people, the Thorny Flower wasn't far from reaching Gold rank.

Yue Yang trained every day, and the days gradually returned to their previous peaceful state.

Another three days had passed. The beautiful woman was carrying the little girl, happily entering the small courtyard where Yue Yang was practicing. She waved a letter in her hand and chirped, "San-er, Bing-er sent a letter! I've been worried that the matter at Merry Forest would interfere with letters. I hadn't imagined that we'd be able to receive a reply from Bing Er so early!"

She excitedly opened the snow-white letter to read it.

What nobody could've imagined was that as soon as she read the letter, her smile immediately vanished, replaced with concern.

“What’s wrong? Did something happen to Seventh Sister?” Yue Yang was alarmed; could it be that Yue Bing had encountered danger even when she had been practicing on the first floor of Tong Tian Tower? He hurriedly put down the spoilt little girl bouncing around in his arms and said, “Si-niang, should I go and fetch Bing Er back?”



## Chapter 39 – Born To Be Smacked Around?

---

Yue Bing's letter was vague, only stating that she had been kicked out of her team and now had to finish the training on her own.

That she was being vague about this matter clearly showed that this might have something to do with the Second Branch's Fourth Son, Yue Yan.

From the letter, one could see that the young lady Yue Bing felt that she had been wronged and was angry. The Fourth Brother, though he was from the same clan as her, not only had he not helped her, instead he had sowed discord, stirred up the flames and then rubbed salt into the wound. In the end, she had been forced to redo the training from scratch alone, because she had been kicked out of the team despite almost completing it earlier. In her letter, the young lady Yue Bing even kind-heartedly reminded the beautiful woman not to tell Third Brother about this matter, in order to ensure that he did not worry for her. However, after the matter with the Black Mountain Bandits, the beautiful woman already treated her son Yue Yang as the pillar of the family. If there was a problem, of course she would not keep it from him.

“Si-Niang, I will go fetch Younger Sister Bing-Er home. Although I only recently contracted the Grimoire, I should be able to give Younger Sister Bing-Er some help.

The beautiful woman did not doubt Yue Yang's words at all. His recent actions had comforted her so much that she felt that this son had grown up and was already a man who could take charge of himself.

That night, she had thought that the Black Mountain Bandits were going to attack the City and in her heart she had panicked. However, he had said he would use all his strength to protect his family and listening to those words moved her a lot and gave her comfort.

Her Third Son had finally grown up.

She agreed to Yue Yang's request to go and fetch Yue Bing. However, she rejected his request and idea to first escort her back to the Yue Clan Castle.

Although the beautiful woman had a kind-hearted character and was accustomed to resigning herself to adversity, she still had self-respect even if she did not voice it out. When the clan felt that her husband had no future, they had forced them out of the clan by moving the Fourth Branch out of the Yue Clan Castle to the Misty Cloud Mountain. Further, they caused her husband to idle away as a minor government official, adding multiple blows to her heart. Residing in White Stone City was in no way peaceful and safe, but even so, no matter how well fortified the Yue Clan Castle was, if it weren't the Clan Elder asking her to return to the Yue Clan Castle personally, she would definitely not move back voluntarily to the kind of family that swept her out like dust on the floor.

Her husband was a filial son and she did not oppose his working all-year-round for the Yue Clan, even when it made him extremely busy and kept him away from his wife and children.

However, in her heart she held a resolution that she would strive to keep improving and would definitely not be a person that only had to endure the First and Second Branch's moods.

San Er's contract with the Grimoire was her biggest wish for the last 15 years. Now that this wish was fulfilled, she had no other demands and was even less inclined to return to the Yue Clan Castle to suffer her family's cold words and sarcastic comments.

To the beautiful woman, as long as her son improved and her daughter was a good girl, that was more important than anything else.

"Si Niang, after I meet Younger Sister Bing Er, I'll bring her back straight away. While I'm away, you and Younger Sister Shuang Er must take care and stay safe. These days, the White Stone City is in a bit of disorder and it's best not to go out much." Yue Yang warned repeatedly, but the beautiful woman normally did not go out much anyway. There were also a few loyal and devoted servants to look after them, so there would be no problems. The most important thing was that although Yue Ling was a minor government official with no real power, for good or worse he was still a child of the Yue Clan. So, even the more audacious mercenaries and robbers would not dare to come up to this kind of family and stirred up trouble. The Four Great Clans' reputation was displayed here and it was a good deterrent.

"I understand. San Er, you must also be careful." Hearing those words, the beautiful woman's heart was sweet, as if it had drunk honey.

It was inconceivable, that this reticent son showed so much concern for her. He had really grown up and compared to before, he was a lot more thoughtful.

After sending Yue Yang on his journey, the beautiful woman suddenly realised something... It seemed that San Er was already over the Xue Clan's Young Mistress rejecting his offer of marriage. Now that he had gotten out of that painful situation, perhaps she should help him find another potential marriage partner?

Yue Yang did not immediately head over to the Lord of White Stone City's residence to ask for escort troops. This was not to save on paying gold coin for escort services, but rather, to keep his secret.

As far as possible, he did not wish to meet any Rankers from White Stone City.

Right now, Master Golden Blade and the Lord of White Stone City were working together to investigate the truth of the events that caused Merry Forest to go up in flames. The Empire had also sent special investigators and Yue Yang did not want for his identity to be seen through by others, bringing those people's anger upon himself. Moreover, he had previously buried the Demon King Ha Xin's arm in a hidden mountain ridge on Black Mountain, but then he had decided to take it away. After the remnants of ice had completely melted, the arm was constantly dripping blood, and with each drip, it corroded a large piece of the ground causing even rocks to catch fire.

So now, in the daytime, Yue Yang buried it deep in the ground

and at night he dug it out to disperse the filthy impurities in the demon blood using Innate Qi.

The Level 8 Demon King Ha Xin's arm was more suitable for evolving his Thorny Flower than living human bodies. This would be a great supplement for the Thorny Flower. If it swallowed the arm, advancing would definitely not be a problem, but Yue Yang was reluctant to just let the Thorny Flower devour it all right now.

Yue Yang hoped that after raising the Thorny Flower to Gold Rank, by borrowing the power of this Demon King Ha Xin's arm, he could evolve it into a humanlike 'Thorny Flower Demoness'.

Only at that time, would devouring this Demon King Ha Xin's arm give the largest benefit.

Although the time he set off on his journey was pushed back by 2 days, Yue Yang still rushed to where he had hidden the Demon King's arm, heading towards the two cities Red Forest and Black Rock. Along the way, he got rid of 6 revenge-driven Level 3 Heroes and 50 plus bandits that were chasing him by letting them become the Thorny Flower's fertilizer. After devouring more than 200 human bodies, the originally incomparably small and weak Spitting Thorny Flower finally reached Gold Rank.

The current Thorny Flower had a stalk that was thicker than a person's leg, was 5m tall and was entirely covered with thorns.

The former crown had also slowly become a giant human head with indistinct facial features and instead of having eyes, it had

large spots similar to human eyes.

Its gaping maw had teeth as sharp as daggers. Now, when it devoured a person, it could gulp it down in 10 seconds, and within 2 minutes, it would be completely digested. That thick stalk was just like a bottomless abyss, no matter how many people it devoured, it still had effortless freedom of action.

After evolving into a Gold Rank Level One, the Devil Mask Spitting Thorny Flower became a 'Magic Eye Spitting Thorny Flower'.

From now onwards, the Thorny Flower began to have some instincts of an animal's.

For example it was now able to sense motion. Of course it had no eyes, it was not looking at things directly. Instead it was akin to that of snakes or spiders, using its tongue to sense heat energy, using cilia to sense the movement in the air, yet the results were similar to that of having eyes, a wonderful way of reaching a goal using different methods... .. The most important thing was that the Gold-ranked Thorny Flower began to have the most basic sentience. Although it had no capability of thinking, it could carry out the commands Yue Yang gave it through telepathy, even through long distances.

Gold Rank Level One Magic Eye Spitting Thorny Flower. Although it was still Level One, its strength was at least 10 times stronger than when it was still a Silver Rank.

Moreover, even the weakest Gold-ranked Beast were equal to a normal level 4 beast.. Yue Yang felt that his own Thorny Flower, having been raised using living people, in battle, would be stronger than normal Level 4 beasts.

“As long as you can successfully become a Thorny Flower Demoness, I will give you a name.”

In his heart, Yue Yang actually held a sense of accomplishment.

Raising a Gold Rank Thorny Flower from a small and weak Spitting Thorny Flower, this, was completely the result of his own hard work.

He really did not know what it would become when it finally evolved into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen... .. The only thing Yue Yang was sure of, was that when a Thorny Flower evolved, it always evolved into a female, there were no males. Perhaps, in the world of Thorny Flowers where they propagated by splitting themselves, there were no such thing as males.

Just a bit more, and the Gold Rank Thorny Flower would be able to evolve into a Thorny Flower Demoness.

Yue Yang was very excited, and slipped into the Black Mountain like a wisp.

However, the scene he saw when he reached the ridge where he had buried Demon King Ha Xin's arm made him extremely agitated

and angry.

The buried Demon King Ha Xin's arm had been dug out, that gigantic demon arm was exposed to the air, and at the bottom of the mud pit, there was a Iron-clawed Wolf twitching in pain.

Perhaps this Iron-clawed Wolf, after smelling the odor of the demon, for some reason or another, instead of running away like other beasts, decided to become a thief instead. However, the Demon King's arm was not something it could covet, before it even ate the flesh, it already almost lost its small life in this place. Yue Yang was so angry that he grabbed the Iron-clawed Wolf out of the mud pit it had dug, giving it a painful beating.

He was not worried about it stealing and eating the Demon King's flesh since it wasn't something the wolf could eat.

Furthermore, once it touched the Demon King's blood, its entire mouth would have been burnt to a crisp by the demon flames.

What made Yue Yang angry was that his actions could possibly harm others. After digging out the Demon King's arm, what if someone saw it... ..

Fortunately this was a wild and mountainous area, no one would come here. If they did, the Demon King's arm that he had suffered so much to get would have become someone else's collector's item, making him waste his efforts. Maybe, this could even stir up an ambush. He could be surrounded or fall into Master Golden Blades and Lord of White Stone City's ambush the moment he stepped



down from the mountain.

“You dare try to steal my treasure? You think that since you look like that pitiable [Hui Tai Lang](#), I will forgive you?” Yue Yang beat up the Iron-clawed Wolf.

However, there was something that felt strange, this wolf was really strange. Why was it that the more he beat it up, the more comfortable its expression was?

Could it be that it was the same as Hui Tai Lang, born to be smacked around?

## Chapter 40 – Hui Tai Lang

---

Yue Yang violently beat up the Iron-clawed Wolf until it was vomiting blood, heaving his breath. He realized that it had an extremely tough endurance; not only was it still alive, but it also appeared to be completely enjoying the beating. It looked like a perverted wolf that naturally deserved to be beaten up. Yue Yang couldn't help but be confused after a while.

He stopped and bent over to investigate the reason.

After probing around with his Innate Qi, Yuen Yang finally realized that this Iron-clawed Wolf's body was not normal.

A normal Iron-clawed Wolf was a beast with the Earth attribute. However, this one wasn't; it had a strange body that contained the Fire, Metal, and Darkness attributes.

In theory, biologically, a low-leveled beast with multiple attributes or conflicting attributes did not exist. If they had more than two attributes, they should have been an advanced level "variant", for example, a Fire Ice Chimera. However, the Fire Ice Chimera would need to be at least level 8 bronze-ranked. Compared to a level 2 Iron-clawed Wolf, the Chimera was an existence that couldn't be reached. Still, this ordinary level 2 Iron-clawed Wolf had three different attributes in its body, this was extremely weird.

Yue Yang realized that because this weird Iron-clawed Wolf had Fire and Darkness attribute, it had some level of resistance against

the demonic energy flowing from the demon's arm.

As it had the Metal attribute, its body was strong enough to withstand beatings, like a wolf-cockroach that would never die.

Of course, the reason that Yue Yang's beatings felt comfortable was not because of its resistance, but because Yue Yang's attacks carried a little bit of Innate Qi with them. The Iron-clawed Wolf that had come here to absorb the demonic energy and drink the demon's blood, was tortured in an extremely painful way by the Demon Lord Ha Xin's vicious demonic energy. By lucky coincidence, Yue Yang's beatings could alleviate some of its pain. The more Yue Yang beat it, the more the demonic energy in its body was purified, that was why the Iron-clawed Wolf felt more comfortable with each beating... The worst thing was that although Yue Yang's heavy attacks had broken most of the Iron-clawed Wolf's internal organs and bones to pieces, the demonic energy that it had absorbed restored its body bit by bit, transforming into its flesh and blood. Its body had almost burst out from all the pent up demonic energy that couldn't be channelled out, but that demonic energy turned into an advantage for it as Yue Yang continued his beatings.

It could be said that Yue Yang's attacks was more like a process of renewing the Iron-clawed Wolf's body.

His beatings turned out to be a helping hand for the Iron-clawed Wolf to be born anew.

Yue Yang immediately found out about this problem when he observed, and was angry beyond words. He carried a big rock over,

preparing to smash the Iron-clawed Wolf to death alive. He wanted to let the wolf know the taste of being crushed to death.

“Wuwuuwu....”

A flash of fear and misery appeared in the Iron-clawed Wolf's eyes. Yue Yang felt a jolt in his heart seeing the wolf's gaze.

This wolf had been abandoned by its pack and had travelled the world alone. It was a little bit similar to his circumstances; it had no one to lean on. He was just a little bit more fortunate than the wolf, having the beautiful woman, the little girl and the others at his side. After transcending across dimensions and taking over the pitiful guy's identity, he had received all that the pitiful guy had. The beautiful woman treated him like he was her own son. Although he wasn't her true San-er, but in reality, he had received the beautiful woman's and her family's love for the pitiful guy.

Crushing this Iron-clawed Wolf to death with a rock didn't bring him any advantage at all.

Why not use it for experiments?

If he could use the demon's blood and demonic energy to transform a beast's \*\* strength, then couldn't he use the same principles to raise a stronger beast?

Yue Yang threw the big rock in his hands and calmly thought for a while. He then dug out Demon Lord Ha Xin's arm and poured out

all the demonic energy from the arm and into the Iron-clawed Wolf's body. This process was so much easier than absorbing the demonic energy through the air. Firstly, it was because it transmitted more easily through physical contact. Secondly, it was because Demon Lord Ha Xin's vicious demonic energy would be attracted to living flesh. The living Iron-clawed Wolf was the demonic energy's ideal vessel. With a push of Yue Yang's Innate Qi, the demonic energy immediately flew towards the Iron-clawed Wolf's body. Thirdly, the Iron-clawed Wolf was injured all over, hence its body required energy to recover. Although the energy was demonic, it was still energy that would help it to recover.

Demon Lord Ha Xin's arm's power was enormous, but it was unclean. Amongst the different parts of the arms, the demonic energy was not something that the thorny flower needed.

But the thorny flower could absorb the demon arm's powerful demonic abilities, for example the Inferno and the Black Blood abilities. All these skills would be good traits for its transformation into a humanoid beast, especially the Black Blood skill. It would be a great advantage to create a perfect humanoid beast.

However, the demonic energy on the other hand, would turn beasts ugly and frightening.

Yue Yang didn't want the thorny flower demoness, that he painstakingly had raised, become an ugly beast in the end, hence he most definitely didn't want it to absorb the demonic energy.

The Iron-clawed Wolf's stomach turned big and round like a ball, looking as if it could explode at any time. Its body had also swollen

all over, its eyes were popping out of its sockets, its body filled to the brim with demonic energy. It almost looked like a “Wolfball”.

It was probably feeling pain indescribable in words, but Yue Yang didn't care about it at all.

He pushed all the demonic energy on the Iron-clawed Wolf's body then shoved the Demon Lord Ha Xin's arms into the thorny flower's enormous mouth.

The gold-ranked thorny flower didn't swallow the arm in one gulp like previous times. Instead, it sucked the arm in its mouth, slowly chewing and swallowing it, digesting it really slowly. Yue Yang thought that it probably wouldn't be able to immediately digest the arm if it swallowed it whole. The thorny flower would probably explode with a loud “boom”, its body torn to pieces, if it tried swallowing it whole. Yue Yang was afraid that the thorny flower would explode, hence he channeled Innate Qi into it from time to time, aiding it in its digestion process.

Even after all of that, the gold-ranked thorny flower's stalk kept igniting in an Inferno, causing such extreme pain to the thorny flower that its stalk kept swaying and trembling all over.

On the other hand, Yue Yang didn't care about the Iron-clawed Wolf that was almost as round as a ball at his feet.

This was only an experiment after all, it didn't matter if the Iron-clawed Wolf died.

If the thorny flower's digestion was progressing smoothly and Yue Yang was happy, he would give the Iron-clawed Wolf a savage kick. In any case, his beating was an extremely good thing for the Iron-clawed Wolf, that it desperately sought. However, the thorny flower's digestion did not always go well. Yue Yang was not happy to see that at times, it would vomit a portion of the arm that it had swallowed back out, not being able to endure the digestion process, needing his help to channel Innate Qi to help it digest. When Yue Yang was not happy, he would also kick the Iron-clawed Wolf at his feet to ease the anger in his heart. In any case, his treatment towards the thorny flower and the Iron-clawed Wolf was like heaven and earth. One was blessed with Innate Qi and treated with great care, while the other received endless beating and curses.

The process lasted for one whole day before the gold-ranked thorny flower was able to swallow Demon Lord Ha Xin's arms completely.

Of course, this was only the first step to its digestion process. Yue Yang thought that it would need at least two months for the gold-ranked thorny flower to completely digest the Demon Lord Ha Xin's arm. With regards to its beautiful evolution to a humanoid "Thorny Flower Demoness", it would probably take at least another three months.

In comparison, the Iron-clawed Wolf's transformation was much faster.

Right now, although Yue Yang had flattened the Iron-clawed Wolf eight times with his stomps, cracked its skull three times, broken its neck twice, pounded its back five times and fractured its

legs nine times, it had almost recovered fully. If Yue Yang had not seen it for himself, he would not believe that this Iron-clawed Wolf that he had beaten to death countless of times, until its internal organs were all crushed to the point it kept vomiting blood, could still stay alive.

Not only was the Iron-clawed Wolf fully recovered, it had also undergone a transformation.

In just one day, it transformed from an ordinary level 2 Iron-clawed Wolf into a bronze-ranked level 3 Ironback Demonic Wolf.

Such evolution speed was probably the first and most miraculous one amongst the wolf race's history. The bronze-ranked level 3 Ironback Demonic Wolf's power was almost equivalent to the level 4 Iron-clawed Wolf King.

Beasts such as wolves, had the attribute of "bronze head, iron legs and tofu waist", if their weakest part "tofu waist" could evolve into "iron waist", their fighting capabilities would increase by at least ten times. Furthermore, this wolf had evolved with the help of the Demon Lord's demonic energy. Its fighting capabilities had increased almost hundred-folds, hence it should even be able to fight against a level 4 Iron-clawed Wolf King easily.

Yue Yang realized that this wolf-cockroach that deserved to be beaten still had evolving potential.

The most important thing was the demonic energy in its body had not been completely consumed yet. The demonic energy that



had entered its body, was not displaying its full strength yet. Soon this wolf-cockroach, that couldn't be killed even after so many beatings, would probably rise to a bronze-ranked level 4 beast, or even bronze-rank level 5.

After observing it closely, Yue Yang realize that his Innate Qi had actually played a miraculous part on the wolf's evolution.

Without his Innate Qi, this wolf-cockroach would probably have exploded and died.

Furthermore, the demonic energy wouldn't fuse with its body that easily. Kicking the wolf with his Innate Qi was equivalent to transforming it from the inside, helping it to be reborn anew. Otherwise, it was just an ordinary Iron-clawed Wolf, no matter how powerful it was, it wouldn't be able to digest the Demon Lord Ha Xin's demonic energy on its own..Yue Yang suddenly felt that this wolf-cockroach that refused to die was similar to him in a few aspects.

Although it was slightly unlucky, it was extremely fortunate with most things.

The only difference was, he didn't need to be beaten to be successful, but it needed to be beaten savagely in order to improve slowly.

After the gold-ranked thorny flower completely swallowed the Demon Lord's arm, Yue Yang quickly put it back inside his grimoire, allowing it to slowly digest the arm inside, evolving into

the beautiful Thorny Flower Demoness slowly. Now that the thorny flower was in a safe place, he didn't need to worry about it anymore.

Currently, the most important thing was to go to Tong Tian Tower as soon as possible and bring Yue Bing back home safely, giving the beautiful woman peace of mind.

Yue Yang took a step forward, but then realized that the Ironback Demonic Wolf that didn't die after being beaten so much was following him. Yue Yang violently gave him a flying kick, kicking him far into the distance with a loud "boom". But it desperately crawled back up and eagerly followed behind him, totally not caring about Yue Yang's bad temper.

Furthermore, it knew how to suck up to Yue Yang. It usually followed Yue Yang without doing anything, but when it was time to eat, it would catch some small wild animals like rabbits and gave it to Yue Yang as an offering. But although Yue Yang roasted the rabbits it brought back, his attitude towards it did not change at all. The reason was simple. Similar things repel each other. The wolf was male and had a face that begged to be pummeled, so Yue Yang couldn't develop a good feeling towards it.

The wolf stuck to Yue Yang for two days and two nights. After trying every method he could think of, Yue Yang still couldn't drive the wolf-cockroach away, hence he could only let it follow him along. In the end, he still showed it his graciousness and gave it a name: Hui Tai Lang.

With regards to contract, Yue Yang would never contract this

male Ironback Demonic Wolf.

It was only after arriving at the White Cloud City's residence escorting troops, that Yue Yang realized that he had to pay an extra fee for uncontracted beasts. His anger peaked as he gave a mighty kick on the wolf, "Hui Tai Lang you bitch! I didn't want you to come but you obstinately followed me along, now you are wasting my money for nothing!"

The official who was in charge of escorting almost cried seeing this, "Don't hit , don't hit it any more...This is a level 3 bronze-ranked Ironback Demonic Wolf. I had been stationed here for so many years but it was the first time I have seen such a docile bronze-ranked beast...Beating it like that makes my heart ache for it. If you really can't, I can help you pay for it, will that be okay?"

# Chapter 41 – Mysterious, Ferocious Beauty

---

Originally, Yue Yang had thought that he would teleport directly to Tong Tian Tower. However, he found out that this was not the case when he reached the location of the teleportation gate.

All warriors that wanted to teleport to Tong Tian Tower had to go to Shang Wu Camp first to rest up and register themselves. They would then have their strength tested and their beasts examined. Those who were ill or those without sufficient strength would be rejected from entering Tong Tian Tower. Of course, the main reason for doing so was to prevent demon worshippers like Xie Huo from causing trouble in Tong Tian Tower. All these things were to be thoroughly inspected while the warriors rested in Shang Wu Camp...

At first, Yue Yang was a little worried that the secret of him being an Innate Ranker would be discovered. However, looking at the process of inspection, his worries were quickly dispelled.

This inspection was much more advanced than the airport security checks on Earth. Just by standing in a circle of light, the ill, weaklings and demon worshippers were instantly revealed.

It was simple, quick and accurate!

“Little thief, what is your name?”, The voluptuous beauty in charge of registration asked with a slightly absent-minded look on her face when it was Yue Yang’s turn to register himself.

“Titan.” Yue Yang silently swallowed his saliva.

The legendary eye-popping G-cup!

This was definitely a rarity. This beauty in front of him was even more so. Was the gravity in Soaring Dragon Continent especially weak? Yue Yang even doubted whether gravity had no effect on the huge breasts of this beauty. Her bosom seemed to be defying gravity since it was really shapely and perky.

If this beauty wore loose clothes, that would have been even better.

Just the sight of her wearing a hot, tight-fitted corset, paired with her small, white, round shoulders, which caused her breasts to look even bigger, ranking her in the killer zone of breasts.

Mayhap she was already used to seeing the lustful eyes of others as the beauty did not mind Yue Yang’s loutish reaction.

“Titan? Why aren’t you called Dragon or Behemoth? I think it’s most fitting to call you ‘Chui Niu’<sup>1</sup>!” When the big-breasted beauty at the desk heard his name, she started to laugh without any restraint. Unlike the bright-eyed thief, it looked like the big-breasted beauty knew about the overwhelmingly strong giant Titan.

(TL Note: 1.吹牛 – Chui Niu, also means braggart.)

“I do have a nickname called Older Brother Ah Niu, how did you know that?” Yue Yang’s skin was thicker than even the city walls and did not turn red at all.

“Are you here on any business, going alone to Tong Tiang Tower?” If someone else had inquired, he might have answered ‘none of your business’, but the beauty’s voice was tender and especially sultry. This caused people to easily daydream and fantasize about certain things. Yue Yang silently swallowed his saliva again.

“Since I hail from the countryside, I’ve never seen the world before. After hearing from the elder’s son that Tong Tian Tower has many beautiful women , I decided to find a wife here. So I saved up some money and came here.” The sun would rise in the west if Yue Yang ever spoke truthfully.

“A country man bringing about a bronze-ranked Demon Wolf? Eh, it’s not contracted?” The beauty finally raised her flirtatious eyes and glanced at Yue Yang.

“This is the watchdog of my house!” Yue Yang threw Hui Tai Lang a flying kick.

“Wauu!” Hui Tai Lang coordinated with him by mimicking a dog barking. However, its foreign language skill was not past Level 6 and it barked like a wolf instead. This made Yue Yang feel very dissatisfied.

The beauty extended her lily-white hand and lightly waved her

crystal staff in front of the wolf.

Yue Yang discovered that there were three sparkling, pale cyan marked scales on the crystal staff. Below them, there was the golden insignia of a wolf's head. He didn't understand what its significance was, however the beauty nodded and commended, "Although being Level 3 Bronze is a bit low, it has potential. In addition, it is both obedient and sensitive. If you raise it well, then it'll be passable, it barely ranks as 6 stars!"

When the warrior behind Yue Yang heard that the wolf's ranking was six stars, his jaw immediately dropped.

Many more people immediately shifted their gazes hungrily to the enticing woman with a type of feverish desire like a bunch of misers who had just discovered a hidden treasure!

Yue Yang had heard Yue Bing mention the Beasts' Star Ranking before, but Yue Bing had only known that the divisions were split into 10 stars. She didn't know the exact division of strength and so Yue Yang definitely didn't understand it too, since the Summoning Grimoire didn't contain such knowledge.

When he heard the beauty mentioned it, Yue Yang couldn't help but ask out of curiosity, "How is the Beast's Star Ranking divided?"

"You really are a country bumpkin, aren't you? You don't even know this?" The beauty laughed as prettily and flirtatiously as a flower, as if her laughter could steal a soul with ecstasy, "A Beast's Star Ranking Division is rated by its overall strength. A typical

warrior places more importance on a beast's species, rank and unique traits. However, these traits do not score a lot of marks. Instead, sentience, potential and how close it is to a humanoid shape are the important traits which score marks. It can also be divided like this: Out of ten stars, anything below 3 is trash, 3-4 stars is an unskilled beast, 5-6 stars isn't too bad. If you simply want to test your luck in Tong Tian Tower and try to marry a woman before heading home, this beast is sufficient. If you want to make a name and earn a profit, then you must at least have a 7 star beast. If you gain an 8 star beast, then congratulations! All the kings from various countries will be trying to marry their daughters to you. Finding a wife would be easy and even obtaining a harem wouldn't be a problem!"

"Then what about 9-10 stars?" Yue Yang's heart began to race.

Exactly how many stars did the Barbaric Cow Shadow, Golden Thorny Flower, and Xiao Wen Li rank as? Especially Xiao Wen Li, who was just a newborn, yet still had superior combat ability, intelligence, potential, and humanoid form. She even had a Diamond Grimoire. She had to be at least 8 stars or above, right?

The Golden Thorny Flower obviously wasn't very strong now, but once it transformed into the Thorny Flower Demoness, its strength should greatly increase.

The most important thing was that after its final transformation to the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, its ranking definitely wouldn't be low!

As for the Phantom Shadow, Yue Yang felt that it too had much



room for growth. Right now, it already contained the Barbaric Cow's Shadow, but that wouldn't be the only one. In the future, it would definitely seize many other life forms. In that case, could it also obtain a demon's, angel's, and a dragon's shadows?

Thinking of this, Yue Yang's heart began to fantasize and he was extremely happy.

Hui Tai Lang was his weakest beast, but it was already 6 stars. It looked like his future would be bright. Based on the big-breasted beauty's words, even building a harem wouldn't be an issue!

"9 stars are Holy Beasts, and 10 stars are Mythical Beasts.....it's said that there are even beasts that transcend Mythical Beasts, but these haven't been seen in the Soaring Dragon Continent for thousands of years. Therefore, they aren't included in the star rankings. Of course, this standard is set by the rankers of Soaring Dragon Continent. There are a select few beasts that have some irrational rankings, but the majority of the beast have quite accurate rankings." The big breasted beauty once again shot an alluring glance at Yue Yang.

"Thank you. If I manage to marry a good woman, then I will definitely invite you to drink at the wedding feast with me!" Yue Yang discovered that he couldn't stay with this big-breasted beauty for long. She didn't seem normal and he definitely couldn't allow her to see through him and discover his actual strength.

"Even young ones these days don't learn properly. You're so flippant and insincere!" The beauty criticized Yue Yang in an experienced tone.

That adorable supercilious look as well as that magnificent and unique pouting expression instantly killed the entire room of people.

Yue Yang's heart rate immediately jumped by a 100 times.

The beauty handed Yue Yang an exquisite Crystal Card and said, "Young country bumpkin, you're so foolish. You don't even have someone to give you a referral, yet you want to adventure through it? Forget about it, I'll just refer you into Tong Tian Tower then. From now on, you need to present at least one Wisdom Fruit per year to me. Got it?"

The entire roomful of warriors looked at that Crystal Card in Yue Yang's hand, completely petrified.

Although Yue Yang didn't know what this Crystal Card represented, the warriors knew.

This was the proof that allowed one to enter Tong Tian Tower. The proof was divided into different types: Bronze, Silver, Gold, Crystal, and Diamond. The Bronze Card was the basic proof that allowed ordinary warriors to enter the first floor of Tong Tian Tower. If a warrior completed 100 tasks in the first floor or if he passed 10 Refinings and successfully entered the second floor of Tong Tian Tower, he could upgrade to a Silver Card. The Gold Card was more difficult to obtain. One needed to enter Tong Tian Tower's third floor and moreover, one needed to be above the Hero rank. The most important requirement to upgrade to a Gold

Card was to contribute 1000 meritorious deeds for the country. Even one less won't do!

Just now, the beauty had casually handed this little thief a Crystal Card, and it even had no requirements he had to fulfill! This really drove people crazy with jealousy.

The Crystal Card was said to only be given to important ministers of countries, celebrities, Grandmaster warriors, or super geniuses with unlimited potential. Could it be that this youngster was a super genius?

Yue Yang didn't give them a chance to guess any further. He waved his hand to blow a kiss to the big breasted beauty, walking away naturally and unrestrainedly.

The voluptuous beauty looked at the back of his retreating figure and laughed, "I was unexpectedly unable to see through this young country bumpkin's strength. This is really strange... how interesting!"

"Big-breasted lady, I also want a Crystal Card. That pretty boy only had an attractive outer appearance, good looking but really just useless. Only my wanger has enough strength to guarantee your satisfaction!" A tall, heavy man overflowing with bulging muscles smiled as he approached the woman.

"Servants, drag him out to beat him up until he becomes a vegetable. If he dies from the beating, then throw him outside and feed him to the wild dogs!" A guardian angel with six blood-red

wings materialized behind the beauty. The guardian angel struck out with its palm, causing the heavy man to fly outwards. ‘Bang’, he crashed through a wall, broke through the door and fell out onto the main street.

“Are you looking to die?” A few guards clad in golden armor heard what happened and began to move, violently beating up the muscular man!

The surrounding rankers looked back at the voluptuous beauty, currently lying across the desk languidly and yawning in boredom. They were so scared that they practically wet their pants. Exactly what kind of Ranker was she?

## Chapter 42 – I Give Up

---

Shang Wu Camp was located in a valley surrounded by mountains on all sides.

It didn't have many buildings, but the layout was neat. The Mercenary Guild and the Assassin Guild were here as well and all the necessities were available.

After passing the inspection for warriors, one could leave Shang Wu Hall for the teleportation gate to Tong Tian Tower. On the way, one could see Hu Bi Camp and Yue Long Platform. Beyond that was the small military drill ground on which the large scale teleportation gate was set up. Before the scheduled time for teleportation, mercenaries could go to the other side of Shang Wu Camp, where there was a small town with abundant facilities such as taverns, inns, horse stables, blacksmith shops, beast care centers, etc. .

Yue Yang walked to the small military grounds where the teleportation gate was set up. The teleportation gate there was larger than the one at the residence by at least a hundred times.

100 crystal teleportation columns filled the area, with each column being at least 5 metres tall and saturating the surrounding air with formless energy. The entire teleportation gate's area had small, white lights scattered around, floating and shimmering. When people walked in, they would be immersed in this lake of light energy and both the mind and body would feel as if it were entirely free of worries.

In the many years after the Da Xia Empire was established, its capital Shang Jing had been overrun numerous times by enemies, but the Shang Wu Camp which protected this teleportation gate had never fallen to any enemy.

From this, it could be seen that the Da Xia Empire valued this teleportation gate very highly.

“Brother, you’re also heading to Tong Tian Tower? How come you’re alone?” Yue Yang was sizing up the place when a pale-skinned fatty next to him whose face was full of smiles took the initiative to greet him. Yue Yang had only just glanced at him when this fellow extended his pale, fat hand onto his shoulder as if they were extremely familiar with one another: “You look unfamiliar, is it your first time here? Are you nervous? I’ll tell you, this actually isn’t anything. Tong Tian Tower is easier to pass than you think it is and it’s even more wonderful than you think it is... No worries, it’s very normal to be slightly nervous on your first time, but this is the same as taking a female’s virginity. As long as you successfully do it the first time, then you won’t feel like it’s very mysterious.”

“Then, you’re an expert?” Yue Yang, in his heart was struck dumb, going to Tong Tian Tower could actually be linked to taking a female’s virginity? Seems like this fatty was a lewd person.

“I’m not an expert, but of the younger generation, who doesn’t know of this Young Master Hai?” Any longer and this fatty would start to brag that he could fly as well.

“Young Master Hai’s appearance is majestic indeed. Your entire

face shows your good fortune and your powerful strength. You truly have the air of an expert.” Yue Yang extended a thumbs up towards the other.

“Ha, it’s nothing big. I’ve always kept a low-profile. Though I’m a grimoire contractor that even has a Bronze ranked Level 2 Iron Rhinoceros, I’ve never brought it up with others. I’m just not that kind of person...Oh? Is that your beast? It seems to be a Bronze ranked Ironback Wolf. No, that can’t be right. Its nose even discharges smoke and its breath and tongue even emit sparks! Is it a Demon Wolf?” When the fatty saw Hui Tai Lang walk up to Yue Yang and wag its tail, he was so shocked that his fat began to jiggle.

“No way, this is our family’s watchdog. It looks like this because it stole some scorching hot peppers recently.” Yue Yang seriously replied in explanation.

“Woof Woof” Hui Tai Lang barked cooperatively. After training, its grasp of foreign languages had become more and more proficient.

“Is this really a watchdog? Ah, why hasn’t it established a contract with you? It doesn’t have the contract imprint on its forehead. Heavens! You... You... aren’t you afraid it’ll run off with someone else?” The fatty seemed to be anxious for Yue Yang, and he nervously surveyed their surroundings. He then lowered his voice and whispered mysteriously to Yue Yang, “Brother, listen closely. You’ve got it good, this watchdog is a very good dog. No, no, it’s not a dog, but a wolf. I definitely am not mistaken. It’s definitely a Bronze ranked Ironback Demonic Wolf. Look at the cyan color around its head, its fur that seems to be made of steel

needles, its flesh that seems like steel, and its green eyes with a hint of blue.....Look at this beast illustration. The Ironback Demonic Wolf in it is exactly the same as your watchdog. Moreover, your watchdog is even sturdier and mightier. Who knows, maybe after eating those scorching hot peppers, it inconceivably transformed into an Ironback Demonic Wolf.....you need to hurry up and form a contract with it. It's a good beast, one that others wouldn't be able to purchase even with 100 gold."

"It's just a watchdog. There's no way it's worth so much money." Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang. However, it didn't dodge at all. Instead, it continued to obediently wag its tail, maintaining its ordinary watchdog appearance.

"Have I gone blind? You dared to abuse a beast? Aren't you afraid of dropping its degree of loyalty? Oh right, you haven't even established a contract." When the fatty saw what Yue Yang did, he practically wanted to kill himself.

If anyone else had a good beast, they would treat it like their elder. They were always afraid that if it didn't eat good food or didn't get enough sleep or if it was in a bad mood, its loyalty would decrease.

What the fatty couldn't imagine was that the young thief in front of him not only didn't care for his beast, he had even kicked it.

Heavens!

The fatty felt that if there was a god, he should've killed that



young thief in front of him with a bolt of lightning immediately.

This youngster really did not know how to use his resources well. It was practically a crime!

Seeing Yue Yang's uncaring attitude, the fatty's heart jumped. Perhaps it was possible for him to persuade this young thief who was blind to treasures, to yield the Ironback Demonic Wolf to him.

Looking at the Ironback Demonic Wolf once more, the fatty began to feel that he really had some intertwining fate with it. No matter what, he was going to buy it. He secretly suppressed his excitement and began to talk prices, "Brother, if you don't need this dog, why don't you give it to me for 50, no, 60 gold?"

Yue Yang inwardly despised the avaricious fatty. He even wanted to buy Hui Tai Lang for 60 gold? What a dream!

Besides, Hui Tai Lang struck out and clawed at things whenever it wanted to, since it handled its own matters. In that case, how could the wolf possibly be sold to others as a beast?

Yue Yang never did foolish things. Despite how weak Hui Tai Lang was compared to his other beasts, it was still his companion that he had brought up. Without it, who would take the brunt of his anger in the future? Even if the offer was not merely 60 gold, but 600 or even 6000 gold, Yue Yang would definitely refuse to sell off a beast that he had trained himself.

“Young Master Hai, this is the only watchdog we have. There won’t be any dogs to protect my house if I sell it to you.” Yue Yang raised his hands, showing that he did not intend to sell it.

“Call me Big Boss, do you know who I am? In the future, I can protect you, after all. I come from the Hai Clan, one of the Eight Major Clans. My uncle is a secret disciple of the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace of the Four Great Sects, awesome right? Brother, relax, if you acknowledge me as your boss, I definitely won’t let you make a loss. Not just 60 pieces of gold, I’ll even gift you with a lion, if you prefer tigers, that’s also fine... What do you want, just say it, don’t you want a watchdog? I’ll definitely help you keep watch, ah, no, I mean, I’ll buy a hundred dogs to help you guard your house. However, this Ironback Demonic Wolf, no matter what, you have to sell it to me, I really like it too much, don’t you feel that it’s very similar to me? I’m just like him, we’re both very sturdy.” The fatty flexed his biceps, causing the fat to wobble.

Yue Yang looked at the fatty, then looked at his Hui Tai Lang, and now that he thought about it, there really were some similarities between them.

It was that the both of them really looked like they were born to be smacked around.

He tried his best to stifle his laughter, and acted as if he were shocked, asking, “Doesn’t the world only have the 4 Major Clans Feng, Xue, Yue, and Yan? How come there are 8 Major Clans?”

“Feng, Xue, Yue, Yan are the old Four Major Clans, we are the up-and-coming Four Major Clans, although our reputation is slightly

lower than theirs, but the people are already collectively calling us the Eight Major Clans. You must be from the countryside? Our Hai Clan is very famous, especially our water-type beasts, they're the best." The fatty was able to lie without any qualms and his face did not turn red nor did he breathe any differently.

"Oh, so it's like that... " Yue Yang acted dumb and nodded his head.

"Brother, sell this Ironback Demonic Wolf to me. Not only will I give you 60 pieces of gold and a Lion Beast, I'll even bring you to participate in Refining with me. You'll definitely succeed! I guarantee that within 10 days you'll be able to receive the Certificate of Training Completion. And after that, with regards to the matter of upgrading your identification Crystal Stone, I'll take care of all of it for you." The fatty beat his chest in promise.

"Is this damned fatty trying to cheat you of your Ironback Demonic Wolf?" Suddenly, a pleasant, sweet-sounding voice rang out from behind Yue Yang, and at the same time, a fragrance hit him.

Yue Yang turned around, and the bright-eyed thief was standing behind him.

Seeing Yue Yang, a flash of emotions crossed the bright-eyed thief's face, but it quickly disappeared: "You really didn't die... Oi, where did you run off to these few days?"

The fatty's good situation had been messed up by another person,

he really wanted to flare up. However, once he saw the bright-eyed thief, his eyes immediately lit up, even more emotional than when Hui Tai Lang saw meat, and he immediately extended a fat hand towards the bright-eyed thief: “Nice to meet you, I’m Hai Da Fu, everyone calls me Young Master Hai. You misunderstood me, I swear, I definitely had no intentions of cheating my brother. Think about it, I’m his boss, why would I cheat him? Beauti... ah, little brother, do you know my brother? This is good, then today everyone is close friends. Today is a really happy day, let’s go drink a cup together, my treat.”

“Damned fatty, if you don’t want me to drain you of your blood, then stay further away from me.” The bright-eyed thief gave a flying kick, just like how Yue Yang gave one to Hui Tai Lang, sending the fatty’s entire body flying.

“You’re all right?” Yue Yang saw the fatty rapidly climb up, he really suspected that this fellow was related to Hui Tai Lang in some way.

“It’s all right, I’m all right, please do not worry about me. Don’t you know what my beast is? My beast is the strengthening-type Iron Rhinoceros, its defense is just like a steel plate, what could happen to me? You see this blood... This is not me vomiting blood, this is just my gums bleeding. Recently, I’ve been suffering from excessive internal heat, so my gums have been bleeding a bit. That’s right, it’s just like this, look at this body of fat, you still need to worry about me?” The fatty quickly wiped off the trail of blood at his mouth corner, at the same time assuming a position that said ‘I am not afraid of being trampled on’.

“Where did he run off to this time?” Far into the distance, there was a white-masked beauty dressed in palace clothings tenderly calling out.

“My aunt’s here, next time I’ll look for you to talk.” The bright-eyed thief quickly spoke one sentence to Yue Yang in a low voice, and turned to meet the beauty dressed in palace clothing.

“Do you know her? Although her face was covered, I daresay she’s 99 points.” The fatty’s mouth had opened wide, practically forming a waterfall of drool. His appearance looked like he needed a good spanking.

“I don’t have any interest in men.” Yue Yang tried hard to resist his temptation to charge forwards and strike the fatty’s heart with his dagger. Instead, Yue Yang turned around and left.

“You uneducated fool... I give up.” The fatty was suddenly tempted to cry in his heart, this youngster had a good beast yet he did not treasure it, had a beautiful woman but was not passionate about it, could it be that he was not afraid of meeting with heavenly punishment?

# Chapter 43 – Tong Tian Tower, I've Come!

---

The teleportation circle for Tong Tian Tower was unique.

Normally, the small teleportation circles in various city government offices would be operated by government officials using energy crystals to open up a portal and it would be possible to reach the specified destination within 30 seconds.

However, Shang Wu Camp was different. Here, a Tong Tian Tower Proof was necessary to gain access to a portal. A warrior had to possess an authorisation card and place the card on the flashing runes of a crystal column to activate the portal. Once the warrior entered the activated portal, they would be teleported to a random location out of a hundred different ones. Standing in front of the crystal column, the fatty urged Yue Yang to reach 'Underwater World' to find him repeatedly. The fatty thumped his fat chest proudly, saying that his father was the manager of the 'Underwater World's Chamber of Commerce', and that he was ranked highly in Tong Tian Tower.

"Brother, don't worry. If anything happens, find me. This great person will definitely protect you." The fatty, who had as of yet not shown any aura of power, suddenly released a tyrannical qi.

"..." Yue Yang silently rejoiced that their teleportation destinations were different, otherwise his ears would continue to be tormented.

At the stipulated time of teleportation, he placed the big-breasted

beauty's crystal card lightly on the runes of the crystal column.

There was a burst of light that pounced towards Yue Yang as if it had a life of its own .

In an instant, it faded away and became invisible. When Yue Yang calmed himself enough to look, his own image started to surface on the blank crystal card. Oddly, although Yue Yang's face was vaguely outlined on it, it was an indistinct silhouette that could not be seen clearly. Apart from a pair of lupine shining eyes, everything else was shrouded in darkness.

Along with this design, various characters that revealed his attributes were also arranged sequentially on the card. The sequence had the name on top 'Titan', followed by Race 'Human', Gender 'Male' and Ability 'Unknown'.

There was no evaluation of his strength.

At the back of the card, aside from the beautiful and mysterious rune patterned design, there were also a number of rows for Country Merits, Win-Loss records, Mission Points and more.

Suddenly, all of the teleportation crystal columns emitted a radiant brightness, bathing everyone in a sea of light.

A few seconds later, beams of light rose from the crystals straight into the sky.

When the light disappeared, all the warriors in contact with the crystal columns were teleported away and disappeared without a trace. Yue Yang only felt a slight sensation of dizziness during teleportation. When he finally regained his senses, he found himself in a simple hall. There were a few warriors sitting inside. They originally looked upon Yue Yang, who was dressed as a little thief, with disdain, but when they saw Hui Tai Lang at his feet wagging its tail, their mocking looks became slightly more restrained. The Bronze-Ranked Ironback Demon Wolf was not one that they had not seen before, but for a little thief to be able to bring around such a strong beast meant that his strength was pretty great already.

“Wow, it’s huge!” Yue Yang exclaimed as he walked through the courtyard of warriors outside the hall.

Although Yue Bing had told him that Tong Tian Tower was a unique sight where [the islands were in the middle of a sea and another sea was surrounded by the islands](#), he still hadn’t imagined it as the scene before him.

(T/L: With a tower in the middle and suspension bridges running to it, also many times larger)

Outside, it was a boundless ocean.

It was said that this was a stormy sea which would create hurricanes for no reason, especially when ships were travelling through it. With almost clockwork precision, at the very instant that a ship left port, a hurricane would spawn. A tornado would descend from the clouds, sucking up seawater and destroying the ship. For thousands of years, not a single person was able to safely



navigate a ship and travel through Tong Tian Tower's open sea. All of the explorers who tried to leave via ship eventually became snacks for sea monsters or fish-type Golden King Beasts.

If one wished to enter or leave Tong Tian Tower, they would inevitably have to use the large teleportation circles. There were no other alternatives.

The inner sea which was surrounded by the island was called the Forbidden Sky Sea.

The sea here was governed by an ancient law under which even flying-type beasts were not able to fly over it.

Even a light feather placed on the surface of the Forbidden Sky Sea would instantly sink.

If people wanted to reach Tong Tian Tower on the small central island, they would have to go through the 'Life Suspension Bridge' said to be created by ancient gods in order to safely reach the base of the tower.

"Not bad, Tong Tian Tower is indeed a good place." Rumours circulated that Tong Tian Tower had many floors and that the further up one managed to ascend, the stronger the enemies one would have to face. However, Yue Yang did not care about the number of floors Tong Tian Tower had. For him, the more the merrier. After all, cultivation had no limit. There was no strongest, only stronger. If he was able to continuously cultivate within Tong Tian Tower, constantly improving himself, then that

would be a pleasure in life for him.

As for the Abyssal Magic Creatures and Heaven's Rankers , there was no distinction between them as far as Yue Yang was concerned. As long as nobody provoked each other and lived in peace with each other, there was no need to bother. If anyone were to provoke him, he would kill even the people from Heaven.

The island chain that Yue Yang was in was split into 4 large regions: North, South, East and West.

The East area that he resided in was owned by the Da Xia Empire.

Yue Yang estimated that just the East area was 10 times the size of White Stone City. The buildings here were majestic, the streets were spacious and there were pavilions everywhere. The whole place exuded the majesty of a strong country. Even the empty plots of land were decorated tastefully , with a few small pavilions, galleries, lawns, black rocks, bamboo forests, bridges over running water and lotus-filled lakes, presenting a poetic scenery. If one were to compare White Stone City to this region, it would only come across as a poor, dilapidated, rural village.

“The island chain surrounding the inner sea is probably as large as Hong Kong.” Yue Yang had walked for half an hour on the Life Suspension Bridge before finally arriving at the front of Tong Tian Tower.

Upon a closer look, the pure whiteness and flashing runes of Tong Tian Tower whose facade retained its splendor with no signs

of wear and tear over the ages , caused it to look even more majestic.

Looking up, it was impossible to see the top.

From what he could see, Yue Yang estimated its diameter to be over 3 kilometres. Only judging from the part not hidden by the clouds, the tower was at least a few thousand metres high. God knows what kind of power built this tower, but it was definitely impossible for normal human beings to even replicate something as large as the interior of Tong Tian Tower. Its enigmas were unexplainable by anyone even today and it was mysterious beyond measure. Any ranker with the qualifications to go up to the second or third floor walked further in. Newbies like Yue Yang who entered the tower for the first time did not need to go in too far. He could directly enter via the floor portal at the doorway.

“A crystal card? Who introduced you here?” In front of the floor portal, the middle-aged warrior in charge of receiving newbies saw the crystal card and was slightly surprised.

“It’s that woman in charge of registration in Shang Wu Camp.” Yue Yang knew that this crystal card was definitely hard to obtain, but he was happy to play the fool. After all, nobody would reject more good things.

“What? Shang Wu Camp doesn’t even have a single woman in charge of registering. Isn’t the person in charge of registration there Elder Lu? What you saw was not an old man in white, but a woman? What did she look like?” The middle-aged warrior was even more confused after Yue Yang spoke, and being a little

puzzled, asked him about it.

“She was abundant...” Yue Yang described the big-breasted beauty’s looks slightly.

His heart was filled with a burst of curiosity. He could not gauge the strength of the big-breasted beauty. She was definitely someone extremely strong. Who exactly was she?

Wasn’t she the one who normally handled registrations for warriors?

Could it be that she was that Elder Lu’s granddaughter?

After hearing Yue Yang’s description, the middle-aged warrior’s face became pale. He hurriedly waved his hands saying, “Please ignore my impertinent words and act as if I’d never asked. Go in quickly!”

Seeing him frightened to that extent, Yue Yang was even more confused now. Was that big-breasted woman some great man-eating tiger? Was it necessary to be scared to this extent? With his curiosity rising, the image of the seductive big-breasted beauty floated in his mind. The hot body of the big-breasted beauty caused people to have a desire to conquer her. If he could push her over and hear her moan with her tender voice... it would probably be extremely pleasing.

With his whole head full of \*\* and sexual fantasies, Yue Yang

stepped into the portal of Tong Tian Tower.

One second later, he found himself in a whole new world...

“Ha ha, Tong Tian Tower, I’ve come!” Yue Yang became excited. This would be the place where he would exert his power in the future.

Before he could continue expressing himself, he heard a slightly pained voice from below his foot. “Brother, could you get off of me first?”

## Chapter 44 – The Desire To Survive

---

Yue Yang looked down and discovered that he was standing on someone's face.

Sweating, he got off quickly.

The lanky man whose face Yue Yang had stepped on was dressed in rags like a beggar. His limbs were sprawled on the ground and even when Yue Yang got off of him, he did not stand up. Seeing that he did not seem to be injured, but was just lying on the ground as if he were an immobile pool of muck, Yue Yang's curiosity got the better of him and he asked, "What happened to you?"

"Don't even ask... I'm the disgrace of Tong Tian Tower." The lanky young lad shook his head sighing.

"Did you gamble away all your life's savings?" Yue Yang knitted his eyebrows slightly.

"No. I had prepared for 5 years and gathered as much strength as I could. I passed through Royal Dragon Valley Road and went to Star's Domain to gain experience. At first, it was all smooth-sailing and I was full of confidence that I would be able to get a Wisdom Fruit. I didn't expect that I couldn't even pass the Twelve Zodiac Temples' easiest challenge. Both my Level 3 Poison Wolf and Level 4 Longarm Golden Ape King died... Even with 5 years' worth of preparation, I lost everything in a single day, can you believe it? Did you think I wanted to lie here and wait for my death? I just don't have any dignity left to return home... You may not believe

it, but I was my clan's most remarkable talent. My parent's expectations of me were huge. I can't face their expressions filled with despair haha. Do you want to know how I wrote to my clan? I lied to my parents saying that I was doing well here and that my trials were progressing well. That both my beasts rose in rank and my teammates regarded me well... In reality, I-I've already been kicked out of the team by those people." The lanky man's tone was tinged with the kind of despair that made it seem as if his heart was dead as ashes. Although he had a smile on his face as he talked, it was one of self-mockery.

Hearing the lanky man talk, Yue Yang's heart shook.

Yue Bing, that unyielding girl, had also been kicked out of her team. Could she be like this lanky guy now, with all her beasts dead?

Could she be like this man who had lost everything, without even the dignity to return home? Starving until he was lying on the ground waiting to die and still writing to his home saying that everything was well?

Thinking of it like this, Yue Yang's heart quickened. He had to find Yue Bing quickly, he could not let anything happen to her. He would not let her lie down and await death like this man. He would have to bring her back and give the beautiful woman the best explanation.

Yue Yang had heard Yue Bing talk about Royal Dragon Valley Road and Star's Domain in her letters and estimated that her trials were progressing like this man had mentioned.

“Are you familiar with Royal Dragon Valley Road and Star’s Domain?”, asked Yue Yang, deciding to understand the situation from this man first.

“Ha, how would I not be familiar with it? I’ve already spent two years guiding people in here. I can bring you to Xing Yu from Tong Tian Tower’s floors with my eyes closed. Do you need help getting there? I know the easiest shortcut. I don’t need money, but only food to fill my stomach. If you manage to complete the trial missions, tipping me will do just fine.” When the man spoke about tipping, the self-mockery in his face grew.

“Do you know where the trial team of Shang Jing Academy is?” Yue Yang asked again.

“Shang Jing Academy has ten small trial teams. What’s the team you’re looking for called?” The man struggled to crawl back up. It seemed like he had not eaten for many days. He was famished to the point of having no strength, and was even a little wobbly just from standing up.

“I think it was called ‘Academy’s Rose Team’. I’m not actually looking for this team, but rather someone in the team. As a guide here, have you heard of a girl named Yue Bing? She was kicked out of her group just like you. Have you seen her?” Yue Yang was really worried that Yue Bing had fallen to the pitiful extent of trading her guidance for food.

“Yue Bing? I haven’t heard of her before and I’ve also never met



the trial team called ‘Academy’s Rose’ before.” The man shook his head.

“...” Yue Yang was even more worried after hearing this.

That stubborn girl Yue Bing had better not have had anything bad happen to her.

If not, how would he explain it to the beautiful woman? Although he had not spent a long time with Yue Bing, he felt that she was like a younger sister to him.

There was no need to rush to cultivate. It was more imperative to find Yue Bing first.

In his mind, an image of Yue Bing in black clothes appeared. It felt like this unfortunate, stubborn younger sister urgently needed this older brother’s protection...

“However, you don’t need to worry. Shang Jing Academy’s students are all top students. Unlike me, even if they fail the trial, the academy would have made arrangements for them. I know that there is no girl called Yue Bing among all the guides over here.” The man was very intelligent and saw through the anxiousness in Yue Yang’s heart.

“How about this? If you help me to find her quickly, I’ll give you a high payment as remuneration. If you’re able to find her for me in one day, I’ll give you 10 gold. Each additional day you take, I will

deduct 1 gold from it. I don't care how you go about doing it or what methods you use, but I just want to see her quickly." Yue Yang was silent for a while, before deciding to use a great amount of gold to open the path. Besides, he would only think about these things after Yue Bing was found.

"I will try my best... However, could you give me some money in advance? I'm not scared of seeing you mock me, but I haven't eaten anything for days. Even a few coppers will do. I'm too hungry to even move." The man looked at Yue Yang expectantly. Yue Yang had seen the same look in Hui Tai Lang's face when Yue Yang was about to stone him to death.

This was a desire to survive.

It was such a great desire to survive that even in such a desperate situation and even if he had no strength left to struggle, in his heart, he still hoped for a miracle to appear.

Yue Yang's heart was slightly moved and he nodded. He did not give the man just one copper, but rather took out a purse with 100 coppers and gave it to him. "This is your remuneration for today. Go take care of your matters first. I'll wait here for half an hour."

After the man received the heavy purse, his eyes started to redden. He did not utter a single word, but nodded forcefully after grabbing the purse tightly in his hands.

He did not even speak a single word before leaving quickly.

If one looked closely, an uneven line of tears dotted the path that this man's feet trod.

Seeing the back of this man, Yue Yang sighed lightly. This was one who was called a genius... Perhaps this fallen genius had once been a wildly spirited genius carrying the hopes of his clan. However, after losing his beasts, he became trash who had absolutely nothing, not even a place for him to call home. This skinny guy and the tragic guy who had plunged himself into the river also had some commonalities between them... The tragic guy, although born in one of the four Major Clans – the Yue clan, was unable to contract a grimoire. He did not possess a beast and became the clan's greatest trash. Eventually succumbing to the clan's pressure and the blow from his broken engagement, he chose to end his life by drowning in the river. Wasn't it similar to the skinny guy waiting here to die, a kind of helplessness that weaklings faced?

Before the tragic guy jumped into the river, could his eyes have been shining with a strong, burning hope to live?

Had he also been expecting a miracle to occur to him?

However, nobody could save him in the end... Before he died, Yue Yang himself took over his identity to some degree and this trash of the Yue clan could be said to have been reborn. But, the one who was reborn in his place, was Yue Yang himself, a dimension traveller who just happened to be luckier than that tragic guy. He inherited everything that had belonged to the tragic guy, like the beautiful woman and her clan's affection and warmth. At the same time, he had also obtained what the tragic guy was never able to.

He contracted a grimoire and received a Guardian Beast, the Twin Star Innate Skill, the little loli snake and much more.

“Alright! I may not be able to help you with what happened in the past, but I will definitely take care of Yue Bing and the others in your place. I will let them be proud of you, and honour your name, even if you were trash. I will help you to make the truth known. You were not useless, just not lucky enough.”

As Yue Yang looked towards the sky, he seemed to see a man that looked like him, smiling like the sun and waving goodbye.

Perhaps, he came due to the wishes of the tragic guy.

The tragic guy must have hoped that someone as lucky as him would substitute with him to complete his unfulfilled wishes...

## Chapter 45 – Searching For Yue Bing

---

After around 20 minutes, the lanky guy returned.

He was not alone. Behind him, were 5 young men wearing ragged clothes similar to his.

One of the men, who looked cultured, wore a monocle, and had a painting in his hands. His washed white sleeves had been stained with ink. Without uttering a single word, he handed over the painting to Yue Yang. As Yue Yang took the drawing over for a look, he discovered that the person in the drawing was Yue Bing in black clothes. Although she was wearing a masked black outfit, her charm was sufficient to allow him to identify her at one glance. If the ink on the painting hadn't been still wet, Yue Yang would have doubted that this delicately drawn painting was completed 10 days or even half a month.

“This painting might not be quite accurate. Just now, Ye Kong had only given me 5 minutes, and I have not personally seen this Yue Bing whom you're looking for. Even with the description provided by Jia Zi Yun and Qin Yang, it's hard to draw with absolute precision.” The cultured man wearing the monocle explained uneasily.

“No, you've done a great job of drawing her.” Yue Yang's heart was surprised. Even by relying only on descriptions, was it possible to draw her with such accuracy?

Moreover, this was a work done in merely 5 minutes.

Without considering anything else, this man was definitely a genius when it came to drawing.

Yue Yang did not wish to praise him right now. He turned towards the other four and hurriedly asked, “Have any of you seen Yue Bing? Was it the two of you? When was the last time you saw her?”

The man with a short stature and pale skin called himself Jia Zi Yun. He answered, “Half a month ago, Qin Yang and I were recording the exploits of people at Shang Luo River. Originally, nobody took notice of the Rose Squad walking by, but we heard the young master of the Yan Clan greeting the squad captain of the Rose Squad, Master Shen Tu. Yue Clan’s 4th son Yue Yan was also present at that time. As we immersed ourselves in our writing, we accidentally heard them talking about the 3rd son of the Yue Clan... Sigh... they said some unpleasant things, that lady in black clothes, Lady Yue Bing, flared up and started arguing with them...”

When Jia Zi Yun was talking about the 3rd son of the Yue Clan, the 6 of them looked at Yue Yang worriedly.

All of them seemed to be intelligent, and guessed Yue Yang’s identity to some extent.

They may not know Yue Yang, and were unable to see his face behind the mask, but they knew how to guess... After all, who else would be anxiously searching for Yue Bing?

This person, even if he was not the older brother of Yue Bing, he would definitely be one of the sons of the Yue Clan... Who wouldn't know who the Yue Clan's sons were? The eldest, Yue Tian, and the fourth son, Yue Yan's, names shook Shang Jing and even in Tong Tian Tower, they were the leaders of the younger generation. The fifth son, Yue Ting, was the leader of Princess Huang Shi Lan's escorts and it was impossible for him to leave the princess to come here. The sixth son, Yue Bao, was too young as he was only 16 years of age. As for the ninth son, Yue Feng, he was only a kid

Aside from the third son of the Yue Clan who was shrouded in mystery, which one would not be recognized by everyone?

Therefore, Jia Zi Yun did not recount the full details of how Yan Po Jun, Shen Tu and Yue Yan mocked Yue Yang, but rather skipped it entirely.

Even so, they still looked towards Yue Yang worriedly, afraid that he would get mad.

“What happened next” Yue Yang did not mind others mocking him behind his back. He considered all the people who thought he was trash to be full of hot air, because in reality he was a lucky genius. Why would he be afraid of what others were saying? Although he kept it to himself, he would eventually settle this score for the tragic guy. When the time came, he would beat those trash until their teeth dropped out and they had to swallow their blood back into their stomachs. Right now, the most important thing was to find Yue Bing. As long as she was safe, then that would be more important than anything. With regard to

cultivation, the current strength that Yue Yang had could definitely help Yue Bing pass through the floors.

If it was said that Yue Yang initially had some reservations towards Yue Bing and the others when he first traversed over to this world, then the current him had already completely assimilated into the beautiful woman's family.

In his heart, he had long regarded Yue Bing as his own younger sister.

If Yue Yang found Yue Bing now, he would naturally give her pointers and help her improve tremendously.

“Yue Bing could not win the argument and started a warrior's duel. She summoned two Treant Warriors and nearly killed off Shen Tu's Scorpion Lion. But after that, Yan Po Jun joined the battle. He was extremely strong, and in a 1v2 situation, defeated Lady Yue Bing. Following that, Shen Tu expelled her from the squad...” The cinnamon-skinned Qin Yang explained the process of the confrontation in a brief manner.

“What was Yue Yan doing at that point of time?” Yue Yang knew that although Qin Yang expressed it in a simple manner, the process of the battle must have been very intense. Two men bullying such a small girl like Yue Bing really made people furious.

On the surface, Yue Yang did not show any change in expression, but the murderous intent in his heart rose.



He changed the topic to another important person which was Yue Yan. This guy was also one of the Yue Clan's youths. After seeing his cousin being bullied by others, would he stand by idly and watch? Yue Bing's reply last time had secretly mentioned that Yue Yan was the person behind all these mischiefs and conflicts and that he had even worsened the situation. If not for Yue Yan's constant wrongdoings, causing Yue Bing's heart to be extremely sad, how would she have easily brought it up with Mother?

"..." Jia Zi Yun hesitated a little, but decided in the end to talk about the entire situation.

"Is that so? What a great brother." Yue Yang laughed coldly.

In his heart, he couldn't resist wanting to step on Yue Yan and beat him up ten thousand times.

However, this revenge could wait. After all, they were 'one family'. Sooner or later, there would be a chance to completely return the favour to this shameless little fellow called Yue Yan. He could completely decimate Yue Yan and the others at the Yue Clan's annual 'Junior Martial Tournament'. He would trample them and take revenge for Yue Bing.

The 6 men heaved a sigh of relief when they saw Yue Yang not flaring up.

They confirmed their guesses in their hearts after looking at each other.

This man who came anxiously looking for Yue Bing was after all the legendary Yue Clan's third young master... If it was really him, then things later on would become simple. As long as Yue Bing was found quickly, as Yue Bing's older brother, he would definitely not go back on his word on their remuneration. Most importantly, this young master was generous. He knew how to respect others and was a good employer that was rarely found.

“Are you called Ye Kong?” Yue Yang silently confirmed the ability of this lanky guy. This guy was really a genius who possessed extraordinary reflexes and work efficiency. Even though Yue Yang had only given him half an hour, he had found the people he needed the most. Yue Yang stretched his hands and lightly patted the shoulders of the lanky guy. “You’ve done well. Now, we have to find Yue Bing as soon as we can. If nothing has happened to her, I can reward you with twice the promised amount. Oh, that’s right, who are they?”

There were two young men who had not opened their mouths to speak at all. They were twin brothers whose looks were almost the same and hard to tell apart.

These two men both wore the same ragged clothes. However, on their backs were two curved swords, one left and one right. They were the only two people who were armed with weapons out of the six. Yue Yang found this to be peculiar. What were the two of them here for?

If the lanky guy Ye Kong was the guide, Wen Xiu was the artist, and Jia Zi Yun and Qin Yang were the eyewitnesses, then what was the purpose of these twin brothers coming here?

“I am called Li Qie, and that is my younger brother Li Ge. We are both Level 2 [Bravemen] – advanced. Our summoned beast is Gale Kamaitachi. Ye Kong estimates that Yue Bing is in Star’s Domain trying to pass the trials. We can protect you when travelling across Royal Dragon Valley. Unless we die in battle, you will not be in any danger of dying.” Yue Yang was almost unconvinced when the one on the left, Li Qie, said this.

This Ye Kong might have thought of too much?

Could it be that Ye Kong heard that he was trash, felt that he did not have enough battle power and thus took the initiative to find two bodyguards for him?

Ye Kong saw that Yue Yang’s expression was slightly off, and explained uneasily to him, “Don’t worry about the money for hiring them, the six of us will only receive a single share of the money. Although you have an Ironback Demonic Wolf, but in Tong Tian Tower, no contracted beasts can easily flee from the Li brothers’ hands. I dare to promise that their battle prowess is far greater than their grades are, only that they do not have money to go to the Mercenary Guild to get their grades as proof... If there are six people, Wen Yu Mo can go to the Mercenary Guild to find people for missions; Jia Zi Yun can go to the further regions of Tian Bao, Tian Hua and Tian Ji to inquire about Yue Bing; Qin Yang can rush to Shang Luo, Shang Ze and Shang Hong to look around. When we rush to Star’s Domain, if they discover anything, they would go through the Mercenary Guild to send a message to us. At the same time, they can also help to find out the latest movements from Shen Tu and Yan Po Jun, to prevent them from meeting up again.”

When Yue Yang heard this, he nodded his head slightly.

However, he had a question now. Aside from the big-breasted beauty, the fatty and Ye Kong's men were completely unable to see Hui Tai Lang's true strength. He felt that Hui Tai Lang who needed Innate Qi at any time to evolve was definitely not going to leave Yue Yang.

Hui Tai Lang would not leave even after getting violently beaten up. There was no need to worry about him betraying Yue Yang and escaping.

"We really need a job, really!" The six people gazed at Yue Yang extremely hopefully.

"To you all, this may be a job. However, to me, this is Yue Bing's life, I implore everyone to go all out." Of course, Yue Yang would not care how many people Ye Kong asked for. On the contrary, to him, the more people participating in the search for Yue Bing, the better. Now, he only wanted to use the fastest way to find that stubborn little girl.

"Please rest assured, to us, this job is also equivalent to our lives as we are all starving to death." Ye Kong looked at Yue Yang and nodded heavily.

## Chapter 46 – Now This Is Difficulty!

---

Splitting up to carry out their assigned operations, Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge accompanied Yue Yang towards Royal Dragon Valley at a frantic pace after leaving the starting portal of the floor from Chen Xi Town.

Royal Dragon Valley had no relation to dragons whatsoever.

It was a dangerous mountain valley, with tall ridges as sharp as knives, winding over a distance of 50 kilometres.

The rock walls had innumerable spikes with weirdly-shaped rocks and cliffs, making it impossible for warriors to travel through via the peak of the valley. Simultaneously, there were innumerable Level 3 Rock Eagles living at the peak of the valley. Trying to ride a flying beast through the ridges would be akin to courting death.

The base of the valley was the only way to pass.

However, on its surface lived a large amount of Giant Demon Worms, estimated to be more than 10,000. There were over a thousand different species of these grotesque Demon Worms. Although they could not be considered strong, they were still able to display a surprising amount of strength by utilising the special terrain of Royal Dragon Valley. Nobody was able to completely eliminate them. Not only that, the reproduction rate of the demon worms were extremely scary. In merely 10 days, even if human warriors completely cleaned up the surface of Royal Dragon Valley,

new Demon Worms of all sizes would come crawling out of their underground worm nests and from the cracks in rocks to reclaim their territory, and it would be as densely packed with Demon Worms as though nothing had ever happened.

Without a way to permanently eradicate the Demon Worms, the Warrior's Guild decided to just let this place be the first trial for warriors.

“Oh, damn!” When they reached the entrance of Royal Dragon Valley, Yue Yang saw the valley full of Demon Worms and could not help but knit his eyebrows.

Of course, with his current strength, he was not scared of these Demon Worms.

However, these Demon Worms were grotesque to the point of making people feel nauseated. Their shapes were extremely weird, and they were highly aggressive. It caused Yue Yang to feel like puking just from looking at them. This was not strange at all. Regardless of who it was that saw the dense sea of Worms, they would definitely feel creeped out.

Ye Kong had proposed two ways of getting past Royal Dragon Valley .

The first one was to pass through with all the other warriors. By lighting a long torch, they could drive away the Worms who were scared of fire and advance step by step. The others would follow the safe route cleared by the person in front while trying not to

provoke the large swarm of Demon Worms while exterminating the few that blocked their path. Thus, they would slowly but safely pass through Royal Dragon Valley. If one were to find a cooperative party, then they would be able to pass through safely within the span of two days.

The second method was the stupidest, craziest but at the same time the fastest method. This method required them to run frantically, rushing past the Demon Worms without stopping.

“Although the first option is extremely safe, it would take up too much time. Furthermore, camping in Royal Dragon Valley at night is the most dangerous thing to do. We would have to find a hiding hole, otherwise at night, there would be 10 times as many Demon Worms as in the day. There could even be many powerful Level 3 Worms roaming about. The chance of us being eaten is extremely high. Although the second method looks to be extremely dangerous at first glance, the reactions of the Demon Worms are slower in the day as the sunlight causes their vision to become extremely poor. If we target their sense of smell and use something with a strong scent to attract them, then clean up the few Demon Worms that block our path, the chances of passing through are higher... The only downside to this is that this method requires a huge amount of stamina. The 50 kilometre Valley is actually littered with uneven mountain rocks which will drain our stamina. We can't rest in between and we have to rush through in one go to prevent a group of Worms from chasing after us. We would also miss the hiding hole situated at the centre of Royal Dragon Valley. We have a high chance of losing our lives in the latter half of Royal Dragon Valley due to a lack of stamina to carry on...”

Ye Kong looked towards Yue Yang as he said this.

He was not worried about his body that had been starved for a few days, as he had grown accustomed to it. Ye Kong was more worried about whether this guy that was called trash as the third son of the Yu Clan had enough stamina to pass through Royal Dragon Valley in one go.

Li Qie and Li Ge glanced at each other. they were also worried about this issue.

Both of them approved of rushing forward in one go when looking at it from a fighter's standpoint. This was so the Demon Worms could not react fast enough to them, minimising the amount of unnecessary battles.

Conversely, if they were to walk slowly and allow a large group of Demon Worms to surround them, it would instead be a highly disadvantageous situation for them. The question was, whether Yue Yang would pick the second method. After all, he was the client and held the final choice. Ye Kong was afraid that he had not explained it clearly enough, and added, "If we were to choose the first method, then we would have to prepare all the necessary items. We would also have to find other parties who wish to pass through Royal Dragon Valley and work together to advance; However, if we were to pick the second option, we could start instantly as the Demon Worms are at their weakest in the afternoon. But now, we've already missed the optimal timing... The fastest run through Royal Dragon Valley was five hours, we would have to be faster than that. Otherwise, when the sky darkens, we would be in an extremely dangerous predicament."



Yue Yang felt that even if the tragic guy who had learnt martial arts were to run through this fifty kilometre mountain road, he would have no problem, not to mention his current self.

He decided to go with the second option.

Ye Kong hastily nodded his head saying, “Since I’ve learnt some techniques passed down in my family, there is no problem with my stamina when running. I’ll give everyone half an hour to gather up what you need.”

Ye Kong and the Li brothers gulped nervously.

Although they were hoping for Yue Yang to choose the second option in their hearts just now, Yue Yang had actually decided to do it. They felt that this was akin to him betting his life on it. The Li brothers immediately lay down to rest at their current spots. They were preparing to recover their strength to the peak within half an hour.

However, Ye Kong did not do this. He instantly ran towards the nearest provision shop and bought various necessities with the advance pay that Yue Yang had given him from the shopkeeper. Ten minutes later, he brought a large bag of items back along with a piece of good news. Two days ago, a few groups of strong parties had cleared this trial and slaughtered a good amount of Demon Worms. There were slightly less worms than usual crawling about right now.

In Yue Yang’s eyes, even if the Demon Worms were ten times

less, there were still too many of them to count.

However, Li Qie and Li Ge's morale was greatly bolstered by this news. Although they knew that this would not help much, hearing good news was always better than hearing bad news.

“Do you want to leave the Ironback Demonic Wolf here to be cared for? No matter how docile it is, seeing the mountain packed with Demon Worms will probably cause him to turn tail and flee while leaving you behind.” Ye Kong quietly advised Yue Yang to keep Hui Tai Lang here while sprinkling ‘Insect Repelling Powder’ on him.

“No need. I'll just let it be if it runs away. After all, this is a test for it.” Yue Yang randomly gave Hui Tai Lang a flying kick.

If Hui Tai Lang ran away after merely looking at the Demon Worms, what was the point of keeping it?

Ye Kong saw Yue Yang kicking his beast around leisurely and was dumbfounded. He had never seen a warrior who would hit his own beasts. Wasn't he afraid that this Ironback Demonic Wolf would run away? However, when he saw the comfortable expression of Hui Tai Lang after he was beaten up. He had never seen a beast that lacked so much dignity before. Could it be that this wolf was a naturally born masochist?

As Yue Yang's group prepared to rush through Royal Dragon Valley, the party members who were discussing on going through the valley together were dumbfounded.

Two group leaders shouted first, “Oi, are you preparing to send yourselves as dinner for the demon worms?”

Someone also cried out, “Mad, these four guys have gone mad.”

“It’s afternoon now, the sun is about to set. It’s impossible for you to run through Royal Dragon Valley in five hours. Even if you’re lucky and don’t meet any Level 3 Nest Spiders and Bird Eating Mantises, or large groups of Level 2 Giant Black Iron Ants and Devil Masked Centipedes, it’s impossible for you to rush through Royal Dragon Valley in one go. With its being 50 kilometres long, along with its complex terrain, I’d estimate that you’d be dead tired even before you’re halfway through.” A few of the warriors that set up stalls tried to convince them with good intentions, “Stay and team up with everyone to clear the trial, after all, that’s the safest way to do it.”

“There are less than a hundred warriors who try to run past Royal Dragon Valley. But those who can safely make it through number less than ten. You’d better think about this carefully.” Even the Silver Armour Guard Captain who watched over the mouth of Yu Ling Valley advised Yue Yang not to be impulsive.

“You guys can stay...”

Yue Yang spoke to test the reactions of Ye Kong and the others.

If Ye Kong and the Li brothers hesitated, Yue Yang would immediately leave and not trust them ever again. Even if they were

only hired, they had to retain at least a bit of loyalty. After all, it would be impossible to entrust a mission to people who fled without hesitation in the face of danger. This world had weaklings and Yue Yang would not deny their existence, but he would not choose weaklings to be his companions, even if they were only temporary.

The reaction of Ye Kong and the others was to reaffirm their determination. “No, we have been hired by you. As long as you make the decision, even if it were for us to die, we would carry it out.”

The Li Brothers did not say anything, but their resolute attitude showed it all.

Looking at Yue Yang’s party rushing towards Royal Dragon Valley, almost every warrior was shaking their heads. “These four idiots are as good as dead.”

However, the Silver Armour Guards captain opposed this notion. “No, they might succeed.”

The crowd did not understand.

To this, the Silver Armour Guards captain said something inscrutable. “The look in their eyes was similar to those who succeeded in the past. They were filled to the brim with confidence.”

“Bullshit, confidence doesn’t represent everything!” The warriors were sweating after hearing this.

“Having confidence doesn’t guarantee success, but you will definitely fail if you lacked it.” The guard captain threw another phrase at them.

“Che, who wouldn’t know how to spout big ideals?” Nobody believed that Yue Yang’s party could make it safely across Royal Dragon Valley. Everyone felt that these four people would at the very most run out of stamina halfway and fall onto the ground, becoming snacks for the large swarms of Demon Worms.

Two days later.

After the mercenaries had gone through a nightmarish battle, everyone passed through the trial of Royal Dragon Valley with many injuries, and reached the outer region of Star’s Domain. However, they discovered that Yue Yang and the others who ‘had already died’ were comfortably lying beneath the large tree at the Mercenary Guild’s doorstep, enjoying a glass of icy cold malt beer. This result shocked everyone: “You didn’t die?”

“Do you think that dead men can drink beer?” Yue Yang was speechless.

With regard to running through Royal Dragon Valley, they did not even consider it to be a difficult task to accomplish. There may have been a risk of losing their lives for Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge, but to him as an Innate Ranker, running past Royal Dragon Valley

was like taking a stroll through his own garden, just that the distance was longer and the terrain rougher.

Yue Yang had immediately checked with the Warrior Guild about Yue Bing when he came here.

She was fine, and there was no danger to her life.

This young lady had gone alone to the ‘Black Stone Labyrinth’ in Star’s Domain to complete her Refining mission, and it would take at least three days before she could come out. Although this let Yue Yang feel relieved, he had started to feel extremely bored at the same time.

“I’ve decided. I’ll participate in the Refining mission as well.” Yue Yang felt that passing the days like this was too boring. On the first they came, they went sightseeing around the outer regions of Star’s Domain, and familiarised themselves with the various information within this level of the Tong Tian Tower. There was nothing else to do on the third day, which had made him unable to take it anymore. Since Yue Bing would take three days to return, Yue Yang made the choice to participate in the trial as well.

“What?” For Ye Kong and the others who had experienced the good life for 2 days, it felt like thunder had struck when they heard this.

“Cough, cough, you need at least one contracted beast to participate in trials. In Xing Yu, you have to use beasts to pass the trials. Even if you know martial arts, it’s useless. Uncontracted

beasts like Hui Tai Lang here can't participate." Ye Kong originally did not plan to offend Yue Yang, but there was no choice. After all, this was the cruel reality.

"Contracted beasts? Who said that I didn't have them?" Yue Yang was angry that they were still thinking of him as garbage.

"Your contracted beast is..." Ye Kong did not harbour any hopes. If even just Hui Tai lang, a Bronze Ranked Ironback Demon Wolf could not be contracted, he estimated that the beasts that Yue Yang could form a contract was very few. Even if they were contracted, they would be extremely weak.

"Thorny Flower." Everyone fell when Yue Yang said this.

"Using a Thorny Flower to pass the trials of Star's Domain? This difficulty, my god! I would rather run through ten Royal Dragon Valleys!" The crowd wanted to smash their heads against the wall after hearing this.

"What is difficulty? Now this, is called difficulty." Ye Kong was crying.

## Chapter 47 – Little Thief, Do Your Best!

---

Yue Yang's seemingly crazy intention to use the Thorny Flower to go to Star's Domain in order to Refine and do missions caused the warriors in the Mercenary Guild to start betting.

The odds of Yue Yang being able to use the Thorny Flower to successfully clear the obstacles and finish the Refinings, was 10,000 to 1.

However, no one dared to bet on his success.

No one there was an idiot. Everyone there was more willing to throw gold coins into the violent, stormy sea than to place a bet on this kind of crazy act that would never succeed. No one would bet on someone's success in Refining, even if the odds were above 100 to 1, guaranteeing that they made no loss. The third type of bet was that Yue Yang would be able to sustain the Refining process for more than 10 minutes, and the odds on that were also as high as 50 to 1. Seeing this, Yue Yang's eyes shone with a greedy light, but the Mercenary Guild prohibited him from betting on himself, causing Yue Yang to sigh inwardly about his penniless life.

If they had allowed him to take part, then Yue Yang would have definitely bet all his money on his success in clearing the obstacle and Refining, with the odds of 10,000 to 1. In the blink of an eye, he could have become a millionaire.

“Who said he can't sustain for 10 minutes? I have a method.” Once Ye Kong said this, everyone was startled for an instant,



before they immediately started heckling him.

“You’re crazy too!” There were some who directly judged Ye Kong to be crazy as well.

“No way, you’re preparing to let him challenge the ‘Twelve Zodiac Temples’? For goodness’ sake, is there anything more crazy than this on Earth? I thought that my writing a letter to the Princess to ask for her hand in marriage all those years ago was already crazy enough, but I never thought that there would be someone more crazy and foolish than me...” A mercenary captain muttered to himself despondently and no one knew when the wine cup in his hand had already dropped on the ground.

“I’d rather go steal a giant dragon’s egg than go and challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples.” A thief’s face was filled with terror, and ‘If anyone makes me challenge it I’ll go commit suicide’ was written all over his face.

“Are the Twelve Zodiac Temples that scary?” Yue Yang’s knowledge of the twelve zodiacs temples was limited to Saint Seiya, only knowing that the twelve zodiac temples were protected by 12 Gold Saints. It couldn’t be that this level of the Tong Tian Tower’s Twelve Zodiac Temples also had Gold Saints in them?

“Scary? How can you use a puerile word like scary to describe it? That’s terrifying, extremely terrifying.” Many warriors became dizzy at Yue Yang’s words.

“Nn?” Yue Yang inwardly thought, it couldn’t be that there

really were Gold Saints inside there?

“The Twelve Zodiac Temples are the continuous missions in Star’s Domain, because you need to clear the obstacles 12 times, thus it’s called the Twelve Zodiac Temples. These Gold-ranked continuous missions are Tong Tian Tower’s highest difficulty level, no one under Level 5 has ever completed the Twelve Zodiac Temples. The record for humans was set over 10,000 years ago, when an anonymous warrior broke through to the 9th Temple, this pioneering work was also the pinnacle of human ability, after this nobody was able to catch up to this standard. In the last 1000 years, the highest level that has been cleared is the 5th Temple. In the last 100 years, only up to the 3rd Temple. In the last decade, no one has managed to clear the 1st Temple... The Twelve Zodiac Temples, in each Temple, there will definitely be a Golden King Beast guarding it, ordinary beasts that see it are all scared to the point that they become unable to move. It’s impossible to beat the Golden King Beast, much less break through to the next Temple.” When Ye Kong mentioned the Golden King Beast, his lips started trembling. Yue Yang suddenly realised, it was because 2 years ago this fellow had ambitiously challenged the Twelve Zodiac Temples, but ended up suffering a crushing defeat, thus landing him in his current dire straits.

“Then why did you say just now that you had a way?” Yue Yang was curious.

“It’s like this, in Star’s Domain, warriors cannot directly attack, they must use contracted beasts to battle, but after warriors enter the Twelve Zodiac Temples, the Law Guardian will bestow challengers a Shield of Absolute Defense, the same as the shield raised by the Summoning Grimoire, which will not disappear for

10 minutes. If you go in, you will be safe for at least the first 10 minutes, but you must remember, once the shield begins to flicker, it means that the time left is not much, and you must leave immediately, or you will be killed immediately by the Golden King Beast.” Ye Kong was actually thinking of letting Yue Yang go in to have a look, so that waiting here would not be so boring.

Since there were still 3 days until Yue Bing would come out of the ‘Black Stone Labyrinth’, it was fine to let him go to the Twelve Zodiac Temples in search of some excitement and have some fun.

As for the fee of 1 gold coin for each challenge, Ye Kong was not worried for Yue Yang who was a son of one of the Four Major Clans.

Once Yue Yang heard that they were not allowed to be directly involved in battling, he felt it was a bit of a pity in his heart, that he was unable to use his [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi. However, he still had Xiao Wen Li, the Barbaric Cow, and the Gold-ranked Thorny Flower, even if he was unable to defeat the Golden King Beast, he believed that being able to retreat with all his body parts intact was feasible.

As for Hui Tai Lang, the least it could do was run errands and draw monsters, when it came to a real battle, there was no place for it.

Ye Kong proposed that they leave Hui Tai Lang behind, because an Ironback Demonic Wolf that was only bronze-ranked, would definitely be killed by the Golden King Beast inside. Even if it wasn’t killed, a contractless beast like it would definitely just run

away.

“As for the Thorny Flower, let it be, this kind of beasts are plentiful, how many Thorny Flowers can you summon in one go?” Ye Kong asked.

“One.” Although Yue Yang did raise his rank due to the battle with the Demon King Ha Xin, becoming a Level 1 [Apprentice] – Intermediate. However, even Intermediate Apprentices could only summon one beast a day, and Yue Yang was no exception. When he heard Yue Yang’s answer, Ye Kong felt that he should have not asked, because the knowledge that the Yue Clan’s third young master was well known in the Soaring Dragon Continent as a good-for-nothing.

“Using one Thorny Flower to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples? I must be not be awake yet.” Many mercenaries believed that they were still dreaming.

“Don’t waste your money, you might as well use it to treat everyone to a drink.” Someone suggested.

“You really want to go?” Ye Kong felt that with the Shield of Absolute Defense, Yue Yang would not face any life-threatening danger, but he was worried that he would be scared out of his wits by the Golden King Beast.

“Nonsense, what are you waiting for, let’s go.” Yue Yang just wanted to have this kind of heart-racing fun, no need to think about the other things. Just by hearing the name Twelve Zodiac

Temples, he really wanted to challenge it, although the guardian wasn't a Gold Saint, it was still a Golden King Beast, it would definitely be exciting to play with it.

After paying the required fee, he was transported into the space of Star's Domain, he had no idea how big it was.

This space of Star's Domain had eternal night, there was no day, nor was there a sun... At the entrance of the Twelve Zodiac Temple challenge, there was a Golden Armour Guard Captain, his eyes wide and round: "Are you here to make trouble? A Level 1 Apprentice wants to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples? Do you know how many monsters are in there? Excluding the Golden King Beast, every Temple's Defending Golems and Abyssal Magic Monsters number at least a hundred, do you have nothing better to do after eating? Is this something you can even attempt to challenge?"

Beside the Golden Armour Guard Captain, a beautiful lady wearing silk clothes and carrying a 3 tailed Snow Fox laughed unrestrainedly: "If not for your clearly stupid actions, just looking at your bravery itself, it really is unexpected, it really is an ignorant and fearless fellow. I support you, you must work hard, and successfully challenge all 12 Temples."

Her words made the Golden Armour Guard Captain roll his eyes: "Master of Luo Hua City, please do not cause even more trouble."

"I'm sorry, I forgot about your duty. Very well, I won't encourage him to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples, everything I said just now I take back... Little Thief, do you have enough funds to take

the challenge? If you don't have enough, I can lend you a bit, but with interest." The beautiful woman wearing silk clothes smiled beautifully, and really paid for one challenge for Yue Yang. When she heard that Yue Yang was challenging alone, she laughed until she bent over: "Don't worry, I've already paid for 5 people, you can challenge continuously 5 times. Don't worry about the interest, I have patience, you can return it slowly, but you must challenge it 5 times, okay. Do you know the strategy for challenging this? If you don't know it's ok, I'll teach you. The first obstacle is the Aries Temple, the Golden King Beast inside is... Ah, they changed it this month, now it's a three-headed Chimera. Although it's a Gold-ranked Level 3 three-headed Chimera, it's actually quite easy to defeat it. First, kill the Sheep-head Battle Golems that are in front of the Hall of Light, then kill a group of Sheep-head Monsters, there aren't many of them, just a few dozens. They're all around Bronze-ranked Level 3 monsters, quite easy to kill. Walking into the main hall, you'll see a three-headed Chimera, don't panic. Turn left immediately, you'll see a small chamber, kill all the Sheep-head Shamans, and obtain the Silencing Sceptre that is capable of rendering the Chimera's left head useless. In the small chamber on the right side, obtain a Blindness Rune, it can be used 3 times, and when the right head is blinded, you can use your beast to fight the head in the middle. What is your beast?"

"Thorny Flower." Yue Yang answered honestly.

"..." The beautiful woman wearing silk clothes who had been called the Master of Luo Hua City was stunned for a few seconds. After regaining her bearing, she gave Yue Yang a thumbs up: "Your beast is not bad, using a Thorny Flower to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples is extremely creative. Nn, you can let the Thorny Flower swallow the three-headed Chimera alive, I remember that the Thorny Flower seemed to have the ability to eat corpses. That's

right, what level is your Thorny Flower?”

“Level One.” Once Yue Yang said this, the Golden Armour Guard Captain and his men all fell.

“This might prove troublesome, but I’ll continue to support you, you must have confidence. You’ll be fine, little thief, do your best.” The beautiful woman wearing silk clothes acted as if she was leading an investigation of the countryside, using her small hands to pat his shoulder, giving him generous amounts of encouragement.

“Good. Hui Tai Lang, let’s go.” Once Yue Yang heard that there were special items capable of restraining the Golden King Beast, his confidence skyrocketed.

“Master of Luo Hua City, you’re just pushing him to his death. He’s dead for sure.” The Golden Armour Guard Captain powerlessly watched Yue Yang’s figure, full of confidence, walk towards the teleport gate.

# Chapter 48 – The Three-Headed Chimera

---

When Yue Yang was transported to Aries Temple, he found himself standing on a huge island floating in midair.

Below it was an endless abyss.

Yue Yang picked up a rock and threw it down. For a long time, not a sound was heard.

As he left the rune-covered crystal columns of the teleportation area, a golden light rose from Yue Yang's feet instantly and formed a pale golden coloured barrier.

Hui Tai Lang was also enveloped by the barrier, but unlike Yue Yang, he could freely enter and exit it, while the barrier moved with Yue Yang.

“This seems like it was copied from online games. Oh well, its existence is reasonable. Forget it, I might as well go see what the three-headed Chimera is like.” Yue Yang was not going to act like a scientist, trying to figure out what kind of power or law controlled all these. Furthermore, putting the Tong Tian Tower aside, his own body had many more unexplained mysterious phenomena.

He was too lazy to think any further and summoned his Barbarian Cow Shadow, using the Barbarian Cow Shadow that would never truly perish to scout the area ahead.



Walking across the straight path that extended for nearly a hundred metres, he then passed through a set of heavy stone doors.

At the back was a massive building complex.

Surrounding the outer part of the buildings were ten Battle Golems roaming around.

These Battle Golems were around three metres tall. It was unknown what metal was used to create them, having a sheep's head atop a human's body. They reacted aggressively to Yue Yang's appearance and surrounded him instantly. On the sheep heads were strange drawings with ancient rune patterns, and a pair of jeweled eyes that glowed red like fire. Yue Yang had fought with a Rock Golem before and knew the weakness of these war puppets. They had neither life nor sentience, knowing only how to attack the nearest person. It would be disadvantageous to fight it head-on, but by using a few strategies, one could control their movements.

Yue Yang did not let his Barbarian Cow Shadow fight them, instead he kicked Hui Tai Lang's butt to make him act as a decoy and lure the Battle Golems away.

The Battle Golems were slow and their movements were sluggish. They only attacked the closest target. If it was only to lure them away, the nimble and energetic Hui Tai Lang could be completely counted on to do so.

When Hui Tai Lang saw the Sheep-head Battle Golems' slow movements, it felt that these metal frames were easy to bully and immediately rushed forward.

With a playful attitude, Hui Tai Lang jumped around every Battle Golem to attract their attention.

It even arrogantly raised its leg occasionally and peed on the Battle Golems' huge legs.

“You idiot, hurry up and lure them far away! Don't waste my precious time!” Yue Yang was very dissatisfied with Hui Tai Lang's arrogance. This guy was the stereotypical small fry who bullied the weak but feared the strong. When passing through Royal Dragon Valley, he let it lure away the worm groups in front. It acted as if it did not see those ferocious monsters like Nest Spiders and Bird Eating Mantises. Conversely, when he saw the weakest stinkbugs or maggots, he would rush over and bite them madly. He was even less reserved when he saw worm eggs, eating them heartily. If not for Hui Tai Lang rampaging around and provoking a large group of worms, passing through Royal Dragon Valley would have been even smoother.

If Yue Yang had not been helping them out secretly, Ye Kong and the Li brothers would have been the worm's dinner by now.

When Hui Tai Lang heard Yue Yang getting mad at it, it sobered up a little and lured the group of Battle Golems away.

There was still a battle waiting for Yue Yang as he arrived at the

entrance to the buildings.

At the gigantic entrance stood a bunch of Abyssal Magic Creatures and Sheep-head Monsters.

These guys were living organisms. Although they were not smart, they weren't stupid enough to be lured away as easily. They held a black iron lance in their hands as a weapon. Before shouting over to surround and attack, they had also summoned a green light to give each other support buffs.

If Hui Tai Lang were to fight against these Abyssal Magic Creatures, it would not be able to gain the upper hand.

But the Barbarian Cow Shadow was an exception. Yue Yang transferred the Giant Shadow's power onto the Barbarian Cow Shadow and she instantly changed into a human-shaped tank.

She thundered over, brandishing her large hands, smashing and beating the Sheep-head Monsters chaotically.

In front of the three-metre tall Barbarian Cow Shadow, the two-metre tall Sheep-head Monsters were like a bunch of midgets. Their lances were unable to heavily injure the Barbarian Cow Shadow shadow who had tough skin with high defence. The Barbarian Cow Shadow Shadow was also after all not a living entity, but only a half entity. She was still mainly a shadow, and did not have the feeling of pain unlike living beasts. The Sheep-head Monsters' attacks were completely ignored by the Barbarian Cow Shadow Shadow. She did not know how to use a weapon nor

understand the concept of a weapon. However, under the guidance of Yue Yang's consciousness, she grabbed two Sheep-head Monsters as weapons, and swung them towards the Sheep-head Monsters around her, decimating this group of Sheep-head Monsters.

Her current rank was not high, only being a Bronze-ranked Level 3 beast.

Although the rank was equal to that of the Sheep-head Monsters, her strength completely surpassed them, and far surpassed even the standard for Bronze-rank Level 3.

Yue Yang thought in his heart that if the Barbarian Cow Shadow's rank increased in the future, having an all-around improvement, these Sheep-headed Monsters would be unable to withstand even a single blow.

The only unfortunate thing was that even after fighting for a long time, he didn't see her using 'Doom's Eyes'.

It seemed like the probability of Doom's Eyes triggering was very low, and was only released against appropriate enemies.

These Sheep-head Monsters and Sheep-head Battle Golems were only a means to stall for time. Any warrior who were planning to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples had at least some standard. Almost any challenger would most likely have enough strength to defeat them. But, if one wasted too much time on them, once the protective barrier disappeared, the challengers were doomed to

fail. Before getting the Silencing Sceptre and the Blindness Rune to defeat the three-headed Chimera, a warrior who was Rank 5 and below wanting to defeat a Golden King Beast ranked three-headed Chimera would be akin to a fool's dream.

The Sheep-head Monsters' offensive power was not high, but they were classified as defensive-type beasts that were extremely hard to kill as well.

Not only that, their regenerative ability was pretty good too. Even if they were beaten down, they were able to stand up a while later to rejoin the fight.

Their fanatical, bloodthirsty eyes seemed to be hypnotised, even after being beaten up mercilessly by the Barbarian Cow Shadow, they did not try to escape, refusing to back down. When Yue Yang realised this, he immediately increased his speed, passing through the battlefield, running across the long passageways and entering the Aries Temple that was protected by the Golden King Beast.

What disappointed Yue Yang was that this Aries Temple was totally different from Saint Seiya's Stone Palace.

(TLC Note: 石头宫殿 – currently named Stone Palace because Zaza has no idea what this term refers to in the Saint Seiya universe.

This place was not what its name had implied.

(TLC Note: 挂羊头卖狗肉 – means dishonest advertising. Can also be put this way: Why you cheat my feelings?!)

The Aries Temple in front of his eyes was not a temple at all, but rather an incredibly huge arena.

The space within the arena was many times larger than a football field. In the centre of the arena, there was a gigantic pale gold-coloured beast, sleeping on the floor lazily.

Its colossal body was like a hill. Its back even had a pair of red fleshy wings. Yue Yang could not imagine how it could use those thin wings to even fly. This beast was lying down lazily on the field, sound asleep. Yue Yang could clearly see that it had three heads. The left one was a terrifying dragon head, unlike the eastern dragons. Instead, that head looked like the giant dragons from the West, with razor-sharp teeth and a red tongue, with poison dripping out of its mouth.

The head in the middle was a huge lion's head. Its mane was made out of raging flames. When it breathed through its gaping mouth, it would spit out a ball of flames.

On the right, was a white coloured sheep-head.

This sheep-head did not seem to be threatening at all, and gave the illusion of having a sense of holiness from it.

Under the neck of that white sheep, hung a small golden bell. All three heads were completely different and looked extremely weird. However, if one were to examine carefully, they would find a kind of inexplicable logic to it. As Yue Yang looked upon this huge beast emanating a pale golden radiance, his eyebrows furrowed. The

three-headed Chimera sleeping soundly also gave him a kind of pressure that was hard to express in words.

It was undeniable that this beast was extremely strong.

However, Yue Yang believed that the most powerful head out of the three was not the left dragon head dripping with poison, nor the middle fire-spitting lion head.

Rather, it was that white sheep head that seemed perfectly harmless...

A Level 6 Golden King Beast, although it was far from being as monstrous as Demon King Ha Xin, was still able to put strong pressure on Yue Yang. Hui Tai Lang who shrugged off the Battle Golems and entered had lost his arrogance shortly after. When it looked at the three-headed Chimera's hill-like body, its whole body trembled and ducked behind Yue Yang, a little fearful.

Only when Yue Yang gave it a flying kick, did Hui Tai Lang pretend to want to stake his life. It stood next to Yue Yang, but completely refused to move further in front.

As expected, this Level 3 Bronze-ranked Ironback Demonic Wolf could only watch this battle from the sidelines.

This battle...

How would he fight this battle?

## Chapter 49 – Guessing Riddles?

---

Seeing its hill-like body, there was no need to even mention its ability to spit poison or spew fire. The mere pressure that it emanated was unbearable.

According to the Master of Luo Hua City, the silk-robed lady, he should first grab the Silencing Scepter from the left hall, then to the right hall to grab the Blindness Rune. This would restrain both the left dragon head and the right goat head, then fight against the chimera's centre head, the 'Red Burning' lion head. Although the centre head was the largest, most intimidating-looking head and could be covered in flames on its surface, it was in reality the weakest head. It could even be called the greatest weakness of the Three-headed Chimera.

The Barbaric Cow, under Yue Yang's guidance, quickly got rid of the Sheep-head Monsters that were still stalking them.

As expected, when the Barbaric Cow rushed towards the entrance, the Sheep-head Monsters stopped.

They bellowed in a low tone and crowded inside the passageway, not daring to rush in. There was an obvious, natural fear of the Three-headed Chimera.

Yue Yang felt that his time was running out. He quickly ran along the sides of the hall, and ran like the wind towards the left. He was preparing to find the entrance to the side hall, but who knew that when he moved, that Three-headed Chimera suddenly woke up. Its



six huge eyes opened and when it spotted the intruder Yue Yang, it angrily roared. Its voice was earth-shattering and explosive. All the Sheep-head Monsters in the passageways were so frightened that they fled instantly...

The Three-headed Chimera's huge body stood upright, and looked like a huge moving hill that was made up of meat.

The poisonous dragon head opened its mouth, after letting loose a terrifying roar, some liquid was spit out from its large mouth, and was sprayed all over the ground.

Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang ten metres away, and ordered the Barbaric Cow to quickly retreat backwards. He felt the sky darkening, then innumerable amounts of green liquid being sprayed towards him... Luckily, he had the Shield of Absolute Defense, if not for it, he would have been drenched by the poison.

When the green liquid touched the stone floor, waves of green smoke were produced.

Below the green smoke, those solid blackstone were actually corroded by the green acid until it made a sizzling noise, just like when sugar was dissolved by hot water.

“Oh my God!” Yue Yang was shocked.

No wonder normal beasts would be killed in seconds when they met a Golden King Beast. This no longer seemed like an

exaggeration. The Three-headed Chimera's poison was a hundred times more potent than the Spitting Thorny Flower's poison. Could it be that the Three-headed Chimera had a relation to Yi Xing? But, only Yi Xing's blood was corrosive, its saliva wasn't this potent. As expected, this was worthy to be called a Level 6 Golden King Beast, it was indeed terrifying... If normal beasts like the Bronze Barbaric Cow was hit by a huge mouthful of the poison, even if it didn't die, it would have been crippled.

(TLC Note: 異型 – Yi Xing. We're not quite sure what this refers to, google is giving us allotype, while other attempts at understanding what the author is trying to refer to has resulted in the Xenomorph)

As for Hui Tai Lang's standard, if it were to rush up and fight the Three-headed Chimera alone, it would be like serving food on a silver platter to it.

If not for listening to the silk-robed lady's information when he first entered and getting the Silencing Scepter first before directly facing this kind of acid, fighting against the Three-Headed Chimera would be suicide.

Ye Kong that lanky guy, could have been enveloped by the saliva of this Three-Headed Chimera when he challenged the Aries Temple.

“Hong!”

The blazing lion head in the middle spewed out a fireball that

exploded at Yue Yang's feet. If not for the protective barrier, Yue Yang's little body would probably have been directly blown away by it. Yue Yang sweated intensely. Not only could it spit acid, it could spew fireballs too, he couldn't take this kind of abnormality.

Luckily, the sheep's head on the right was very quiet, and it had no response.

As Yue Yang ran, he thought evilly that if he was able to capture the Three-Headed Chimera to perform at a circus, the profits from the entrance fees would be pretty good.

In truth, the Three-headed Chimera did not even care about this shameless coward called Yue Yang. As a King of beasts, as long as its territory was not invaded, it would be fine. As for the little insects buzzing around, it did not really care. In its eyes, all the challengers were little insects that always made silly movements, taking a toothpick-esque sword, summoning summoned beasts that were like rats, overestimating their own strengths and attacking the chimera... When it saw Yue Yang disappearing, it gave out a huge yawn, and lay down comfortably again, continuing its sweet dreams.

The left passageway was around a hundred metres long and was pitch black. If not for Yue Yang previously entering the black space with Her Highness Fei Wen Li and signing the 'Soul Blood Contract', gaining Empress Fei Wen Li's night vision ability, he would have been walking blindly in the dark now.

The side hall was also as huge as a basketball court, and a few dozen Sheep-head Men were inside.

These Sheep-head Men were different from the ones outside. As soon as they saw Yue Yang storm in, they instantly transformed. Using a strange spell, the goatmen turned into [Takins](#). Those sharp, curved horns were more fearsome than the spears that human cavalry used. When their head lowered, they would rush towards the aggressor.

“Hui Tai Lang, expose your ass, let them aim at it...”

Yue Yang did not bother with how Hui Tai Lang would feel after hearing him say this, he had no time to bother with him.

Seeing the takins rushing closer, he ordered the Barbaric Cow to jump as high up into the air as possible, then use all her force to stomp on the ground and attack all the takins behind Hui Tai Lang. Almost in an instant, Yue Yang had decided on the best course of action. Only now did Yue Yang notice that he was very gifted in battle, but the only regret was that he could not participate in the battle directly. Otherwise, he could have used a better strategy.

All the takins lifted their spiral horns towards Hui Tai Lang and dashed towards it like the wind. It scared Hui Tai Lang so much he nearly until it nearly had a heart attack. It did not dare to expose his anus towards these takins, as that was courting death. It turned tail and fled, wishing that he could have grown four more legs.

The Barbaric Cow leaped high up into the air. Her giant figure fell on them as if she was a mountain.

The giant cow's kick, with the force of thunder striking the ground, landed on the floor heavily. Under the added support of the Giant Shadow, she unleashed a special technique 'Trample' with a hundred times the power.

“Hong! ”

The blackstone that was trampled on was smashed and spiderweb cracks formed all over it. The floor trembled and the whole hall was shaking.

As the shockwave dissipated, the power caused Yue Yang who was spectating at the sidelines to gape in awe.

What a frightening power.

The takins below the Barbaric Cow's feet were immediately flattened.

The takin corpses that were trampled underfoot were indistinguishable. Some were instantly turned into a meat paste, while the other takins who further away from the centre of the impact were thrown several metres away by the shockwave, and were unable to get up. The other takins who were even further away were stopped by the shockwave and were immobilised by dizziness. The Barbaric Cow followed Yue Yang's instructions strictly and did not continue the slaughter, but rather ran in big strides to save Hui Tai Lang who was running for its life... Although they were both Level 3 Bronze-ranked, the Barbaric Cow and Hui Tai Lang's strengths were not in the same tier. Not only

that, Hui Tai Lang was also judged to be one of the high quality beasts with six stars. If it were to be converted into a regular Level 3 Bronze-ranked beast, it probably did not even have the right to carry the shoes in front of the Barbaric Cow.

The few takins who were still chasing after Hui Tai Lang closely could nearly have exploded Hui Tai Lang's anus, but were flattened by the Barbaric Cow who was in pursuit.

When the threat to his anus disappeared, Hui Tai Lang threw itself on the takins again.

It pounced towards the closest takin and bit its throat. The bloodthirst in its eyes were as it it were saying: What I'm biting is not the throat, but loneliness.

The other takin crawled up and lowered its head to rush at him. Hui Tai Lang nimbly jumped and slashed at the takin with its claw.

First, he destroyed one of the enemy's eyes, then by borrowing the gravitational force of the dive, pounced onto an even larger-sized takin. The wolf's mouth opened up, showing its rows of sharp teeth, fatally striking the enemy by biting its throat... Hui Tai Lang fighting tens of Sheep-head Shamans transformed into takins by itself was of course an impossible feat, but it was still more than enough to fight against 3 of them at once. After all, it was still a variant Ironback Demonic Wolf that absorbed the Demon King Ha Xin's demonic qi and was different from regular Level 3 Bronze-ranked beasts.

Yue Yang did not have time to bother with the how the battle unfolded, and his heart only wanted to find the Silencing Scepter.

He had originally thought that the Silencing Scepter would be in the centre of the hall, or in the treasure chest, but when he opened it...

That was not the case at all.

The Silencing Scepter was suspended high up on the walls of the hall. Not only that, there was not just one of them, but three of them. Of course, only one of these Silencing Scepters was the real one although they looked exactly the same. If one took the wrong one, it would trigger the mechanical traps, and one's life could end just like that.

How would he find the real one?

On the wall at the side of each Silencing Scepter, were a set of obscure written characters, that could be counted as a hint for the challengers.

When Yue Yang looked at it, he nearly banged his head on the floor... Wasn't something like this yet another copied idea? Having to play this kind of game of riddles with his life on the line, he strongly protested against the unscrupulous gods of the company that had created Tong Tian Tower – Heaven.

# Chapter 50 – Silencing Scepter

---

On the wall of the side chamber, there were 3 Silencing Scepters hanging side by side, each with a line of characters separating them.

These three lines of characters were hints to the riddle's answer. Yue Yang needed to find the correct answer, but if he answered incorrectly, the mechanism for the trap would be set off.

Seeing that the time left for the Shield of Absolute Defense was running out, he inwardly grew frantic. However, this was the law in Tong Tian Tower. Everyone was tested this way; there was no other option. Of course, they could give up on the Silencing Scepters, and return to fight the Three-Headed Chimera...but that would be looking for more trouble.

“Isn't this just a riddle-solving game? I've played these things all the time. Don't tell me that my title as 'Riddle Solver Prince' is just for show?” Yue Yang consoled himself.

He looked at the leftmost sentence and read: I am a flyswatter, a flyswatter. Whenever I see a buzzing fly, I smack it to death.”

Flyswatter?

Would this flyswatter be able to swat the Three-Headed Chimera to death?



Yue Yang began to sweat profusely. He felt that it was much more likely that the Three-Headed Chimera would swat him to death instead.

The middle sentence said: “I am an awe-inspiring leader. Anywhere I appear turns into a silent hall. I am the only one who speaks, no one dares to chatter on in front of me. Without my permission, no one may speak.” Seeing this, Yue Yang inwardly cursed. Would a leader even appear in this kind of place? As expected, the leader was arrogant.

The sentence on the right side was the complete opposite of the previous two. It didn’t have any hint of arrogance, rather, its tone carried hidden bitterness and sentimentality. It was like the lamentation of a woman that had been widowed for many years: “My heart wants to tell you, my eyes want to tell you, my entire body wants to tell you, but you just don’t understand.”

“Aunt Qiong Yao, I hadn’t imagined that you would even have fans in the godly programmers that designed the games in Tong Tian Tower.” Yue Yang felt great admiration.

He could only make one out of three choices. Which would should he choose?

Yue Yang knit his brows. He felt that all of them had a slight possibility of being right, but they also didn’t seem to be the exact answer either. Exactly what was he supposed to choose?

The flyswatter? The leader? Or the widow?

Time passed as seconds turned into minutes. It was not an easy choice. Even if he found the real Silencing Scepter in the end, if the time for his Shield of Absolute Defense reached its limit, he wouldn't have its protection for defense, and the situation would most likely grow worse. Yue Yang was prepared to randomly choose one, like the extremely aggressive flyswatter. Maybe, it would turn out to be the vaunted Silencing Scepter.

Yue Yang was just about to leap forwards and grab the flyswatter.

Just then, he saw Hui Tai Lang suddenly get struck by a goat-antelope, sending it flying backwards until it heavily smashed into a wall.

Yue Yang unintentionally caught a glimpse. He suddenly discovered that there were four trap mechanism control levers surrounding the wall that had just been revealed to him.

It was strange.

He flew forwards at high speed and ran towards the control lever in the east. The word 'Wood' was carved on it, and the one in the south was 'Fire'. Yue Yang wildly looked at the one in the east, which had 'Earth' on it. The north one had 'Water'. Among the five elements, the only one it was lacking was 'Metal'. This made his heart race wildly; where could the Metal lever possibly be?

There were no other long levers on the ceiling or on the floor.

At that moment, Yue Yang came to a sudden realization. He had really been so stupid.

He swiftly ran to the entrance of the side chamber, and stopped in front of the two large Sheep-head Monster sculptures. There were spears in each of the guarding sculptures' hands.

The words carved on the left spear said: "I am a mute..."

Carved on the right one was "I am Metal".

Yue Yang reached a hand out to grab the spear on the right and cried out, "It's you!"

At the same time, his Shield of Absolute Defense began to flicker. Ignoring everything else, Yue Yang took the completely ordinary-looking spear and ran outside. His time now was limited. He could choose two paths; one was to hurry up and leave while his Shield of Absolute Defense was still present; the other was to face the Three-Headed Chimera head on.

Yue Yang clenched his teeth and shot towards the exit. No, he couldn't leave.

If he left, it would be the same as losing the fight, and he wouldn't gain anything from it.

If he stayed behind to face the chimera, his Shield of Absolute Defense would run out. However, he'd finally be able to get the Silencing Scepter...In any case, he'd at least gain a treasure. How could he not try it?

The current Yue Yang was very experienced with the stress Ultraman faced. On the outside, it seemed like Ultraman spent every day contently playing with girls, discussing love, and fighting some small monsters. However, he could at most last three minutes before using up all his power and losing all strength in his body. This made him feel self-abased, and he normally hid himself, not daring to face others. He did this for an extremely long time. If Ultraman could persevere for 3 hrs, then how could he be afraid of the small monsters? He would've long since gone to bed, no, gone to battle, and burst all of the small monster's asses before killing them.

(TLC Note: The author uses 凸凹曼, but as he describes the character to have a 3 minute limit, we've decided to use Ultraman because that's the only character Zaza can think of with a 3 minute limit that fights monsters. Update: 菊花 – instead of using anus, I've decided to use ass instead.)

Similarly, if his Absolute Defense's golden shield could last for 10 hrs instead of 10 minutes, then Yue Yang could have unhurriedly gathered the Silencing Scepters and the Blindness Rune. In addition, he could've drank a cup of tea, eaten a meal, and even taken a nap before fighting the Three-Headed Chimera with no rush at all.

The problem was, the Shield of Absolute Defense could only last

for one more minute.

Yue Yang was driven mad to the point where he was about to grip his head from frustration.

Why was it that he was unable to fight once the shield disappeared? By the time he had raced out of the exit and entered the side chamber on the right, his shield had already disappeared. Yue Yang then smirked; even without this shell, he was going to take part in battle. However, he hadn't thought that after raising his hand, his body felt as if it was sealed by some incorporeal force....his power hadn't been diminished but he couldn't release it, so he couldn't attack. Yue Yang wanted to swipe his fist outwards to attack, but he discovered that he couldn't move his fist at all. It was as if an invisible hand was pulling his arm back.

The law stated that at Star's Domain, within Aries' Temple, any ranker that has lost his Shield of Absolute Defense could only rely on their own power to protect themselves, and was unable to attack.

Only beasts could initiate attacks and participate in battles....

"If I die, I die." Yue Yang couldn't be bothered to go and search for the Blindness Rune since the spear-like 'Silencing Scepter' in his hand also had a time limit.

Yue Yang flew upwards and then thrust the spear down into the ground.

Instantly, the spear flashed with a white light, and in the blink of an eye, the entire arena was lit up with a brilliant light, making it look as if it were daytime.

Finally, it dispersed in all directions forming a circular shock wave.

The Three-headed Chimera's left dragon head opened its mouth, but was unable to spit out any of that green acid. A ton of the acid pooled out of its mouth, spilling onto the ground, but the head was unable to shoot it towards Yue Yang. The dragon head shook back and forth. It looked as if something had bound its mouth, and was currently trying to struggle out of its hold. But despite its struggles, it was unable to escape its predicament.

Yue Yang was inwardly delighted. This spear was indeed the real Silencing Scepter.

Spirals of white light were being released into the surroundings one wave after another by the Silencing Scepter....Yue Yang could sense that its greatest time limit was only 10 minutes. In other words, if he wasn't able to defeat this Three-Headed Chimera within 10 minutes, he would be in danger. Hui Tai Lang had long since come out, but it hadn't dared to charge at the Chimera. Instead, it was hiding somewhere at a distance, lowly growling at the chimera the whole time.

The Barbaric Cow rushed forward fearlessly.

The Three-headed Chimera's great, flaming lion head in the

middle spat out scorching flames at the Barbaric Cow. However, the Barbaric Cow didn't know how to evade. Instead, she directly charged through it. She jumped high in the air, her hands forming fists, and then fiercely smashed down on the blazing lion head's nasal bone.

The blazing lion head roared out in anger and pain.

The Giant Shadow's support of adding a hundredfold strength had already disappeared because of the time limit. Otherwise, the flaming lion head would've suffered from a much more serious injury after receiving the Barbaric Cow's attack.

The dragon head was unable to spit out acid any more. It immediately turned around to help attack, trying to bite the Barbaric Cow. However, it didn't realize that Yue Yang was waiting for that moment, the instant it would change its target.

Xiao Wen Li understood his thoughts, and amidst a burst of brilliant light and a nice fragrance, she transformed and flew out as a rainbow.

Two of her hands were carrying Dual Icicle Blades that she used to slash down at the dragon head's long neck, inflicting a shallow wound. However, the freezing air around the blades had exploded, filling the air in the arena with snow. Completely sealed by the freezing ice, the struggling dragon head's movements grew sluggish, and its biting actions gradually diminished as well. Before it could bite the Barbaric Cow, its entire head had been sealed by the ice, and had turned into an ice sculpture.

These Dual Icicle Blades had frightening power. Even Hell's Demon King Ha Xin wouldn't have been able to prevent its arm from freezing and becoming as slow as a snail, let alone a level 6 Gold-ranked Three-Headed Chimera.

Yue Yang was extremely excited by the sight of Xiao Wen Li's attack.

As expected, she was definitely worthy of being called the Diamond-rank loli; she was really amazing. Even though she was still in the Larva state and only level 1, she was able to seal the dragon head of the Gold-ranked Level 6 Three-Headed Chimera in a single attack. She was even more useful than the Silencing Scepter. If Yue Yang had known this earlier, he wouldn't have needed to bother with expending effort to look for the Silencing Scepter. With this time, it would be better to look for the Blindness Rune on the right side.

Yue Yang glanced at the sheep's head on the right, even though it hadn't yet tried to attack.

However, Yue Yang had a faint feeling that this sheep's head with absolutely no intention of attacking was actually the most powerful and terrifying existence... Without the Blindness Rune to control the sheep's head, how would this battle end?



# Chapter 51 – The Golden Bell

---

The Barbaric Cow was brave beyond measure, and started attacking the blazing lion's head, using her arms, head, shoulders, and knees to smash into it.

Yue Yang split a part of his consciousness to connect with her, adding onto her base attacking instinct by allowing her movements to be smoother. A string of attacks that rained down like a hurricane hit the blazing lion's head until it couldn't find its own bearings. Unfortunately, she was unable to synchronise with Yue Yang's thoughts to use battle tactics. At this point in time, she did not have the added support of the Giant Shadow's hundredfold strength, causing her killing power to be limited.

Not only that, even if her true power far surpassed Bronze-rank Level 3, compared to a Gold-rank Level 6 King Beast's power, there was still a huge difference.

As the blazing lion's head counterattacked by biting back, her body suffered heavy injuries.

What made Yue Yang's head hurt the most was that the Barbaric Cow did not feel pain and did not know how to dodge. She would fight until the bitter end. Soon, she had been bitten so much that huge wounds could be seen on her body.

Not a single drop of blood flowed out.

At this time, she was still a half-living entity, and was slightly

different from normal summoned beasts.

As long as the shadow energy did not run out, even if the body made from the Barbaric Cow was completely destroyed, she was still able to fight ceaselessly. Yue Yang also knew that she who had lost the Giant Shadow's support, did not have enough power to fight against the blazing lion head. But, there was still a chance for her to invoke 'Doom's Eyes' when attacking, which would be able to turn the situation around.

Doom's Eyes might be able to instantly kill this blazing lion head.

"Hui Tai Lang, you coward. If you don't want my dinner tonight to be grilled wolf thigh, go bite the Chimera's butt now, and use your claws to slash its ass." When Yue Yang saw Hui Tai Lang not moving at all, he was extremely angry. It was actually spectating from the sides?

"Awoo!" The moment Hui Tai Lang saw Yue Yang getting angry, it quickly sprang forward, using all its strength to bite the Chimera's front claw, which was thicker than an elephant.

It was completely useless, but it tried to look as if it was proactive.

Although Yue Yang was angry, he could not be bothered to punch it right now. His mind was fully focused on controlling the Barbaric Cow linked to him through his mind, trying his best to dodge fatal blows coming from the blazing lion head. If the Barbaric Cow were to fight directly without his control, it was

estimated that she would be bitten into a few slabs of rotten meat by the enemy within three minutes.

After Xiao Wen Li froze the dragon head, she did not move forward to assist the battle, but rather closed her eye and silently gathered spiritual energy... Yue Yang reckoned that she was preparing her grimoire or a finishing move.

He did not want to affect her, and tried his best to let her freely bask in her quiet meditation.

This Serpent Demon Xiao Wen Li, kept pleasantly surprising him.

Who knew in the future what kind of startling action she would take?

Yue Yang was currently rejoicing inwardly, and did not think that a crisis would approach faster than a wind wolf, being craftier than a fox. A long black shadow crept near quietly, when Yue Yang finally noticed it, this long black shadow had already started to engulf Xiao Wen Li at an alarming pace.

“The heck?!”

Yue Yang’s was panicking inwardly. He should have been able to raise his hand and project a wall of [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi to block it.

But, he had forgotten that he was unable to attack and was unable to assist her in time and instead lost the best time to react.

At this extremely dangerous juncture, Hui Tai Lang's outline appeared. It came out from an unknown location and moved in front of Xiao Wen Li to block the shadow. That wolf who was originally a bully and a coward selflessly pounced towards that huge mysterious black shadow. Before it was even able to bite the enemy once, that black shadow opened up its mouth and swallowed Hui Tai Lang into its stomach.

“My god, Hui Tai Lang is finished...”

Yue Yang could finally see clearly that this was in fact a giant snake...

In fact, the Three-headed Chimera did not only have three heads, but also a tail that was a giant snake many times larger than the largest pythons seen on earth. A fully grown man would probably be unable to wrap his hands around it fully. Hui Tai Lang was not even large enough for it to be stuck between its teeth.

Yue Yang was unable to do anything, and could only order the Barbaric Cow that was riddled with injuries to rush over and hope that her brute strength could stall this giant snake monster.

If Xiao Wen Li were to cut it off, it might be possible to save Hui Tai Lang who was just swallowed.

The Barbaric Cow stampeded over, but the giant snake's reaction was faster. The snake's body moved and quickly coiled around her tightly, causing her body to make creaking noises.

If a normal beast was used, such a tight wrap would probably have killed it.

Luckily, the Barbaric Cow was only a half-living entity right now. Even if the body was wrapped until it changed shape, its bones breaking, she was still able to attack without caring. Yue Yang could see that the Barbaric Cow's nose and mouth were like the Bronze Barbaric Bull's previous attack. A fiery light appeared, following that the eyes glowed with a red light. As Yue Yang predicted, the power was finally unleashed against an appropriate enemy.

Doom's Eyes was finally invoked.

The giant snake that was tightly coiled around the Barbaric Cow's body painfully cried out, and fell onto the floor, powerless, its whole body continuously convulsing.

Yue Yang opened his eyes wide and was startled. What was going on?

This snake did not die at all?

It looked like it had only suffered a severe wound and was close to death, but was not instantly killed.

Could it be that powerful beasts that surpassed the other in strength by a few grades could resist Doom's Eyes? Or was it an inherent ability of the Golden King Beast to resist Doom's Eyes? Yue Yang was more shocked that after the giant snake tail fell onto the ground with severe injuries, besides the frozen dragon head still being frozen, the other two heads were completely devoid of any reaction to pain. It was as if they were not affected at all. That white sheep head continued to gaze at Yue Yang with serene eyes, causing Yue Yang to feel uneasy inside. Something was wrong, this white sheep head was too quiet.

On the other hand, the blazing lion head was roaring and snarling at the Barbaric Cow.

Even when the large snake of the Three-headed Chimera was down, the other heads were not affected at all. Were their souls completely different, with each head having a soul?

Yue Yang could not understand this at all.

At this time, Xiao Wen Li's Diamond Grimoire summoned by her flashed golden.

Within the golden light, a hideous monster with its head full of snakes, possessing a human torso with a snake's tail was summoned. It held onto a silver bow and golden arrows. When it appeared, an arrow instantly shot out straight into the left eye of the blazing lion head. The blazing lion head painfully cried out, and immediately turned to attack it.

The snakes on that hideous monster started moving and showed the face behind the snake...

The blazing lion head was turned into stone in an instant all the way to the neck. It completely became an ashen rock statue. Even the golden arrow stuck in its eyes became a stone arrow.

“Stone Element Medusa. Wow, it’s too strong.” Yue Yang was extremely excited. Xiao Wen Li possessed four guardian beasts, and one of them was this Stone Element Medusa. Xiao Wen Li had never summoned it before, and he had thought that her current spiritual energy was not enough and thus was unable to summon it. He did not think that she would have sufficient spiritual energy to summon one of them. Even a single Stone Element Medusa was enough to shock the whole field... The blazing lion head that had endured all the mad blows from the Barbaric Cow without any problems was instantly petrified when the Stone Element Medusa came out.

The Stone Element Medusa then nocked its arrow and aimed at the white sheep head, preparing to shoot the second arrow.

But, Xiao Wen Li lightly groaned, unable to support her own body.

When Yue Yang hurried to hold her up, that Stone Element Medusa was unable to shoot the second arrow in time, and its body turned into a stream of light, returning into the Diamond Grimoire... Xiao Wen Li was still in her larva state. Summoning

such a strong beast like the Stone Element Medusa was still pushing it too much right now.

Looking at Yue Yang's face full of anxiety, Xiao Wen Li opened her big eyes that seemed to speak. Even without saying anything, a sweet smile appeared on her little face.

She slithered down from his arms and went towards the giant snake which lay on the ground. She swung the Dual Icicle Blades and cut off the snake's body.

The Barbaric Cow took a long time to finally find the dying Hui Tai Lang, who was covered in acid.

“Whew, you weren't killed off. I knew this cockroach-like wolf wouldn't be that easily killed off.” Seeing that Hui Tai Lang was saved, Yue Yang acted as if he didn't care on the surface, but he was still extremely happy inside. Although Hui Tai Lang was trash who bullied the weak, was afraid of the strong, and afraid of death, it was very obedient and always followed his commands. Its temper was also pretty good. No matter how much it was kicked around, it maintained the image of a loyal underling. As a non-contracted beast, being able to do all these was already not bad. If it were other beasts, under a situation without a contract, they would probably have fled when seeing a Golden King Beast like this Three-headed Chimera. However, Hui Tai Lang was still able to go forward and risk its life to save Xiao Wen Li. This caused Yue Yang to see it in a new light.

“Baa, baa baa” The white sheep head suddenly cried out.



“...” Something was not quite right, Yue Yang had a premonition of danger regarding the white sheep head. Seeing that it had finally started moving, he quickly picked up Xiao Wen Li.

The heavily injured Barbaric Cow placed the dying Hui Tai Lang on her back and followed closely behind Yue Yang.

From the mouth of the white sheep head, a beam of gentle white light flowed out and sprayed onto the snake tail that was split into two. As Yue Yang stared dumbfounded, the snake tail that was cut off quickly grew a new head, and two of them at that. As the white light spread around, the petrified blazing lion head and the frozen dragon head was dispelled of their petrification and freeze. The wounds that were caused by Xiao Wen Li and the Barbaric Cow were also quickly fully healed.

Yue Yang looked on powerlessly. One simply could not play with others like this.

After all the trouble to finally fight the Three-headed Chimera until it was half-dead, a single stream of white light allowed it to completely recover. This kind of abnormal monster, who could have won against it?

As Yue Yang was cursing the creator of Tong Tian Tower, the game company – Heaven for being twisted and unfair, preparing to protest violently, the Three-headed Chimera suddenly spread its huge wings that seemed to cover the entire sky. With one beat, a strong gale was created, and in the blink of an eye, it rose towards

the sky and vanished without a trace...

In the hall, only a large snake head and a small golden item was left behind. That golden item was the golden bell that was originally hung around the white sheep head's neck.

What, what did this mean?

Could it be that this was the equipment dropped after beating the monster? But the BOSS wasn't killed. There was a reward even if the BOSS wasn't killed? What kind of treasure was this golden bell?

# Chapter 52 – Hidden Treasure Map?

---

As to what use this golden bell had, why did it drop?

Yue Yang couldn't think of the reason even after scratching his head for quite a while.

But, he reacted quickly and ran towards it, picking this golden bell up. Although he did not know what it could be used for, Yue Yang was sure that this was a treasure.

It was slightly heavy when he took it. He could feel that the golden bell was brimming with energy and held a kind of mysterious power within it.

Yue Yang's Divine Vision was incredibly useful in this situation.

What use did this treasure have?

After concentrating for a long period of time, Yue Yang was able to see through the golden bell that was originally unable to be seen through. Under his unwavering determination, he finally understood a large portion of the golden bell's basic properties. At this instant, aside from the knowledge that was related to the golden bell flowing through his mind, a kind of ethereal comprehension happened within his heart, as if he had been enlightened... The whole of Yue Yang's spirit world was awed. The region in his heart expanded considerably, and felt as if it was limitless, and could make him fly wherever he pleased... That kind of feeling was extremely wonderful, and had a kind of feeling that

could not be expressed, like drinking a warm bowl of soup when being both cold and hungry, soothing the body and heart. It was also like being in a hot and stuffy room where a window suddenly opened, allowing all the fresh air in the world to enter, followed by a spray of cold water over the entire body, releasing the entire person from a dangerous place.

If one word were to be used to describe this, it would be refreshing.

When Yue Yang opened his eyes, he felt that his sight had become much clearer, and even the minute details that he was unable to see before, was being seen clearly.

The fluctuations of living beings' breathing that was normally overlooked was easily captured by the eyes.

The Copper Grimoire suddenly appeared, and as Yue Yang opened it up to look...

As expected, Divine Vision had risen in level.

Divine Vision's level went up from 1 to 2.

Actually, the inherent skill Divine Vision was already improved once during the battle at White Stone City's Merry Forest, where Wu Yi had summoned the Bronze Barbaric Bull to use Doom's Eyes on Yue Yang's Phantom Shadow. However, it did not increase in level. Now, after seeing through an item for the second time,

Divine Vision had finally increased in level, and this let Yue Yang secretly rejoice inwardly.

Yue Yang felt that Divine Vision had gained a large amount of strength, and had even awakened some kind of special abilities, but without the chance to use it, he was unable to ascertain what kind of ability it was.

“Eh?”

On the blank pages of the summoning grimoire – perhaps due to the rise in level of Divine Vision, or perhaps due to the rise in rank of the Copper Grimoire from Beginner to Intermediate, the basic properties of the golden bell could actually be transmitted via words surfacing on the blank page. When Yue Yang looked at it, it was slightly different from what he had felt from the golden bell: Golden Bell, Beast Accessory, Light Type, Gold-ranked, Triple Curse Seal, Evaluation: Gold – 1 Star.

In Yue Yang’s mind, what he had seen from Divine Vision also had another weird title called ‘Runic Device’.

Perhaps, due to the Copper Grimoire’s rank being too low, its functions were incomplete and thus was unable to display everything.

Since it was a Beast Accessory... Yue Yang handed the golden bell over to Xiao Wen Li.

The little loli snake demon received it and shook it a few times with her small hands. Aside from the sound of the bell being crisp and clear, there was nothing fun about it at all. Her large eyes cutely blinked a few times, then handed it back to Yue Yang.

Clearly, she did not like this bell that much.

Are you disliking the fact that a Gold-ranked equipment isn't awesome enough, and you actually want a Diamond-ranked treasure?

Yue Yang sweated profusely.

Just this golden bell had took such a great amount of effort to obtain. The Tong Tiang Tower's abnormality, not even mentioning the sheer amount of monsters, even the BOSS was so strong that it made people speechless, how could it be easy to fight for equipment? As Yue Yang saw that Xiao Wen Li did not want it, he thought in his heart if this were to be hung around the neck of the Barbaric Cow, that would be pretty good too.

In contrast to Xiao Wen Li's uncaring attitude, the Barbaric Cow showed a completely different attitude.

The Barbaric Cow could not think, but instinct drove her to take the bell.

The moment she took it, the bell shone with a white light which turned into a rain of light. It drifted over the tattered body of the

Barbaric Cow. At this point in time, Yue Yang finally realised that this golden bell had the special healing effect of Holy Light. The healing effect of the golden bell was amazing. Within a few moments, those wounds on the Barbaric Cow where bones could be seen through became shallow and eventually disappeared. Even that feeble half-dead Hui Tai Lang slowly stood up, even if it looked slightly weak, it had recovered a bit of its appearance of a cockroach-like wolf.

“Awoo!” Hui Tai Lang stood up and immediately pounced towards the severed snake head and bit into it hatefully.

It looked like Hui Tai Lang was a narrow-minded wolf that did not forget its grudges. It wasn't any better than the vengeful Yue Yang who would back stab other people.

Yue Yang felt that he should look at the right hall this time. There was still a 'Blindness Rune' inside. Even though he couldn't make it in time to search for it before fighting the Three-headed Chimera, now that the Three-headed Chimera had gone, there wasn't any reason to miss it. As for the Silencing Scepter, that was a one-time consumable item. After ten minutes, the Scepter that had lost all of its power shattered completely into pieces and fell onto the ground, becoming pieces of junk that were even more brittle than biscuits.

The right hall also had a group of Sheep-head Warriors.

They were more durable than the Sheep-head Shamans, but with the Barbaric Cow and Xiao Wen Li, the battle ended quickly.

What made Yue Yang astonished was that there was no need to answer any riddles in the right hall, and the Blindness Rune was floating in an extremely conspicuous location atop an [energy cauldron](#).

“Could this be a trap mechanism?” Yue Yang who had gone through many trials had already become slightly suspicious of everything, and felt that this was too easy. He searched meticulously within the hall. He found five and a half broken skulls, a few corroded weapons, a few arrowheads and a silver ring.

The silver ring was already deformed and was void of power. Disappointed, Yue Yang threw it away.

Finally, he set his eyes upon the energy cauldron.

‘To store or retrieve items, one gold coin must be offered as energy each time.’ This was the sentence engraved on the energy cauldron. When Yue Yang saw it, he immediately flipped his middle finger at it. “Isn’t this bullying the poor? Which idiot would put items inside, isn’t it the same as wasting money... Eh, that’s not right. If this could store items, then wouldn’t it be like this? For example, if a strong person from some family came in and placed an artifact inside, then wouldn’t that allow the low leveled young descendants of the family to use it to farm BOSSes?”

As he thought of this, Yue Yang almost started drooling.

It was only a gold coin, he had loads of money.



First, Yue Yang took the Blindness Rune into his arms, then threw a gold coin into the energy cauldron.

An energy wave in the form of light appeared from within the cauldron. Following that, a letter was floating, suspended in midair where the Rune of Blindness originally was. This letter seemed brand new, and the ink on the letter had not dried. The bloody fingerprint on it could be clearly seen.

“A letter?” Not seeing an artifact float out from the cauldron, Yue Yang was slightly disappointed.

Unwilling to give up, he threw a few more gold coins into the energy cauldron. However, what he obtained were letters or parchment, wedding rings and daggers, and lastly there was even a beast egg that had not been incubated... After wasting fifteen gold coins, there was no sign of an artifact anywhere. Yue Yang felt that he had made a big loss this time. Opening up the letters, almost all of the content within the letters were wills. Yue Yang blinked his eyes a little, aside from hoping that someone later would see this letter and give the person mentioned in the letter a message or an item to remember them by, there was nothing in the contents of the letters that gained the interest of Yue Yang.

Only one letter where the author written arrogantly, “You want my treasure? If you want it, I can give it to you. Go find it in Death Canyon... Any item you take from there will make people will go mad for it.”

Yue Yang looked and shouted, “My god, do you think you’re Gold Roger from One Piece?”

However, this guy not only had a map drawn on parchment, but also a beast egg of the highest quality that could reach 5 stars as proof. It looked like there was such a thing. What kind of place was Death Canyon? Although Yue Yang had not been around the Soaring Dragon Continent for more than a few months, but with regard to that place, he had already heard about it far too many times. Death Canyon’s other name was ‘Graveyard of the Rankers’. Even the faces of those Rankers at the level of a Level 6 Elder would change when hearing of it.

Could it be that there really was a treasure trove hidden in Death Canyon?

Yue Yang imagined a treasure trove being full of gold and treasures piled on top of it, with most of them being artifacts. In the middle, a naked female dragon would be sleeping there, extremely lonely, waiting for himself to console her... my god. Yue Yang’s heart was full of sexual fantasies, and his little p\*nis shot up on its own accord...

## Chapter 53 – It's decided, let's LIE!

---

To Yue Yang, the Hidden Treasure Map was indeed safest in his pocket..

He was rather satisfied with the spoils this time. Not only had he acquired the Golden Bell, the Blindness Rune and a Hidden Treasure Map, he had also raised the level of his [Divine Vision] ability. This was actually the thing he was happiest about. It must be known that Yue Yang's noblest aspiration was to raise the limitations of the [Divine Vision] and be able to see through clothes, making it easy for him to peek under beautiful girls' clothes anytime and anywhere... The only thing that made his heart hurt a little was that he had spent a whole 15 gold coins in order to acquire the Hidden Treasure Map, stretching his wallet to the extreme. This had caused the previously rich third young master of the Yue Clan to go a little bankrupt.

Stepping out of the wrestling ring, Yue Yang saw that Hui Tai Lang was rolling on the ground; it looked like it was really in pain.

Could this dog have actually stuffed itself with the snake's corpse, trying to vent its anger from being swallowed by the snake?

He only found out that it wasn't the case when he observed a little more. The Demonic Energy inside Hui Tai Lang's body had fused better because of the fight. With the addition of the Level 6 Gold-ranked Chimera's snake tail flesh to improve his condition, his level had risen.

He had risen to a Level 4 Bronze-ranked beast, from a Level 3 Bronze-ranked Ironback Demonic Wolf.

Of course, the cause of its pain was the level increase.

Yue Yang saw that Hui Tai Lang looked like it was choking on something, and thought that the snake bone that it had eaten was stuck in its throat. Opening Hui Tai Lang's mouth wide to check, he saw a green crystal that was even bigger than the size of a fist, stuffed in its throat...

Is that a Demon Crystal?

Where did it come from?

Yue Yang then saw a hole on the snake's forehead that was caused by Hui Tai Lang, and realized what was happening. He angrily gave a flying kick of fury to this greedy bastard of a dog.

“Hui Tai Lang, you really have guts. It wasn't easy for me to defeat this snake beast, yet you dared to steal my Demon Crystal? It was the first time for ME to even acquire a Demon Crystal, such a precious item. You, instead, have already eyed on it without saying anything. It serves you right to be choked to death!” With Yue Yang's kick, Hui Tai Lang flew more than ten metres and then fell down hard on the ground with a loud thump. However, the kick had saved it as the green crystal was thrown out of its throat with the impact. After almost dying, Hui Tai Lang didn't dare to have any more ideas on the enormous Snake Demon Crystal. It quickly scrambled back up, bit the Snake Demon Crystal and

brought it back to Yue Yang with an eager tail. Seeing there was a little bit of drool on top of the crystal, it quickly wiped it clean, then stared at its master giving him a sincere, honest look of 'I-just-wanted-to-try-out-what-it-tasted-like'.

As far as Hui Tai Lang was concerned, Yue Yang thought it was both funny and ridiculous.

If he had come out even ten minutes later, he reckoned that this fellow would be the first beast in the Soaring Dragon Continent that had the bad luck of being choked to death by trying to swallow a Demon Crystal due to its greed, not even getting to celebrate its rising of a level before dying so miserably.

It was quite lucky. If he had tried to examine the Hidden Treasure Map inside the hall first, Hui Tai Lang would have been dead.

The monsters had been defeated, and the treasures had also been acquired. Yue Yang prepared to leave happily when suddenly he knocked his forehead. Ah, I still need to get the proof of completion.

Yue Yang crossed over to the corner of the arena and walked towards the secret door that was revealed after the three-headed Chimera had left. When he entered the room, he found out that the room could only be opened for a limited time. Yue Yang realized that he had spent too much time inside the Right Hall, and the time left before the secret door closed again was not much, hence he quickly charged in.

The lights shining inside the secret door was extremely warm and clear, yet it did not hurt one's eyes.

In front, there were two statues of beautiful goddess-like beings. One of them held a beautiful gold plated basket that contained a few white-coloured balls that emitted a warm light. The other statue was blindfolded, her left hand on her heart, and her right hand holding a golden-coloured balance.

Yue Yang took out his own Crystal Card and put it on one side of the balance. There wasn't any reaction, so he placed it on the other side.

After putting the crystal card on the left side of the gold-coloured balance, it immediately emitted a rainbow coloured light.

The white coloured balls on the gold plated basket immediately lighted up, emitting a ray of bright light towards the Barbaric Cow and Hui Tai Lang. The ray that fell upon the Barbaric Cow was larger than the one that fell upon Hui Tai Lang. When the Barbaric Cow and Hui Tai Lang were bathed in the ray of bright lights, the white coloured balls on the gold plated basket became dark. Finally, they became gigantic crystal balls that had used up all their energy. Yue Yang extended his hand greedily, wanting to take away this crystal ball, but the power of the Law Guardian prevented him from doing so, and even when using all his strength, was he unable to move the crystal ball.

There was a time limit, if the secret door was shut, who knew

what kind of consequences would follow.

As Yue Yang did not want to be locked in this secret room for his entire life, he extended his hand to grab the Crystal Card, and immediately turned and left.

Only when he returned to the portal that had sent him here, did Yue Yang let loose a sigh of relief. He felt that when he was challenging it this time, his mental preparation was not enough. At the start, he was challenging it with a 'let's play and see what happens' kind of attitude, which ended in danger all around.

However, after going through this challenge ignorantly and fearlessly, he had also gained much experience. If he challenged it again, he estimated that he could go through it easily.

Looking at the accomplishments and accumulated points on the Crystal Card, Yue Yang showed a smile on his face.

The Twelve Zodiac Temples were really worthy of being the hardest and most abnormal challenges. They were hard enough to make one become frantic, but after clearing the challenge successfully, the amount of points gained was also very high. Yue Yang had seen Ye Kong, Li Qie, and the Li brothers' Bronze Cards; all the points they had accumulated up till now was less than what he had gotten during that one challenge. As for the prizes for successfully completing the challenge? What was that white light? Yue Yang summoned his grimoire, and saw at once that the Barbaric Cow's other abilities had not changed at all. Only an additional attribute, 'Low Sentience' had been added, which had made him so happy that he thought it was a dream.

In this world of numerous beasts, what was the hardest ability to raise?

Without a doubt, it's sentience.

Why was it that a beast's ability to transform into a humanoid was so highly evaluated? The reason was that the ability to become a human also allowed a beast to gain sentience through evolving. Why was it that some beasts that weren't weak, they were actually much stronger than other beasts at the same level, yet people had still given them a low evaluation, calling them Toiling Beasts? The reason was that they were stupid, as they had no sentience.

Sentience was also a criteria for assessing a beast's ability to evolve. The higher its sentience, the higher its potential to evolve; the faster it evolved, the more skills gained from its evolution.

The biggest difference between Sacred Beasts and ordinary beasts was that Sacred Beasts had high sentience levels, while ordinary beasts did not have sentience.

Another way to put it would be the difference between that of humans and monkeys.

The Barbaric Cow originally had no sentience, she only knew how to clash head-on with the opponent foolishly. By successfully challenging the Aries Temple, the Law Guardian rewarded her by raising her sentience. Of course, this made Yue Yang extremely happy. With sentience, it would be easier for her to understand his



commands, her ability to comprehend the meaning would be better, and it would be easier for her to have matching ideas. With sentience, he would be able to ‘teach’ her to use some simple combat skills.

“Keep all the treasures, definitely cannot let others see it.” Yue Yang did not care about the others, but he was afraid that the silk-clothes wearing beauty, the Master of Luo Hua City, would see it.

This Master of Luo Hua City, gave people a feeling of ‘danger’. Although she wasn’t as dangerous as the big-breasted beauty he met at Shang Wu Camp, this female was obviously not someone who was easy to deal with.

She was still a City Master.

People such as the City Masters and Lords, in the Soaring Dragon Continent where the strong prey on the weak, and in the world where Rankers were respected, these posts could only be held by Level 6 Elders.

In other words, this Master of Luo Hua City, that silk-clothes wearing girl, was at least a Level 6 Elder. In the entire Soaring Dragon Continent, she was also an outstanding person. When Yue Yang didn’t have any treasures on him, of course it was no problem, but now that he had acquired a treasure, he had to be careful. He did not want her to find out about his real strength from his feat of acquiring treasures right after he stepped out.

After being teleported out, Yue Yang didn’t see that silk-clothes

wearing Master of Luo Hua City, but he saw Ye Kong and the others looking at him as if they had seen a miracle descend from heaven.

“You’re not dead?” Ye Kong questioned stupidly.

“No kidding!” Yue Yang snorted, in a bad mood.

“You really didn’t die? How, how is this possible?” The Golden Armour Guard Captain’s mouth was so wide that a three-headed Chimera could be stuffed inside.

“...” Yue Yang was speechless, and he felt that these people’s exaggerated reactions were absurd. Curious, he replied them with a question: “Why is it that so many people who go in to challenge are fine, but when I go in I’ll definitely die?”

“Because even when the challengers were Level 5 Rankers, not a single one of them was able to come out alive even after 2 hours. You’re the first, no that’s wrong, you’re only a Level 1 Beginner, not a Level 5 Grandmaster... Can you tell us, you stayed in there for 3 hours, what were you doing? Were you chatting with the three-headed Chimera?” The Golden Armour Guard Captain had the urge to bash his head violently on the wall, because when he challenged it, his record was half an hour before he retreated. Normally, it was as if he had won the lottery, and bragged to others about it often, but he never thought that his record would be beaten so easily by a Beginner.

“Oh right, what were you doing inside?” Everyone was extremely

curious, and crowded around Yue Yang, becoming inhuman spectators to him.

“Ah... “ Seeing the expressions on the crowd around him, Yue Yang decided to feed them a large amount of lies.

## Chapter 54 – The Definition Of A Beast's Strength?

---

The audience had unlimited expectations while looking at Yue Yang.

Who knew that one sentence from the Yue Yang would cause them to fall flat on the ground.

“Actually, I’ve been doing nothing but sleeping here, has three hours passed so quickly?” Yue Yang swept his gaze across everyone present with a feigned look of innocence on his face. Seeing Yue Yang’s expression that was really just looking to be beaten, the Golden Armour Guard Captain really wished he could just throttle him to death. Sleeping anywhere would’ve been fine, but why would he go to the Twelve Zodiac Temples to sleep? Sleeping at the Aries Temple meant throwing oneself into a bloody battle, and breaking a record after nearly losing one’s life. Was there any person in this world more abominable than this brat?

“Didn’t you go in and see?” Ye Kong was confused. Could it be that this Yue Clan’s third young master wasn’t curious about it at all? He didn’t want to go in and see the Three-headed Chimera?

“I went in, but wasn’t able to get out. Since I was bored, I took a nap.” Yue Yang lied without batting an eyelid.

“Impossible!” One of the Golden Armour Guardians standing next to the Golden Armour Captain denied this in a loud voice.

“If you went in, you would have been eaten in one mouthful by the Three-headed Chimera, how could you survive?” One of the mercenary leaders who had bet that Yue Yang would definitely die was also shaking his head in disbelief. “Even with the Shield of Absolute Defense that lasts ten minutes, it’s impossible to stay here for three hours, definitely impossible!”

“The Shield of Absolute Defense that lasts for ten minutes was sufficient for me to walk around here. As for the Three-headed Chimera, it never cared about me from the very beginning, neither did I care about it. The both of us just slept and minded our own business.” Yue Yang’s lying technique was extremely good, and spoke it as if it were the truth.

“What did the Three-headed Chimera look like?” Another Golden Armour Guardian asked skeptically.

“A dragon head on the left, a lion head in the middle, a goat head on the right and a snake tail. Oh, that’s right. Below the neck of the sheep head, there was a golden bell too.” When Yue Yang was lying, the truth was mixed with lies, and normal people were completely unable to differentiate the both of them. Even if everyone doubted him, nobody could find any inconsistencies in his speech, not even a tiny detail.

“How did you get out later on?” A bald mercenary asked.

“Hui Tai Lang lured those Sheep-head Monsters, and at the mouth of the passageway, the Sheep-head monsters did not dare to

enter due to fearing the Three-headed Chimera. Hui Tai Lang bit them one by one to death, then lured the Battle Golems away and I entered. However, because of its extremely low work efficiency, the passageway wasn't cleared even after I took a few naps, and I waited until I was really bored." Everyone spit blood at what Yue Yang said. If this youngster actually went in to sleep, everything was what his pet wolf had accomplished?

"Liar, a single wolf couldn't kill every single Sheep-head Monster, there are dozens of Sheep-head Monsters inside there alone." One of the warriors who had lost their bet shouted loudly.

"How can you prove that you were sleeping there, and not sleeping at the teleportation circle?" Someone questioned.

"Regardless of what you say, as long as you've come out, it's fine." Ye Kong did not care where Yue Yang was sleeping, as long as this Yue Clan's Third Young Master was fine, that would do. If he had died, the Yue Clan would never let go of Ye Kong, and even his parents might not have kept their lives. In the three hours that Yue Yang did not come out, his heart was tormented to the point of him planning to kill himself. Now that this Third Master came out all well and unscathed, Ye Kong's heart was finally at ease.

"You've played in the Twelve Zodiac Temples already, let's go back." The Li brothers were so frightened both their bodies had started sweating. They quickly advised Yue Yang to leave this place.

"Right, right. We should go back now." Ye Kong quickly chimed in, by all means this Young Master could not be allowed to go into

the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

“Don’t move from there! The few of you deliberately came together to scam people!” One of the mercenary leaders who lost his money till his eyes were red angrily bellowed out.

“The ones who bet were you, we had nothing to do with it. Anyway, why are you all coming around here to see us rushing into the Twelve Zodiac Temples? Why do you need to care about what we did? Can’t we go in and sleep if we like to do so?” Ye Kong was also angry now. Those guys had been mocking them since just now. Their mouths were extremely repulsive. Now that the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master had unexpectedly come back out, they dared to use sleeping and swindling money to talk to them, and not giving them any face at all? It was fine to be shameless as a person, but not to this extent!

“...” The mercenaries who heard it became embarrassed.

Indeed, the bets were made up by this group of people, and was completely unrelated to this youngster.

But, this situation could not be carelessly glossed over, and they had to be clear on what happened. Otherwise, the people who won would not rest easy and the people who lost would not accept it. Within the crowd of people watching in a circle, the mercenary leader who lost the most money sneered, saying, “Let’s make another bet. I bet that he was only sleeping at the side of the teleportation circle when he went in and did not go into the Aries Temple at all. Who wants to bet with me? I’ll bet two gold coins.”

Although everyone knew that Yue Yang had been inside for three hours, they did not dare to bet on whether or not he was sleeping at the side of the teleportation circle or if he had gone into the Aries Palace.

The Golden Armour Captain furrowed his eyebrows slightly. Only he who had challenged the Aries Temple multiple times and knew of a little secret.

If one did not enter the Aries Temple within half an hour, any challenger would be thrown out of the Twelve Zodiac Temple by its Law Guardian. It was impossible to stay inside the Aries Temple while not doing anything. Within half an hour, if the Battle Golem and the Sheep-head Monsters were not gotten rid of, or if one did not enter the Aries Temple, that would be viewed as a failure to complete the challenge.

He was absolutely sure that this young man had entered the Aries Temple. Otherwise, there was no way to stay for up to three hours inside.

Of course, as a guard captain of the Twelve Zodiac Temples' portal, he would not leak this secret out.

“I’ll bet with you.” Yue Yang smiled widely. “Do you dare to?”

If the Master of Luo Hua City was here, Yue Yang would ignore these trash-talking mercenaries. However, she was not here. Yue Yang thus decided to take this opportunity to trample on these



condescending, arrogant mercenaries. If they ran, that would be even better. It would let Hui Tai Lang establish his might, and cultivate it to become his first hired hand in front of people.

Of course, the Level 4 Bronze-ranked Hui Tai Lang could not fight against the Three-headed Chimera.

But, if it were to be used to battle against the mercenaries' beasts, its strength would be more than sufficient.

You have guts. How about you take out the evidence that you went into the Aries Temple and defeated the Sheep-head Monsters? Do you have their weapons? Do you even have any proof? If you have anything in your pockets, take them out." The mercenary leader looked at Yue Yang being empty handed and felt that his chances of winning were extremely high. If this youngster actually went into the Aries Temple, he would not necessarily bring an item of proof with him.

"Of course I have guts, but do you? If you have guts, increase the amount that you're betting. How about upping it to ten gold?" Yue Yang smiled like a little fox.

"..." The mercenary leader started to lose confidence. Ten gold was not a small sum, what if this youngster had really brought a item of proof with him?

"This world has too many people who talk big. People with guts are few and far between eh." Yue Yang disdainfully looked at the mercenary leader. His expression was like an emperor seeing an

eunuch. This kind of disdain made people unable to stand it. The mercenary leader and his teammates had the impulse to slice him up into pieces.

“Leader, I can’t stand this guy’s tone.”

“We’ll bet with him!”

“This youngster is too cocky, if we don’t give him a little lesson, he’ll still think that he’s the world’s strongest.”

A few of the mercenaries were crying out due to how angry they were. They took out their own money to give to the mercenary leader, and swore that they would stake themselves until either one completely lost. Living in this world, people’s lives were meant to vie for some reputation. If others looked upon them, and nothing was done, could they be counted as men? Although ten gold was a lot, everyone was still able to gather up that amount of money. Using all they had, they would fight against this youngster until they reached a conclusion.

Not all of the mercenaries who gathered around were so impulsive.

More people did not participate in this matter, but only looked from the sides and watched the scene unfold.

They could even lend money to the mercenary leader for betting. But, for them to raise the bet was not a joke. Who would bet

against a man that stayed within the Aries Temple for three hours before coming out. Who would bet against him? Even without considering whether he had challenged the Three-head Chimera or killed the Sheep-head Monsters, just sleeping inside for 3 hours was a feat of its own.

In the many years that the Twelve Zodiac Temples had been challenged, who would have ever heard of a top level person who would sleep there for three hours?

No, only this little thief.

“I’ll be the witness for this.” The Golden Armour Captain did not ask for any proof from Yue Yang. He knew that this little thief was bound to win. Afraid that the mercenaries would be unhappy at the outcome, he stepped up to be the witness.

“Take it out, take the item of proof outside. How can you prove that you went inside the Aries Temple afterwards?”

He felt that Yue Yang did not necessarily bring an item out as proof seeing that Yue Yang was not up to scratch.

Even if Yue Yang did, he could just refuse and say that it was not. After all, nobody had seen the items in the Aries Palace. If he asserted that that was not an item from the Aries Palace, who could prove that it was?

Yue Yang extended his hands. On his hands was a peculiar rune

crystal that was faintly glowing white.

The crowd did not know of this gem, and did not understand.  
“What is this?”

The Golden Armour Captain saw it and drew a breath of cold air.  
“Good gracious, you actually managed to get the Blindness Rune?  
How did you get it?”

“This, this is the Blindness Rune?” Everyone looked at each other  
in dismay.

Nobody could believe that Yue Yang had obtained the Blindness  
Rune which was said to be guarded by dozens of Sheep-head  
Warriors. Wasn’t he a Beginner?

Not only that, this youngster’s beast was one of the world’s  
weakest – a Thorny Flower.

How did he manage to get the Blindness Rune?

“That’s impossible, he’s lying! This must be a scam! This  
Blindness Rune must have been bought from somewhere else, then  
set up this scam for us to make us fall for it! I don’t believe it, even  
if I die, I don’t believe this!” The mercenary leader howled  
exasperatedly, and looked like a gorilla who had failed at  
copulating continuously and had his companions look at him  
extremely disdainfully.

“Shut up, this Blindness Rune is a special object that can only be found in the Twelve Zodiac Temples. It can only be used within Tong Tian Tower. Once it’s brought out of Tong Tian Tower, it’ll immediately become an ordinary stone. You’ve lost, now leave the ten gold behind.” The Golden Armour Captain smiled coldly and interrupted the howlings of the mercenary leader.

“This is impossible, he can’t have obtained the Blindness Rune! He’s a Level 1 Beginner, how could this be? He’s definitely a liar!” The mercenary leader’s heart was dripping blood. He was unable to accept the reality presented to him.

“You’ve lost. If you don’t leave the ten gold behind, I will leave your head behind.” The Golden Armour Captain warned him: “Although I don’t understand how he had got the Blindness Rune, this is the truth. Furthermore, any warrior who is able to get either treasure from the two halls beside the Aries Temple are reputable challengers, and are worthy of respect by people. Now that this young man has gotten the Blindness Rune, he has proven that he is more outstanding than me when I challenged the trials in those days. If you continue to insult him, I’ll kill you.” The Golden Armour Captain’s sight was like a sword, and his killing intent rose in an instant, scaring all the mercenaries until they were shivering.

“Isn’t it only ten gold? You beggar, just count it as my reward to you.” After dragging this matter around, Yue Yang acted like an obedient child again. He gave a stack of letters, a ring and daggers to the Golden Armour Captain. “This was what I got from the energy cauldron. They’re all the possessions of previous challengers. Since this guy doesn’t want to honour his bet, I’ll let it pass. I’ll trouble you to give these back to their families.”

The Golden Armour Captain's hands were shivering as he received these items.

Especially when he saw the marriage ring, his tears had welled up, and said to Yue Yang emotionally: "The owner of this ring, this challenger, was my older brother who had died in battle ten years ago. I had always been wanting to fight through the right hall and get what he left behind, but my strength was not enough, and my wish had been unfulfilled for ten years...On behalf of my sister-in-law and my nephew who will never see his father, I offer you my thanks."

He brought five Golden Armour Guards and with a 'Pa', gave him an army salute for a long time.

Yue Yang smiled and prepared to slip away.

That mercenary leader howled loudly in despair: "Hold it! I'll make another bet with you! I want to duel against you, and decide the victor in a battle!"

"You idiot, you can't even win against Hui Tai Lang, stop shaming yourself further." Ye Kong sneered as he heard him say it. He mercilessly mocked him, "Your Battle Wolf is an ordinary Level 4 Battle Wolf, Hui Tai Lang is a Level 4 Bronze-ranked Ironback Demonic Wolf. A Bronze-ranked beast is stronger than an ordinary beast of the same grade by at least 1 level. How would that ordinary Level 4 Battle Wolf dare to raise its head against Hui Tai Lang? Hui Tai Lang, stand up and let them see... See, this guy's Battle Wolf

would definitely be so scared that it would pee itself.”

“Awoo!” Hui Tai Lang who had been obediently resting on the floor for some time stood up. The crowd finally realised that this wolf was actually abnormal.

It normally kept quiet and kept up the image of a low-grade pet dog.

Who knew that when its eyes let out a fierce glint, the mercenaries’ beasts hurriedly retreated. Some of the low graded beasts were so intimidated they fell onto the ground immediately, not daring to move. Hui Tai Lang howled to the sky, and the Battle Wolf that the mercenary leader had immediately lowered its head and tucked in its tail to express its surrender.

Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang directly, “ Why are you dragging it out, can’t you be more low-profile? There aren’t any girls around now, wait till there are beautiful women around to perform your best.”

The crowd fainted. He was willing to kick even a Level 4 Bronze-ranked Ironback Demonic Wolf, was this youngster insane?

Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge had already grown accustomed to this and acted as if they did not see it.

“What do you mean when you say that a Bronze-ranked beast is stronger than a normal beast of the same level by a level? Then,

how much stronger are Silver-ranked and Gold-ranked beasts compared to normal ranked beasts?” Yue Yang had not went to school before, and was not familiar with the common knowledge of beasts in this world. He was afraid that Yue Bing would be suspicious, and did not dare to ask her about these types of common knowledge. If the tragic guy had already known all this basic information, then Yue Yang would be exposed if he asked her these questions.

Of course, Yue Yang knew that Bronze-ranked beasts were stronger than normal ranked beasts, and that gold and silver were stronger than Bronze-ranked beasts. But with regard to how much stronger, he really did not know.

How were the beasts’ strengths defined?



# Chapter 55 – Whistleblowers Will Be Beheaded!

---

Towards Yue Yang, everyone was speechless, they really could not comprehend how there was someone in this world that did not know about how to define a beast's strength.

Putting aside adults, even 8 year old children knew about these.

However, Ye Kong thought differently. He felt that this was the reason the Yue Clan's third young master was called trash by others. It was not that this third young master really was trash, it was the people's misunderstanding.

The third young master was perhaps too obsessed with the Clan's Puppet Making Technique, or was too engrossed in cultivating the Yue Clan's battle skills, having no interest in contracting a Grimoire or beasts, neglecting them excessively, so the world thought of him as trash. Of course, it could be that due to the Yue Clan's internal affairs, no one told him anything about beasts. Therefore, this outstanding third young master was a piece of trash who did not even understand things that are basic knowledge in the eyes of ordinary people.

After a short 2 days of interaction, Ye Kong felt that this Yue Clan's third young master was not trash, but was a genius in terms of concealment.

He himself used to be labeled a genius, but if they were compared, Ye Kong would be red with shame.

Even if it were 2 years ago, when Ye Kong was in his prime, if compared to Yue Yang, there was no competition at all.

At Royal Dragon Valley, when Ye Kong first saw that sea of worms that stretched as far as one could see, both his legs trembled in fear, but this third young master who had been called trash by the world charged in daringly, and even came out virtually without a scratch on him... At Star's Domain, after he had achieved 19 consecutive wins, did he have the resolve to enter the Twelve Zodiac Temples, but before half an hour had even passed, the team of 10 elite's, which included him, had been exterminated. This Yue Clan's third young master who had been mocked and ridiculed by the world, having contracted only one stalk of Thorny Flower, had dared to enter alone, and had even successfully got the Blindness Rune that no one in the past 5 years had been able to get... Leaving the other things aside, there were many self-proclaimed heroes who had come, the Golden Armour Guard Captain had never looked them in the eyes, yet he had saluted this 'trashy third young master'.

Although Ye Kong had no idea what the battle situation inside was, he knew that Yue Yang had played it down and it was definitely not that simple.

Thinking about it this way, Ye Kong saw Yue Yang in a different light.

Faintly, it carried a sense of worship.

“To define a beast’s strength, although there is no absolute standard, but at the same level, Bronze-ranked beasts are stronger than normal beasts by at least a level, while Silver-ranked beasts are stronger than normal beasts by at least 2 levels, and Gold-ranked beasts are stronger by at least 3 levels.” Seeing Ye Kong’s blank stare, Li Qie hurried to give an explanation.

“Yes, in usual situations, that Bronze-ranked Level 3 is equal to at least a normal-ranked Level 4, Silver-ranked Level 3 is equal to at least normal ranked Level 5, Gold-ranked Level 3 is equal to at least normal-ranked Level 6. However, normal-ranked beasts cannot reach Level 8, only elite-ranked beasts, such as Bronze, Silver, Gold and above ranked beasts can reach Level 8 and above.” Li Ge further elaborated on his elder brother’s explanation.

“I somewhat understand now, but how do you calculate this? If a Gold-ranked beast’s egg just hatched a Larva state beast, what level is it? If it is Gold-ranked Level 1, and its in its Larva state, does its strength still equate to a normal-ranked Level 4 beast?” Yue Yang asked again.

“No, a beast in its Larva state’s strength is slightly weaker. However, young elite-ranked beasts are extremely precious. A Larva state Gold-ranked beast that is born has a higher potential for growth than a Silver-ranked beast that evolved into a Gold-ranked beast. At the same level, a born Gold-ranked beast’s battle strength is also stronger. Warriors pursue beasts that are born elite-ranked for a lifetime. In large-scale auctions, an outstanding young Gold-ranked beast can often be auctioned at several thousands or even over ten thousand gold coins. Some small countries even empty their treasury to buy a young Gold-ranked beast. Among the fully grown beasts, don’t even talk about Gold-

ranked beasts, even just the Bronze-ranked beasts don't have any that are below Level 3. All these elite-ranked beasts, they are at least Level 3 and above... Except for young beasts, Gold-ranked Level 2 beasts could not exist, the level of Gold-ranked beasts after they grew up were generally all Level 5 and above, there were no low leveled Gold-ranked beasts, if it was a Golden King Beast, they were mostly Level 6 and above."

Seeing that Yue Yang did not understand, the Golden Armoured Guard Captain automatically explained it to him.

Yue Yang nodded his head, and asked a final question: "What do the beasts' star evaluation mean?"

This time, Ye Kong was had recovered, and nodded his head to answer: "The beasts' star evaluation is something that the rankers of the Soaring Dragon Continent set up after thousands of years of fumbling around. It takes into account many aspects, and its main purpose is to evaluate a beast's value."

"Is it that the more stars the better?" Yue Yang had heard a bit from the big breasted lady, but he still wanted to understand a bit more.

"Of course the more the better, but the number of beasts that can get an evaluation of more than 5 stars is very small. 1 and 2 star beasts are all brought by normal mercenaries, these are considered pretty good in ordinary people's eyes. But in the eyes of rankers, these are trash. 3 and 4 star beasts are already good beasts that warriors long for, and they are called outstanding beasts; but of course, in the eyes of rankers, these are just Toiling Beasts. 5 star

beasts are of good quality, while 6 star beasts are considered the best quality, extremely rare. 7 star beasts are Spiritual Beasts, the kings of small countries may not even have one. 8 star beasts are Heavenly Spiritual Beasts, only the top Rankers of the Four Major Clans, Three Royal Households, and Four Great Sects had them. 9 star beasts are Holy Beasts, 10 star beasts are Mythical Beasts, they had high sentience, similar to human beings. Humans has no way of contracting them, only if the beasts decides to choose them, would automatically contract with the warrior. It is said that Holy Beasts and Mythical Beasts, after evolving to a certain degree, can evolve into a humanoid, and can even use a Summoning Grimoire.” Once Ye Kong said this, Yue Yang’s forehead banged onto the floor.

The little loli serpent demon, Xiao Wen Li, she could use a Summoning Grimoire.

Don’t tell me, was it a Holy Beast? Mythical Beast?

Yue Yang suppressed his heartbeat, and surreptitiously swallowed a mouthful of saliva, asking: “This evaluation, how is it related to Bronze, Silver, Gold rank?”

“There isn’t any, because this evaluation is not recognized by the Summoning Grimoire, it is only an evaluation that the warriors of the Soaring Dragon Continent slowly figured out. Generally speaking, the amount of stars a beast gets, is a representation of how much potential or battle strength it has. For example, your Hui Tai Lang got 5 stars, then its future, has limited evolution. In theory, it should be able to reach roughly Gold-rank Level 5... How many stars did your Hui Tai Lang get?” The Golden Armour Guard

Captain asked Yue Yang out of curiosity after having explained it all.

After calculating inwardly, this Ironback Demonic Wolf which was extremely clever and had dense magic could at least get 5 stars.

Yue Yang blinked his eyes and replied: “Four stars.”

Everyone fell down.

Even the blind could see that he was lying, this, could it be that this thief did not know how to lie? This lie was just way too obvious.

Even without needing Yue Yang to answer, everyone already guessed that Hui Tai Lang had gotten a 5 star evaluation.

This was because just now when the Golden Armour Guard Captain had used Hui Tai Lang to raise an example, this little thief’s face was full of surprise and had a ‘How did you know it get 5 stars’ look on it. He actually thought that if he said 4 stars, everyone would fall for his lie.

“Awooo.” Hui Tai Lang stood up, as if it were disagreeing with Yue Yang saying that it was a 4 star beast, slightly expressing its protest.

“Get lost, aren’t you a 4 star, don’t tell me you actually want to be a 5 star? 4 stars is more than you should get. Everyone, it really

isn't a 5 star, it's just a 4 star." Yue Yang gave Hui Tai Lang a kick, and explained to everybody urgently.

After hearing this, everyone almost didn't fall to the ground.

They had seen people who didn't know how to lie, but they had never seen someone who lied so badly, he was essentially admitting his lie...

Ye Kong was extremely scared that the more Yue Yang said, the more mistakes he would make, so he quickly dragged him to leave.

5 star beasts were good quality items that warriors longed for day and night but were unable to get, if Hui Tai Lang had contracted with this third young master, perhaps these mercenaries would give up. But Hui Tai Lang was a beast without a contract, it was unavoidable that some people would covet it. Even if they did not have the strength to snatch Hui Tai Lang, perhaps they would even report this to some Clans, using this information to exchange for some gold.

Although Yue Yang left, the Golden Armour Guard Captain ordered the mercenary captain who had lost the bet to take out the 10 gold and leave it with him. The mercenary captain had to deliver all the items, and receive a satisfactory reply from the family or a family member, before they could come back to get back the 10 gold.

Once the mercenary captain heard that it was possible to get back the sum of money, his originally crying face quickly became a

smiling face, and agreed repeatedly.

10 gold was not a small sum of money, wasn't it just sending a few letters?

A warm-hearted task such as sending a remembrance back to the family, it was possible that they would receive a gift as thanks from the family, although it was running an errand, it was still better than losing money and losing face.

There were other mercenaries that kept staring at the grovelling Hui Tai Lang that was leaving with Yue Yang, their eyes filled with greed.

Seeing this, the Golden Armour Guard Captain snorted softly, a beast that was so faithful even without a contract, how could someone even try to get a share of it? He did not bother about those mercenaries, and ordered the guards to chase them all away. He himself walked behind a secret stone, moving the door and entering, he first sealed the entrance, then gently inserted the gold token at his waist into the indentation on the crystal pillar of successful challenges in front of him.

A burst of gold light shone, and on the crystal pillar, appeared lines of golden written characters.

The last line among these appeared in bursts of coloured light: Titan, Da Xia citizen, Human Male, successfully challenged Aries Temple in the last 10 years, completion rate: 120/100.



Seeing these, the Golden Armour Guard Captain was shocked, his expression was even more ridiculous than if he had seen an Infernal Black Dragon King fly down from the sky to say good morning to him in human speech.

However, when he went out, the expression on his face was just like before, as if nothing had ever happened.

The Golden Armour Guardians surrounded him, asking him curiously: “Captain, what was the completion rate of that little fellow?”.

“20/100.” The Golden Armour Guard Captain directly reduced it by a 100.

“It can’t be? Did he spend 3 hours to kill all the Sheep-head Warriors? No wonder he could take the Blindness Rune. Heavens, that fellow is really awesome.” The Golden Armour Guardians cried out in surprise.

“Whatever happened today is a state secret, anyone who leaks this information will be killed.” The Golden Armour Guard Captain looked at his 5 subordinates, his face full of solemnness, eyes as cold as daggers, and humphed.

“Understood.” The 5 Golden Armour Guardians all nervously swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

Another day had passed, and Yue Yang asked, bored: “Ye Kong, is

there any way to receive the same Refining mission? Can I also enter the Black Stone Labyrinth to find Yue Bing?”

Ye Kong scratched the top his head, explaining with a slight headache: “Of course you can, but the Black Stone Labyrinth is a very complicated maze world, if one does not have a strong sense of direction, it is possible that one would be stuck in there for half a month. Waiting here is better than going in to find someone, if you don’t and Yue Bing came out, she would still have to wait for you. What’s more, the Refining missions of the Black Stone Labyrinth are all for plant category beasts, you can only get a Heart of Oak, it’s completely useless for normal beasts. It’s of no help at all in raising Hui Tai Lang’s level. I think, it’s still better to wait outside?”

Once Yue Yang heard this, he was even more worried about whether Yue Bing would have gotten lost inside. He was not worried about himself, because he had the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice, something like this labyrinth would be a small thing.

Although the Heart of Oak was of no use to Hui Tai Lang, it might be useful for the Thorny Flower.

Even if his Thorny Flower couldn’t use it, he could gift it to Yue Bing.

He patted his thighs, and made a decision: “It’s decided, I want to go to the Black Stone Labyrinth.”

# Chapter 56 – Refining, Heart Of Oak

---

The Blackstone Labyrinth's starting point only had roads leading north and south. As one progressed, there would be more and more forks until they were uncountable. Even experienced veterans would very easily get lost.

Of course, no matter how many forks there were, they would all converge at the end of the labyrinth.

That was under the ten-thousand year old ancient oak tree.

Only those who were lucky enough to walk to this spot could get the Heart of Oak.

However, this 'Heart of Oak' which could increase the ability of plant-type beasts was a more neglected reward compared to the other types of crystals such as 'Gaia's Crystal', 'Beast's Soul', 'True Vision Pupils' and so on. Normally, people were not willing to go through trials like the Blackstone Labyrinth which would not help their own beasts much. Even so, after thousands of years, even though it was unknown how many plant-type cultivators had come, just the directional signs carved onto the blackstone were so densely packed it could make people's heads dizzy...

Yue Yang was slightly nervous. In Blackstone Labyrinth, there was the same law of restriction.

He was still unable to do anything personally.

After a day, if the Barbaric Cow was summoned, the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice could not be summoned. Conversely, if the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice were summoned, the Barbaric Cow could only wait until the next day to be summoned.

Fortunately, there still was Hui Tai Lang who was not contracted.

“The three of you are in one group. If you guys manage to find Yue Bing first, then you definitely must protect her safety well. I am willing to pay an additional reward. If you reach the endpoint without finding Yue Bing first, then exit the labyrinth and wait for me at the Warrior’s Guild.” Yue Yang split up with Ye Kong and the Li brothers. He chose to head south, while the other three headed north to search for Yue Bing who had been inside for two days.

Originally, Ye Kong had wanted Li Ge to stay by Yue Yang’s side to protect him. But thinking about how he was completely unscathed after entering the Aries Temple, he stopped himself from saying anything.

After all, Yue Yang still had the Level 4 Bronze Hui Tai Lang.

Although there were a lot of monsters in Blackstone Labyrinth, they were mostly Level 1 or 2. There were only a few Level 3 monsters and even they weren’t too strong. In normal circumstances, there would not be any danger to their lives.

“If you’re lost, then use this teleportation scroll.” Yue Yang said to Ye Kong. Even though teleportation scrolls were expensive and were sold at one gold, they had still prepared one for each person.

“Yes.” Ye Kong replied. They were a little nervous. Wasn’t the one who would actually get lost this Third Young Master of the Yue Clan that had never gone out before?

“Don’t worry, I won’t have any problems walking through the labyrinth.” Yue Yang knew what Ye Kong and the others were worrying about and smiled slightly.

He had the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice. Finding the correct path through the labyrinth was, of course, not a problem.

Even if he did not have these five little mice, Yue Yang’s directional sense was not bad. As long as he had walked through it once, then he would be able to memorise 70-80% of the road. This was true even before he was thrown into a new dimension. After entering this new dimension and cultivating the Innate Invisible Sword Ki, Yue Yang felt that his wisdom, perception and reactions had a sharp rise and his memory had been greatly enhanced. He was able to infer many things from a single situation using his mind and spirit, so he was not afraid of getting lost at all. Even without all these, he still had the Level 2 Divine Vision, it was still helpful in some way when it came to navigating through a maze.

Yue Yang walked with extreme speed. He let loose five small mechanical mice and let them search for the way forward.

With them searching the area, there was no possibility of Yue Yang getting lost. He would not even fall for the wrong directions that some cultivators had intentionally placed and directly chose the most correct path to move onward.

Something that made him a little regretful was that the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice did not find Yue Bing's scent or any mark that she had left behind.

At the first fork in the road, Yue Yang could not summon the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice in front of the others. He could only rely on his own senses to choose the southern region. Now, it seemed that Yue Bing could have headed north instead and he was walking in the opposite direction from her.

If not, there was no reason why the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice had not found any trace of her movement for such a long time.

Thinking of this, Yue Yang hurriedly advanced, and decided to wait in front of the ten-thousand year ancient oak tree for Yue Bing to give her a surprise.

Most of the monsters in Blackstone Labyrinth were insect-types or plant-types. Frequently, a large group of demon insects could be seen rushing out to attack people. Although their offensive ability were laughable, they were hideous. There were also numerous oddities. Sometimes, they would be accompanied by Man-Eating Tiger Thorns, Corpse Eating Flower King, Man-capturing Ghost Grass and such plant-type monsters, which would also give people headaches. Sometimes, Level 2 Green Snakes, Grass Snakes, Flower Snakes, Pond Snakes, Blue-tongued Lizards and/or Fearful

Claw Lizards would pounce at him from within the darkness, sneaking up on Yue Yang who was passing by.

However, even if he did not have Hui Tai Lang with him, Yue Yang could completely ignore these Level 2 and below beasts.

Although he was unable to fight by himself, his Innate skills were enough to avoid any danger around him.

Hui Tai Lang was also great here.

The Barbaric Cow could not be summoned and Xiao Wen Li was resting. So he bullied the little insects, snakes and lizards by himself, majestically, oppressing them along the road.

Yue Yang could see now that getting the 'Heart of Oak' was not the main goal of passing through the Blackstone Labyrinth. Allowing the plant-type beasts to have special training for cultivators throughout the trial was the actual goal.

A plant-type beast was necessary in order to pass through easily in many areas.

Otherwise, the cultivators would be like Yue Yang, who had a Level 4 Bronze Hui Tai Lang, sweeping past everything to rush through.

If a grimoire contractor like Yue Bing came to Blackstone Labyrinth to pass the trial and constantly fight, they would be

likely to gain a huge improvement. Some battles were specifically meant for plant-type beasts. For example, some traps were ice-based and fire-based that completely restrained plant-type beasts. If the cultivator's control ability was not good enough, they could not get past them at all... These basic trials also had the effect of cultivating team spirit. Some of the more dangerous areas needed teamwork to be easier to pass. If a person were to attempt it alone, it would require ten times the effort.

What surprised Yue Yang the most, was that this Blackstone Labyrinth had completely banned flying-type beasts.

Perhaps it was because plant-type beasts did not have the ability to fly. The entire Blackstone Labyrinth had the power to restrict aerial movement. Although Yue Yang sometimes wanted to jump onto the tall blackstone rocks to gaze further ahead to look for Yue Bing, he found himself unable to jump successfully, and the height of his jumps were much lower than those performed outside.

After six hours, Yue Yang had walked through what would have taken normal cultivators three days' worth of work in the trial. He had reached the ten-thousand year old ancient oak tree guarded by nearly a hundred Dryad Guards.

Initially, Yue Yang had fantasized that this tree would have an old person's face full of wrinkles and a crooked nose with a mouth that seemed to even be able to speak. However, that was totally not the case. Aside from this tree being large enough that dozens of people would be unable to link their hands around it, it was just full of a kind of mysterious life energy. Inside the treetop, a kind of spiritual glow was faintly stored. Yue Yang had a little bit of



understanding now. The Heart of Oak was not a wooden tree heart, but a kind of life energy that would be applied onto plant-type beasts. The cultivators would accept the mission and the psychic ten-thousand year ancient oak tree would give a reward according to the cultivator's level.

In front of the ten-thousand year ancient oak tree, there was a crystal pillar that glowed faintly white.

Tree roots twisted around its base. It looked like it was interlinked with the ten-thousand year old ancient oak tree. Cultivators would need to follow the missions carved on the crystal pillar to earn the reward of the 'Heart of Oak'.

When Yue Yang took a look, the current Level 1 mission was the simplest, only needing to differentiate a hundred plant seeds behind the forest.

The Level 2 mission was to collect a hundred types of mushrooms from the mushroom forest. Of course these mushrooms could not be picked up directly. It was only possible with those mushroom-type beasts that could spray spores.

The Level 3 mission was to harvest a hundred red apples from the apple garden where Fanged Spiders and Spotted Tree Snakes resided. The Level 4 mission was to kill ten Pond Crocodiles in the Black Pond. Each Pond Crocodile was at least a Level 3 beast... If the cultivator had confidence, it was also possible to fight against the Hydra in the Demon's Blood Pond. It was unknown how many Hydras there were, but each of them were terrifying monsters that were Level 7 Bronze and above. This mission required cultivators

to kill a single Hydra and the rewards were enormous, gifting them with a thousand-year ‘Heart of Oak’.

“Should I wait here for Yue Bing, or test out the strength of the Hydras?” Yue Yang was a little hesitant, and in the end, took out a gold coin.

He would determine the fate of the Hydra with a flip of the gold coin.

If it was heads, he would let it go for now and wait until Yue Bing came. Tails, he would go burst its balls.

The gold coin was flipped high up into the air...

## Chapter 57 – Stealing Eggs

---

When the gold coin was thrown in the the air, Yue Yang did not catch it.

It fell onto the floor, and the side with the Da Xia Empire's founder, 'The Great Monarch', was facing up. This was heads.

"It's fair only if it's two out of three." Seeing that it was not tails, Yue Yang was a little annoyed. It would only be possible to chop up the Hydra while waiting for Yue Bing. Otherwise, if he waited until she came, it might not be possible to kill the Hydra.

Although she was his younger sister and that there was no harm in her knowing, if it was possible to protect his secret, it was better for her to not know anything. She was not the kind of person who did not know how serious a matter was and gossip everywhere, but she was too young and her heart too pure. If an enemy conned her, she would easily fall for it... Moreover, there were a lot of newbies on the Soaring Dragon Continent with all sorts of innate skills. If there was someone who was able to see through another person, Yue Bing did not have the innate skill of Counterfeit, and was not good at lying either. What if the person that saw through her was the new Innate Ranker, then the beautiful woman's entire household would be in danger.

He flipped the gold coin another time. It was still heads.

"Damn it, this doesn't count. One last time and I'll really make my decision." Yue Yang decided to throw a tails.

On the third try, the coin was thrown high up, and after falling to the ground, it magically fell into the mud. The whole gold coin was standing on its edge. The probability of this happening really made Yue Yang perplexed, but he quickly turned the coin so that tails was facing up, then picked it up: “So heaven’s will is for me to kill the Hydra while waiting. That’s fine, since it’s according to heaven’s will, I will carry it out.”

Hui Tai Lang was slightly dumbfounded as it looked towards its master. Suddenly, it felt that it had learnt a lot from its master.

Yue Yang kicked it. “If you’re afraid of death, then stay here and wait. When I roast the Hydra, you won’t have a share of it.”

Hui Tai Lang hurriedly expressed its obedience, and wagged its tail to pander to Yue Yang.

Although he didn’t stay behind to wait for Yue Bing, Yue Yang moved a large slab of rock and placed it in front of the crystal pillar. On it, the words ‘Yue Bing, wait for my return’ were written in eye-grabbing letters. Even though he wasn’t exactly a qualified older brother, he at least didn’t completely forget his younger sister. His curiosity was simply too strong, and he really wanted to learn more about the nine headed monster.

Of course, if Yue Yang went to fight the nine headed monster now, his combat force would only comprise of Xiao Wen Li, which was a bit lacking.

The Barbaric Cow couldn't be summoned at the moment, and the Giant Shadow needed to be kept aside for a few days. The Bronze-ranked Level 4 Hui Tai Lang wasn't bad, but a mature nine headed monster was at least a Bronze-ranked Level 7 beast; the difference was quite significant.

Besides, the nine headed monster was completely unafraid of being besieged..... it was different from the Three-Headed Chimera in the Aries Temple. How exactly was he supposed to fight this nine headed monster today?

“Did you think that I wouldn't have a means to fight this way?” To the shameless Yue Yang, fighting the nine headed monster head on in the Demon's Blood Pond was like going to pick a fight with a neighboring school during class time. This was someone else's territory. No matter how awesome one was, one would still easily be defeated using tactics involving a sea of people. Yue Yang wouldn't do something so foolish. He wouldn't attack head on, but that didn't mean that he had no other ways of attacking. People viewed the Quintet Seeking Gold Mice as having absolutely no use in combat, but in Yue Yang's hand, these five were godly weapons that could be used to cheat.

The Demon's Blood Pond was entirely crimson for as far as the eye could see.

The air had a faint fishy smell.

However, it wasn't the smell of blood; Yue Yang reckoned it was probably the disgusting body odor of the nine headed monster.

The nine headed monster had lived in the Demon's Blood Pond for quite some time. The entire, boundless swamp of crimson was permeated with its odor. All of the countless devil bugs and wild beasts had all been eradicated. The only thing one could see was a number of marsh snakes in all sizes that would roam about on the mire.

“Be good and seek out the nest of the nine headed monsters for me. If it isn't home, then steal its egg.”

When he was little, Yue Yang had read a manhua about two mice stealing a chicken egg. One mouse had carried it while the other had dragged its partner by its tail to smoothly steal the egg away. This left a deep impression on him. Now he was using the Quintet Seeking Gold Mice, as their water and earth attributes would allow them to move however they pleased in the mire. With this, Yue Yang had decided to send the two out to steal a nine headed monster's egg and give it to him.

The water attribute Gold Mouse was extremely fast in the swamp, like a fish swimming in the sea.

The earth attribute Gold Mouse was a bit slower, but not by much.

Yue Yang used his consciousness to control them; it was as fun as playing with a remote controlled car. As expected of Ghost Genius Yue Gong's proud work; these Quintet Seeking Gold Mice were really skilled and easy to use. Their abilities were perfect; they

could resist fire and water, required no maintenance and no power, making it basically a “thrice-guaranteed service” quality.

It was really a godly equipment that was necessary for traveling away from home and exploring the world to treasure hunt.

After over an hour of searching, the two Seeking Gold Mice had finished searching about  $\frac{2}{3}$  of the entire Demon's Blood Pond, and discovered 6 Hydras. Two of them were still young, and only had 3 heads. The other two were close to maturity, and had grown 6 heads. The remaining two were a father and a mother, and were currently sleeping in a large lair. They hadn't reacted at all to the approach of the Seeking Gold Mice. Because the mice were just mice that had no combat abilities and low vitality, even if the nine headed monsters did notice them, they would think the mice were just some moving rocks....if a nine headed monster was as intelligent as a human, they might wonder how the two 'swelling rocks' were moving.

But the nine headed monster hadn't yet evolved such intelligent minds. In addition, the Quintet Seeking Gold Mice's movements were extremely light and covert, and did not attract attention.

As expected, there were eggs in the lair.

However, the nine headed monster eggs were exceptionally large, so the small Seeking Gold Mice had absolutely no way of stealing them away.

“Don't think that I'm helpless. In this world, there are things

called nets.” Yue Yang made a simple and crude net by weaving the black reeds that grew densely by the marsh. Although this crude net looked ugly, holding a large rock with it wouldn’t be a problem. It was definitely sturdy enough.

Hui Tai Lang looked at the crude net that Yue Yang had named ‘China Unicom’ with interest. It felt that it was now time for it to display its skills.

(TLC Note: 中国联通 – China Unicom, is a state-owned telecomms operator in China. We have no idea why the author has named it thus, but we couldn’t come up with anything else, so China Unicom it shall be.)

Yue Yang kicked it. This ‘China Unicom’ wasn’t used to catch fish, but to steal eggs. The nine headed monster’s egg was Gold rank. When it hatched, it’d be a Gold cub, and could be sold for thousands of gold at an auction. Just think of what you could buy with all that money? For someone like Yue Yang who was mad about money, he felt that with this ‘China Unicom’, he would no longer be lacking in money.

Of course, just relying on the two Seeking Mice to bring the crude ‘China Unicom’ net down to steal the protected nine headed monster’s egg was impossible.

He had to draw the two nine headed monsters out of the lair.

It was now time to use Hui Tai Lang as meat bait.

Hui Tai Lang had no problem on dry land, but going into the



muddy water to attract the nine headed monster's attraction made its legs go a bit weak.

“You good-for-nothing fellow, you have to think of the positive side. Just think about it, if we succeed in stealing the nine headed monster egg, then we'll have a Gold cub. That means we'll have dazzling gold coins, which also means tons of meaty bones. Do you understand? Besides, what does a nine headed monster count as? In a bit, I'll kill them all one after another, and make barbeque out of them. Stop shaking and get out there right now. Otherwise, I'll barbeque your legs instead.” Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang out into the mire.

Hui Tai Lang didn't even swim 100 meters into the Demon's Blood Pond before it alerted the two nearly mature nine headed monsters. This scared Hui Tai Lang so much that it hurriedly began to swim back to the shore, running for its life.

Luckily, the nine headed monsters didn't seem to have any interest in wolf meat, and didn't bother chasing after it.

Yue Yang was burning with anger. He warned Hui Tai Lang that if it dared to swim back again, he'd tie it up and dry it into jerky....Hui Tai Lang was scared to death and hurriedly crawled back out into the mire. It once again began to bark incessantly, and its cries echoed around the entire Demon's Blood Pond. This time, all of the nine headed monsters were alerted. Hui Tai Lang didn't dare to swim back, and instead fled towards the other direction. Fortunately, there were some places where the mud was pretty hard, allowing it to run unsteadily.

Otherwise, the nine headed monsters would have caught up to it ages ago and eaten it in a single gulp.

The Seeking Gold Mice sensed that not all of the nine headed monsters had come out to chase Hui Tai Lang. The largest, female nine headed monster stayed behind to guard the nest, and wasn't leaving.

Yue Yang was unwilling to let the little loli, Xiao Wen Li, to run through the swamp.

He gritted his teeth, stripped off his clothes, and flew through the mire himself.

If it had been before he crossed dimensions, 100 of him wouldn't have been enough to even fill the gap between its teeth. However, he was now an Innate ranker that had learned the Mysterious Three Styles. Although he was unable to Water Walk and couldn't walk on water without disturbing it, he could step on some pieces of mire and walk pretty smoothly, giving him the feeling of 'an iron leg floating on mud'. It was originally the Heavenly Sword Goddess' exquisite and incomparable Sword Art , but when it was him who used it, it suddenly seemed a lot less perfect.

His appearance made the guarding female nine headed monster greatly agitated. Its nine necks poked out from the under the swamp, and wildly danced around as it spat out a great amount of black acid from its mouths in the direction Yue Yang was rushing from.

The black acid shot outwards like bullets, putting Yue Yang into a difficult situation. He was so shocked, he hurriedly began to retreat backwards.

Unexpectedly, as soon as Yue Yang ran away, the female nine headed monster returned to guarding its nest. It wasn't actually willing to chase after him. Yue Yang inwardly cursed at it, and began to run towards it once more while shouting loudly to draw its attention. He was determined to provoke it to the end.

For the sake of stealing the egg, Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang, servant and master, took turns at trying to draw the nine headed demons out.

Beneath the Demon's Blood Pond, two Gold Mice used the crude net, 'China Unicom', to drag the enormous egg out, and began to swim back at a painfully slow speed. Based on their speed, it would probably take them two hours before they'd be able to return to the shoreline.

"Oh my god, wanting to earn a bit of money is too hard." Yue Yang ran around and around the mire, almost collapsing from exhaustion.

However, even now, he was unwilling to give up the egg he was about to steal. He gritted his teeth and persevered.

This was so they could get the Hydra's egg!

## Chapter 58 – Two-Headed Demon Wolf?

---

He had gotten the Hydra's egg, but what made Yue Yang faint was that for some reason, this egg that he had gone through so much pain to get was already broken. On the egg shell, an extremely tiny crack could be seen. Even though there was no egg white or such things flowing out of it, this egg would most likely be unable to hatch a Hydra.

Just like this, the dream of wealth that Yue Yang had was completely shattered with the appearance of this tiny little crack.

Two hours' worth of painstakingly baiting the enemy dangerously, letting the Hydra chase after him until it was completely spent, all for a single broken egg... Yue Yang really wanted to ruthlessly smash this egg on the ground.

"You think this will stop me? I, will eat you." Yue Yang decided to change his anger into appetite.

Going back under the ten-thousand year oak tree, he lit a bonfire, then cooked this Hydra's egg that could have been worth a few thousand gold coins on it. He ate it until he was full, belched, and rubbed his tummy. This was the first time Yue Yang had felt extravagant. If he had a second option, Yue Yang would definitely not have cooked and eaten it. There was no other choice after all. In comparison, Hui Tai Lang who was completely exhausted and had been risking its life was eating its fill pleasurably, completely happy. This Hydra's egg was a huge boon for it.

After eating the Hydra's egg, he waited for quite some time, but Yue Bing had not arrived yet.

There was no sign of Ye Kong or the Li brothers either.

Might as well climb up a huge branch of the ten-thousand year oak tree and take a good sleep. He was hoping to see the Heavenly Sword Goddess come out to console his broken spirit, but there was no trace of her since the beginning. When Yue Yang was cultivating in his dreams, because he was not feeling happy, his qi was compressed in his chest, and it was hard for his mind to integrate with heaven and earth. The sword qi that was easily released normally, could not successfully exit the body, but was accumulated inside. Slowly, a kind of violent explosion waiting to happen was felt. This situation was a first for Yue Yang. If he did not release the violent Qi accumulated within his body, it might be dangerous...

What should he do?

Was it to immediately stop cultivation, or to recover his tranquility to return to the state of cultivation like before.

This abnormality, could it be related to himself eating the Hydra's egg? Was this compressed energy the energy stored within the Hydra's egg? But, when he was eating it just now, how did it not appear?

In Yue Yang's heart, a sudden flash of inspiration struck him. Since this energy could affect himself, then why not purge it out of

his body by borrowing its own explosive power to force it out? This, might be a hurdle in cultivation, a test, and a chance to make a breakthrough as well.

Thinking like this, Yue Yang's spirit was greatly excited.

Raising his hands, bring his fingers together, 10 fingers forming a seal, he gathered his heart, form and Qi into one entity.

Pouring all his mind into condensing the Qi within his hands, the accumulated Qi in his body was almost going to explode. Within his heart, he shouted loudly, and roared towards the sky.

His entire spirit world was shaking, as if the sky was crumbling, and the heavens exploding... The sword Qi that was melded by his hands instantly became the strongest point, as if a bolt of lightning was breaking its prison, as if King Kong was shaking the ground, like a bolt of thunder striking the ground, it exploded, the Qi gushing out.

The Qi in both of his hands that had been accumulated for a long time, had a length of half a meter, and split the sky.

Its power was ten times stronger than the sword Qi that was normally released.

For a long time, Yue Yang could not believe this truth.

After releasing the blade from himself, Yue Yang had a feeling of

all his spiritual Qi being consumed rapidly until both of his legs were wobbly and his head spinning. The consumption level was much greater than the previous time when Empress Fei Wen Li had sucked up his own Qi.

“My god, did I just learn a new skill out of the blue... Although the time taken to accumulate Qi is exceptionally long, and only one sword can be released, the one who learnt it is really myself, am I dreaming?” Yue Yang couldn’t be more pleased.

“Although only one sword can be released even with all my Qi currently, its power is sufficient. If a strong enemy appears next time, I might be able to use it.” Yue Yang was happy that he had learnt a new skill. More importantly, this was a skill that he had created after self-enlightenment, giving him an exceptional sense of accomplishment. After being excited for a long time, it was hard to suppress the emotions that welled up from within.

Perhaps it was the compressed energy being released, or perhaps it was due to his mood becoming better, but in any case, after Yue Yang became happy, he felt that the atmosphere was good and his body light, with a kind of grand feeling as if a tiger had come out of the woods or a dragon dancing in the sky.

If the Heavenly Sword Goddess had seen his progress, she would definitely be happy for him.

Yue Yang’s mind elatedly fell asleep...

Though in his dreams, he still did not see her.

The stream of energy that he shot out using his fingers did not disappear, but had become a grey-coloured energy ball.

The ten-thousand year oak tree's green light shone, and a burst of green-coloured light rain fell down, immersing Yue Yang within it. That grey-coloured energy energy ball quickly melted, and as if it had a life of its own, squeezed itself into Hui Tai Lang's mouth. The green-coloured light rain from the ten-thousand year oak tree continued for a long time, and an endless amount of energy from the light rain was integrated into Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang's bodies... Yue Yang slept soundly, as if nothing had happened, but Hui Tai Lang's body quickly changed shape. A part of its skin began to bulge out, its muscles warping, and bones changing. Finally, another head grew from its neck, becoming a two-headed wolf...

Hui Tai Lang did not wake up, but it felt unimaginable amounts of pain in its dreams, and continuously whimpered quietly.

Under the green-coloured light rain's shroud, after a long time, Hui Tai Lang's body's change finally settled down, and slowly recovered its original look. It was as if that two-headed wolf's weird appearance had never happened before.

In its dreams, Hui Tai Lang yawned comfortably.

A grey ball of energy slowly drifted out from its mouth by itself... That ball of black Qi seemed to have finally run out of energy. Under the last drops of the green-coloured light rain, it became



smoke and disappeared. The ten-thousand year oak tree's brilliance dissipated, and returned into silence. Under the dark night, Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang slept soundly. The master and its servant did not know of what had just happened.

When Yue Yang woke up on the first day, seeing that Yue Bing had not come, he ate his breakfast. He was prepared to bring Hui Tai Lang over to steal another egg from the Hydra.

But, inadvertently looking at it, Hui Tai Lang seemed to have changed slightly?

Using Qi on his eyes, staring intently at it, Yue Yang was shocked. This Hui Tai Lang was an Ironback Demonic Wolf yesterday, how did it become a Two-headed Demonic Wolf? If not for Hui Tai Lang trying to win Yue Yang's favour by wagging its tail, Yue Yang would have doubted that someone had swapped his own Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Tai Lang did not rise in level, and was still a Bronze-ranked Level 4 beast, but it had gone through a variant evolution.

From an Ironback Demonic Wolf, turning into a Two-headed Demonic Wolf... But it only had one head? How come it was a Two-headed Demonic Wolf?

Could it be, because it ate the Hydra's egg?

Was it the Hydra's egg's energy that allowed it to go through

variant evolution to become a Two-headed Demonic Wolf? Yue Yang was sweating, thinking in his mind that it was fortunate that he did not become a two-headed man after eating the Hydra's egg himself. That would have made him cry; he would never be able to get girls, and would probably be mocked by the entire world. Not everything could be eaten indiscriminately. If Hui Tai Lang had become a Two-headed Demonic Wolf, could it become a Three-headed Demonic Wolf in the future? Definitely not a Nine-headed Demonic Wolf, if so that would really make people sweat to death...

“How does it feel? Is there any discomfort in your body?” Yue Yang patted Hui Tai Lang's head, and felt that it had a soul that could be contracted. There was no such thing as a Hydra's soul within, but its demonic energy was very weird. Demon Lord Ha Xin's evil demonic energy had mixed to form two new types of energies, one was a weird mix, another was naturally pure, the three different types of energy formed a coincidental balance, with each attuned to a specific element.

From these, Demon Lord Ha Xin's evil demonic energy was the strongest, and had assimilated Hui Tai Lang's fire element, which was the strongest element in Hui Tai Lang's body.

The naturally pure energy in turn assimilated the dark element miraculously, and converted the dark element in its body that had an effect of corrosion and destruction into completely tranquil life energy. The tranquility was like the power of water, giving the entirety of Hui Tai Lang's body vitality that was hard to describe.

Yue Yang did not understand, how was the darkness element able

to change like this?

Where did this naturally pure energy come from? Who gave it to Hui Tai Lang? Could it be a passing god who took pity on Hui Tai Lang's bullied self and decided to give it some energy?

As Yue Yang thought like this, he was really anxious.

However, Yue Yang was sure that the third type of energy, the weirdly mixed energy should be the Hydra's, this energy had assimilated the metal element in Hui Tai Lang's body.

Although Hui Tai Lang did not level up, Yue Yang felt that this guy had become much stronger, and in the future, when the third energy had completely harmonised into one entity, Hui Tai Lang's strength would make another extreme leap...

"Hui Tai Lang, let me see you pop another head out." Yue Yang wanted to see how Hui Tai Lang looked like after it changed into a Two-headed Demonic Wolf.

"Uwaa!" Hui Tai Lang did not know that he had this capability itself, and humbly lowered its head.

"What an natural fool. You don't even know what abilities you have?" Yue Yang was speechless towards Hui Tai Lang, it was probably the first wolf in the entire Soaring Dragon Continent to be as muddle-headed as Hui Tai Lang. This guy was really one who wouldn't be improve without getting beaten. When Yue Yang was

wanting to kick it hard, he suddenly felt a person that was covered in blood from afar. He ran with great strides, and taking a look, realised that it was Ye Kong.

Instantly, Yue Yang's heart plummeted.

Ye Kong was covered in blood, and came here alone. Yue Bing and the others could have met with danger...

Yue Yang shot towards Ye Kong and supported Ye Kong's battered body, asking urgently, "How did this happen? What happened?"

## Chapter 59 – Who Dares To Touch My Younger Sister?

---

“You guys, aren’t you tired of doing this yet?” Yue Bing angrily stared at the people in front of her.

They were previously the teammates of her own squad, the students of Shang Jing Academy. But now, they were surrounding her to attack her.

Actually, Yue Bing being attacked by others was something that had been happening for quite some time already. Almost every two or three days, hired mercenaries would use a ‘Three-on-Three Battle’ strategy to attack her. In Tong Tian Tower, as long as someone picked a fight, a warrior would have to promise a fight after rejecting ten times every day. Otherwise, their battle points would be cut. Once the battle points became negative, the warrior would be chased out of Tong Tian Tower, the expelled person would have to complete at least ten courageous missions in order to return to Tong Tian Tower.

More seriously, if it was a warrior with a summoned grimoire, once the battle points was too low, it would also reduce the grade of the grimoire.

If one continuously refused to fight, it was possible for the summoned grimoire to drop from gold or silver to bronze.

Three-on-three battles was originally a very fair battle strategy.

Within two small teams, three people would be sent out, and fight each other one-on-one roulette-style. Both sides could target the enemy's beasts, and do adjustments to their tactics. There were many tactics that could be employed, and was the fairest and most exciting type of battle in the world. Not just the mercenaries, but the selection battles in schools, inter-school elite tournaments and even tournaments held between countries' elites employed this fair 'Three-on-three Battle' system.

Of course, three-on-three battles seemed fair on the surface. But towards Yue Bing, it was a disaster.

This was because she did not have teammates, and was alone.

When other people sent three people out, she could only fight them alone. Not only that, the opposition kept using ice-type or fire-type beasts that suppressed her plant-type beasts.

Under these difficult circumstances, it was almost impossible for Yue Bing to think of winning completely in a one-against-three scenario. What was more despicable of her enemies was that they kept using mercenary warriors to disturb and attack Yue Bing, using up her spiritual energy and summoning quota, causing her to be unable to summon more than two beasts. She was only able to summon a single Treant Warrior each time...

By suppressing her like this, how would Yue Bing be able to win repeatedly?

“What, were you attacked in Blackstone Labyrinth? I’m sorry, but we don’t know about this. We just miss Yue Bing, and we’d like to compare notes with you.” A skinny long-faced, haughty male came out from the team, and shamelessly sniggered at her.

When Yue Bing was doing the test mission in Blackstone Labyrinth just now, she was only left with two trials before she could complete the ‘Heart of Oak’ under the ten-thousand year oak tree. Five mercenary warriors had chased her from behind. They had cut off the wires first, ruining her ‘Suspension Bridge’ mission, and when she had fallen into the water, they despicably attacked her by summoning a water-type python to attack Yue Bing. In this emergency, Yue Bing had to regretfully use up a precious transfer scroll, giving up the trial of Blackstone Labyrinth, returning to the Warriors’ Guild. She did not expect to see her previous teammates standing in front of her when she had transferred back, and before she had time to react, they had already used their challenge cards continuously. In order to protect her own summoning grimoire from dropping in grade, she was forced to accept this shameless three-on-three battle.

Those five mercenary warriors before were definitely hired by them.

Yue Bing did not know what she had done wrong. Allowing them to suppress her like this, after entering Tong Tian Tower, she had almost never stopped fighting.

They were her own teammates, her own schoolmates. When the teacher was around, they were courteous, but she did not expect when the teacher left, they would immediately show their

hypocritical faces...

In the Refining missions, she had let her own Treant Warriors work hard all the time. They reaped the benefits while she worked hard. If it was just that, it was fine. However, they had even continued to mock and ridicule her.

After they split, the hired mercenary warriors who came to attack her never stopped.

If not for hiding inside Refining areas, the challenges might have come without end.

“Shen Tu, I don’t know why you’d want to do this, but since you want to fight, then let’s make it a one-on-one and let everyone’s wins or losses be dependent on our own talent. If you lose, don’t find me ever again, and if I lose, I’ll disappear from your sights.” The black-clothed Yue Bing’s heart was extremely angry, she had a faint feeling that these harassing attacks that had no end to them was related in some way to her. They did not wish to improve themselves, become stronger, or succeed in the trials, so they decided to use these underhanded methods and exploit the loopholes in Tong Tian Tower. They kept her in a state where she kept losing battles, unable to raise the grade of her summoned grimoire, nor was she able to improve the abilities and levels of her guardian beasts.

“I’m sorry, the challenges were suggested by Xu Xian, it doesn’t concern me.” The tall male spoke up from the team was the team leader of Rose Team, and was the Shen Tu family’s first wife’s grandson, Shen Tu Hao.



“Quit talking nonsense. Yue Bing, you can reject the three-on-three battle. What I have is money, and challenge cards, you don’t have many points left? Ha ha, if this Xu Xian can’t kick you out of Tong Tian Tower, I won’t be called the ‘Prince of Ghost Eyes’.” The haughty, skinny long-faced male sniggered. Everyone knew that this guy matched Shen Tu Hao, but he was actually Shen Tu Hao’s dog, their whole family survived only by relying on the Shen Tu family.

“Then fine, let’s fight.” Yue Bing coldly stared at the two people standing at the back of the team.

If Xu Xian was Shen Tu family’s person, then the other two should be the Yue family’s person.

They were the Lin family brothers, who were a branch family that relied on the Yue Clan. However, they had never extended a helping hand to her, rather often worsening her plight... Did the fourth branch have no position in the Yue Clan? Her own family had already move out of the Yue Clan Castle, why was the first and the second branches suppressing her like this?

Yue Bing kept her flaming anger in check and summoned her grimoire. Then, she summoned her own Guardian Beast, the Treant Warrior.

A pale golden light flickered, and a three to four metre tall deep green coloured Treant Warrior was summoned.

The Treant Warrior who had already risen to Level 3 Bronze, had always been Yue Bing's guardian. If not for this strong beast who had protected her silently, she would have been killed off a long time ago, unable to survive in Tong Tian Tower, being a corpse by now.

“Summoning Flame Guardian...”

The opposing Xu Xian used a type of tactic that people despised, causing the observing mercenaries to fall into an uproar.

This type of tactic could be said to be a well-established taboo in the Tong Tian Tower. Within the tower, there was a type of a code of assistance: When a warrior in battle was in danger, his companion could save him in such an emergency, and quickly enter the battle as well. Even if it was a solo fight, support could be added in such a situation. This code prevented Rankers from suffering situations where massive deaths occurred simply because people couldn't help others when one was committed a mistake or had a heavy injury.....as long as the circumstances were dire, the Ranker could use the emergency card and allow his companions to quickly come to his aid and fight the formidable enemy together.

After the white-eyed Xu Xuan summoned the Flame Guardian, he commanded it to toss fireballs at all the Treant Warrior in battle.

The element-type Flame Guardian's completely subdued the Treant Warrior. The tossed out fireballs' explosions were extremely large and powerful, and could also follow the target's movements. A normal beast would have a lot of difficulty dodging it. The only downside was almost all element-type beasts had very

limited numbers of elemental skills.

The Flame Guardian could at most toss 5 fireballs at its target.

Xu Xuan controlled the Flame Guardian to first blast the five fireballs at the Treant Warrior, and then charge straight at the Treant Warrior who were now completely burned black, inflicting even more serious damage on it. He then took out his emergency card to invite two of his companions to save him. After the two companions rushed into the battle's Halo Shield, he smiled darkly and continued to summon his strongest beast, the Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth....

These shameless actions made the observers feel extreme disdain for Xu Xuan. If any of the mercenaries did this, they would've been beaten to death by others even if they had won the battle.

However, the group of people in front were wearing Shang Jing Academy's neat uniforms, and seemed to be the elites from the school that had come to Refine.

The private battles going on between the classmates weren't something that the mercenaries could bear to watch, but they also weren't willing to help Yue Bing. These elite students were normally children of major clans or supported by the major clans. Thus, creating an enmity between them was definitely not a good thing.

“Hehehe, Yue Bing, aren't you supposed to forfeit? Do you want to try going against us 3 by yourself? Aren't you a child from one

the Four Major Clans, the Yue Clan? Why don't you show the might of a Yue Clan's child? Try shouting, see if anyone here would be able to come save you. Didn't you say that the good-for-nothing Third Brother of yours was a genius? Weren't you constantly hostile to us for his sake? Shout, shout for him to come help you! Ahahahaha!" Xu Xian gave a cheap laugh.

Yue Bing really wanted to give his face a hard punch.

However, she didn't rebuke. Instead, she clenched her teeth, and silently gave a command to the battling Treant Warrior.

5 minutes later, the Treant Warrior fell to the ground, its body entirely covered with flames.....although it was Bronze Level 3, they eventually couldn't resist falling to the opponent's ice, fire, and metal element-type beasts ganging up on it.

The battle's result was 1 vs 6. The Treant Warrior was defeated by the five element-type beasts, and finally fell to the Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth's White Eye Rays.

Although she had lost this battle, she had gained outstanding glory.

The observing mercenaries all had to applaud the young woman. Her strength and determination to fight went far beyond their expectations, arising deep feelings of respect for her.

"Challenge card 3 vs 3 battle, target is Yue Bing." The shortie

standing next to Shen Tu Hao laughed evilly as he pulled out a battle card from his pocket.

“Wawa....” The observing mercenaries were shocked into a daze.

Only today had they finally realized what shamelessness and ruthlessness was, what leaving no room for leeway meant.

Yue Bing’s face was deathly pale. She unsummoned the Treant Warriors that had their entire body on fire and summoned one stalk of her Level 1 Thorny Flower....even if it had no combat ability, Yue Bing would continue to fight until the end as long as she was still alive. She would definitely not admit defeat or surrender.

She could lose or die, but she definitely wouldn’t humiliate her family.

Protecting her family was her greatest desire.

“Don’t lightly kill off that Thorny Flower. You guys have to ruthlessly torment it, trample on it, consume her spirit, and make her reach her limits, and completely exhaust her mental and spiritual energy. It’s best if we can exhaust her to the point where she becomes a vegetable haha.” Xu Xian’s nasty, prideful declaration made all of the mercenaries that heard him furious. How could a group of grown men gang up and bully a young woman? What kind of heroes were they?

Shen Tu didn't bat an eyelid, and the corners of his mouth even turned up into cruel sneer.

He summoned a Bronze Level 3 Manticore, shocking everyone. Although the mercenaries were extremely indignant at the sight, none of them dared to move in fear of the terrifying Manticore present. None of them even dared to say words of support to Yue Bing.

Another 5 minutes passed. The shortie had teased his opponent enough, and with another wave of his hand, his beast smashed the Thorny Flower into dust.

"Ah" Since her beasts had died in succession, the repeated blows to her spiritual energy caused Yue Bing to hold her head with her hands and sharply cry out in pain. Her entire body softly fell to ground,

"Victory! We finally knocked that bitch out hahahaha. Brothers, charge. We'll destroy her appearance, and make it so that she will become a widow that nobody will want." Xu Xian was beside himself with joy as he waved his arm.

"...." The hearts of the mercenaries shook as they heard this.

According to the code of a duel, the victor had the power to leave a symbol of discipline on the loser's body as long as it wasn't life-threatening.

Normally, one would just spit at the other party's body in disdain. More aggressive people would perhaps draw a turtle on the other party's face or stomp on their feet. The most excessive people would do something like pee on the other party's body. No one had imagined that a few students would actually think of destroying someone's face....could it be that this young woman had some blood-deep enmity with them? Were these students not afraid of suffering from revenge later for this bullying?

The mercenaries were raged, but didn't dare to speak. Suddenly, the crowd was split apart, and two males covered in blood raced over. With curved blades in hand that protected Yue Bing, they hoarsely shouted, "Unless we die, you'd better not even think of touching a single hair on her body."

Shen Tu's expression changed, and secretly made a gesture.

Xu Xian nodded and immediately rushed out, shouting loudly, "You two stupid slaves dare to try and murder your owner, we can't stand by and overlook threats to the people."

The mercenaries were in complete awe.

These clan juniors were really terrifying. They had played with death and had even cheated others into gaining eternally bad reputation of trying to murder their owner.

Although the brothers Li Qie and Li Ge had run up to protect Yue Bing, they had been fighting against 5 attackers in the Black Stone Labyrinth, and already suffered from heavy injuries. Now that

they were facing the elites of Shang Jing Academy, who had even greater strength, their bodies were instantly ripped to pieces by the beasts...

“You two useless mercenaries want to wreck my good deeds by yourselves? That’s really hilarious. Yue Bing, oh Yue Bing, now look and see who’ll save you? Aren’t you a genius? Aren’t you unbridled? Beg for me to see. I’m going to trample all over the genius you right now, and what can you do about it? Why don’t you get your good-for-nothing Third Brother to come and save you.....come and let him take revenge for you, you whore. I’ll let you hit me, I’ll let you show off your aggressiveness.” After Xu Xian had sent the heavily injured and unconscious Li Qie and Li Ge flying with a kick, he raised his right leg up high, prepared to ruthlessly stomp onto Yue Bing’s chest.

Suddenly, a figure flashed over from the distance.

In an instant, the entire group of people was sent flying with a blast.

When the onlookers’ looked closely, they realized that there was now a youth that looked as furious as a mad lion. He was currently holding Xu Xian by the throat, lifting the rampant bastard high up in the air. With the sound and power of thunder, he fiercely smashed Xu Xian’s entire body into the ground.

“Rumble” The entire area trembled

The slabs on the ground shattered, as Xu Xian’s head split on top



of them, blood pouring out from the back of his head and dyeing the ground.....

The arrival of the person that seemed as furious as a lion was obviously Yue Yang. He shot a death glare at the Rose Team standing across from him and said, “Who dared to touch my little sister?”

## Chapter 60 – Evildoers Still Need To Be Worn Down By Evildoers

---

Towards Yue Yang's sudden appearance, everyone was shocked.

Who, who was this?

Shen Tu Hao completely did not recognise Yue Yang, but he was terrified by the frightening amount of power he had used to capture Xu Xuan, and asked anxiously in a low voice, "Who is he?"

The two Lin family brothers were trembling when they saw Xu Xuan's miserable condition with his head cracked, and his fresh blood flowing. One of them stuck their hands into their pockets, ready to throw a transfer scroll to escape at any time. The other had an inconceivable expression on his face, shouting repeatedly, "This can't be, no, this can't be!"

"Who, who is he?" Shen Tu Hao felt his pulse accelerating rapidly and his hands breaking out in cold sweat. The muscles in his body were extremely tense.

He knew what level of strength Xu Xuan was at.

Although Xu Xuan's strongest beast 'Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth' was a battle-type summoned beast and not a strengthening-type summoned beast, after it was contracted, however, it had improved Xu Xuan's original body constitution by quite a bit. Moreover, Xu Xuan was a Beginner Level 3 Hero, and had very

strong battle capabilities himself. He was not the kind of weakling that could be easily seized like someone catching a small chicken, then smashing him onto the floor like a chicken's egg.

Facing this enraged guy, his strength was at least three times as much as Xu Xuan's, and his speed was at least two times faster than him.

Otherwise, he would definitely have been unable to smash Xu Xuan up until he was badly injured without him being able to react.

“Uwaa!”

The Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth that was floating in midair saw its master being attacked, and fiercely flew over. It opened its mouth, exposing its rows of sharp teeth, preparing to bite Yue Yang who had just picked up Yue Bing.

Yue Yang's leg flew up, and before the Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth could close its eyelids to defend itself, he blew up the huge eyeball.

Rotating his body again, his right leg was smashed onto the Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth's round head like a windmill.

The Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth fell onto the ground with a 'peng' sound, and before it could even struggle, Yue Yang's leg stomped down on it with the force of a thunderbolt. This process lasted less than three seconds, a Level 2 Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth was stomped

on by Yue Yang alive until it had become a pile of flesh. As a matter of fact, Yue Yang had been holding back. After entering the Star's Domain, regardless of whether he was in the Aries Temple or in the Black Stone Labyrinth, he did not have the chance to fight. He could only look on as Xiao Wen Li, Hui Tai Lang and the Barbaric Cow fought... Returning to the Warrior Guild outside of Star's Domain, he saw Yue Bing being bullied by others. This had completely ignited the anger within him.

After being unable to act for a few days, he could finally beat people up until he was satisfied.

Although they weren't able to clearly see how Yue Yang had painfully smashed Xu Xuan, everyone saw Yue Yang barbarically slaughtering the Level 2 Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth clearly. They were completely dumbfounded.

This, this was basically an instant kill.

Carrying a person, yet he managed to annihilate a Level 2 Evil Eyed Ghost Tooth with merely two legs... What kind of level had this guy's power reached?

This guy's summoned beast, could it be the strongest strengthening-type beast, Mammoth?

Yue Yang used his Innate Qi to examine Yue Bing and found that she was fine, but she had used up too much of her mental strength and spiritual energy, hence she fainted.

However, the fire in Yue Yang's heart was still burning. He was still extremely angry.

A few large males attacking a little lady, hitting her until she fainted onto the ground, and still arrogantly stepping on her chest. If these types of people were not killed, would there still be karma in this world?

When Yue Yang was preparing to start killing, Hui Tai Lang and Ye Kong who was covered in blood had finally rushed over. Seeing Xu Xuan whose blood was splattered onto the ground, he was shocked, but then hurriedly pounced over and held onto Yue Yang's legs, calling out urgently, "Wait, don't be impulsive. You can't kill anyone on the first and second floors of Tong Tian Tower. For every person killed, the murderer would be barred from entering Tong Tian Tower for ten years. If you want to kill them, there will be a chance in the future, as long as you reach the third floor, you can kill to your heart's content, but not now... Tong Tian Tower is a world that respects the strong, as long as you're strong enough, you can do whatever you want. Once you get the 'Judge's Sword' on the third floor, you can eliminate them as if they were garbage, and eradicate them... But currently, you don't need to waste your potential future on these few small fries."

"Ah?" Yue Yang really did not know that Tong Tian Tower would have these rules that prohibited humans from killing each other.

"You can't kill people! If you kill a single person, you'll be immediately expelled out of Tong Tian Tower. You won't be able to take revenge on the people who are left! Calm down, you have to

calm down, they definitely used the three-on-three battle, using a roulette battle to defeat Yue Bing, so we'll also use three-on-three battles to retaliate against them. Since they raised the challenge first, they can't refuse. We'll use the three-on-three battle to settle this." Ye Kong was afraid that Yue Yang would stomp on Xu Xuan's cracked head, and did not loosen his grip while holding onto Yue Yang's legs.

"I can't kill them?" Yue Yang coldly stared at him.

If he could not kill, was he unable to torture them?

After taking down these trash himself, breaking their bones one by one, twisting their muscles, then destroying their ability to copulate, turning them into an eunuch, to be unable to give birth nor seek death. Wasn't this even better than killing them?

There were many ways of killing people. One way was the superfast instant kill.

Another was to kill by torture.

In comparison to torturing them to death, an instant kill for these guys was a blessed release for them.

He did not only have to kill, but to make them die as painfully and make their deaths as grotesque as possible. Making them lose all their dignity, then letting them die with nothing on their names, as miserably as possible.

“What? He’s that trash? Yue Yan told me a different story, did you guys recognise the wrong person” When Shen Tu Hao heard the Lin Clan’s two people saying that Yue Yang was the Yue Clan’s most useless Third Young Master, his eyes open widely until they were bigger than lanterns. He had never dreamed that the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master who was called a good-for-nothing ever since he was born, was as valiant as a lion and as fierce as a tiger.

“From his looks, it’s definitely him, but he wasn’t so frightening before...” The Lin Clan’s two brothers were trembling, as if they were patients with frostbite in the snow.

“So it was like this.” Yue Yang’s hearing ability was astounding, once he had heard Shen Tu Hao’s words, he instantly figured out that Yue Yan was not here. Calmly thinking about the situation, if Yue Bing’s cousin Yue Yan was around when she was being bullied and did not save her, it would be impossible for him to leave it up to Yue Yan.

Yue Yan was not around, Yue Yang did not worry that someone would see through him not being an authentic Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

When he saw those young people wearing the school uniform with their faces completely white, Yue Yang grinned evilly, “Who said I would kill them? Ye Kong, don’t you know that I’m strictly a pacifist supporter? How could I kill people, My heart is too kind, and more benevolent than a sixty year old grandma who is a vegetarian. People like me who love the lives around me, how would I kill people? A misunderstanding, you’ve completely

mistaken me, I am an extremely kind person.”

As the world traveller said this, he stepped heavily on Xu Xuan who was almost out of qi. One step, two steps, Yue Yang stepped on him until his blood was gushing out.

In the blink of an eye, Xu Xuan’s four limbs were mercilessly broken as Yue Yang stepped on them.

The mercenaries around them had the feeling of wetting their pants when they heard the cracking sounds as Yue Yang stepped on Xu Xuan... How was this guy kind? He was basically a devil. No, he was even more fearsome than a devil, at least a devil would not call itself kind.

“Eh?”

Shen Tu Hao did not care about whether Xu Xuan lived or died. In his eyes, Xu Xuan was a dog. It was best to let the Yue Clan trash kill him, then he would be expelled out of Tong Tian Tower. If he couldn’t cultivate inside for ten years, regardless of whether he was trash, or fake trash, they would become irrelevant. What he took notice of, was that odd demon wolf.

Looking at it, it was at least Bronze Level 3... A Bronze-ranked Level 3 Ironback Demonic Wolf? No, it was Bronze-ranked Level 4.

However, strangely, it was not a contracted beast but an uncontracted pet. Could it be that this Yue Clan trash was not able



to contract with it because it was too strong?

If he used his own contract scroll to contract with it, would it not be possible to experience a huge rise in power, like adding wings to a tiger?

Shen Tu Hao was initially frightened by Hui Tai Lang's appearance. But, looking more closely, Hui Tai Lang was not Yue Yang's contracted beast. His heart was secretly delighted .

As expected, the Yue Clan is indeed trash... to not even be capable of contracting a Bronze Level 4 Ironback Demonic Wolf and waste such a great beast, this really was an excellent opportunity bestowed by the heavens. Shen Tu Hao coldly laughed, and his mouth formed an angry expression. "Who are you? Xu Xian had such good intentions and helped Yue Bing eliminate her incompetent slaves. Not only were you not grateful, you went so far as to attack him? Such ingratitude, as well as bloodthirsty and cruel, who exactly are you?"

"..." When the mercenaries heard this, they almost stuck out their thumbs in admiration. To conduct oneself without any sense of shame to this degree, that was still a type of realm that was worth praising.

"Which one of your eyes saw me as ungrateful? Which eye saw me as cruel and bloodthirsty? Was what I did cruel? I just wanted to invite a good friend like him to eat a 'Shoe's Sole Crushed Bone Noodles', it wasn't even that big of a deal. Look how happy he looks while eating it, was I too cruel?" Yue Yang's foot continuously trampled on the stomach of the unconscious Xu Xian,

and his sternum was stepped on until it made weird gege sounds. From Xu Xian's mouth and nose trickled out large amounts of blood, and looked as if he was going to die any second.

“Gently, gently.” Ye Kong took out a block of the cheapest Healing Stone from his bosom and crushed it before allowing the medicine's white light scatter on Xu Xian's body.

These were the things he had bought before he had passed through Royal Dragon Valley, and hadn't been willing to use at the time.

He really hadn't imagined that the Healing Stone would eventually be used on that bastard that Yue Yang really wanted to just tear into 18 pieces and then drag the remains to feed wild dogs. Ye Kong was really afraid that the third master of the Yue clan would stamp Xu Xian to death, because once Xu Xian died, the young master would be expelled out of Tong Tian Tower. At that point, not only would he be restricted from entering for another 10 years, but he'd also leave behind the unconscious Yue Bing.

Based on himself and the heavily injured brother of his, how could they possibly escort Yue Bing out safely?

That's why, no matter what, Xu Xian couldn't die.

Actually, what Ye Kong didn't know was that Yue Yang's control over the strength in his feet was extremely precise. He could make Xu Xian's bones break, and injure his muscles, but he wouldn't actually inflict any life-threatening attack. If Xu Xian wanted to

die, it wouldn't be easy. Without Yue Yang's permission, even dying would be impossible.

The mercenaries stood at the side, watching this demonic male with frightening brute force speak. Even his overbearing manner was absolute.

An evil person needed another evil person to deal with him. These rampant students had met this demonic male, someone who was really their ultimate nemesis.

"Ye Kong, help me watch Yue Bing. Since these fellows are all so happy, I'm about to invite them to eat with me. Hui Tai Lang, you wait there. In a bit, I'll give their meaty bones to you to eat." Yue Yang carefully placed Yue Bing down, handing her over for Ye Kong and Hui Tai Lang to watch, then quickly walked forwards. He didn't care who was in front of him; either way, they had provoked him. If he couldn't instantly kill them, then he'd force them to suffer terribly. Otherwise, he would really be viewed as a good-for-nothing that anyone could bully.

"Jiji..." Without Yue Yang's command, Hui Tai Lang directly began to lick up the fresh blood on the ground. If Ye Kong wasn't afraid that it eating Xu Xian would be blamed on Yue Yang, Ye Kong wouldn't have stopped Hui Tai Lang from its movements; it looked as if it were prepared to start chewing on Xu Xian's thighs.

"Prepare for battle. Group fight, combined challenger." If it were a solo fight, Shen Tu Hao wouldn't have quite enough confidence; after all, the imposing manner of this good-for-nothing from the Yue Clan was too fierce, too different from how he was described

in rumors. His murderous aura was blazing, like a demon's, and could frighten anyone. However, if it was a group battle, surrounding and attacking Yue Yang from all sides with the remaining seven people would be an entirely different story.

No matter how great his brute strength was, how could he possibly go against a dozen Beasts?

The only thing that was slightly concerning was the level 4 Ironback Demonic Wolf. But since it was still a contractible Beast, as long as it entered the battle, Shen Tu Hao could find an opportunity to use a contract scroll and subdue it, forcing it to become his own contracted Beast. At that point, he'd...

“Bang bang bang bang”

As Shen Tu Hao was thinking all of this to himself proudly, a deafening noise rang out.

Lifting his head, he saw that all of his classmates had been knocked to the ground by the Yue Clan's good-for-nothing before they hadn't even had a chance to summon their Beasts. All of them had broken teeth, blood pouring out of their mouths, and even Brother Lin, who had the fastest summoning speed, had only just taken out his summoning crystal before he had been knocked down.

Yue Yang lifted his foot up high. Under Brother Lin's despaired gaze, Yue Yang then heavily stomped his foot down, and mercilessly broke the bones in their arms.

“Look at how nice I am to you guys. I was afraid that you wouldn’t be satisfied with just eating “Five Fingers” flatbread and “Crushed Heart” bread, so I even invited you guys to eat “Crushed Bones” noodles. Don’t you guys agree that I’m such a generous friend? Where else could you possibly find a friend as awesome as me? Oh I’m sorry, I’ll have to ask you guys to wait for a minute here while I go greet this....Shen Tu? Ah, so you’re Brother Shen Tu. I have heard of Brother Shen Tu’s distinguished name since long ago. I’ve always really admired Brother Shen Tu’s “calling a prostitute but not paying any money” actions. That is really the way of heroes, as well as the model that I must learn from. Brother Shen Yu, I heard that there’s a type of “Brains and Blood Wine” that’s extremely nutritious. I wonder if you’ve tried it before? Come come, I’ll invite you to drink a glass with me now. We were brought here together by fate; it was familiarity at first sight. Let’s not go home before we are completely drunk!” Yue Yang said with a particularly sincere smile.

If anyone just saw Yue Yang’s smile that was as bright as the sun, they’d definitely think that he was a warm-hearted friend that was worth forming a close friendship with. However, if they then saw the blood-covered ground, the disorder all around, and the elite students that were in so much pain that they’d rather die, anyone would feel chills, extremely cold chills....

Of course, there was also an extremely invigorating feeling of excitement....

An evil person needed another evil person to deal with him. These unbridled and shameless elite students had finally met their nemesis.

# Chapter 61 – Little Clown, Slowly Perform For Me!

---

Sweat beaded on Shen Tu Hao's forehead, and he swallowed a mouthful of saliva nervously, stubbornly trying to act cool: "You are indeed strong, very different from the rumours, but, if you think that you can win against me, then you're wrong. I am different from them, I am the true elite of the Academy."

He first let the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Manticore stand in front of him to guard, preventing Yue Yang from launching a surprise attack, then summoned a Black Armoured Warrior.

A large burst of black light was emitted from the feet of the Black Armoured Warrior, which finally turned into black smoke. It seemed to have a life of its own when it drifted, light as a feather, it enshrouded Shen Tu Hao's body. The Black Armoured Warrior also 'embraced' Shen Tu Hao, and quickly, within 3 seconds, the Black Armoured Warrior disappeared, and surfaced on Shen Tu Hao's body, becoming a thick layer of Black Armour. Even his face and eyes were protected by the thick and solid Armour. Anyone familiar with Shen Tu Hao would know that this is one of the Shen Tu Clan's renowned beasts that were passed down for generations, the 'Black Armoured Warrior'. It was a strengthening-type beast, when it was summoned, it could increase its master's offensive power by 5 times and defensive power by 10 times for an hour. This defensive ability far surpassed the other defense type beasts, like 'Stone Skin' and 'Ironhide'.

"Eh, this is? Black Armoured Warrior!" A sharp-eyed warrior was the first to recognize it.

“Heavens, this battle seems like it’s going to be terrible.” The surrounding warriors felt that the current battle situation was unexpected.

A strengthening type beast like this Black Armoured Warrior was rarely seen, and one that could change into armour to protect its master after it was summoned was even rarer since it had to be higher than Level 3.

Right now, in the eyes of the mercenaries, this arrogant team leader Shen Tu did have the means to be this arrogant. This team leader Shen Tu not only have a powerful Bronze-ranked Level 3 beast, the ‘Manticore’, he even had a beast that was not inferior to the Manticore, the ‘Black Armoured Warrior’. By combining the 2, his strength was definitely not as simple as being one plus one equals two.

If that brute force was astonishing, the youngster who had remarkable battle skills also had a contracted beast, by letting it restrict the Manticore, the amount of stress would be greatly reduced.

Now, using combat skills alone to fight 2 valiant summoned beasts, would be a strenuous task.

“Careful, the ‘Black Armoured Warrior’ is a strengthening type beast than can change into armour, not only is it able to increase its master’s combat strength, it can even evolve in the middle of battle, morphing the armour, becoming spikes that can injure its

opponents.” Ye Kong, who was afraid that Yue Yang did not know about beasts, and would be at a disadvantage when fighting with Shen Tu Hao, urgently reminded him in a loud voice.

“Without a beast, relying just on your battle skill is useless. No matter how strong your skills in battle are, at most, you can only be a useless mercenary...” Shen Tu Hao was most afraid of Yue Yang launching a sneak attack while he was in the middle of summoning. Yue Yang’s speed when attacking just now had given him a large shock. However, he saw that Yue Yang did not attack, but had waited for him quietly to finish summoning, and in the blink of an eye, had regained his enormous confidence. Seeing Yue Yang standing there quietly, he even thought that Yue Yang had felt crushed due to him, and couldn’t help but laugh arrogantly: “Did you think that it would be over just like this? No, no, this is just the beginning.”

Shen Tu Hao then retrieved a crystal with a jet-black shine from his chest with an air of complacency, flashing it towards Yue Yang to dazzle him, his voice full of ridicule: “You, do you know what this is? Sharp Bladed Puppet, a Yue Clan product.”

Following Shen Tu Hao’s summoning, the crystal flashed with rays of light, a metal puppet that was over 4 metres tall was summoned.

The metal puppet had a pair of extremely thick mechanical arms with three sharp blades attached to each wrist joint.

Below it as its ‘feet’ were cylindrical rollers, covered with spikes.



When the crowd saw this metal puppet come out, they were sweating in nervousness for Yue Yang's sake. With this fearsome Sharp Bladed Puppet helping him, it would be hard for this young master Shen Tu to lose, even if he wanted to... Next, even though the battle had not been fought, everyone knew what tactics Shen Tu Hao would use. The Sharp Bladed Puppet was the main assault, the Manticore would mount sneak attacks, and Shen Tu Hao who used the Black Armoured Warrior as armour for his body would only need to keep defending, and it would be possible to tire out the opponent, and obtain the ultimate victory.

“See this? This is the difference between you and me, it's also the difference between heaven and trash.” Shen Tu Hao arrogantly waved a hand, and the cylindrical rollers beneath the Sharp Bladed Puppet immediately rolled towards Yue Yang. The 6 blades on its wrists rotated at a high speed, becoming 2 frightening ‘Circular Cutting Edges’, one on the left and one on the right.

As long as it touched him, no matter how lightly, it would result in limbs being cut off and the body being destroyed.

Ye Kong's heart just kept sinking...

He was very anxious. Ye Kong had combat experience, but because he had lost his beast, he was of no help now when it came to battle situations.

It was not impossible to fight against the Sharp Bladed Puppet, the best way to do so was to break its wrist joints, as long as it lost

the 6 blades that could rotate at a high speed, this puppet would be rendered useless. But Ye Kong did not have a beast, by rushing towards it, he would only be sending himself to die. He could only watch anxiously as Yue Yang fought. He did not know if Yue Yang had studied puppet techniques, if this Yue Clan's third young master had not studied puppet techniques at all, only focusing on practicing his battle skills, then there would be danger.

A junior of the Yue Clan, being defeated by a puppet beast made by the Yue Clan, this really was full of bitter irony.

Yue Yang did not dodge, looking on unfazed as the Sharp Bladed Puppet rolled towards him.

“Wah...”

The mercenaries all clenched their fists, they really could not bear to see the miserable carnage that would soon follow.

Why did he not dodge?

Nobody could understand, could it be that this brute youngster had been scared silly?

When the corner of Shen Tu Hao's mouth rose in a victorious smile, Yue Yang suddenly flew into the air lightly. When both legs landed lightly on the Sharp Bladed Puppet's shoulder, the Sharp Bladed Puppet's response was rather fast. It twisted its arms in an inconceivable way, both the left and the right, the Circular Cutting

Edges cutting towards Yue Yang's legs.

Yue Yang did not stop, and somersaulted as lightly as a swallow, jumping off to land on the ground.

Behind him, sparks from the cutting of metal flew around violently.

After a burst of harsh, ear-piercing sounds that made anyone who heard it uncomfortable, a few blades broke off, shooting off one after another, flying high into the sky.

The Sharp Bladed Puppet which had suffered 2 deep wounds to the neck area suddenly convulsed a few times, its body flashed with sparks that crackled, then with a rumbling sound, it fell in front of Yue Yang. A metal brain broke apart from its neck, and rolled until it stopped next to Yue Yang's feet. As if playing with a toy, Yue Yang stepped on the Sharp Bladed Puppet's brain, which had been severely deformed and had sparks flying from it, showing a disappointed expression: "This is a genius? Using a Yue Clan Puppet to fight against a junior of the Yue Clan? Coming up with this idea, are you really a genius? Are you really an elite of the Academy? Good, if even you can be counted as a genius, then I'd rather be called trash by others."

Ye Kong was so excited that he nearly fainted, an ordinary warrior had no way of winning against a Sharp Bladed Puppet. In front of this Yue Clan's third young master who had been called trash by the world, it was practically equal to a joke.

“Good!” The mercenaries were also so excited that they waved their fists, applauding Yue Yang.

Although everyone knew that breaking the head part of the puppet, damaging the puppet’s circuits, that these were the smartest ways of fighting against a puppet beast.

However, almost no one could carry it out. Whenever someone met a puppet beast, they could only use the stupidest way, which was to keep on running away, no one dared to take the risk of getting near it... Puppet beasts had ferocious attacking power, after enduring for a while, ones small life would be destroyed.

It was not the first time they had seen a warrior break a puppet beast’s head region, contrary to that, they had seen so many ways of doing so, but they had never seen a method as easy or as effective as the one they had witnessed just now. When they had seen Yue Yang’s face which had been full of ridicule, they could not help but get heated up, and were unable to control themselves and applauded this youngster heartily.

This was too effective, it was really too elegant... Without using an ounce of strength, he could play with the enemy, as if the enemy was in the palm of his hand.

What was this? This youngster wasn’t playing with battle skills, but was playing with art.

Refreshing!

If using one word to describe the hard to constrain emotions everyone was feeling at the bottom of their heart, that would be the word, ‘refreshed’.

(TL Note: 爽 – refreshing. This is the word that the author uses here, it can be described as a pleasurable feeling. It’s used when you take a refreshing bath, or when you eat this satisfying piece of ice cream on a hot day. That’s the kind of feeling it’s referring to.)

No one knew how long it had been since they had seen a battle as refreshing as this.

The ashen faced Shen Tu Hao stood flabbergasted for a while, then suddenly resumed a appalled attitude, he shouted with a bit of frenzy: “Do you think that you can beat me just by doing that? I admit that summoning a Sharp Bladed Puppet in front of you is a small mistake, but, let me tell you, my strength is not limited to just this... “

Yue Yang nodded, then retrieved a bronze coin, throwing it in front of Shen Tu Hao: “Clown, slowly perform for me, this young master has been amused, this is a tip for you.”

# Chapter 62 – I've Been Waiting For You For A Long Time!

---

“You?” Shen Tu Hao was so furious he almost puked blood. His face twisted, as he howled terrifyingly, “I’ll kill you!”

“It’s always nice to dream on.” Yue Yang shrugged and turned around. “Hui Tai Lang, play around with this clown for a while. Although this clown is a bit weaker, he still knows how to be funny...”

Hui Tai Lang perked up when it heard this. It howled towards the sky, psyching itself up, targeted the Manticore and pounced towards it.

Although the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Manticore was a level lower than Hui Tai Lang, under Shen Tu Hao’s guidance, it roared without fear and faced Hui Tai Lang. Exposing its sharp teeth, it fiercely tried to bite Hui Tai Lang’s hind legs. If it wasn’t for the fact that it was a contracted beast, it would definitely have chosen to attack Hui Tai Lang’s throat instead. Trying to bite an extremely agile Ironbacked Demon Wolf that was a level higher than itself, the difficulty level was abnormal... But Shen Tu Hao was seasoned in battling, and was unrivalled in his knowledge of various beasts’ weak points. In his school, he had also learnt skills to counter the nimbleness of agile beasts such as wolves, dogs, foxes and others.

First, the throat. Second, the spine. Third, the hind legs.

In order to kill a more agile beasts like a wolf, dog or fox with a

larger-sized lion, tiger, or panther type beast that relies on sheer power, it would have to launch a surprise attack on the biggest weakness of the opposition, or destroy the specialty of the opposition.

The Ironback Demonic Wolf's throat could not be bitten, and its spine was no longer a weak point. Thus, it was necessary to destroy its specialty, and dispose of its claws.

Otherwise, with Hui Tai Lang's agility, a Manticore that was lower than it by a level, would only be tired out to death by it. Shen Tu Hao had confidence in his Manticore, as Hui Tai Lang was not a contracted beast. No matter how smart Hui Tai Lang was, without a master's command, it could only rely on its own instinct. Even if it were a level higher than his Manticore, it could not defeat the Manticore which had his wisdom directing it.

Within Shang Jing Academy, there was a popular saying: Only contracted beasts can be called war beasts. If not, they are called wild beasts.

Hui Tai Lang twisted its body in midair, dodging the razor-sharp teeth of the manticore.

The moment Hui Tai Lang landed on the ground, it jumped back rapidly. Its claws scratched the Manticore's big mouth, who was unable to withdraw in time.

Blood suddenly appeared... When the Manticore angrily tried to bite back, Hui Tai Lang had already jumped up into the air, nimbly

avoiding the Manticore's strike. At the instant when the Manticore had turned to attack, Hui Tai Lang's claws caused multiple bloody marks to erupt from the Manticore's backside...

The mercenaries were drooling as they spectated. As expected from a Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ironback Demonic Wolf!

Even just by being a level higher, it was possible to disregard the difference in size and completely shut down the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Manticore. It was already in this level when it was still relying only on its instincts to battle. What if it was contracted and had a master to command it? Wouldn't that increase its power by multiple times? If only they could contract such an Ironback Demonic Wolf. It was too bad the Bronze-ranked beasts could not be contracted as one pleased. Not to mention Level 2 Bravemen, even Level 3 Heroes would choke when trying to contract it. This Ironback Demonic Wolf being Bronze-ranked Level 4 would probably require at least a Level 4 Champion to contract it...

"Hui Tai Lang, you idiot! Is there any use scratching its butt wildly? The Manticore's skin is thick, how many millenia do you want to fight on for? You should bite its balls and burst its p\*nis! Do you know what vital points are even called?" Yue Yang shouted loudly. Everyone started emitting cold sweat at his words.

Biting its balls, bursting its p\*nis?

The moment everyone thought of this strategy, they felt cold wind entering their pants.



Although they did not want to admit it in their hearts, but if this kind of strategy succeeded, it would be the most painful, most devastating blow to the enemy.

Yue Yang originally did not want Hui Tai Lang to battle. He wanted to rush ahead by himself and beat down Shen Tu Hao with his fists until he was finding his teeth on the ground, all scattered. Then, he would use his feet to ruthlessly step on him, causing his entire body's bones to become fine powder. He would then loosen his pants and pee on him. Finally, he would let Shen Tu Hao kneel in front of him like a dog and lick his shoes, begging for his life while crying. But, there was one more person in the crowd that suddenly appeared. The cotton-clothed beauty who was the master of Luo Hua City was secretly observing him like a curious little baby.

Aside from her, there was another person.

This person's looks were ordinary. He was the kind that could not be recognised in a crowd even if he walked past a hundred times.

However, under Yue Yang's divine vision, he saw that this person had strength. This guy could assert his superiority even against a large group of mercenary warriors, and was only barely less 'dangerous' than the cotton-clothed beauty who was Luo Hua City's master.

On the surface, this man dressed up like an ordinary mercenary, and there was nothing special about him.

Yue Yang did not notice his presence at the beginning. Only when that light jump before destroyed the War Puppet's head did this person's eye shine brightly, blowing his cover and revealing that he was a strong person.

What made Yue Yang alarmed was that this person's hand was holding an extremely weird hexagonal crystal that was aimed at the battlefield, as if it was recording the entire process.

This person's movements calmed Yue Yang's heart down in a moment.

It was necessary to teach a lesson to Shen Tu Hao, but he could not expose the secret that he was the new Innate Ranker.

Thus, Yue Yang whipped up a trap for him.

He would trick everyone here, and let those smart alecks go along their tricked senses to stretch their imaginations wildly. They would never suspect that he was an Innate Ranker after this... Therefore, he had sent Hui Tai Lang up to battle against Shen Tu Hao's Manticore first.

"Be careful, Shen Tu Hao might use a contract scroll when Hui Tai Lang is hurt. A beast's spirit is weak when it's gravely hurt, its weak willpower easily allows the other person to sign the contract." Ye Kong hurried over to Yue Yang's side and reminded him in a low voice. But, seeing Yue Yang's eyes that had a glint of a smile in it, he knew that his heart was slightly too worried. He

paused for a while, and said again, “I’m still wondering why Shen Tu hao would want to target Yue Bing so... It could be because of competition, the Shen Tu family also had a little girl with great talent who’s nearly the same age as Yue Bing. Both of them took the notice of the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion and become the top choices for the examiner who invited disciples to study under their Sect... So, if Shen Tu Hao suppressed Yue Bing’s power, the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion would definitely choose his younger sister as their priority.

“Is that so.” Yue Yang understood a little why Shen Tu Hao had enthusiastically invited Yue Bing’s team over to Tong Tian Tower after hearing this. So it was because he wanted to destroy Yue Bing with his own hands, causing her to constantly be unable to progress. After allowing her to enter Tong Tian Tower, not only would she fail when participating in trials, her strength would fall greatly too.

Shen Tu Hao had the audacity to openly suppress Yue Bing. There should be some connection to the Yan family supporting him from behind.

The Yan family was also trying to surpass the Yue family for a long time. To suppress such a talented girl like Yue Bing, the Yan family could not pass up on this opportunity.

As for Yue Yan, Yue Yang did not rule out the possibility of him being in cahoots with the enemy...

Yue Yang’s heart was burning with anger, but he smiled even wider now. Wasn’t this just playing along with a small scheme?

Who couldn't? On this game stage where the families fought each other, he would see who could destroy the other and who could smile to the very end.

Scanning for the 'expert' within the crowd with his sight, Yue Yang took off his shirt, and tore it into pieces of cloth belts.

Then, he wrapped up Yue Bing who was still unconscious...

These movements caused everyone to be puzzled, including Ye Kong. Using torn pieces of cloth to wrap Yue Bing up, what could this mean?

Ye Kong could not think of why. Everyone who had taken notice of Yue Yang was frowning slightly. Normally speaking, this guy wouldn't make any wasted movements, why would he not care about the progress of the battle between Hui Tai Lang and the Manticore, and do this kind of useless movements? Tearing his clothes up to form cloth belts to wrap around his younger sister, what was the use of it?

Anyone with a bit of a head would not feel that this was a random movement, this little brute must have some plan being carried out...

The problem was, no one could guess what his plan was, this was what made everyone's head hurt.

On the battlefield, the battle raged on.

Multiple wounds dripping with blood had appeared on Hui Tai Lang's body. This was caused by the claws of the Manticore. Even if it were any faster, without the awareness of a master, it was unable to dodge every single attack by relying on its own instincts.

However, the Manticore who was a level lower and had a more ragged look than Hui Tai Lang.

The Manticore was already completely covered with wounds, with fresh blood gushing out. Although there was not a single fatal injury, its fighting ability was starting to weaken slightly. Even a blind person could see that it was not Hui Tai Lang's match. A normal-ranked Level 1 Lion might be able to defeat a Level 2 wolf, but it was almost impossible for a Level 3 Lion to win against a Level 4 Wolf. Between higher level beasts, a single level could cause the beast to be stronger than the other by a few times. Not only that, a Bronze-ranked elite beast would have an even greater disparity in strength. Thus, even with the master commanding the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Manticore, it was not unusual for it to be unable to defeat Hui Tai Lang who did not have a master to control it as it was not contracted.

“Scorpion Tail Hook!”

Shen Tu Hao did not panic. As if he had predicted the outcome, he sneered and commanded the Manticore to use its trump card, the scorpion tail.

That scorpion tail had not moved to attack all this while.

Under Shen Tu Hao's orders to attack, the Manticore who had stored its power for a long time sprung around. The scorpion tail that was as fast as lightning cut across the air and accurately sprung towards the underbelly of Hui Tai Lang... Hui Tai Lang rolled over and dodged the scorpion tail. Instead, Hui Tai Lang let the scorpion tail wrap around it once, following that, its sharp teeth bit into the root of the Manticore's tail, not willing to let go.

With its weak spot being attacked, the Manticore miserably howled.

Its long scorpion tail flailed wildly, but Hui Tai Lang bit into it tightly.

Shen Tu Hao did not show any signs of regret, but was rather strangely fanatical, and ordered the Manticore to flee back.

Hui Tai Lang used some force, and bit off the entire scorpion tail.

The Manticore painfully fled back to Shen Tu Hao's side, continuously crying out pitifully. However, Shen Tu Hao did not pacify it, but rather took out a refined runic scroll and opened it. The scroll shone with a burst of white light that enveloped Hui Tai Lang. "Good boy, now you are mine. I'm not that garbage, he's unable to contract with such a good demon wolf, I'm different, I'm a high leveled hero. Come, make a contract with me..." (TL note: 人●\_●人\)

Ye Kong panicked, but seeing that Yue Yang was just staring at

the scene coldly and did not move, he immediately fell over.

He knew that Yue Yang did not like Hui Tai Lang, after all, he had kicked it and trampled on it.

But, should Shen Tu Hao even be allowed to contract with Hui Tai Lang right now? Hui Tai Lang was not only a Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ironback Demonic Wolf, it was also sensitive and obedient, and was basically a good beast that was one in ten thousand.

But Ye Kong did not know that the balancing point and the evolution point for the demonic ki within Hui Tai Lang's body was Yue Yang's Innate Qi, it wouldn't leave Yue Yang even if it died...

“Good boy, my precious, come.” Shen Tu Hao continued to coerce Hui Tui Lang.

Hui Tai Lang's sight seemed to become blurred, shakily walking towards Shen Tu Hao.

Ye Kong nearly fainted at this sight.

Against all expectations, Yue Yang did not move a single muscle at all... When everyone was anxious for Yue Yang, Hui Tai Lang suddenly moved. It pounced like a tornado into Shen Tu Hao's embrace, then bit hard with its sharp teeth towards Shen Tu Hao's contract scroll. The scroll emitted a “Hong” sound, and exploded.

Shen Tu Hao's contract had failed, and the scroll was destroyed.

At the same time, he was also counterattacked by Hui Tai Lang's mind, and he started clutching his head painfully, exasperatedly screaming out.

The Black Armoured Warrior who was being worn as armour, due to the master's mind weakening, and its connection cut off, immediately separated itself. It was unable to maintain its strengthened state with its master. Before the Black Armoured Warrior even had enough time to return to the crystal, a spear had thrust towards it with lightning speed, and stabbed into the hole in the Black Armoured Warrior's eye sockets as if stabbing through bamboo. The Black Armoured Warrior did not have an actual body, but was merely a soul that wore an armour. After suffering such a fatal attack, black ki flowed out endlessly from its nostrils and mouth as if a balloon had been released.

At last, it blew up explosively... The Black Armoured Warrior was instantly killed on the spot.

A few broken pieces of armour clanged as they fell onto the ground.

A strengthening-type beast was weakest at only one point of time, which was the time when it separated from its master. When receiving a heavy wound at this point of time, there was no doubt that it would die. Although Yue Yang was not familiar with the basic knowledge on beasts, but by reading the tragic guy's parents' diaries, it was not the first time seeing this type of record.

In reality, this strategy was the tragic guy's father's favourite way to destroy the enemy.



Shen Tu Hao's Black Armoured Warrior blew up on the stage, causing his mind to be rattled heavily. He screamed again, his body wobbling, and almost fell onto the ground.

The two pieces of summoning crystals in his hands had cracked into many pieces.

When he looked towards his own Manticore in despair, Hui Tai Lang was tightly biting on the Manticore's throat, and the spear that instantly killed the Black Armoured Warrior had also penetrated into the urethra of the Manticore, causing it to have an extremely huge penis...

"Master Shen Tu, how does it feels like for a genius to turn into a useless person in an instant? Do you feel good? I know a naturally-born masochist like you wouldn't have any reason not to be ecstatic now. Don't worry, there's more to come. Master Shen Tu, don't you have a lot of beasts? Let me tell you this. If you have a beast in the future, I will instantly kill it. I believe a beautiful world without justice will be satisfying for you, after all. Ye Kong, Li Qie, Li Ge, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and serve Master Shen Tu!" Yue Yang immediately pulled back his spear, the spear that had the Manticore's fresh blood and organs, and swept it across Shen Tu Hao's face, instantly causing his teeth to shatter and his blood to be splattered all over the place.

Without enough time for Shen Tu Hao to even scream, Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge who were covered with wounds had pounced on him like mad dogs, hitting Shen Tu Hao madly, violently bashing him up.

By the time the crowd of people snapped back from their daze, Shen Tu Hao had already been beaten up into a bloody pulp.

The normal-looking ‘expert’ finally moved. The first thing he did was not to save Shen Tu Hao, but to seize Yue Bing.

As if he had been waiting a thousand years for this, Yue Yang started moving at a blistering pace after being still for so long. He flew through the sky, and using his spear that could not be more normal but yet instantly killed the Black Armoured Knight and the Manticore, as if thunder fell from the skies, he thrust the spear in between the legs of the ‘expert’ who was preparing to seize Yue Bing.

“I’ve been waiting for you for a long time. Offer up your penis obediently.” Everyone fell over as Yue Yang said this.

# Chapter 63 – Counterattack Against Abyssal Magic?

---

In that instant, that exceedingly normal-looking expert, who had been hiding his strength, discovered that he had made several mistakes.

The first was gauging the situation incorrectly. He had thought that he had concealed himself well; but little did he know that his opponent had long discovered that he had been spying in secret; The second error was that he had misjudged the opponent's ability to react; or rather, the opponent's target had been him all along, not Shen Tu Hao and the other students. This extremely powerful yet shamelessly despicable young man had already set up a trap early on, and had waited for him to fall into it. The third error was misjudging the capability of the opponent's sight. His greatest weakness was his lower body, and the opponent had hit the target, ferociously attacking his lower body... This was definitely not a coincidence, but rather his opponent seeing through his weak point.

“Summoning Grimoire!”

A deadly feeling of crisis exploded in the normal-looking guy's heart. He had no other choice but to move and attack Yue Bing who was in front of him, and shouted loudly.

In an instant, a Silver Grimoire appeared in the air, with orange rays of light shooting out of it.

A round Halo Shield rapidly spread, protecting his body... The ordinary pike that had penetrated his lower body turned into fine powder as the Halo Shield spread. Even so, this normal-looking 'expert', who had been hiding his strength, was painfully kneeling on the ground, clutching his lower body as if he was experiencing the pain of death.

Although the thrust that Yue Yang executed, was not able to take out the enemy instantly, it had still managed to cause severe damage to him.

Upon having seen through the normal-looking expert concealing his power with his Divine Vision, he became aware that this man's greatest weak point was on his lower body.

This man's body had an interesting abnormality within his body. With Yue Yang's current Divine Vision, he was still unable to see what this strange thing was, but Yue Yang could discern that the opponent's greatest weakness was this point on his lower body.

In that point, there seemed to be an energy core. As long as one lightly attacked it, it would cause major damage. The result of his earlier attack practically confirmed that Yue Yang's judgement was correct. If not for the person being an 'expert' who had the protection of a Summoning Grimoire's Halo Shield, he would have, no doubt, been felled by Yue Yang's pike. Yue Yang felt that it was a shame, as he had not thought that this guy was an expert who had contracted a grimoire. He was also surprised that his sneak-attack did not fetch a 100% rate of success. But Yue Yang was more concerned about Yue Bing's safety. As the enemy was clutching his lower body, groaning painfully, he immediately went

towards Yue Bing's side, leaned over, and carried her on his back.

The shirt, which had been torn into pieces of cloth belts before, were now put to good use.

As Yue Yang bent over, he took Yue Bing's soft body and tied her on to his back firmly...The mercenaries were dazzled by watching his actions. Suddenly they realized that this youngster had already planned to run away with his younger sister on his back. No wonder he had carried out those actions that no one had been able to understand just now.

“Ye Kong, Li Qie, Li Ge, what are you guys waiting for? Let's go!”

Yue Yang shouted, and rushed out of the crowd, snatching another pike from a dumbstruck mercenary's hands.

Ye Kong and the others were initially startled, but suddenly realised that as the crotch-covering disguised expert pressed his hand on the grimoire, a crimson teleportation door was summoned. They could not help but feel their hairs standing on their ends, being terror-stricken.

Heavens above! This disguised normal-looking expert was actually a heretic?! Was he actually summoning the ‘Demon Gate’?

“Don't panic, everyone, back off!” The silk-clothed Master of Luo Hua City's face changed. Her blonde eyebrows were slightly knitted and with a wave of her lily-white hands, a golden grimoire

twice as large as a bronze grimoire was summoned. The golden light revolved around her beautiful figure faintly, as if it were corporeal. At the same time, the Three-tailed Snow Fox at her feet enlarged to ten times its size, becoming a seductive Six-tailed Kitsune. The six tails swished, forming an incomparably wonderful sight, as if they were dancing, holding the naturalness of a willow welcoming the wind.

From the crimson Demon Gate, innumerable monsters came out.

As the mercenaries looked on, they could see that aside from the minority who either had great ability or were daring, standing their ground courageously. Others were so scared that they ran away screaming.

From the Demon Gate, monsters poured out in waves. They were of different sizes, some having yellow skin, green skin, fierce teeth, claws, some with big heads and small bodies, some with sharp horns and crimson eyes, some with bodies so huge they looked like mountains of flesh...

Yue Yang was dumbstruck, as he saw this too.

He did not think that this would happen. Before Yue Yang attacked the disguised expert, he had instinctively felt that that normal-looking guy, who was constantly recording him in secret, had a kind of unspeakable danger; but he had never thought that this guy would be able to summon a Demon Gate, capable of unleashing hell's evil spirits. Now, if he did not hurry up and destroy the teleportation portal, and that Demon Lord Ha Xin ran out from there... he would be destroyed.

Of course, Yue Yang, who had only been transported to Soaring Dragon Continent a few months ago, did not know the strict requirements needed to summon a Demon Lord.

That requirement was nothing short of a hundred lives as sacrifice along with the summoner's own life. A normal Demon Gate could only summon hell's evil spirits with fighting abilities equivalent to Level 5 and below, and it was impossible to summon one of hell's Demon Lords.

If not for Yue Yang causing him to use his final trump card that night, Xie Huo would definitely not have had to offer his life up to summon Demon Lord Ha Xin.

"What should I do now?" asked Ye Kong who had fled to Yue Yang's side and was so scared that his teeth were clattering.

An innumerable amount of hell's evil spirits that poured out from the Demon Gate, were now throwing themselves at the mercenaries who were originally spectating. Some of the mercenaries who could not escape in time, were downed by the tide of monsters and ripped to pieces. Seeing the situation growing worse, the fleeing mercenaries, in order to protect themselves, took out their weapons or summoned their beasts one after another to fight off the evil spirits who were chasing them. But, aside from a few strong mercenary warriors, who were barely holding on, the weaker mercenaries fell the moment they turned to fight. Those who were surrounded by evil spirits were in even more imminent peril.

The silk-clothed Master of Luo Hua City raised her hand, and summoned a golden scepter.

As this golden scepter pierced the ground, a golden wave of light, with a range of at least a hundred metres, spread from the staff.

All the evil spirits who were enclosed by the golden light painfully screeched. The weakest yellow-skinned and green-skinned little monsters fell within the golden light, unable to get up. However, the human warriors felt their vitality brimming, . It was as if a wave of strength had entered deep into their bodies. They could not help but shout emotionally, “Haah!”

“Monarch’s Decree!”

Yue Yang saw Luo Hua City’s Master materialise the golden decree\*, summoning a burst of white energy.

\*TL note: Something like this:





In that instant, a white light appeared under everyone's feet.

Although his estimations were not necessarily correct, Yue Yang felt that his body had at least become two times stronger as a result of the buff. His power and senses, under the buff of the white halo, were greatly improved.

“Monarch's Decree: Everyone present must fight the evil spirits, otherwise they will be regarded as deserters!” The silk-clothed beauty's shrill voice caused the mercenaries' hearts to shiver. She turned her face, and rushed towards Yue Yang saying, “Little thief, go stall that heretic. Just two minutes will do, I'll destroy this evil spirits' teleportation door. Summon: Great Trial, Aurora!”

Rings of light appeared on the delicate hands of silk-clothed beauty who was the Master of Luo Hua City. After fusing with her delicate body, a burst of intensely cold white light shone upon everyone.

After that, all of the white light condensed towards her right palm...

If this wave of energy exploded, Yue Yang believed that the power would be as strong as that green light released by the Demon Lord Ha Xin.

But, in contrast with Demon Lord Ha Xin, it took far too long for the Master of Luo Hua City to condense the power. Not only that, condensing the power also took up a lot of her energy, unlike Demon Lord Ha Xin, who could use it on a whim. The pike in Yue

Yang's hands revolved once, killing the evil spirits that pounced on him. While carrying the unconscious Yue Bing, Yue Yang flew towards the disguised expert who was painfully standing up.

Enduring the pain, the disguised normal-looking expert summoned a monster that was covered in fog.

When Ye Kong saw this, he shouted loudly, "He wants to use a Fog Monster to disperse a mist amongst us that has the ability to commit genocide. He's preparing to use Human Blood Sacrifice... Kill that Fog Monster quickly! The method, that's right! Against the Fog Monster, you need to find its core and destroy it..."

Yue Yang did not recognise any Fog Monster. This thing, to the dimension traveler, was yet another abyssal magic creature that was foreign to him.

However, with his innate gift of Divine Vision, how could the Fog Monster's weak point remain hidden from him?

In fact, piercing the disguised expert's lower body was not because he had the hobby of violently attacking others, but rather to attack the weak point of the monster. The disguised expert had a summoned beast on his body. Based on how the disguised expert's complexion and figure was slowly changing, Yue Yang determined that the summoned beast was a special-type transforming summoned beast. It had disguised the expert into a seemingly normal, common mercenary and covered up any evidence that he was a heretic. But as Yue Yang had pierced through the core of this special transformation beast, located on the master's lower body, it had caused the disguised expert to misunderstand and believe that

Yue Yang had seen through his identity as a heretic. In response, he immediately summoned a Demon Gate with all his might.

The six-tailed kitsune was faster than Yue Yang. With a swish of its six tails, a wonderful fragrance was emitted that seeped into the man's heart.

The Fog Monster who was not afraid of physical attacks was painfully crying out and continuously rolling around from within the fragrance .

Its body was now extremely condensed, and finally only balls of smoke and a black pearl that wandered around were all that was left of it. Before Yue Yang was able to capture it with his hands, the greedy little bastard Hui Tai Lang had already opened its mouth and caught the Fog Monster. Then, it swallowed it into its stomach with a gulping sound as if it was eating supplements.

“Fuck, you lowly dog, eating everything. Do you know how much money that magic crystal could sell for?” Yue Yang was furious, and kicked Hui Tai Lang several metres away.

“Uwaa!” Hui Tai Lang quickly climbed up, and eagerly ran back to Yue Yang's feet, wagging its tail intensely.

“Go further away! I'm annoyed just looking at you.” Yue Yang did not buy into its flattery.

“Little thief, as the saying goes, ‘An eye for an eye, a tooth for a

tooth'. Hell's evil spirits attacked my domain of humans, so we must pay them back too. Do you dare to follow me through the teleportation portal and launch a counterattack against Abyssal Magic? Although your battle skills aren't put to good use right now, as an elite among humans, you should follow me and train in the abyss, to work on your heart's courage... Do you dare to launch a counterattack against Abyssal Magic along with me?" The silk-clothed Master of Luo Hua City had finally completed the condensation of the different energies. Within her hand, there was a big ball of light holding a scary amount of power. As long as it shot out, everyone in the straight line would almost instantly be turned into dust.

"Counterattack against the Abyssal Magic?" Yue Yang's forehead was covered in cold sweat. Whoever said that devils were crazy? Humans were certainly crazier than devils. Even if a counterattack was launched, would sane people do it? What if the transportation door disappears, before even accounting for the Demon Lords that could be seen. If the transportation door closed, how would they come back?!

## Chapter 64 – Secondary Grimoire

---

The alarm was sounded by the Warrior Guild. The sound of a bell reverberated for a long time, travelling far across the land.

Many small portals, numbering close to a hundred, appeared in front of the Warrior Guild. Elite guards who wore gold or silver armour rushed there.

Yue Yang saw a guy who was clad in flames, riding a blazing lion. It jumped over the crowd, held up a huge sphere of flame and exploded in the middle of a large group of small hell monsters, causing the ground nearby to become completely scorched... Then, the guy majestically jumped down from the blazing lion, kneeling in front of the Master of Luo Hua City, raised his voice and shouted, “Yan Clan of the Da Xia Empire, Yan Po Jun, is at your command.”

When the evil spirits besieged him, with a whisk of his hands, Yan Po Jun ignited them all in an eye-catching manner, causing all the evil spirits attacking him to be burnt to ashes.

“With Yan Po Jun exterminating demons here, how could I, Feng Qi Sha not be here too?” A strange person who had donned a set of armour with magical engravings, holding an odd blade with a dense amount of magical qi, appeared on the battlefield. With a wave of that terrifying magical blade, all the monsters that got cut corroded and died. It then proceeded to devour their souls.

“Hmph, The Feng and Yan Clans are impressive.”

An extremely cold voice resonated in the skies.

Following that, a tornado swept the battlefield, causing innumerable evil spirits to be tossed up into the sky, frozen into ice sculptures, then flung down and broken into pieces of ice.

In the tornado, a handsome man, whose appearance matched the colour of snow, with eyes that were equally cold, was staring at Yue Yang. He did not look at the display put up by the Yan Po Jun, nor did he look at Feng Qi Sha with his dense magical qi, but instead gazed at Yue Yang who was maintaining a low profile by hiding behind the Master of Luo Hua City's little butt and watching the beautiful scenery. This really made Yue Yang facepalm inside. You all showed off your impressiveness, and I'll was just looking at the scenery. Nobody's hindering each other, yet why do you stare at me as if I killed your father?

Normally, the tragic guy was even more of a shut-in than he was. He would almost never go out of his house, and was an obedient little kid who woke up early and slept early; very much unlike himself who would go pick up girls in the middle of the night by climbing the wall...That being said, how could the tragic guy have caused any hostilities with this 'ice cube guy'?

Could it be that the ice cube guy was gay, but was rejected by the tragic guy, and turned from love to hate?

Yue Yang's heart shivered as he considered this.

“T-T-Three Great Killing Stars...” Ye Kong was so excited that his mouth was trembling. It was as if a small fan had seen a super idol appear and, his eyes so zealous they were almost burning, wanting to stick his butt out for the idol to sign his name on it, .

“Wow!” Actually, it wasn’t only Ye Kong. Even the mercenaries, who were locked in a bitter fight, and elite guards, who had just rushed here, were extremely excited, and their combat power increased greatly.

“What Three Great Killing Stars?” The only one who did not know of the Three Great Killing Star Gods, was the dimension travelling Yue Yang.

“You don’t know of them?” Ye Kong’s lower jaw fell onto the ground with a ‘Pa’.

He did not even know of humanity’s Three Great Killing Stars. Did this Third Young Master of the Yue Clan grow up deep in the mountains or woods, never seeing other people before? The Three Great Killing Stars was a title conferred to the three most talented, up-and-coming humans by the Warrior Guild. The names conferred were ‘Qi Sha (Seven Kills), Po Jun (Army Breaker), Tan Lang (Greedy Wolf)’. These three titles had been conferred upon the Feng Clan, Yan Clan and Xue Clan of the four great families’ youngest generation with the greatest talents. Thus, their names were changed to become Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang. As for the Yue Clan, even though it was also one of the Four Great Clans with exceptional talents, the most exceptional one in the youngest generation, Yue Tian and Yue Yan, when compared to Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang, were still some

distance away.

If it was said that Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang were the exceptionally strong in the young generation, then Yue Tian and Yue Yan were the first-class elites that followed closely behind them.

Although Yue Tian and Yue Yang were gifted with exceptional beasts, they were still unable to be on par with these three elites and their abnormal strength.

Then, looking at the school elites like Shen Tu Hao, they could not even be considered first-class elites in the young generation, and were second-class at most.

Feng Qi Sha was a proud disciple of one of the Four Great Sects, the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect. His beast was the strengthening-type beast 'Sky Demonic Battle Armour', who had incomparable strength in close combat within the young generation.

Yan Po Jun was a proud disciple of the Thunderbolt Lion Pagoda of the Four Great Sects. His beast was the battle-type beast 'Blazing Lion King'. He possessed high intelligence, constantly evolving tactics, and was capable of fighting the enemy at any range. Even Xue Tan Lang, who was publicly regarded as the strongest and the coldest, felt that he was a formidable opponent. His evaluation of Yan Po Jun was slightly higher than Feng Qi Sha, whose name had been conferred on him the earliest.



Xue Tan Lang was a proud disciple of the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace of the Four Great Sects. His beast was the elemental-type beast 'Violent Tornado'. He was an abnormality who was publicly recognised. He had assaulted his clan's elders when he was 9, shocking the entire Soaring Dragon Continent. The Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace's Sect Master was taken by his innate skill and personally took him in as his last disciple.

Even Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun, who had had their names conferred on to them for a long time, viewed the youngest, Xue Tan Lang in a favourable light and were usually full of admiration towards him.

Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha did not know about Yue Yang, and thought that he was an ordinary little thief. They did not really care. Who would have thought that Xue Tan Lang, this ice cube guy who usually did not care about anyone else, would directly walk in front of Yue Yang, and coldly snorted, "I recognise you, Third Young Master of the Yue Clan. Even though I don't know why you would avoid my elder sister, I don't want to know either. But, towards you heartlessly abandoning my elder sister, my anger is at its limits... State a time and place, I want to have a fight to the death with you."

"Eh?" Yue Yang was confused.

Since when did he abandon this ice cube guy's older sister?

Wait, was this ice cube guy that Xue Clan young mistress' little brother? That would make sense, but, something was still not quite right.

He did not... To be accurate, before he had crossed dimensions to swap with him, the tragic guy had never abandoned the elder sister of the ice cube guy and had even jumped into the river as suicide... Wasn't this marriage rejected by the Xue Clan's young mistress? It was her who rejected the marriage, so why was he being wrongly accused like this? Could it be the legendary scenario of the thief crying thief?

The Master of Luo Hua City was still causing trouble for him, pointing at Yue Bing on Yue Yang's back, winking her large eyes asking, "Was it because this little girl butted in?"

"No, Yue Bing is Third Young Master's younger sister, this is his younger sister!" Seeing Yue Yang was still confused, Ye Kong hastily explained in his stead.

"So you had a sister complex?" The Master of Luo Hua City's words nearly made Yue Yang spit blood and die.

"....." Everyone eye's displayed a despicable look towards Yue Yang as if looking at a pervert. This really made Yue Yang feel extremely wronged.

"What nonsense is this! I only came to fetch Yue Bing, when I heard that she was in danger. What do you mean rejecting the wedding, I don't know anything about what you're talking about!" Yue Yang felt that compared to him, Elder Sister Dou Er was not wronged at all, at least she knew who caused her death. But he did not even know why he wrongly died. Now that Yue Yang had

finally understood that this was a conspiracy, this rejection of marriage was not only a tragedy, but a terrifying conspiracy.

“The whole Soaring Dragon Continent knows that you personally wrote it! You even disclosed it to the entire country, completely ruining my older sister’s clean record, do you still want to argue against me?” Xue Tan Lang’s coldness exploded, almost turning the surroundings into a freezing hell. If not for the Evil Spirit Subjugation Army, he would have almost moved to tear Yue Yang apart.

“Eh?” Yue Yang was confused again.

This conspiracy seemed like it wasn’t simple. No wonder the tragic guy couldn’t handle and jumped into the river to suicide.

It seemed like the whole world knew that the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan who was like trash, rejected the Xue Clan’s young mistress, aside from the beautiful woman’s family. It was highly possible that the tragic guy knew of the truth, and could not stand this kind of shameless conspiracy. He felt that this world had no justice, and eventually jumped into the river to suicide in the midst of his despair...

As Ye Kong looked at Yue Yang’s startled face, he felt something was not quite right, and quickly helped Yue Yang, saying, “Could there be some kind of misunderstanding between the two of you?”

The Master of Luo Hua City smiled, saying, “Perhaps a little squabble between lovers. Just find another time to meet up and

resolve this situation between the both of you.” She fixed her face, and scolded them, “Now, it’s time to massacre the demons and counterattack, use all your strength and barge into hell!”

“Wait... “

After summoning the Fog Monster, the disguised expert who had not moved until now, suddenly started talking.

He was now completely covered in blood, with his blood vessels all burst open. Under the anti-demon laws of Tong Tian Tower, once any heretic summoned the Demon Gate, regardless of whether they contracted a grimoire or not, or what grade of elite they were, there was no doubt they would die: and die in an excruciatingly painful manner with their bodies exploding.

The guy whose body would explode at any moment rushed towards Yue Yang and smiled, “I’ve seen your father, he was the only elite who did not discriminate against me in the entire Soaring Dragon Continent. He was also the only warrior who respected me. After I die, I am willing to give you everything I have. Take it as paying back my debt to Mister Yue Qiu for saving my life when I was being chased and killed at that time.”

“Don’t go over, he’s going to explode any time soon, he wants to blow you to death too, and kill the both of you...” Ye Kong hurriedly stopped Yue Yang.

“Don’t worry, I’m trash anyway, it doesn’t matter even if I die.” Yue Yang had a carefree smile on him, as if he had seen death and

lived to tell the tale. But, in his heart, he was cursing. After bringing up the tragic guy's father, how could he not go over? The crowd stared at him. He must acknowledge that Yue Qiu was his own father, and could not back off. Then again, since he could use his Mysterious Three Styles, was it not possible for him to escape from this kind of self-controlled explosion?

“This is what I found that time when I entered the ‘Land of Ruin’, Although I knew it was something good, nobody could make heads or tails of what it was. I’ll give this to you. You and your father are similar, but your characters are different. He was a headstrong man. In comparison, I like your despicable and shameless character more... In the future, when you pay respects to your father, just say that Shi Ming was unworthy of his saving my life and painstaking advice... Goodbye, Soaring Dragon Continent who raised me but could not allow me to stay. Goodbye, Tong Tian Tower, the weaklings’ hell...” The male who called himself Shi Ming used his bloodied hands to pierce into his heart, forcefully digging out his beating heart, smashing it. Immediately after, the ground shook, and a pillar of blood that sprayed out to ten metres spewed from his chest. His entire body blew up towards the sky, and the floor was littered with the remnants of his blood, flesh and bones.

“Eh?” Yue Yang’s left hand held a mysterious black metal fragment, and his right hand held the Silver Grimoire that was gradually dulling. He was extremely shocked inside, as inside his mind, a message that he would have never dreamed of appeared: In accordance with the summoning grimoire, would you like to set it as a Secondary Grimoire? Would you like to contract with it?

Secondary Grimoire? He could still contract another Summoning

Grimoire?

Yue Yang nearly fainted. In the Soaring Dragon Continent, no matter how strong the person was, only one Grimoire could be contracted. What kind of problem happened in the system? How could he be able to contract two Grimoires? Could it be that his character was worth twice as much as the others were?

# Chapter 65 – Perilous Situation

---

By contracting in front of everybody, a Secondary Grimoire could be obtained. However, even an idiot would begin suspecting him.

Especially since he had already contracted with a Bronze Grimoire before. How would he explain a contract with this Silver Grimoire right here and now in front of the public, to the beautiful woman, Yue Bing, and the others? Contracting in front of the public. What kind of reaction would the Feng, Xue, Yan and other clans have? What if another Innate pillar of light shone out for everyone else to see? Or what if contracted grimoires could only be bronze grimoires? Would contracting with a silver grimoire in front of the public, cause suspicions to be raised in the hearts of the crowd and Luo Hua City's Mistress?

But what if he did not contract now and lost out on this chance; could he re-contract another one again?

If he could not, then he would be overwhelmed by tragedy...

After struggling in his heart a few times, Yue Yang finally rejected the notion of immediately contracting this Secondary Grimoire. It was good to be special, but if people found out then it would do him no good.

As Yue Yang rejected the Silver Grimoire, he was scared that he would really have no chance of ever being able to do so again. But who knew that the message still existed, it was as if a sentient being was calling out for him, causing his heart to be both

surprised and pleased.

Cool!

Even if he did not contract now, it was not akin to missing out on this chance altogether. Later on, after finding a spot with no people, he would contract with this Silver Grimoire...

Right, now what was this mysterious black metal fragment?

As Yue Yang was preparing to use his Divine Vision to investigate it, Luo Hua City's Mistress suddenly threw another small Silver Decree across, "Little Thief, I order you, Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, Xue Tan Lang, the four of you, to be the group captains for the expedition to the Abyss. Pick five elites now. Anyone will do."

"Me?" Yue Yang's face was even more bitter than a bitter gourd.

He had only wished to carry Yue Bing, leave this messed up battlefield, find someplace where there was nobody around, and contract with the Silver Grimoire.

As for great tasks like this; a campaign to slaughter hell's demons, just leave it to the young Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang. If he were to run with his younger sister into the Abyss, what would he do if he were to come across a terrifying Demon Lord Class elite? Even if he did not meet them, the Abyss was not a place to play around in... However, to Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang, Luo Hua City's Mistress' order was absolute. While



Yue Yang was still hesitating, the three of them, brimming with killing intent, had already picked the Golden Armour Guards or the best Silver Armour Guards and gone over to counterattack in the Abyss.

Entering the Abyss to attack the demons, this was the greatest honour for any warrior of the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge were so excited that their bodies were trembling. They saluted, saying, “Captain, we’re already ready!”

“You want to subdue the Abyss? The three of you with your current condition, would probably be enough to get stuck in between a demon’s teeth, no?” Yue Yang rolled his eyes as he heard this. Although he had seen foolish people, he had never seen those that were foolish to this extent. If they wanted to court death, going to Royal Dragon Valley to feed the worms would do. Why was it necessary to go into the Abyss?

“I won’t request anything else. Just that you can bring me into the Abyss. Even if I drag the weakest green-skinned demon down with me, it’ll do.” Ye Kong was normally very rational, but once he heard of conquering the Abyss, his intelligence dropped into the negative region. He hugged Yue Yang’s thighs, unwilling to let go until he dragged him into the portal. Actually, it was not only him, but even Li Qie and Li Ge became blood-thirsty berserkers, staring at the portal while brimming with killing intent.

If not for needing Yue Yang as a team captain to lead them in, they would have already rushed in and fought the demons with their lives.

“If you want to go then just go. I’m not going.” Yue Yang was probably the first warrior ever in Soaring Dragon Continent’s history who had rejected going into the Abyss to kill demons.

“You can put the girl on your back down. We swear that we will definitely ensure her safety.” A Silver Armour Guard thought that Yue Yang was worried that Yue Bing who was carried on his back would be in danger, and took the initiative to offer to look after Yue Bing in Yue Yang’s stead.

“Nonsense. If I hand her over to you, I’ll feel much more worried.” Yue Yang had never heard of a situation where handing over a little sheep to a bunch of wolves would have a good ending.

“I’ve come late, all of you demons, come at me... Wait, let me enjoy myself first, I haven’t killed any demons before. Let me...Oi, son, why are you stealing my kills? Would you die if you killed one less? Do you know how much that hurts my, Master Hai’s, heart? My heart was born to exterminate demons, but with the kind of merciless blows you’re dealing, what if I get too depressed and kill myself? Can you pay for my life? Wait, good dog, leave this green-skinned one to me, I’m an expert in killing the green-skinned. I was born in this world to kill the green-skinned... Damn, you lowly dog... Ah, that’s not right, you’re a powerful and good dog. I didn’t see that you were a Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ironback Demonic Wolf. It’s a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding. Wait, why aren’t you contracted... My god, you’re my brother’s dog! I haven’t seen you for a few days, and you’ve already raised a level! Where’s my brother?” A Fatty who was three times larger than a normal person and was riding a white rhinoceros galloped over at an incredibly slow speed, wanting to kill demons. But with that speed,

even a single hair could not be obtained.

After recognising Hui Tai Lang, he looked around, and finally spotted Yue Yang in the messed up battlefield and elatedly bounced down from the white rhinoceros' back.

Due to his heavy weight, the ground had started to shake.

This, was the Fatty that loved to be called the boss, Hai Da Fu.

Fatty Hai, like a small meat hill, rushed towards Yue Yang with a rumbling sound that caused two beasts and three mercenaries to fly away as he crashed into them. Even the Silver Armour Guard got scared and quickly dodged to one side.

Yet, Fatty Hai was not conscious of the fact that he was a human tank. When he had taken a few steps, ran to Yue Yang's side and patted his shoulders firmly, he even nearly caused Yue Yang to be thrown flat on the ground. "Brother, you were here? Why didn't you notify this Boss here, and instead you snuck into this place to exterminate demons? Even if there are a lot of demons here, don't worry, this Boss will protect you... Look, this is my beast, the Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron Rhinoceros, as long as it stands on the battlefield, it's an impregnable city wall. Who are these three? Are they your friends? Did they join the guild? All of you, call me Boss, I'll cover for you from now on."

"Who wants you to cover for us?!" Ye Kong was going crazy. This Fatty had almost no chance of survival on the battlefield, yet he dared to act as if he was an expert.

“Although your strength is quite weak, I will train you up. From now on, I, your boss, will carry you and pass the trials! After all, I’m the renowned Trial Clearing Prince of this Tong Tian Tower!” Fatty Hai did not recognise Ye Kong, who had lived for 2 years in a level of Tong Tian Tower, at all, and continued to boast.

“Trial Clearing Prince? Why haven’t I heard of you then?” Ye Kong suspected that this Fatty’s brain was made up of mushy beancurd, and one that had become spoiled rotten at that.

“Then you’re ignorant and inexperienced! Even if you go to a place with very little people and asked around, everyone would recognize who am I, the Young Master Hai... But don’t call me Young Master, it feels too tacky. Just call me Boss will do!” Fatty Hai was extremely fond of the word Boss.

“Who in their right mind would call you Boss?” Ye Kong and the Li Clan brothers’ mind nearly exploded when they heard it.

“When you see my strength, I can guarantee that you will sincerely call me Boss!” Fatty Hai snorted, full of confidence.

“Idiot, I can’t be bothered to talk to you. Let’s go to the Abyss, even with the magical formation sustaining the portal, I’m afraid it won’t hold up for even half an hour, we have to hurry up to see and learn more of the Abyss...” Before Ye Kong had finished speaking, Fatty Hai shrieked as if he had been f\*cked.

“Going to the Abyss? You have the Captain’s Decree? Wow, you

really have it! Brother, you're really worthy of being this Young Master Hai's little brother, how awesome! Let's go go go, don't you know that I was born into this world to kill demons? I beg of you, please bring me along, at the very most I'll let you be the boss for a little while first!" Fatty Hai patted his chest, causing ripples to form from his fat. Seeing that Yue Yang did not want to go, he immediately resorted to barbaric methods, desperately pulling on Yue Yang's arms, insisting on pulling Yue Yang into the portal.

"....." Ye Kong felt a large amount of dislike towards Fatty Hai – the guy held no strength but liked it when people called him Boss. But seeing that he could use brute strength to pull Yue Yang into the Abyss, he quickly chased after them.

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong shoved and jostled Yue Yang, forcefully pulling him towards the Abyss. The fanaticism of wanting to conquer the Abyss in their eyes was scorching Yue Yang already.

Truthfully, Yue Yang was also a little curious.

It wouldn't hurt to gain some knowledge...

Even if he could not win, he would only have to run at the very most. With the Abyss being that huge, how could he possibly be so unlucky all the time to meet Demon Lord class elites the moment he set off?

It was dangerous to carry Yue Bing and teleport into the Abyss. But, he could not feel at ease leaving her here in this messed up battlefield. Turning his head back, Yue Yang saw Yue Bing's pale

little face fast asleep, and a kind of tenderness sprouted in his heart that had never existed there before.

If he brought her along, he would be there for her. After all, she was his younger sister.

Since he brought her to the Abyss, then he must be able to bring her back to Tong Tian Tower safely, back to that warm little home, and back to Fourth Mother's side.

"The few of you. If you don't want to die, after you enter, don't move around randomly, check the situation out before doing anything." Yue Yang felt that Ye Kong and the others who had let glory and their hot-bloodedness rush into their heads would instantly die the moment they stepped into the portal. Even if there were a hundred more with them, they would probably be served up as dishes to the Demonic Army.

Ye Kong and the others were not fools. Of course, they understood this logic.

But as they examined Yue Yang's serious expression again, the existence of a glimmer of warmth in that coldness could be seen. Although the warmth was only a thousandth of the warmth that Yue Yang had shown while looking at Yue Bing just now, they still felt a ripple of warmth forming in their hearts that flowed throughout their bodies. Their blood boiled with excitement as they nodded enthusiastically, standing at attention, shouting out, "Yessir!"

As Yue Yang stepped into the portal, he felt the scenery around him go black.

After the dizzy spell passed, he found himself in a land of purgatory with a blood red sky.

A round, blood-red moon oddly gave off a red light from within the black clouds, causing the sky to be dyed in a shade of crimson similar to the colour of fresh blood.

In front of them, on top of a reddish-black rock, innumerable demonic monsters stood there, densely packed. As Yue Yang saw this, he drew in a breath of cold air. The monsters in this place were estimated to be a force of at least a hundred-thousand... It would most likely be impossible to kill them, even if they stopped attacking and stretched their necks to be slaughtered by everyone, not to mention the endless reinforcements that would come after.

This battle, really seemed like a pain in the ass.

“Everyone, be careful. The Demon General has arrived. It’s hard to kill the Demon General since these types of monster normally have a summoning grimoire. We have to fight a decisive battle, by focusing on mass killing the weaker demons.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress released the white pillar that had been charged for a long time. A light pillar shone in front of her. Any demon who touched it was vaporised immediately, instantly annihilated to the point where no ashes were left behind. The light pillar’s killing effect was enough to destroy hundreds of the demons in the Demon Army in seconds, immediately opening up a huge gap within the densely packed region of demons.

“Lady Luo Hua is invincible!” The human warriors all cheered, with their morales greatly boosted.

“.....” However, Yue Yang was clearly aware that this white pillar of light could not be released more than a few times by Luo Hua City’s Mistress. Even after charging up for such a long period of time since just now, she could only reach this level of power. Now that the enemy was streaming towards them, and the current her, who had almost completely depleted her energy reserves, would not have enough time to condense her energy again.

“Try your best to kill the enemy. With every slaughter of a group of a hundred small demons, I will bestow on you the honor of being a ‘Demon Slaughterer’, and permit you to return to Tong Tian Tower.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress did not set a difficult condition. Her objective was to lead the human’s young elites to kill into Abyss as training, and not let these young elites with unlimited potential to die in battle for glory while slaughtering demons.

Training up the bravery, willpower and chivalry of these young people was her ultimate objective.

As for strength, or accomplishments, they could be achieved via ordinary trials.

“Ye Kong, none of you move. Only do so after I check the situation out clearly.” Yue Yang felt uneasy and nervous due to his sense of danger. If the hundred thousand demonic monsters here



were all Level 3 and below, he would not have this sense of danger. Even if there were a few Demon Generals at Level 5, he would not feel his hairs standing on their ends.

Within the darkness, there must be another demon with much scarier strength hiding and waiting for the perfect moment to assault them...

This demon would more or less be a Demon Lord Class elite even if they did not count as one.

What if the strongest here, Luo Hua City's Mistress was attacked? Relying solely on Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, Xue Tan Lang, along with himself and his four burdens, how long could he stand his ground for? Not only that, he was also carrying the unconscious Yue Bing on his back...

What would he have to do to get out of this perilous situation?

# Chapter 66 – It Can't Be Called A Sneak Attack

---

Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, and Xue Tan Lang led their groups and began to slaughter hundreds of low ranked demons, like a pack of tigers that was ravaging through a herd of sheep. Soon after, they returned.

When Luo Hua City's Mistress saw that Yue Yang wasn't leading the group forward, she looked at him in deep thought.

She had long since discovered the hidden enemies.

However, she had not informed Feng Qi Sha and the others that there were powerful enemies eyeing them secretly in the dark, waiting for the opportunity to make a sneak attack. This could also be a kind of test.

On the cruel battlefield, one had to not only have bravery and strength, but also a clear mind and acute senses. There was never any shortage of battles and dangers in Tong Tian Tower. The people with the strongest combat abilities were not necessarily the ones that survived the longest. If one wanted to become a peak ranker, they had to live longer and experience more hardships than anyone else... Humanity never lacked geniuses. An innumerable amount of geniuses always emerged in Soaring Dragon Continent, but the majority of them were like meteors – they would only flash for an instant before disappearing forever.

Luo Hua City's Mistress could not deny the fact that Feng Qi Sha,

Yan Po Jun, and Xue Tan Lang were geniuses of the geniuses. Even among other geniuses, they were regarded as extremely rare leaders.

However, from the bottom of her heart, Luo Hua City's Mistress expected even more from this unknown little thief, Yue Yang.

He was the only youth that she could not see through.

“You guys have already received your honor. Return to Tong Tian Tower immediately. Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, and Xue Tan Lang, stay behind.” Luo Hua City's Mistress waved her hand and commanded the golden armored guards to go back to Tong Tian Tower through the portal. Without paying any attention to Feng Qi Sha and the other two, she turned around to face Yue Yang and asked softly, “There are 100,000 or more enemies, yet they haven't started their fierce assault. What do you think is the reason for that?”

“.....” When Feng Qi Sha and the other two were completely stunned when they heard Luo Hua City's Mistress asking Yue Yang this question.

In their eyes, Luo Hua City's Mistress was the wisest person among the human rankers. Why would she ask the Yue clan's good-for-nothing Third Master this question?

Could it be that this good-for-nothing was not as useless as others had said, but was actually an extremely clever fellow?

Why would Luo Hua City's Mistress give guidance to him even though was completely unrelated to him?

In that moment, a sour feeling arose in the hearts of Yan Po Jun and the two others. Luo Hua City's Mistress was such an outstanding ranker who normally did not pay any attention to others. Yet right now, she wasn't looking at them any differently, and was instead favouring that good-for-nothing over them. Even though they were in front of a hundred thousand demons, she still insisted on urging Yue Yang to reflect on the situation...

Their emotions began to spin around rapidly. If it were them, how would they answer?

With this situation unfolding in front of them, why did the enemy do this?

Although Luo Hua City's Mistress had not asked them, Xue Tan Lang and the others refused to admit they were any lower than Yue Yang, and furiously began to ponder over the question in hopes of coming up with an answer better than Yue Yang's.

"A hundred thousand low level demons aren't frightening enough. If the enemy's strength is far superior to ours, you definitely wouldn't have led us into the abyss to counterattack." Although Xue Tan Lang and the others did not want to admit it, they felt that what Yue Yang had said made sense. Thinking about it carefully, if there were countless powerful enemies waiting behind the portal to the abyss, why would Luo Hua City's Mistress bring everyone inside to die? The fact that she dared to bring them had already indicated that she was sure of the outcome. When they

looked back at Yue Yang, their expressions had changed. Instead of the disdain and anger that they had previously felt towards him, they were now amazed....this good-for-nothing was actually not as bad as the rumors stated. Not only that, he was pretty outstanding too. At the very least, he could continue to calmly think on despite being facing a hundred thousand demons. This was not something a mere good-for-nothing could achieve.

“Mn. Then, why do you think they aren’t in a rush to attack us right now?” Luo Hua City’s Mistress continued to ask, having seemingly anticipated Yue Yang’s previous reply.

“I’m guessing that there’s definitely an extremely cunning person pulling the strings among the demons. After opening the portal, he didn’t hurriedly charge through, but had instead concealed himself to observe the situation. If we hadn’t counterattacked, then perhaps he would’ve had some other secret move... Our counterattack made him suspect that we were prepared to ambush, and thus he didn’t dare to act blindly without thinking. As long as we revealed even the slightest hint of weakness, I believe that he would have immediately mounted a sneak attack on us. I’m afraid that this cunning ranker behind the demons is a Demon Lord.” These words made Xue Tan Lang and the others jump in shock.

“Demon Lord?” Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, and the others began to tremble in fear. What level of existence was the Demon Lord at? Anyone that were Level 6 Elder or below would be instantly killed by a Demon Lord. Based on the strength of the people present currently, they were probably not even enough to get stuck between the Demon King’s teeth.

“Not the Demon Lord.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress waved her hand, “He’s the Baron of Hell, Mo Yun. He was a human that turned into a demon ranker a thousand years ago. He’s extremely cunning, and is very skilled at manipulating people’s weaknesses. For example, Ying Shi Ming’s corruption was probably due to being tempted by this person. His believers are always finding people with weak wills who thirst for strength from the lower levels of Tong Tian Tower or the remote towns in Soaring Dragon Continent. He uses the temptation of power to lure them one step at a time until they are corrupted. Shen Tu and the others were probably targets sought by Ying Shi Ming on behalf of the Baron of Hell, Mo Yun.”

“Why did Ying Shi Ming abduct Yue Bing?” A flash of realization flickered in Yue Yang’s heart. Could it be that this was related to the Baron of Hell, Mo Yun?

“Plant-type beasts are the bane of all hell-type demons. Ying Shi Ming wanted to harm your younger sister to prevent human rankers that use plant-type beasts from growing. To human warriors, your sister, who has a plant-type beast, isn’t very important. But to the demons, her plant-type beast is extremely frightening. I suspect that Shen Tu’s group had suppressed her under Ying Shi Ming’s orders.” Luo Hua city’s mistress exposed this little secret.

If anyone else had heard this, they probably would not have any reaction. After all, they were not experts in plant-type beasts and had never thought of using them.

Yue Yang, on the other hand, was shocked, and his heart began to race.

No wonder the Thorny Flower Fairy from 3000 years ago had been able to massacre entire legions of demons and eliminate three Demon Lords without any help. It turned out that not only was the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen extremely formidable, but she was also the bane of hell-type demons... The fact that humans were weakening and could be suppressed by the demons was most likely related to the fact that human warriors had abandoned the usage of plant-type beasts.

Going against the demons without their nemesis would obviously be a difficult battle to win.

If he cultivated his Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, wouldn't he be able to decimate the legions of demons in a single sweep like the Thorny Flower Fairy had?

"What do you think we should do next?" Luo Hua City's Mistress asked Yue Yang.

Everyone knew that Luo Hua City's Mistress had already thought of a plan in her mind. The only reason she asked Yue Yang was to give him a chance to be independent and utilize his own intelligence.

Yan Po Jun and the others were jealous to death. They really wished they could just take away Luo Hua City's Mistress' favouritism towards Yue Yang and keep it for themselves.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai could no longer suppress their emotions.

Their bodies began to tremble as they stared at Yue Yang with staring eyes, their hearts filled with anticipation.

“The longer we stay here, the more suspicious Mo Yun will become. It’s best if we take the initiative to attack and challenge him first. Otherwise, he’ll definitely pull something behind our backs. I don’t know what he could possibly do, but it’s definitely not something good.” The sense of crisis Yue Yang felt began to grow stronger; he guessed that this Mo Yun person was definitely playing tricks on them in the darkness.

“Well-spoken. Your observations are spot-on. He’s currently offering a sacrifice...these low level demons weren’t being used to attack us at all, but used as sacrifices. With such a large-scale sacrifice, he can perform tons of tricks. It’s precisely due to the fact that you are all elites of the humans that I’m so strict on you. You must make a decision now: If you would like to leave safely, then leave through the portal. If you’re willing to challenge yourselves, then go challenge that demon general. After killing the enemy, you can use a teleportation scroll to return to the Warrior’s Guild. As for the Baron of Hell, Mo Yun, I’ll personally defeat him.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress smiled unyieldingly.

The Baron of Hell was playing tricks on them. He had continuously ordered a hundred thousand low levelled demons to attack as a means to keep all these elite humans that she was commanding to stay here.

But would she really act according to his wishes?

Offering a sacrifice of a hundred thousand demons? She already



had a plan to deal with this a long time ago, what could this even count as?

Luo Hua City's Mistress watched the densely packed low level demons outside fall down to ground with miserable cries, their bodies exploding one after another. Eventually, a mountain of corpses had formed, and a river of blood flowed across the area. Her sneering expression became even more prominent.

This large-scale sacrifice scheme was a waste of Mo Yun's schemes. It had absolutely no effect on her.

The only thing she was concerned about was whether or not Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, and Xue Tan Lang could defeat the demon general and safely return to the Tong Tian Tower's floors.

She shot a glance at Yue Yang. Although he looked weak on the outside, aside from carrying his unconscious sister on his back, Yue Yang also had a group of friends currently in a state that was beyond miserable. Yet in her heart, the person she had the most faith in was Yue Yang... This faith could not be explained, but she definitely felt such a strange feeling.

"Who dares to fight against me, Yan Po Jun?" Yan Po Jun was beyond bold, his loud voice inviting the Demon General opposite of him to fight.

"Take your times to fight, you guys. I'm a bit hungry, so I'm going to back first and eat supper." Yue Yang stood ready and prepared to grease his soles to slip away.

That bastard was shamelessly running away. This not only made Xue Tan Lang and the others extremely embarrassed, even the demons they were facing could not stand to watch.

A demon general with a pair of unique crescent blades came flying over. He threw something through the air, landing in the space between Fatty Hai and Ye Kong, which sent a pitch-black light pillar up into the air. When Yue Yang saw this pillar of light was actually a portal, he inwardly cursed at Fatty Hai and the other idiots. They had run all the way to this abyss only to be killed. Yue Yang then looked back at Luo Hua City's Mistress, only to see that she had an expression that seemed like a smile, but was yet not a smile. He gritted his teeth and ran straight into the quickly fading pitch-black pillar of light to rescue Fatty Hai and the others.

In an instant, he was teleported to a blood-red space.

The space was round, and the area wasn't large – it was probably around the size of a soccer field.

“Welcome to the battlefield where demons and humans will fight to the death. My battle slate will have your name recorded as the 1365th human warrior beheaded by me.” The demon general carrying the pair of crescent blades laughed.

Underneath his feet were Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, and the Li brothers, who had fallen within the pool of blood.

Thankfully, they hadn't died yet; they were simply unconscious

from their severe wounds.

Yue Yang cried out, “No way? You guys dared to enter the abyss at such a low level? I’m really speechless...Demon General, did you mount a sneak attack on them?”

The Demon General crossed his two curved blades in front of his chest and loftily replied, “It can’t be called a sneak attack; their reaction times were simply too slow.”

Before he had even finished speaking, he suddenly realized that Yue Yang’s fist had already struck his nose.

Bang!

The Demon General’s entire body was sent flying through the air, before smashing back down onto the ground.

In a sorry state, he stood back up and roared at Yue Yang, “You’re too despicable, to think that you would mount a sneak attack on me while I was speaking!”

Yue Yang loftily imitated the opposite party’s actions, taking out two daggers and crossing them in front of his chest. With an arrogant expression, his nose raised high in the air and cockily declared, “It can’t be called a sneak attack; your reaction time was simply too slow.”

# Chapter 67 – I'm Currently Pondering Over What Shivering Is

---

Yue Yang's actions had practically turned the Demon General insanely angry...

However, this guy was not a fool.

Even when he was extremely angry, he did not lose his ability to think rationally. He understood that this person, who could land a punch on his nose without him being able to react at all, was not a good person to provoke. He was definitely not as disappointingly weak as the other four people. Even with a woman on his back, he could still land a punch on him. This person would definitely not be an easy opponent. The Demon General brandished his twin swords and retreated thirty metres back before taking out his crystal to summon his beasts.

Seeing that the Demon General did not have a summoning grimoire, Yue Yang heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. He hated meeting opponents who had summoning grimoires. The protective shield that looked like an eggshell was simply too annoying. Not only was it impenetrable, it also allowed enemies to escape easily.

Thank goodness this guy did not have a summoning grimoire, but only two swords that looked like 'egg swords', a crescent blade demon soldier.

If everything went well, this guy's 'egg swords' would be his.

(Seph: WoW reference Illidan Stormrage's weapon, Warglaive of Azzinoth, nicknamed egg swords by the Chinese)



However, the twin crescent blade held by the Demon General seemed to be a little different from the legendary ‘egg swords’ in shape. It was not as curved and it placed more emphasis on one side, so that it would be able to deal more damage to the enemy instead of being just eye candy. But Yue Yang did not mind it at all. In fact, he was already drooling at the sight of this pair of magic blades. He had already determined that this was the Abyss’ version of the ‘egg sword’. Aside from the Lich King’s ‘Frostmourne’, the ‘egg swords’ of Illidan was the coolest looking weapon amongst all others. As the saying goes: “You will be wiped out when the ‘egg swords’ come out”. It could be seen how powerful the ‘egg swords’ were.

(Seph: It was an exceedingly rare weapon in WoW after all. Frostmourne is also a WoW reference, see below pic.)



Since he came to the Abyss, how could he live up to his own expectations if he did not bring the two ‘egg swords’ back?

“Hui Tai Lang, what are you waiting? Go on!”

Following Yue Yang’s orders, Hui Tai Lang immediately obeyed and moved.

On the other side, the Demon General’s strengthening-type summons had just started its strengthening process as Hui Tai Lang pounced towards him. The Demon General did not think that Yue Yang could be this shameless. Forget about the fact that he just sneaked an attack, he even set his dog loose on him to boot... Of course, Yue Yang did not think about it that way. Setting the dog on others was a noble tradition of the Ancient Chinese. If not for Erlangshen setting his deified dog on Sun Wukong, him taking down Sun Wukong would have been questionable.

(Shiro: Erlangshen and Sun Wu Kong are characters in a Chinese folklore – Journey to the West – the one about the monkey born from stone)

Therefore, letting a dog loose was very important.

(Seph: what kind of logic is this pls)

Now the Demon General was extremely depressed.

His summoned beast's strengthening process had not been completed yet; it would need an estimated two to three more seconds in order to bring out its full power. Yet it was forced to stop fusing.

The Demon General's body and his beast seemed to be tied by an invisible force, and both were unable to budge even an inch. This accursed human warrior just had to be a fool who specialised in combat techniques instead of contracting a summoned beast. This fool had beaten him up until he was completely disoriented and seeing stars. What made the Demon General truly furious was that in the next moment, this guy had stolen the twin blades from his own hands, and he was using them more fluidly than himself, slicing left and right, slashing up and down, spinning, circling, slaughtering, revolving the weapon in all sorts of manners, as if this pair of crescent blades were specially made for him to use. It was not easy to endure this youngster's hurricane-like blows. When he had finally crawled back up, the Demon General found his entire body covered in wounds.

“Your ‘egg swords’ are not bad. It's too bad the quality isn't that great. How could a noble Demon General like you only use a Bronze-ranked magic equipment?” Yue Yang expressed his slight discontent.

“Human, you have completely pissed me off.”

Although the human with the exquisite martial art techniques was extremely powerful, he did not have summoned beasts. This would be his fatal weakness.

(Seph: OH BOY HERE IT COMES)

Although the Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ironbacked Demon Wolf was powerful, it was merely a feral beast, and was nothing much to be fearful of.

As a Level 5 elite, the Demon General did not think that a human without any contracted beasts who focused only on battle techniques and a wild wolf with a slightly higher rank would be able to defeat him. Did this human think that by using the crescent blades to cut him apart, he would be able to win? What a joke. Did he not know that the Demon Race dominated the worlds due to their strong bodies?

As long as the heart was not pierced, as long as the head was not lopped off, then he could continue fighting without any drop in his strength.

The twin crescent blades was only used to assist his attacks. His strongest possession was his extremely tough body.

The Demon General took a deep breath, and thoroughly fused with his summoned beast, Devil Lizard.



His whole body started to change slowly. The curved horns on his head grew longer and sharper, his fingernails turned into claws that could rend metals and split rocks. The muscles in his body bulged, and a layer of thick scales covered his skin. Behind him, his tail grew coarse and extended. At the end of the tail, a sharp barb grew as well. The two thin flesh wings that grew on his back helped him glide further in mid-air after a jump...

Yue Yang saw that the Demon General's toenails, which could lengthen or retract at his will, actually carved out numerous deep indentations on the black stone floor as it cut across the ground.

In an instant, he revealed an extremely astonished expression.

"Now that my \*\*, strength and movement speed has increased by five times compared to before, shiver and cry, you weak, powerless human." The Demon General burst into a loud laughter.

With a single leap, he flew towards Yue Yang from the skies. Yue Yang used the crescent blades to meet his attack, but was easily repelled by the Demon General's palm. The sharp crescent blades could not even cut through the solid scales on the Demon General's palm; it could only carve out a single, insignificant wound... Raising his other hand, the Demon General seemed to rend the sky apart as he brought his claws down onto Yue Yang. Yue Yang hurriedly turned around, using the other crescent blade to defend. The Demon General laughed as he pushed against the sword, applying pressure with his strength as he forced Yue Yang's body towards the ground. Suddenly, a tail full of barbs flashed in front of Yue Yang's face like a viper.

Bang!

With a backflip, Yue Yang narrowly dodged it.

Instead, the ground where he had been before was smashed to pieces by the barbed tail.

At this time, Yue Yang showed an astonished expression on his face, just like a country bumpkin who had just moved to a big city and saw airplanes for the first time.

“Shivering already, weak little human?” Pleased with himself, the Demon General summoned another beast, a fireball, and let it ignite on his claws. Originally, this was supposed to be used to enchant the crescent blades, but the magic equipment was stolen by Yue Yang. He had no choice but to apply the enchantment on his claws instead. However, the enchantment power wasn’t any weaker.

As long as he could scratch this human boy with his claw, the Demonic Fire Beast would incinerate him.

Seeing Yue Yang backing off, the Demon General was pleased and laughed loudly.

Soon after, he chased after Yue Yang at a lightning-fast speed. He raised his flaming claws and slashed downwards at him.

However, the binding power that the Demon General could not comprehend appeared again. He felt the sky spinning at the same time, and when the Demon General could finally react, he found his whole body had been thrown down onto the ground. A tall ox-headed human warrior was looking down at himself. Its eyes were as red as fire... The Demonic Fire Beast between his arms let off a ‘Bang’ sound and separated itself from his body.

It had turned into a demonic fireball, rolling on the ground.

Before the Demon General had time to understand what was going on, he saw a ferociously huge cow hoof stepping down on his face with great force.

After waiting for a long time, Hui Tai Lang saw the Demonic Fire Beast that exploded due to the appearance of the Barbaric Cow Shadow that used its Death Gaze to instantly kill it. It rushed up and swallowed this Demonic Fire Beast’s carcass into its stomach whole.

“You lowly prodigal dog, eating anything you find, did you think you’re a government official, getting food served to you everywhere you go?” When Hui Tai Lang swallowed the Demonic Fire Beast’s carcass, a blaze appeared around its body, burning brightly on his skin. Weirdly, another head popped out from its neck, and within two minutes, Hui Tai Lang had completely assimilated the energy from the Demonic Fire Beast, officially rising to become a Bronze-ranked Level 5 Two-headed Demon Wolf.

It was evident that Hui Tai Lang was not used to its new body

after its evolution, which had two heads. It was slightly uncomfortable when it walked, and when the two heads looked at each other, they had frightened expressions on their faces. Finally, after observing itself over and over again and it confirmed that another head had sprouted from its body, Hui Tai Lang's four eyes turned white at the same time and it fainted to the ground.

Yue Yang was speechless.

He reckoned that Hui Tai Lang was the first beast in history from the wolf race, or even the entire world of beasts to have frightened itself so much that it fainted.

With this little courage, it would be hard to visualise it succeeding in the future.

On the other hand, the Barbaric Cow Shadow, who did not know what fear was, kept ruthlessly stamping onto the Demon General who was out of eighteen lifetimes' worth of luck. Under her brutal hits, the Demon General did not have any chance to counterattack. Even if he could counterattack, it would be completely useless; because blinking her doe eyes and watching the show from one side, was Xiao Wen Li.

However, the true reason why the Demon General was completely out of luck was Yue Yang's sword qi.

With a stream of Yue Yang's sword qi, he easily penetrated the Demon General's weakest spot, his heart.

“With everything I have, I offer up to the Great Demon King Baruth, long live the Demon King...” The Demon General fell into despair and shouted this loudly. Following this, his muscles started to deform oddly, and his stomach stuck out. His demonic qi had rapidly condensed into a sphere that covered his entire body.

“Could you please be quiet for a while? I’m currently pondering over what ‘shivering’ is.” The Demon General was thinking of self-destructing, but Yue Yang did not have time to bother with him.

On the contrary, Xiao Wen Li who was spectating for the good half of the time was unable to stand the Demon General any longer. She summoned the Petrifying Medusa out, and with a single arrow let loose from the Petrifying Medusa, the Demon General who did not die after being stamped on for quite a long time by the Barbaric Cow Shadow and was preparing to self destruct was instantly turned into stone.

The Barbaric Cow Shadow stamped wildly on the Demon General a few more times. The Demon General had met a truly tragic death; turned into stone and then shattered to pieces.

“Do I immediately contract with it, or grab hold of another gold grimoire before contracting with it? Why did Shi Ming not send me a gold grimoire, the grade of the silver grimoire is simply too low!” Yue Yang who was never content with what he had had completely forgotten that his own summoning grimoire was only Bronze-ranked Intermediate. It was two levels lower than this Silver-ranked Intermediate grimoire.

If he contracted a Secondary Grimoire, would he be able to get

another innate skill and Guardian Beast?

# Chapter 68 – The Divine Grimoire

---

Clasping the silver grimoire, the color of which had slightly dulled, a familiar, voiceless beckoning appeared in his heart again.

Rather than waiting to grab hold of a gold, platinum or diamond grimoire to contract in the future, he might as well contract with this silver grimoire right now. If he used it constantly in battles, it would probably rise in level to become gold or even platinum on its own.

Thinking along these lines, Yue Yang abandoned his burdened thoughts, stretched his hands, and rested them lightly on top of the silver grimoire.

When the message in his mind emerged, he made a precise and clear affirmation to contract... Between his fingers, streams of golden light appeared. Initially, it was gentle, but it slowly intensified. Finally, the entire silver grimoire was shining with an extremely dazzling golden light, illuminating the surroundings. Even Ye Kong and the others who were unconscious had a layer of golden light on them.

A splendid pillar of light rose from the silver grimoire. When Yue Yang raised his head to look at it, he found that the light pillar was extremely tall. As it shot upwards, through the clouds, it became impossible to see the top of the light pillar.

While Yue Yang was still stunned, he suddenly discovered that a piece of special information had emerged within his mind.

Looking down, he saw that the Silver Intermediate-ranked grimoire was falling in level, descending first into a Silver Beginner-ranked grimoire. This was not the end, it kept dropping in level, to Bronze Advanced-ranked, then Bronze Intermediate-ranked, and finally turned back into a Bronze Beginner-ranked grimoire. Yue Yang began to sweat bullets as he saw this happen. So it seemed that regardless of what grade the summoning grimoire was, with a contract, it would turn into a Bronze Beginner-ranked grimoire... The things that belonged to the previous Grimoire owner would be deleted, and everything will go back to the beginning state. If he had known this earlier, he wouldn't have hesitated to contract it at all.

It was not too much of a pity for the silver grimoire to fall to this level. If he had obtained a diamond grimoire that dropped back to become a bronze grimoire, he would be crying until he ran out of tears.

But why was Xiao Wen Li's grimoire already a Diamond-ranked one when she first used it?

As this thought arose in Yue Yang's mind, he suddenly heard a chirp, a heavenly chirp, from the depths of his soul. It was so beautiful that his entire soul shook along with it.

The mysterious, dormant energy that he had felt in his body forever had finally become active again.

It seemed to want to break out from his body, suddenly giving



Yue Yang the shock of his life.

Could it be the Heavenly Sword Goddess?

Was she leaving?

His right hand that was lightly covering this summoning grimoire which had turned from Silver-ranked to Bronze-ranked, started feeling a wave of pain. His skin split open, and drops of fresh blood seeped out from his hands, causing the entire summoning grimoire to be dyed red with blood. At the same time, the spiritual qi within Yue Yang's body frantically rushed out towards the summoning grimoire, at a more ferocious pace in comparison to Empress Fei Wen Li's absorption. Within a short period of time, he had become weak due to losing too much blood and consuming too much spiritual qi. Originally, Yue Yang wanted to pull his hand away, but, at this point, he was unable to control his own hand. He could only stare helplessly as more fresh blood from his palm was absorbed into the summoning grimoire...

Suddenly, a burst of a seven-coloured light pillar, resembling a rainbow appeared.

It then turned into a beautiful halo of light, that seemed like a wheel, ring or moon, emanating everywhere from Yue Yang's hands; his fingers, the back of his hands, his wrist and his arms. A wonderful fragrance that was hard to describe and a heavenly chirp that was hard to express in words appeared at the same time... Yue Yang seemed to see two dazzling, colourful Eastern phoenixes flying around his arms, before finally entering into that grimoire... Before he could take a closer look, a loud 'bang'

resounded in his head and he lost consciousness, fainting onto the ground.

## The Blood Moon Demon Palace.

In the Abyss Blood Prison Continent, Baruth, one of the Three Great Demon Lords was currently frowning as he researched the 'God's Runes'. But the complex, profoundly mysterious, special-type summoning runes almost caused the Great Demon Lord Baruth to have a brain haemorrhage. Even though he had spent three days' and three nights' worth of research, there were still been no progress on it at all.

At this point of time, one of the usually calm Demon Commanders barged into the palace, frantic and anxious. He had directly knocked over the palace guards, sending them flying away as he burst into Baruth's living room.

"Du Lan, what's the matter?" Great Demon Lord Baruth looked at his right-hand man with slight astonishment.

"Your Majesty Demon Lord, the sealing crystal pillars have shattered, we must immediately redo the seal now... I mean, we've almost exhausted the entire country's power to catch that unknown holy beast in Tong Tian Tower's seventh floor. It has awakened, and its power has shattered the sealing crystal pillars," The Demon Commander named Du Lan hurriedly reported.

"Has it not been sleeping for the past three hundred years?" As Great Demon Lord Baruth heard this, his headache grew worse.

That unknown holy beast's power was extremely high, and nobody was able to contract with it. It was dangerous to keep it, yet it would be a pity if it was released. He really did not know what the best course of action to take was.

“Yes, it was sleeping quietly in the sealed barrier for 300 years. However, it suddenly reacted today and woke up from its deep sleep on its own. When it woke up, it immediately started to howl towards the southeast. It was as if something had awoken it from that direction, or perhaps it was calling for help from its companions. I did not understand what it was trying to do, and could only increase the power of the seal, forcing it to go back into a deep sleep... Although that unknown holy beast had gone back to sleep again, our sealing spell has reached its limits. Six out of the ten crystal pillars have already shattered.” Demon Commander Du Lan explained the situation, worried to death.

“The southeastern direction? Send some men to investigate and see what there is to our southeast.” But the Demon Commander Du Lan shook his head the moment Great Demon Lord Baruth spoke.

“There's no need to investigate. Your Highness Demon Lord, aside from a dozen or so human warriors disturbing us at the portal by counterattacking, nothing else has happened. Those that were transferred over here from the space in Tong Tian Tower were no-name human warriors. Aside from a human lady called Luo Hua who has some reputation, the others were all human kids. I don't think that those people would have the power to awaken or contract with the holy beast. If they wanted to contract with Holy beasts or Mythical Beasts, they would first have to have a Divine Grimoire... Not only that, the distance between us and that place is far too great.” Although Demon Commander Du Lan could not

figure out the reason why the holy beast awoke, he did not feel that the counterattack initiated by the humans was the reason why the holy beast had awakened.

“Then, why did it happen?” Great Demon Lord Baruth also felt puzzled by this, and habitually raised his eyebrows.

Battlefield of Death (Seph: Scene shifting to Yue Yang)

(Shiro: The place where Yue Yang had been battling with the Demon General is called Battlefield of Death. Sorry we didn't realise it's a term, we thought it was just a descriptive phrase when it first come out)

When Yue Yang woke up, he found a grimoire shining with a rainbow light floating silently in front of him. It was as brilliant as a diamond and as sparkling as a flawless crystal. It was so perfect that it would cause people to gasp in admiration.

“Divine Grimoire?” Yue Yang was astounded when he saw what was written on the cover.

From his knowledge, there were only Bronze, Silver, Gold, Platinum and Diamond grimoires, a total of five kinds. He had never heard anything about a Divine Grimoire.

In truth, the highest level summoning grimoire that he had ever seen was Xiao Wen Li's diamond grimoire.

And the grimoire that he had just contracted was originally a

Silver-ranked Intermediate grimoire which dropped in level to become a Bronze-ranked Beginner grimoire. How had it suddenly become a Beginner Divine Grimoire? What the heck is a Divine Grimoire anyway? At this time, a scene suddenly flashed within Yue Yang's mind. Before Empress Fei Wen Li fell asleep, she had once conjured a huge summoning grimoire. It was faintly similar to the Divine Grimoire that he possessed now, but that book had been a few times larger than this book.

Could it be that in the realm of the strongest, those Rankers that had reached the summit, used a Divine Grimoire rather than the normal Bronze, Silver etc Grimoires?

Yue Yang had an extremely shocked, disbelieving expression as he continued to observe his own Divine Grimoire... It was a full one metre long, and half a metre wide. The book was thick and probably had a few dozen of pages. Regardless of whether it was the cover or the details, they were all decorated with a beautiful yet mysterious runic designs.

These runic designs were complicated, profound, and mysterious; it was as if it was the workmanship of a god.

For a moment, it caused Yue Yang to be intoxicated...

He firmly pinched himself. He was not dreaming. All of a sudden, his pulse quickened to around 300 bpm, almost causing his blood vessels to burst.

With a flash of a rainbow light, Xiao Wen Li floated out of Yue

Yang's body. She summoned the diamond grimoire, and opening her beautiful eyes, she floated into the Divine Grimoire. Yue Yang was dumbfounded. Could this little girl be moving house on her own? Before this, she was not willing to stay within the bronze grimoire. So the reason was because she disliked the low level of the bronze grimoire. Now that he had a Divine Grimoire, this little girl immediately moved inside.

Yue Yang wanted to hurry up and open the Divine Grimoire and see whether he had obtained new inherent skills and a guardian beast.

But when he stretched his hand towards it, a piece of information popped up in his mind that made him sweat bullets.

Innate Rank and Spiritual Qi is not enough to open the Divine Grimoire... To his surprise, there was such a thing as being unable to open his own summoning grimoire. Yue Yang felt as if a cat had scratched his heart. He really wanted to see what the mysterious Divine Grimoire had inside, but it could not be opened.

A while later, he saw the little snake loli float out with a smile on her face. Her six little hands hugged Yue Yang's thigh, intimately acting like a spoiled kid towards him.

She seemed to be really happy with this new home?

But, what was contained within the Divine Grimoire?

“My precious, could you tell me what’s inside? What’s my new gift and guardian beast?” Yue Yang hurriedly asked.

# Chapter 69 – The Question Is Actually Very Simple

---

Xiao Wen Li blinked her big eyes adorably but didn't say anything else.

Yue Yang thought that it was because she was still too young, so she hadn't learn how to speak yet.

The current situation that Yue Yang was facing right now was just like he was standing right in front of a locked treasure room without the key to enter. He had a rather difficult to accept feeling within his heart. Even in his wildest dreams, he had never imagined that such a situation would have turned out this way for him. He was so excited; he couldn't believe that such a magical thing had happened. That was why until now, he was still swimming in a sea of happiness, unable to wake up from his happy dream...

"There are good stuff in the Divine Grimoire, right?" Yue Yang asked, testing the waters. Xiao Wen Li nodded enthusiastically.

"Is there a fairy oneechan there?" Yue Yang asked again, and the little loli shook her head adorably.

"Do you know what is actually inside? Draw a picture for me, and let me see if you are good at drawing. If you draw it nicely, I'll treat you to a sweet Tang Yuan!" Yue Yang was scheming again, but the small loli couldn't even understand words. It would truly be strange if she knew how to draw. But Xiao Wen Li took out her



Dual Icicle Blades and started to scribble on the floor. Yue Yang laid down on the floor and scrutinised the scribbles for a long time, but he couldn't discern anything. The only thing he could be sure of was that there was definitely a new Guardian Spirit Beast inside the Divine Grimoire. But it shouldn't be the Sword Goddess.

Forget it, although he still couldn't open the Divine Grimoire now, it doesn't mean he wouldn't be able to open it in the future.

As long as he trained diligently, he should be able to open the Grimoire when he reached the right conditions.

Yue Yang still couldn't understand why this Silver Grimoire had levelled down to a Bronze Grimoire and then suddenly levelled up to a Divine Grimoire without any reason. Of course, he was too lazy to spend any real effort thinking about it. There were so many weird things in this world that couldn't even be counted, and this Divine Grimoire was just one among them.

Something flashed in his mind suddenly and he asked, "Above bronze, silver, gold, platinum and diamond, is there a higher-tiered Divine Grimoire? Is Empress Wen Li's Grimoire a Divine Grimoire?"

In answer to Yue Yang's question, Xiao Wen Li nodded her head again, cutely and adorably; but it was unclear if she was replying to his first or second question.

Yue Yang had wanted to ask more questions, but suddenly, Yue Bing, who was carried at his back, stirred from her sleep, as if she

was about to wake up.

Yue Yang quickly put his Divine Grimoire away. Xiao Wen Li didn't enter into the Divine Grimoire, but turned into a red glow, like always, and entered into Yue Yang's body to rest. Although she had moved house, it looked like she still liked to stay within Yue Yang's body. As he put Yue Bing down, she whined a little, as if she couldn't bear to let him go even in her dreams.

She didn't wake up. Her body had only moved a little, but she quickly quieted back down as she breathed slowly and continuing her slumber.

Yue Yang tried to call her name a few times, but seeing that she still hadn't woken up, he stopped calling. He only tried to brush away the few strands of hair on her forehead.

As for Ye Kong, he was just like a cockroach that wouldn't die even when beaten; He woke up when Yue Yang was collecting his spoils of war... He crawled painstakingly towards Fatty Hai and reached out into his robes greedily to take out a HEALING STONE. He then broke it with all his strength and let the white glow that had the power to heal envelope his, Fatty Hai's, and the Li Brothers' bodies. Although the four of them had suffered heavy injuries, their lives had the vitality of a cockroach. Once they were given a cure, their injuries would get better immediately. They started to wake up one by one.

Fatty Hai and the others woke up in succession and looked around blankly at the weird space he was in, the Battlefield of Certain Death.

Seeing that they looked extremely puzzled to be in this place, Yue Yang could only sigh. To him it seemed as though these few fellows would definitely be confused, even if they died and came back as ghosts.

Because of their muddle-headed confusion, they wouldn't feel the slightest bit wronged if they were told that they had died in the Abyss. Fatty Hai was rubbing the back of his head, mumbling to himself, "Where are we? Didn't we already return to the Warrior's Guild? I was definitely drinking beers with you guys just now... I remember Ye Kong, that skinny monkey, had even snatched my chicken drumstick away... Was that a dream? With regards to that, I had a recollection just now that someone had attacked me hard on the back of the head...What is actually happening now?"

"Congratulations. Due to your exceptional performance, you have been awarded the first prize for the Scatterbrain of the Year Award," Yue Yang congratulated him.

"This, isn't this the Demon General? Eh? How did Hui Tai Lang turn like into that?" Ye Kong was filled with shock and astonishment when he saw Hui Tai Lang, who had turned into a Two-headed Demon Wolf and the Demon General, who had turned into shattered pieces of stones. Seeing the scene before him, his head became even more jumbled up. When he still couldn't figure out what happened, he finally asked Yue Yang, "What happened actually?"

"Uhh, that..."

Right now, was a time for Yue Yang to lie once again.

Looking at the four people who had curious faces waiting for answers, Yue Yang explained in an honourable, serious tone, “We came to this Battlefield of Certain Death when the Demon General threw a Teleportation Scroll onto us. You guys were defeated by a sneak attack, and fell to the ground without any sense of brotherhood to me, leaving me all alone to face against the evil, scary Demon General. You guys knew that I am a devout believer of Pacifism Ideology, so fighting and killing was really not the way to live for me. Hence, I decided to fight a match of Literature with the Demon General. He would set a question to test me, and I to him. In the end as we continued with the match, he suddenly went crazy and spread open his palm, only to hit himself square in the forehead. He committed suicide and died. With regards to how he became shattered stones, I am still trying to find the answer.”

His words made Ye Kong and the Li Brothers to fall on the ground, as they almost fainted.

They had seen liars before, but, in all of their lives, they had never seen such a bad liar.

Only kids six-years-old and below would have believed his words.

Unlike the rest of them, Fatty Hai believed his words completely. Patting his jiggling fat chests, he shouted enthusiastically, “What kind of questions did you come up with? Was it really that difficult? Come and quickly say it! With me, the Question Resolving Prince here, there wouldn’t be any hard questions in this world.”

Hearing this, Ye Kong had a sudden urge to drive his sharp dagger into Fatty Hai's chest, making him bleed.

They had seen many gullible people, but they had never seen such a gullible person before.

Every single ability that this Fatty Hai had was close to zero. If he had a match with a monkey, they believed the monkey would feel very empowered and superior. He was definitely an idiot, otherwise how could he believe in such bullshit? He was even so earnest about it...Heavens, how had this fellow managed to live until today? Shouldn't he have been killed by his idiocy long ago?

"The question is actually very simple." Yue Yang revealed a slow smile. "I told the Demon General, A is a number, B, C and D are also numbers with different values. If  $ABC + CDC = ABCD$ , then what is ABCD?"

"Uhh..." Hearing this, Fatty Hai's mouth gaped wide apart, wide enough to stuff a whole cow in.

Ye Kong and the three Li Brothers were also petrified.

No wonder the Demon General couldn't take such a question and committed suicide in his madness.

Fatty Hai was stunned for a long while, before his face flushed and he said, "That's not difficult, but the computation is a bit

complicated, and requires some time. Give me a slightly simpler problem.”

Yue Yang nodded, and said with a brilliant smile, “Alright, I’ll give you a problem related to spirit beasts. It’s very simple. There are 18 insect-type spirit beasts in total, comprising of spiders, dragonflies and cicadas. In total, they have 108 legs and 20 pair of wings. How many spiders, dragonflies and cicadas are there each?

“Ah..” Fatty Hai immediately fainted away.

Meanwhile, Ye Kong and the Li brothers found themselves seeing countless dragonflies and cicadas flying around, and spiders crawling up their bodies, weaving webs...

Only after a long time had passed did they finally realize that it was merely hallucination. When they looked back at Yue Yang, his smile was even scarier than the evil demon. It was so unbearable that they were sweating bullets. Fortunately the Demon General had quickly committed suicide, otherwise, if he had continued to count, he would probably died even more pitifully. Using such a hard problem to fight, it was simply bullying the Demon Clan’s intelligence!

Exactly what kind of abnormal genius was this so-called good-for-nothing third master of the Yue clan?

What kind of brain did he have to be able to think of such frightening problems?

Of course, this had nothing to do with being a genius. The reality was that Yue Yang had been pretty close to Baidu (brian: chinese google) before he had transcended dimensions, and so he somewhat knew a few hard math problems. In addition, these kinds of problems were child's play when compared to actually difficult math problems. Even if one had only a normal relationship with Baidu, as long as one had read a slice of life novel before, how would they not have encountered these types of problems in passing?

“We, we should hurry up and return,” Ye Kong wiped off his sweat.

Arriving at the Warrior Guild, the group found Luo Hua City's Mistress waiting for them with her three-tailed snow fox. When she saw Yue Yang and his team return without a hitch, she smiled.

Yue Yang was surprised, that girl had also returned?

Why was she waiting for him here?

# Chapter 70 – Understanding While Acting Confused

---

Luo Hua City's Mistress beckoned towards Yue Yang, signalling for him to come over.

First, being full of curiosity, she sized up Yue Yang. Then, she looked at the crescent blades he seized from the Demon General and Hui Tai Lang who had turned into a Two-headed Demon Wolf. She lightly chuckled, "How come everyone's injured after the fight, yet you look like you've just gone for a vacation?"

"I am an advocate of Pacifism." Yue Yang repeatedly stressed this point.

"The problem is that the Abyss of the demon doesn't know that you are a believer of Pacifism right...Don't tell me that this sword was picked up." Luo Hua City's Mistress heartily laughed.

Laughing was Luo Hua City Mistress' unique trait. A normal girl would laugh in a reserved manner, especially if one was a lady. They would not show their teeth when laughing, and emphasised on manners, intention, upbringing, etiquette and other factors. However, she was an exception. She would laugh whenever she wanted to, not caring about any manners and would laugh unrestrainedly. Her smile was as brilliant as a flower, the sound as crisp as a bell, resounding in the heart. It had a kind of sincerity that could not be explained, causing people to feel extremely generous and truthful.



Yue Yang originally did not hold any twisted thoughts about her. But, seeing how moving this lady's laughter was, he inexplicably started to feel mischievous, and joked around, saying, "No, how could it be possible for me to pick this up? This thing is a magic equipment, how could I have picked it up from the ground? This was a gift given to me by a witch, I guess she fell for me!"

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others did not dare to speak, much less laugh.

They suppressed it with their lives, and it was extremely hard for them to hold it in.

"A witch gave this to you?" when Luo Hua City Mistress heard about it, she continued to laugh harder, "Did the Bloody Witch give it to you? Why did she only give you a crescent blade, and nothing else?"

"No, the Blood Witch is a low-level little witch, how would she know that I had such an amazing talent? It was a hot demon queen with unique Divine Eyes that was using these crescent blades to press against my neck, wanting to kill me. At the very last moment, I decided to flaunt my talent, and let her understand that killing me would be the greatest loss to the three worlds. You don't know this, but by softly reciting a poem, her pair of crescent blades fell on the ground with a "dang" sound. The beautiful devil queen was overflowing with tears, crying until she was nearly dead. It was difficult for me to calm her down, and finally, she gave this pair of magic equipment as a memento for me. While tears were still welling up in her eyes, she sincerely told me this with great passion, 'I sent my love away with tears on my face, hating that we

met but can't wed'... Her miserable sobs were so pitiful that the heavens might grieve along with-Ow, who hit me?" As Yue Yang was feeling full of himself, a person in the crowd suddenly rushed out and threw him a flying punch.

"You shameless guy, still trying to fool everyone here. Don't listen to him, this joker's poems are all plagiarised!" The person who rushed out from the crowd was the bright-eyed thief that Yue Yang had once flirted with.

"It doesn't matter whether or not it's plagiarised, but it sounds pretty good." Luo Hua City's Mistress laughed heartily, and praised Yue Yang's sentence slightly.

Following that, she looked at the bright-eyed thief again, and with a little bit of curiosity, asked, "Eh? Yi Nan, why are you dressed like this? Do you know him?"

Without waiting for the bright-eyed thief to speak, Yue Yang hugged the sweet smelling bright-eyed thief's shoulder, laughing loudly, "Of course, brother Yi Nan is my partner, we have promised to co-write a girl's encyclopedia together, bringing blessings to every single person on this continent and save all the lost boys around. Our noble friendship was not only limited to spending the night together on Merry Forest Inn, we are also very compatible and always helped each other. You definitely didn't know that Brother Yi Nan and I had the same way of thinking, and that is to have all the beautiful girls in this world..."

Brother Yi Nan?

Fatty Hai felt an urge to commit suicide on the spot. How could this Yi Nan be a guy?

Ye Kong had also realised that the Yue Clan third master was not only useless in contracting beasts, he was also useless in seeing through other people.

He had heard from others that Yue Yang had rejected an engagement with a miss from the Xue Clan, but Ye Kong didn't quite believe it. The Xue Clan's miss was such a nice girl, why would anyone reject her? Now Ye Kong finally understood a little. This Yue Clan third master had no eyes for women. His eyes must be blind.

Where on earth would there be a brother with such beautiful looks, perfect body, and sweet smell like this Yi Nan over here?

“Get your damned hands off me!” The bright-eyed thief who was called Yi Nan by the Luo Hua City Mistress elbowed Yue Yang on his ribs, and while grasping Yue Yang's collar preparing to hit him again, she suddenly saw Yue Bing who was carried on Yue Yang's back. She immediately stopped and asked, “Who is she?”

“Cough, cough, bro..brother Yi Nan, this is Yue Bing, third master's sister.” Ye Kong felt that he was obliged to relieve Yue Yang from the situation.

Otherwise, later on, jealousy would probably break out.

It was a misunderstanding that could be cleared with a sentence, he hoped that it wouldn't cause a bad outcome.

Indeed, when the bright-eyed Yi Nan heard it, her attitude took a 180 degrees turn. She quickly held Yue Bing and grumbled to Yue Yang, "Why are you carrying her on your back? What's wrong with her? Did she faint from overusing her mental capacity? I have an idea, wait for me here. Luo Hua County Princess, Yi Nan needs to save a person first, I'll catch up with you later."

Hearing this, Yue Yang asked curiously, "Aren't you City Mistress? When did you rise in rank and become a County Princess?"

Luo Hua City Mistress laughed out loud and explained, waving her hands, "Seems like you really don't know anything. County Princess is my identity, that indicates my status as someone's daughter, who had no use whatsoever. Do you know how many Princesses and Princes there are in the Soaring Dragon Continent? How many County Princesses are there? If you add them up, the number would be more than 200. Aside from the Three Royal Families, the other Princes, Princesses and County Princesses from the smaller countries are all worthless... But City Mistress is different. It proves your worth as a Ranker, because you must at least be a level 6 before you could be conferred the position as the governor of an area. It's better if you just keep calling me 'Luo Hua City Mistress', I like that name."

"But County Princess sounds pretty cute," Yue Yang paused, before switching to another question, "Can any level 6 ranker

become a governor?”

“Theoretically, yes. But some people only have military skills, and have no administration skills, so they wouldn’t make a good governor. Oftentimes, they would simply took up a position as a general that practically had no duties. Actually, as long as one reached level 5, they can advance to a deputy general, a position who didn’t have to do any duties. Apart from going to wars or invading the Abyss to resist against the demons, they’re free to do whatever they want. Oh right, my city is still missing a guard captain, Want to try it out?” Luo Hua City’s mistress laughed.

“As they say, ‘soldiers that don’t want to become generals aren’t good soldiers’. I’ll refrain from becoming a guard captain so that I can just become a general later on.” Yue Yang rejected the offer.

“I feel like your words are so teasing. If it were anyone else, I wouldn’t even care at all.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress didn’t really care much about Yue Yang rejecting her offer; in fact, she seemed to have predicted he would do so.

She lightly tossed a silver card at Yue Yang and smiled, “This is the award I give to your group. As for the awards, military service, and glory from the Warriors Guild, you guys need to go and retrieve those yourselves. I still have things to do, so I’ll take my leave first.”

Luo Hua City’s Mistress smiled as she waved her hand, and she floated away while carrying her three tailed snow fox, and leaving behind a fragrant scent.

Yue Yang noticed that the Luo Hua City's Mistress' skirt hem had become quite damaged. Clearly, her battle hadn't gone all that smoothly. It seemed that her opponent had been quite bothersome, and it was fortunate that she hadn't been injured. Yue Yang felt that she was actually quite formidable, as she had dared to resist the abyss, even while bringing only a few subordinates with her. If it had been anyone else, even if they were ten times stronger than her, they probably wouldn't have dared to do what she did.

"Return to your senses already. Your eyeballs fell onto the ground, hurry up and pick them up." The bright-eyed Yi Nan had suddenly come back at some point, and she gave Yue Yang a punch in the chest. However, her small, cotton-like fist hitting Yue Yang made him feel very comfortable instead.

"I also have the noble dreams you guys have about a world full of beauties...." While Fatty Hai laughed so hard that his fat began to jiggle, Yue Yang had an urge to throw him a punch.

"Do you have a hobby of being beaten up?" Ye Kong couldn't bear that guy. He picked up a stick and smashed it hard onto the back of Fatty Hai's head. When Fatty Hai collapsed, Ye Kong joined the Li Brothers as they charged forward and gave Fatty Hai a sound beating. They had just met after such a long time, what right did this dumb fatty have to interrupt it? What would his actions meant if he wasn't seeking to be beaten?

"They are...?" The bright eyed Yi Nan was confused as to how Yue Yang would befriend such people.

“Ignore them, they’re just impatient because they’re young. They normally accumulate a lot of their energy, and any leak is unacceptable. Brother Yi Nan, you don’t know how how worried I’ve been for you these past few days.” Yue Yang warmly reached out his hand, about to grasp Yi Nan’s shoulders.

“Lies. I’m perfect fine, so what would you be worried about?” Yi Nan’s pale face flushed, but quickly returned to its original state. She dropped her shoulders to dodge Yue Yang’s shameless hand.

“I know you’re still a beginner; moreover, you have an introverted and shy personality. Although you are curious about women, you don’t dare to make a move. Normally, you restrain yourself so much that it becomes unbearable. If you continue on this way, you’ll end up having issues. That’s why, as a brother, I definitely cannot witness you keep going like this. I’ll help you....Yi Nan, as long as you did your first time, you’ll understand what a man should be. With your charming face, perhaps you might become my rival in the art of relationships. Don’t worry, I’ll teach you.” Yue Yang looked extremely sincere, and was prepared to drag Yi Nan to get a room and let him had his first time.

Ye Kong and the others were sweating profusely, pretending that they hadn’t heard anything.

Fatty Hai, who was sprawled on the floor, began to cry. What exactly did that idiot want to do? He could bring any girl in, yet he just had to take Yi Nan...

The bright eyed Yi Nan was so angry that her whole face had become red. She sent Yue Yang flying with a single hit and indignantly shouted, “Go die. I hate people like you the most, pervert!”

Yue Yang pretended to act confused as he pointed at Yi Nan’s huffing back and asked, “What’s wrong with Yi Nan? Why is he mad?” When Fatty Hai heard this, he was unable to endure any longer and began to sob loudly. “Don’t ask me, just let me die instead. I also hate you. You’re such an idiot, how could you just waste a chance like that?”



# Chapter 71 – Chain Quest?

---

At the corner of the Warrior's Guild, there was a clinic.

However, this clinic was not a place that anyone could enter.

This wasn't because of the clinic's regulations; rather, it was because of the clinic's fees. The fees for this institution was more than a hundred times higher than normal clinics outside of the Guild.

Unless they were completely unconscious, ordinary mercenaries would never step inside this clinic, even if all of their four limbs had been broken. Even when they bought Healing Stones, they wouldn't buy them from here. Instead, they would buy it from street peddlers outside. Although those mid-lower-ranked Healing Stones, which were produced from special-type medicinal beasts, gave less than par results and were crazy expensive, the prices were still ten times cheaper than the mid-average-ranked Healing Stones sold by the clinic...

It was said that the reason why the prices in the clinic was so high was the result of the decision made thousands of years ago by the Five Great Heroes that founded the Warrior's Guild. The reason was not to earn money, but to remind the later generations to make use of their brains more in battles, so that they would suffer less injuries and refrain from being reckless fools.

Despite this, Yue Yang felt that this clinic was actually much better than Celestial Empire's clinic. At the very least, there

weren't fake medicines nor practitioners in this place.

It was true that it was a little more expensive, but it was better in quality and authenticity.

There was also another point. The clinic didn't offer different goods and prices to different customers; a prince and a commoner would get the same quality of goods at the same price.

After Yue Bing was admitted here to receive treatment just now, she had recovered very quickly. When Yue Yang visited her again, she had already woken up. Yue Bing was very excited when she saw him. She immediately ran up to him and hugged him, crying, "Third Brother..." in a choked voice. Seems like the young lady had gone through quite a bit of suffering, and she was pouring it all out along with her tears at this moment. Yue Yang had to reassure her for a long time before Yue Bing's sobs gradually calmed down.

Wiping off her tears, Yue Bing immediately covered her face with her black veil again and looked warily at Fatty Hai and Ye Kong, who were standing right behind Yue Yang.

After going through the betrayal of her own team members and receiving a surprise attack, Yue Bing had developed a wariness for strangers and was on guard.

"My, my name is Ye Kong, I'm Third Master's guide," Ye Kong hurriedly introduced himself.

“My name is Hai Da Fu, but people call me Master Hai. I am usually low-key. Even though I own a summoning grimoire and a Bronze-ranked, level 2 Iron Rhinoceros, I never boasted to anyone. I’m not that kind of person, little Yue Bing. You can call me Boss like the others. Although your brother is the group leader, I’m still his Boss. You can be rest assured, if anything happens in the future, I’ll cover for you. I guarantee that as long as I, Master Hai is here, nobody would dare to bully you. Look at my arms, this isn’t fat; this is all muscle... Ouch!” Before Fatty Hai could finish his words, he was already rolling on the ground, beaten up and stomped on by Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers. As he cried out in misery, he seemed to resemble a pig about to be slaughtered.

“Third brother, why did you come to Tong Tian Tower?” Yue Bing asked seriously. Now that she finally saw her brother, whom she had not seen for a long time, he looked strong beyond measure. He held an aura of unimaginable strength, which gave others a feeling of safety; like a tall mountain that they could depend on.

“Fourth Mother has been really worried about you, so she sent me here to bring you back.” Yue Yang reached out his hands and patted Yue Bing gently, smiling a little.

“I also wanted to go home, but my training here is not done yet. Without the Heart of Oak to raise my levels, my Treant Warrior will never be their opponent.” Yue Bing was talking about was the Clan’s upcoming New Year’s Tournament which would test the capabilities of the younger generations of the Yue Clan. Yue Bing was determined to pay back the grievances that her parents and brothers had suffered, so she had come to Tong Tian Tower to train. If she went home now, she believed she would never be able to defeat Yue Tian and Yue Yan, who were both raised by Main

Family of the Clan. Although her Treant Warrior had risen to Bronze-ranked level 3, its movement speed was still very slow. Furthermore, Yue Tian and Yue Yan owned Treant Warrior's nemeses: fire-type beasts. They were also raised as the main focus of the Yue Clan; therefore, they even owned strong puppet-type beasts. Even if they send their puppet-type beasts to fight against Treant Warrior, they would not lose.

“Don't worry. I'll accompany you to finish your training these two days. We'll go home after that.” Yue Yang once again patted Yue Bing's head compassionately. The Fourth House had been relying on this little lady all this time. Turns out that she had suffered all these years because the tragic guy was useless (although he had tried his best).

“Yes...” Hearing this, Yue Bing was extremely moved. She finally had an older brother she could depend on.

Although he had only just contracted a grimoire not long ago... Although he was still a level 1 [Apprentice], and only had a Thorny Flower as a contracted beast... He couldn't even call out his Guardian Spirit Beast...

However, with a hidden talent like his own, as long as he trained diligently, he should be able to be successful. At this moment, the little lady Yue Bing was determined to help Yue Yang increase his battle capabilities. She was determined to buy a good fighting beast for her brother and bring him out to train, so that he would be able to maintain his reputation and showcase his hidden potential at the Clan's New Year's Tournament. Then, he would give off the impression to the Clan members that he was definitely not a

useless person, but a hidden genius. At the same time, he would also give both father and mother the greatest of surprises.

Hui Tai Lang had been staying silent the whole time, but it finally felt that people had forgotten about itself.

It immediately walked towards Yue Yang and rubbed its head on his legs, wagging its tail, trying to win Yue Yang's favour. Its actions give out the feeling that it was saying, "I want to welcome the Mistress too".

Its appearance made Yue Bing jump with shock.

She stared dumbstruck at Hui Tai Lang who had two heads, a fire-breathing nose and a body that continuously emitted black aura, standing right in front of her.

Strange, this should be an uncontracted Wild Wolf...

"Brother, that...that?" Yue Bing stuttered, stunned more than ever, as she watched Yue Yang sent the boot-licking, attention-seeking, two-headed demonic wolf flying with one hard kick.

"Don't even mention that dog, I get angry every time I hear about it." The moment Yue Yang thought about how Hui Tai Lang had swallowed the Fog Monster and the Demonic Fireball, he felt like his heart was on fire. Those beasts all had Bronze-ranked level 3 demon crystals, but Hui Tai Lang had swallowed them without even asking for his permission. Hui Tai Lang, this fellow, was

already so brazen out in the open in front of him, wouldn't it behave worse behind his back? Previously, he had no time to pay attention to it, but now that he thought about it, if he didn't beat it to death, he would be letting it go too easily.

"Is this Twin-Headed Demonic Wolf your beast, brother?" Yue Bing's eyes cutely widened. She completely couldn't believe it.

"I guess so. It's called Hui Tai Lang, a greedy lowly mongrel who was born to be beaten up." Yue Yang nodded.

"Aungg." Hui Tai Lang scrambled back with eager jostling butt, wagging its tail. Although its level had increased very quickly, it was a pity that its intelligence couldn't catch up. It probably had the intelligence of a dog.

"How did you manage to get it, brother?" Yue Bing didn't believe there would be a Fighting Beast Store that would put a Bronze-ranked level 5 Twin-Headed Demonic Wolf on sale. Even if there was, it wouldn't be so tame. How could there be a Bronze-ranked beast that was willing to be kicked flying? If it was a normal Bronze-ranked level 5 Twin-Headed Demonic Wolf that had been beaten like this, its loyalty would have dropped to zero long ago, and it would have fled away without even waiting to be summoned in a battle.

"The story goes like this..." Yue Yang proceeded to trick the young missy again.

He began to tell his tale animatedly, saying that he had seen a

beast egg selling for a discounted price of 5 coppers in the corner of a Fighting Beast Shop.

It was covered with dust, no one had shown an interest on it.

This Hui Tai Lang, had actually come out from the 5 copper egg that he had bought on a whim. When it first hatched, it was a weak Level 2 Iron Clawed Wolf. Along the way, it was unclear what it had picked up on the road (it looked like something that was shooting fire), and suddenly it evolved into a Bronze-ranked level 3 Ironbacked Demonic Wolf.

Then, entering the Tong Tian tower, it was also unclear what it had eaten, (something like a fog and something like a fireball), but it finally evolved into such an ugly beast.

Yue Yang then ended his story bitterly. Hui Tai Lang always stirred up troubles and was a glutton. It was a complete failure as a beast... These words, let alone Yue Bing, even the whole staff in the clinic had all turned into stone.

Who was he trying to fool?

Every single beast egg would need to be rigorously checked to find information on the beast inside. It would be checked so thoroughly that it would be impossible to have a more accurate result, before it was put up on sale.

Furthermore, they had also never heard of a beast egg that was

sold for 5 coppers.

It's not as if it was chicken's egg!

“Where's that Fighting Beast Store? We should buy every single 5 copper eggs from there, maybe there would even be a second Hui Tai Lang!” In this whole place, the only one who believed everything Yue Yang said was Fatty Hai.

“...” Ye Kong facepalmed. He was worried that if he associated with him too much, this damn fatty's retardation would rub off on him.

One thing he was sure of was that: the only way Fatty Hai was going to die would be by his own imbecility; it couldn't possibly happen any other way.

If he believed that he could buy a Bronze-ranked, level 5 Hui Tai Lang with only 5 coppers in a Fighting Beast Shop, he might as well daydream instead. In his imagination, there would probably be a strong beast that came to him on its own, who would want to form a contract with him dead or alive. Not only that, it also want to share its life with its master forever. Is that even possible? Definitely not. If it really was possible, bacon would rain down from the sky.

They had all seen naive and foolish people before, but none of them had ever met such a pig-headed, naive and foolish person as this Fatty Hai.



Buying another Hui Tai Lang with 5 coppers; only he would be capable of imagining something like that.

“No matter what, brother, you have a strong beast now. That’s a good thing.” Yue Bing was happy for her brother. With a Bronze-ranked level 5 Hui Tai Lang, when they return to their clan castle and fought in the Clan’s New Year Tournament, wouldn’t every single person from the castle be shocked with brother’s progress? Their mom and dad would also definitely be elated with them.

“Are you guys now going to the Blackstone Labyrinth to finish the quest of the Heart of Oak? Let me tag along,” A bright eyed Yi Nan suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

“Brother Yi Nan, did you find any related clues by chance?” Yue Yang smiled widely as he asked.

“Ah!” The moment Yue Bing heard Yue Yang called Brother Yi Nan, she almost fainted thinking about her brother’s sanity. She thought to herself: Seems like it won’t do a person any good if he had stayed cooped up in his house for a long time. Her own brother was so dorky that he couldn’t even differentiate between a guy and a girl.

“I have a chain quest, and one of the quests was ‘Heart of Oak’. My aunt said that if I could finish this chain quest successfully, I would at least receive a Gold-ranked fighting beast or item. If I finished it beautifully, then they might even give me two fighting beasts with intelligence. Do you guys want to join our team to try it out?” Although the bright-eyed Yi Nan was still fuming at Yue Yang, she didn’t forget to invite him for this chain quest.

“Chain quest?” Ye Kong almost went mad. You would need to hit at least level 5 [Grandmaster] to be able to receive chain quests. Could it be that this ‘Brother Yi Nan’ was actually a level 5 Ranker?

“Increasing fighting beasts’ intelligence?!” Fatty Hai’s mouth opened wide, causing drools to flow down like a waterfall, flowing until a distance of at least 1000 metres...

## Chapter 72 – Seen Through, Divine Vision

---

“You guys should get a good beast first.” This single phrase from Yi Nan caused everyone to rush to the beast store.

Ye Kong did not have a beast, and the Li brothers’ beasts were absolute trash. If they could not get a good beast, not to mention chain quests, even the Blackstone Labyrinth’s Heart of Oak Tree’s trial would be biting off more than they could chew. Originally, Yue Yang only hired them to search for Yue Bing. Since the mission was already accomplished, if it was another person that hired them, they would probably paid the commission and then bid their farewells and go on their separate ways. However, Yue Yang felt that although Ye Kong and the others were not of a big help when it came to battles, but with regards to survival experience within Tong Tian Tower, they completely outclassed Yue Bing and Yi Nan. With their participation, doing chain quests would go a lot smoother.

Therefore, Yue Yang decided to keep Ye Kong and the others.

In any case, Ye Kong was still a genius that was past his prime. If not for him losing his beast, how could he have become so miserable?

The Li brothers’ beasts’ levels were low, and there was a limit to the strength provided after the strengthening fusion with their beasts. However, the Li brothers’ own battle techniques were not bad, and they were also resilient. They could be compared to Hui Tai Lang with their vitality of a cockroach. Although they could not hold the frontline on their own, they could still pass for doing

labour work.

Instead, with regards to Fatty Hai who had a summoning grimoire, Yue Yang's opinion of him was the worst. This guy had completely no experience, and was completely an inconvenience to him.

The only advantage that he had was that he could be made a human shield.

If Yue Yang needed a person to take the blows for him and be a human shield, Fatty Hai was undoubtedly the best meat shield available.

After collecting the hundred gold coins as a reward for the expedition in the abyss, Yue Yang, along with Yue Bing, Yi Nan, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, went to the Hundred Roaring Beasts Shop.

As they entered the shop, the Bronze-ranked Level 5 Hui Tai Lang caused all the adult beasts in the store to be frightened until they lay down on the ground, silent and subdued...

Only now had Yue Yang realised how extreme an achievement it was to get a Bronze-ranked Level 5 beast for a normal warrior.

"We'll come out with five hundred gold as down payment. If you accept, you and your friends will be lifetime VIPs of our store, having a 20% discount on all purchases; we'll also send you a

Bronze-ranked Level 4 graded Beast Egg as a gift, to make up for your loss. Each of your friends can pick a beast for free, and as long as our people can succeed in contracting with this Two-headed Demon Wolf, we will immediately pay you another five hundred gold.” The white fatty manager of the shop desperately tried to convince Yue Yang to sell Hui Tai Lang to them. The store’s employees were shrewd and ruthless. Seeing that Hui Tai Lang was a beast of the best quality that rated five stars or above, they kept clinging onto Yue Yang. In their attempt to buy Hui Tai Lang, they were willing to do so much that it could be said they wouldn’t even care if they died in the process.

“Manager, your way of thinking is too naive. Did you really think that you could get a psychic Two-headed Demon Wolf with merely a thousand gold?” Yi Nan sneered.

“It would be a pleasure to negotiate with you with regards to the price. We can sit down and discuss this slowly.” The manager accompanied his words with a smile.

“We’re not selling, no matter how much you offer us.” Yue Bing refused flatly.

“You have to be clear that we’re here to buy beasts, not to sell them. If you don’t want to do business, then we can just go to another beast store.” Although Yue Yang did not contract with Hui Tai Lang, it had accompanied him for a long time. He felt that having this gluttonous yet clever little dog by his side would make his life a little more interesting.

Without a punching bag to appease his anger, what would he

ever do in the future?

Besides, this was a beast that he had cultivated with his own hands, so how would it be possible for him to sell it to other people? Yue Yang would never openly say it, but he would never sell Hui Tai Lang.

Since the manager could not do anything about it, he could only urge over and over again. If Yue Yang wanted to sell Hui Tai Lang at any point of time, he could find the manager at any time. He insisted that it wouldn't bother him even if he was preparing to lie down with a woman in the middle of the night.

Within the Hundred Roaring Beasts Shop, all the beasts available were Ordinary-ranked Level 3 or below. There were only a mere handful of Level 4 beasts, not to mention good beasts that were Bronze-ranked.

After looking at the beasts for a long time, Yi Nan and Yue Bing did not take a fancy to any of them.

Within Ye Kong and the others' hearts, they too felt that there were no good beasts around here. But, taking into account the reality of the situation, they did not dare to set the bar too high either.

“Having a Level 3 Huge Baboon is not bad either. Furthermore, it's a strengthening type, like my Long-limbed Golden Ape King that I had previously.” As he said this, Ye Kong's heart turned sour. If only his Golden Ape King was still around, how would he

take a fancy towards this Level 3 Huge Baboon? This Huge Baboon had already completely matured, and it most likely would never be able to advance a level within its lifetime. Although Level 3 was not considered low, without the hope of ever increasing in level, it would only cause people to despair. Could he really be destined to be a guide who laboured for nothing for the rest of his life? When he was young, he had his own dreams of success and his parents had had earnest expectations for him.

“We want those two Wind Wolves. We have the Gale Sickle Mouse to strengthen ourselves. Adding two Wind Wolves to assist it, our strength can be boosted quite significantly.” Li Qie and Li Ge’s desires were more realistic. They felt that those Wind Wolves were their greatest stroke of luck already.

If not for them being acquainted with Yue Yang, they would have had nothing in the first place.

Now, they were at least honoured warriors who had gone on a campaign into the Abyss. Although they did not kill a single demon, they had at least been inside the Abyss.

How many mercenaries in the world were even able to have the chance to counterattack against the Abyss? The Li brothers had felt that they could not achieve any great exploits in their lifetime, and resigned themselves to being menial worker mercenaries for hire. That was the most steady kind of life they could have led. For a boy like Yue Yang who could even kill a Demon General by himself, would he need mercenaries that served as anything other than menial work?

Yue Yang furrowed his eyebrows at what Ye Kong and Li Clan brothers had said.

He turned towards the manager and asked, “Do you have better-quality beast eggs here?”

The manager kept gazing at Hui Tai Lang. When he heard Yue Yang, a plan formed in his mind, “Please, go ahead and take a look at all of our beast eggs. You can pick any egg you want, and all of them will be free, as long as you are willing to sell Hui Tai Lang to us. Whatever you want to do, we can fulfil it.”

“Please exclude what you said just now. We only need beast eggs, do you understand? Thank you.” Yi Nan was about to be speechless at how this manager carried himself.

“Okay.” The manager was extremely regretful. His sadness was comparable to if his wife had taken all his assets and fled with another man.

Although the beast eggs were slightly better in comparison to the mature beasts, the price was also ten times higher.

Looking at the eggs, Ye Kong felt more pleased. He had found a beast egg with great potential. After it hatched, its growth would not differ much from the Golden Ape King’s growth. He estimated it to be a Level 4 and above Iron-limbed Demon Ape. As for another two Bronze-ranked beast eggs that could hatch a Roaring Wind War Tiger and a Shadow Wolf, their prices all exceeded a hundred gold coins. This was completely unimaginable for them.



The reward for the campaign in the abyss was only a hundred gold coins. Not only that, he and the Li brothers did not do anything helpful at all, they only came along to look around.

Being able to get an Iron-limbed Demon Ape was one of the greatest demands he could ever make.

Yue Yang still shook his head. “They’re all trash, don’t you have any other beast eggs?”

The manager almost choked. He thought: Aren’t you aren’t getting back pain speaking so arrogantly like this?! You have a Bronze-ranked Level 5 Two-headed Demon Wolf, of course you think that these are all trash. But if any other warrior saw the Bronze-ranked Shadow Wolf and Roaring Wind War Tiger, no matter how much they desired it, no matter how much they drooled for it, they would never be able to hope to get it.

However, these VIPs had come here. The manager still used his best service attitude, accompanied with a smile, to bring out the treasure of their store.

Their store’s treasure was priced at five hundred gold coins.

It was a Thunder Demon Panther beast, a Bronze-ranked beast egg. After being tested for twenty times, the outcome was identical, and the evaluation was four stars.

The masters of beast appraisal, authorities in this area, believed that the final level of evolution for the Thunder Demon Panther was Bronze-ranked Level 4 and above. If it ate many electric-type magic crystals for a long time, it could even rise up to Bronze-ranked Level 5. The only drawback was that its maturing period was very long. It was estimated to take at least 3 years, and its growth would be far too stable. The chances of it undergoing a variant evolution to become Silver-ranked was next to zero. Although this was not much with regards to the entire chain of Hundred Roaring Beasts Shops, but within the store on this floor, it was the gem of the store.

“I don’t want this, it’s trash.” Using his Divine Vision, Yue Yang had seen through this beast egg. Not just Hui Tai Lang, even the beast egg that he had obtained from the energy cauldron in the Aries Temple was far more superior than this egg, as heaven was compared to earth.

The beast egg that he had obtained there, was one that was evaluated to be of five stars.

This Thunder Demon Panther that was claimed to be four stars was actually three and a half stars. It completely failed to meet the standard for four stars. The only reason why it was marked as four stars was because there was no such grading as three and a half stars. It could be said that this four star Thunder Demon Panther, within the evaluations of all four star beasts, would be the worst out of them all.

The manager was almost spewing blood at this point. “Young Master, how can you say that it’s trash? It’s four stars... You say

five stars? Who would sell five star beast eggs in a beast store? Really, the country would prioritise them and buy them. The great families would also buy them with great amounts of gold. If you want five star beast eggs, you'd have to at least get to Floor 3 in Tong Tian Tower or higher. How many stars is the beast in your hands? I'll use a crystal to appraise it... Oh god, five stars? I'm going to faint... “

Yue Yang's original intention had been to find a good beast for Yue Bing. But, taking a look all around, he found that they were all trash beasts. He was shocked, and immediately handed over that small best-quality five star egg in his embrace to Yue Bing.

After enthusiastically appraising the egg, the manager of the Hundred Roaring Beasts Shop fainted on the spot.

How could this guy bring around a Bronze-ranked Level 5 Two-headed Demon Wolf and bring out a five star beast egg at his convenience?

Would a prince of a country even be this casual with these top-quality beasts?

Who in the world was he?

“Third Older Brother, hold on. I'm not good with beasts that aren't plant-type beasts. I don't want it, please...keep it.” Yue Bing hurriedly shoved the beast egg back into Yue Yang's embrace.

“I’m going to faint too.” Fatty Hai spewed out a waterfall of saliva.

“How about betting with your luck? Ye Kong and the others, select a beast egg and a chaos egg, and see what reaction you get after fusing them. If it’s not good, then it’s too bad for you.” What Yi Nan had just described was a terrifying gamble. Normal mercenaries would not dare to do this. Normally, this was done by elite soldiers in the army, who, under the situation of desiring to be exceptional, would use this kind of extreme methods to gamble using their own lives.

A chaos egg was a kind of raw egg which did not have an embryo.

(Sephillia: Look up chaos scroll for a rough idea of what this does)

Nobody knew what type it was, and the reaction it would cause after the beast fused with it.

With a fifty percent chance, the two would reject each other, causing the fusion to fail and the beast to die on the spot... With a thirty percent chance, the beast’s abilities would be affected by the chaos egg, and its strength becoming far weaker; With a fifteen percent chance, the beast would not change, and the chaos egg would not have any effect.

With only a five percent chance, the chaos egg would successfully fuse with the beast, causing an increase in the beast strength or a variant evolution of it.

It was also reportedly said that there was a 0.01% chance for the

chaos egg to have extremely good compatibility with the beast, causing a variation level up immediately after fusion. After increasing in level, it could even change from Normal-ranked to Bronze-ranked.

For a few thousand years, countless people tried these types of fusion countless times. Aside from a few lucky people, almost all the fusions had ended up in tragedy.

A chance of 0.01% was akin to despair for people.

As an example, nobody had succeeded in variant evolution in the Hundred Roaring Beasts Shop for over fifty years. The one lucky fellow recorded on the wall was already something that happened fifty years ago.

“Let’s bet.” Ye Kong’s hands were trembling, but he gratefully nodded his head towards Yi Nan.

This was the last chance for him to turn his luck over. Without enough gold, he could only bet his luck. He had turned into a useless person anyway. As long as he still had a single glimmer of chance, he would bet on it. He would bet on whether the Iron-limbed Demon Ape would rise up to become Bronze-ranked. Then, he would regain everything. The dreams he had when he was young, the expectations of his parents, all of it could be realised. As long as the heavens did not give up on himself, and grant him sufficient luck.

Yue Yang was curious. So there was this kind of gambling?

If this was the case, then wouldn't his own gift of Divine Eyes be put to good use?

Seeing how respectful the manager was on the surface with a ridiculing expression, Yue Yang was furious. You want us to fail? I'll just find a suitable one and infuriate you.

Ye Kong was so anxious that his entire body was trembling. He held the Iron-limbed Demon Ape's beast egg in his hands while looking at the row of chaos eggs, not knowing which one was the better option.

There was only one chance for him.

This gamble, even if the beast died, would also cost him two places in his summoning quota.

If he chose incorrectly, then his life would be completely over...

"Is it really that hard to choose? This one seems good!" Yue Yang took a chaos egg leisurely and threw it over to Ye Kong. His heedless attitude was as if he had picked up a bean from the ground to throw. The crowd was completely astonished at his actions. This, this was not a joking matter! One had to be extremely cautious! Once the chaos egg fused with the beast, then there was no possibility of backing out. Whether the beast was to live or die, or whether it was good or bad, all depended on this one gamble.

Who could have known that Yue Yang possessed the gift of Divine Eyes at level 2. In fact, long before everyone was choosing their eggs, he had already found the most compatible chaos egg within the pile.

Although his movements seemed heedless in nature, in truth, it was only to deceive that cunning manager.

If he let this guy know that this was the most compatible chaos egg in the pile, he would not hesitate to demand Hui Tai Lang in exchange or raise the price of the eggs a hundredfold.

“Third Young Master, I... I believe you!” Seeing Yue Yang’s brilliant smile, Ye Kong felt lucky and relieved. Gritting his teeth, he decided to believe Yue Yang. He used some force to bite his finger and used his trembling finger to draw the same contract pattern on both eggs. Finally, suppressing the fear in his heart, he closed his eyes and contracted with both beast eggs.

The result would be clear in a second.

Whether the fusion was compatible, whether the beast died or became trash, whether it was strengthened or underwent a variant evolution, would immediately appear in front of his eyes.

A pillar of golden light appeared between Ye Kong’s fingers. The manager’s jaw dropped until it was able to fit in a war beast. It was a miracle that had never been seen for over fifty years. Today, he had witnessed a miracle appearing in front of his eyes.

“The variant evolution succeeded. It’s, it’s a Bronze-ranked King Kong Demon Ape. Third Young Master, my, Ye Kong’s, life, was given back to me with your hands.” Ye Kong’s first reaction was to kneel at Yue Yang’s feet, hugging his legs. He was so emotional that he could not control himself and started crying loudly. The gamble had succeeded. From this moment on, that crippled Ye Kong finally received his new life.

The dreams he had, the expectations of his parents, everything could be started anew again.

Now, he finally had the dignity to return to see his parents... Finally, he did not have to face their eyes full of despair. Now, he had been awarded a new life, one that was equal to his first.

Yue Yang wryly smiled.

This, was only the beginning. He would use the Divine Eyes to see through much more, although compatible chaos eggs were extremely hard to find. Ye Kong’s chaos egg just happened compatible.

However, with the Divine Eyes to see through them all, would there be any fear of not finding a suitable one if one invested some time to search continuously?

His younger sister Yue Bing, along with Yi Nan, both needed strong beasts. Why not use this kind of “gambling” to pick the best beast eggs for them?



With his heart set, Yue Yang supported Ye Kong up, and prepared a few sentences to console him. However, he suddenly saw the chaos egg in Fatty Hai's hands had another abnormal reaction... This, this chaos egg was weird, it was completely different from all the other chaos eggs.

That, what kind of beast egg was that?

And, what effect would it have?

# Chapter 73 – The Mysterious Little Gold Beast

---

In order to not attract the manager's attention, Yue Yang bought another ten chaos eggs, with almost all of them taken while his eyes were closed.

It was as Yue Yang had thought. In an attempt to show off, Fatty Hai wanted to put his hand into that chaos egg, saying, "I have a kind of premonition that this chaos egg must be a good egg, let's buy it. What? No? Manager! We've bought so many beasts eggs and chaos eggs, if you don't give this to me, then I'll never come again next time. If you give this to me, I'll give you a few beautiful words of praise and perhaps that guy's heart will be so moved that he'll sell Hui Tai Lang to you. That's right, that's the way to do business, this egg is free, then you can give me a 10% discount card. Don't worry, I'll definitely advise that guy to sell Hui Tai Lang to you. Don't you know, I'm his boss, he'll listen to me for sur-Hold on, let me put this chaos egg in my pocket..."

If Fatty Hai was not so petty, Yue Yang would put to use his skills to swipe this mysterious chaos egg.

Of course, no matter how good this egg was, he could absolutely not let the manager know.

If not, he would never sell it.

If the manager found out about the mysterious power within this egg, Yue Yang would have kept a low profile for nothing.

“What are you buying so many chaos eggs for?” Yi Nan could not understand. But, since Yue Yang wanted to do this, she did not oppose it either. She faintly felt that this guy had some motive that could not be spoken aloud. Just earlier, inside the Hundred Roaring Beasts beast store, Yi Nan resisted the urge to ask him, but when they came out, she could not hold her curiosity in.

“Third Older Brother must have some reason to do this.” Yue Bing still thought that Yue Yang really had the innate skill of concealing, and was able to know the concealed element of the beast.

“Could it be, that extremely compatible chaos egg wasn’t pure luck just now?” Yi Nan was shocked, this guy was this skilled?

“.....” Ye Kong and the Li brothers did not speak, and only looked at Yue Yang deeply.

They did not speak it aloud, but their emotions were welled up inside them.

In the eyes of other people, perhaps Yue Yang was a selfish person who never cared about others; Not only did he like to tell lies, he was also extremely shameless. But, the people who had really become acquainted with Yue Yang were feeling completely different at this moment. Even if this Yue family’s Third Young Master did not say it, it did not mean he did not care about them. A prime example was going through the hassle of travelling such a long distance to search for his sister Yue Bing. How many people in

the world would be able to do this? When Yue Bing had awoken, he did not say anything about caring for his sister. However, he was a brother who insisted on carrying her on his back even as he went into the abyss, never abandoning her.

Facing a hundred thousand demons, he did not use his companions as a meat shield as an exchange for his own glory.

He had never abandoned his kin, nor his companions. Even if the companions at his side were just some trash or poor people who were about to starve to death.

Seeing that his companions were sucked into a space of certain death by the powerful Demon General, he did not utter a single sentence, and went forward, regardless of the danger he faced, to rescue them. How many men were present in this world that could be like him?

“I can sense it, really. I feel that this chaos egg is exceptional. It might be a giant dragon’s chaos egg! Don’t you know that I was born to this world to appraise chaos eggs? Ah, I messed up. Which chaos egg was the one I chose?” As Fatty Hai said this, everyone secretly ridiculed him. This guy was absolutely inept, and only talked rubbish. If they really believed him, they would really have run out of luck.

Only Yue Yang knew that Fatty Hai’s actions spurred by greed had, this time, really hit the jackpot.

What Fatty Hai had chosen was indeed an exceptional chaos egg.

Of course, he would not say this out loud and only leisurely took a different, completely useless chaos egg for Fatty Hai, saying, “If you cook this exceptional egg and eat it, you might undergo a variant evolution into a Bronze-ranked wild boar!”

Yi Nan and Yue Bing covered their lips and giggled.

However, Fatty Hai was especially shameless and did not mind at all. Following that, he joyfully bragged, “If I were to evolve, I’d evolve into a giant dragon!”

Ye Kong and the Li brothers really wanted to faint. After people say that you’re fat, you still want to brag like this?

After finding a warrior’s inn to stay, Yue Yang took out the beast egg with a five star evaluation and put it together with the chaos egg which held a mysterious power. This action almost caused the people seeing it to be scared out of their wits. That was a five star beast egg, if anything went wrong, it would be destroyed... Even if it did not fuse together, it was still a five star egg, why risk the gamble? Not just Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, even Yue Bing and Yi Nan who supported Yue Yang the most were also opposed to what Yue Yang was trying to do. They felt that even with a 1% failure rate, they would not dare to take a risk with a five star beast egg.

The chances of great success when fusing a beast egg and a chaos egg were extremely miniscule.

If Ye Kong was originally trash, and took the risk, it was still worth it. However, with the current state that Yue Yang was in, was there really a need to gamble?

“Seventh Sister, come and make the contract.” But, Yue Yang’s attitude made Yue Bing and Yi Nan freak out.

Everyone understood that if Yue Yang was not certain of the outcome, he would definitely not let his sister Yue Bing contract with the egg. Now that he had called Yue Bing to contract with it, was that not akin to saying that this fusion contract would definitely succeed?

Yue Bing anxiously looked at Yue Yang, and only after a long time did she ask with a trembling voice, “Brother, what is this beast? Is it a plant type?”

Yue Yang was astounded. Could Yue Bing really only be able to use plant-type beasts?

“I tested it in school. I have a compatibility rate of over 120% with plant-type beasts, but as for other types, the compatibility is at most at 50%. I’m the student with the most distinctive niche, and I’m only good with plant-types. If it’s not a plant-type beast, but Brother is so certain, then let Si... Brother Yi Nan contract with it.” Yue Bing felt that it was a waste if she could not use the contracted beast properly. Since this was the case, it would be better to give this to Yi Nan, her future ‘sister-in-law’. Since Brother had already been rejected for marriage by others, she could use this beast to pull these two closer together. Would that not be a better outcome?

“No, I can’t accept such a precious beast egg!” Yi Nan hurriedly shook her head. If there was really a chance for the fusion to succeed, causing a variant evolution, would the five star beast soar up another grade to become a six star beast?

Yi Nan felt that she was completely unrelated to this guy. Moreover, everyone had only met by chance, so how could she accept such a precious gift from him?

Yue Yang actually felt a little apologetic towards Yi Nan.

When he had fought with Wu Yi and Xie Huo in Merry Forest, Yi Nan never found out that he was an expert. Choosing to stay behind instead of escaping, she had fought a decisive battle with them, which had caused her Psychedelic Butterfly and Shadow Panther to die in battle. All of this was because he had concealed his true strength. At the last moments of the battle, when Yi Nan protected him and received a counterattack to her mind, she had fallen to the ground and fainted.

If he gave this beast egg to her, it could be considered a small compensation for the loss of her beasts.

Seeing that her brother did not oppose the notion, Yue Bing’s heart moved and pulled Yi Nan’s hand, “Yi Nan... Brother Yi Nan, why not give something to my brother too? Let everyone do an exchange, and that’ll settle it.”

As she said this, Yi Nan remembered something.

Perhaps, that thing in legends might be useful for him...

Yi Nan took an oddly-shaped necklace with a lilac gemstone from her neck that was like snow jade, and handed it over to Yue Yang, "If that's the case, then let's exchange."

Yue Yang took the oddly-shaped necklace with Yi Nan's fragrance on it. Suddenly, he felt his mind being shaken. A silent roar echoed out from his heart, as if it were angry, but happy too. It felt more like a kind of summoning, a kind of call. What was this? Could it be that within this gemstone, there was still a powerful living soul residing in it? What level was this lifeform at? When Yue Yang curiously used his innate qi to search for it, he suddenly realised that the lilac gemstone was absorbing his innate qi at a frantic rate. His fingertip felt a huge wave of pain, and there actually was blood flowing out into the lilac gemstone.

Dumbstruck, Ye Kong and the others stared on. A pillar of gold light emerged from the gemstone in Yue Yang's hands.

In that instant, the entire house was dyed gold.

Hui Tai Lang, who had the strength of Bronze-ranked Level 5, also felt a sense of unease within this splendid golden light. Its little legs were trembling... Reflected in the golden light on the wall, the shape of a lifeform that nobody had ever seen before appeared. It had golden eyes and teeth, with scales, horns, and four huge clawed wings. With just a mere second of appearance, the Level 3 Wind Wolves, which were just bought and standing by the



side of the Li brothers fainted on the spot.

“Is this a giant dragon?” Fatty Hai’s mouth was gaping so wide it could easily fit a mammoth inside.

“Heavens!” Ye Kong also had the feeling that he wanted to faint.

The mercenaries outside did not know what was going on at all, but the beasts who were more sensitive had an immediate reaction.

At the surroundings of the inn, countless beasts were scared until they started peeing. Those who were further away were scared until they panicked and fled, to the point where even the master could not command them to stop.

A few bird-type beasts that were flying in the air were scared until they dived towards the ground, each one being unable to fly normally. This was especially so for the flying beasts that just happened to fly over the warrior inn. They were so scared that they lost consciousness, both eyes turning white, and fell towards the ground.

The lilac gemstone in Yue Yang’s hands shattered into pieces, while a beam of golden light shone towards his chest.

This scared Yue Yang, and he hurriedly used his hands to block it.

He did not expect that golden light to have some intelligence. It

avoided his fingers and penetrated through the gaps between his fingers, going into the breast of his clothes. Yue Yang cried out, and hurriedly took his shirt off. However, he found that the mysterious metal fragment was fusing in the golden light. Finally, under the gaze of everyone in the room, it turned into a ball of liquid gold.

In fact, the black mysterious metal fragment, after turning into a liquid ball, was actually being continuously purified.

The black residue dripped onto the ground, and finally, the entire body of the ball became a pure silvery-white colour.

In around three seconds, the the liquid golden ball that floated in midair turned into a beast of gold that nobody could recognise.

With a silver body and golden lines around it, purple eyes and red claws, a round body and a long tail, and, finally, wings on its back, its appearance was extremely cute. This thing's appearance was completely different from what Yue Yang and the others thought it would be. Everyone had thought that it would become a small golden dragon. They did not expect that this kind of odd appearance form it. This Gold Beast with its silvery-white body and mysterious golden lines dexterously jumped onto the tabletop, and instantly pounced towards the Dark Green Snake Crystal that Yue Yang had obtained after cutting open the snake head of the Three-headed Chimera... Yue Yang's eyes were swift and his hands fast. Before it could bite on the crystal, he hurriedly kept the Dark Green Snake Crystal.

The Gold Beast was like a starving cat. It bumped into Yue Yang

lightly, wanting to snatch the Dark Green Snake Crystal from Yue Yang's hands, insisting on eating it.

The people in the room fainted. What in the world was this thing?

Was it living being? Or was it a gold-type puppet?

They could see that it was intelligent and yet behaved like a child; It was a Gold Beast, yet it wanted to eat something, and that something was actually a magic crystal... What in the world was going on?

Yue Bing, Yi Nan, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li brothers were puzzled as they looked towards Yue Yang, hoping that he could explain what was going on.

This mysterious gold beast, what was it?

## Chapter 74 – Gods’ Ruins

---

Yue Yang held up the mysterious Gold Beast and used his Divine Vision to analyse it. Finally, to his astonishment, he found that this little thing could not even be seen through with his Level 2 Divine Vision. The weirdest thing was that this mysterious Gold Beast was already contracted with him automatically.

Yue Yang had only encountered this once before, and that was the lamia loli Xiao Wen Li... Could it be that this mysterious Gold Beast was also a Diamond-ranked existence? What was that reflection just now? It was like a Chinese mythical dragon, yet it had wings.

After that, it had fused into the gold metal, turning into this misshapen appearance. The situation was simply ambiguous and confusing.

“Hey hey, it’s melting!” Fatty Hai cried.

As Yue Yang was holding this mysterious Gold Beast and inspecting it, he suddenly realised that the surface of this beast’s body had started to melt.

It had recovered the appearance of a liquid ball, enveloping the Dark Green Snake Crystal that Yue Yang had refused to let him eat. Then, it attached itself to Yue Yang’s wrist, and gradually transformed into a peculiar bracelet. In the middle of the bracelet, a slightly pointed end stuck out from the Dark Green Snake Crystal. Yue Yang could sense that this Gold Beast was slowly

absorbing the energy in the Dark Green Snake Crystal. At the same time, it was discharging the muddled demonic qi that it didn't need through the pointed end on the bracelet.

When he used his mind to connect with it, he discovered that this little thing was in a comfortable deep sleep...

It was completely unlike a little golden beast. It was more like a living entity, yet its whole body was made of gold. It was extremely strange.

Faced with such a strange beast, Yue Yang could honestly not make head or tails of it. He could only fall into silence.

Finally, he set his inquisitive look towards Yi Nan instead.

"I don't know anything about this either." Yi Nan was waving her hands, puzzled as well. She paused again, then explained softly, "I've only heard of a legend. Long ago, my ancestor was a strong top-ranking warrior. When he was training at Tong Tian Tower's eighth floor, he was attacked by a few abyss elites. His life was in peril, yet he was saved by a mystical beast who was passing by. However, seeing that they were not a match for the mythical beast, the abyss elites had called for help. They worked together to summon the fearsome Bone Dragon, Winter Demon King, Specter Behemoth, Hell Black Dragon King and other sorts of monsters to attack the mystical beast from all sides. A great battle unfolded between the two sides, almost destroying the heavens and razing the earth. There was no light from the sun nor the moon, and with dust strewn up all over, the ancestor could not get close to the battlefield at all, and could only flee for the time being. The

ancestor also did not know how the battle went, nor was he able to find any useful clues. Finally, he was only able to find that piece of the shattered gemstone... In truth, that necklace had been lost a few hundred years ago. Only up to a hundred years ago was it finally retrieved. My aunt once took it to be appraised and found out that the energy stored in it was extremely little, no indication of life was present. She even doubted it thinking it might be a counterfeit good, and that the actual one had been taken by some other people... It seems that now, the 'legend from long ago' seems to be true. This could be the crystal core of that powerful beast, but I don't know what kind of beast it is."

"No matter what it is, it's fine as long as it's the real deal." From the bottom of her heart, Yue Bing was happy for her brother. To his brother, owning this mysterious Gold Beast would undoubtedly increase his strength significantly.

"We must keep this strictly as a secret. Nobody must know of this, otherwise we'll have a huge problem in our hands." As Ye Kong said this, everyone looked at Fatty Hai.

"Why are you looking at me? Do you think i'm a gossip queen or something? You guys don't understand me at all! Keeping secrets is what I'm best at, followed by being low-profile! See, I have a summoning grimoire and a Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron-skinned Rhinoceros, have I ever boasted about these to anyone before? I'm not that kind of person!" It was fine when Fatty Hai had not explained. Once he had explained, everyone felt that this fatty was not really able to keep secrets. The best way to handle him was to kill him to shut his mouth up... Everyone's stares caused Fatty Hai to be unbearably scared. He hurriedly swore that he would protect the secret before everyone let him off.

As for the mysterious Gold Beast, nobody could make heads or tails out of it.

However, everyone could definitely see the beast that was formed from the five star beast egg that Yue Yang gave to Yi Nan. After activating a fusion contract with the chaos egg that held the mysterious power, the five star beast egg could clearly be seen turning into a small silver-coloured Pegasus.

Yi Nan was extremely pleased. A smile spread across her face. She took Yue Bing 's hand and jumped around, barely containing her excitement.

When Ye Kong and the others heard from Yi Nan the attributes of the Silver Pegasus, their jaws dropped onto the ground.

This newly contracted Silver Pegasus was still an infant beast, yet it was already a Silver-ranked Level 2 existence. Yi Nan reckoned that this little silver horse could at least get a six stars evaluation, and was extremely likely to turn into Gold-ranked during its growth... Anyway, to sum it up, Yi Nan was incredibly elated. She would probably not part with it even if she was given a Gold-ranked lion, because girls had a preference towards beautiful things.

The Silver Pegasus' body was snow-white, and its quaint little wings were young and incomparably soft. It could only stand now and wasn't yet able to fly.

But when it grew, it would definitely become the flying mount that was best suited for girls and was what girls loved the most.

“I’m your boss but I only had a Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron-skinned Rhinoceros, you can’t just neglect me! You have to give me a beast as well! My request isn’t too much, any Gold-ranked beast will do-” Before Fatty Hai had finished speaking, Ye Kong had already kicked him flying and stomped down on that fat stomach that was as round as a frog’s with all his strength.

Did this fatty’s brain turn into mush?

Gold-ranked?

Since when was it possible to just pick up a Gold-ranked beast?

But Yue Yang was still kind enough to help the Li brothers and Fatty Hai get a Bronze-ranked beast. After all, their strength was too low, and was a kind of burden to the team. In the future, it would be a disadvantage to the team’s cultivation. Yue Yang would rarely speak of the things that he had not done yet. He only nodded towards the Li brothers. Li Qie and Li Ge’s hearts warmed up. They had already known that Yue Yang would not ignore them, but when they saw him nod his head towards them, it showed his silent confirmation. They could not help but feel indescribably moved from the bottom of their hearts.

Becoming an elite was every warrior’s dream on the Soaring Dragon Continent.



The Li brothers were aware that they would become slaves for Yue Yang again, but that did not mean that they did not want to grow stronger.

“Yue Bing, we’re going out to buy some things. Later, if there’s really no problem after you go for the follow-up medical check-up, we’ll go to the Blackstone Labyrinth.” Yi Nan kept her little Silver Pegasus and left, dragging Yue Bing along. As she walked towards the entrance, she turned back and said, “Liar Third Young Master, you, the fatty and the others should prepare yourselves too.”

“Leave it to me. We’ll meet you at the entrance of the clinic later.” Ye Kong did not need Yue Yang to help them buy daily necessities, and brought the Li brothers out with him.

They had also prepared to hand a message over to Wen Yu Mo, Jia Zi Yun and Tai Yang, telling them that Yue Bing had already been found. At the same time, he sent them some money, to prevent these three fellows from starving to death while waiting. Ye Kong and the others hurriedly went out to complete their tasks, but Yue Yang on the other hand, was completely free, so he took out his ‘egg swords’ to study them. Originally, he had wanted to study the mysterious little Gold Beast. But Fatty Hai, had shamelessly requested to stay here, refusing to go back to his own room. Yue Yang could only postpone his desire to study the little Gold Beast further to a later date.

Fatty Hai had always pushed for Yue Yang to study at his school next year, and even said that he, the boss, would cover for Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was not too interested in the prospects of studying in a school.

He did not know what he could learn if he went to school. He thought that he would be better off cultivating in Tong Tian Tower.

Seeing Yue Yang's attitude, Fatty Hai hurriedly used his silver tongue to persuade him, "Do you know what our school has most? Beautiful girls!"

"Isn't the school with the most beauties Shang Jing Academy?" Yue Yang was baffled.

Although he had never been there, Yue Yang had heard of the rumours. Da Xia Empire's 'Shang Jing Academy' and Tian Luo Country's 'Zhong Xiang Academy' (TL note: literal 'fragrance of many') were the two schools with the greatest amount of beauties and was renowned in the entire world for it. As for the other big country, Zi Jin Country's 'Gray Wolf Academy', it was called the beauty's desert, home of barbarians. Luckily the school that Fatty Hai invited Yue Yang to was not Cang Lang Academy, otherwise Yue Yang would have immediately kicked him out of the room.

Fatty Hai did not expect that this hikikomori Yue Yang who could not even identify beautiful girls actually knew of these gossips.

The Book of Silence Chapter 18, Verse 44: With a thick enough skin, it won't be red even if it's red (TL note: can't see someone

blushing as long as they're shameless enough). Fatty Hai immediately chuckled and said, "Although there are many beauties in Shang Jing Academy, but our Ivy Academy isn't bad either. Don't you know that our Ivy Academy is opposite Shang Jing Academy? Although it's not as renowned, the facilities and conditions there aren't bad. It has a long history too, and was established at the same time as Shang Jing Academy, with a three thousand year long history. The most important fact is that there aren't many male students, so there won't be an ugly situation where there are too many thorns and not enough roses. Think about it again. Us from Ivy can go get girls from the opposite school, Shang Jing Academy and conquer the school's beauties. Wouldn't this have a better sense of accomplishment?"

"How many school beauties have you conquered?" With Yue Yang's single question, Fatty Hai wanted to ram himself against the wall.

"This... Of course I've conquered lots of them! After those school beauties graduated, they cried as they couldn't bear to leave me... At Ivy Academy, who wouldn't recognise me, the little harem prince? Let me tell you. I was born in this world to pick up girls!" Fatty Hai resisted the aching in his heart, and patted his chest full of fat.

"Since you took all the girls already, why should I go there?" Yue Yang rejected him nonchalantly.

"Don't say it like this, there's still a few ice-cold ladies, the best of the best that your boss hasn't conquered yet. At that time, we can team up and conquer all of them in one go! Me, your boss, will lose

out a bit, but after you pick what you want, I'll take the ones that are left!" Fatty Hai felt that he was not convincing enough, and added another sentence, "Our Ivy Academy not only has beautiful girls, but also a beautiful teacher, a top-quality oneesan! Not only that, the beautiful female teacher also teaches runic summoning arts! Getting her would be equivalent to getting the entirety of the treasures from Gods' Ruins!"

When Yue Yang heard of the oneesan, the runes and the treasures, his heart suddenly moved and asked, "What are Gods' Ruins?"

Fatty Hai intentionally lowered his voice and said in an extremely mysterious tone, "Gods' Ruins eh? Those are the most mysterious places in the entirety of the Soaring Dragon Continent besides Tong Tian Tower. Those are the dreamlands of the warriors. Everyone wants to get in there and plunder its treasures! Legend says that there are countless treasures hidden in them. Magic crystals, godly equipment and ancient beasts, even warrior souls!"

"Warrior souls?" Yue Yang had never heard of this.

"Legend says that millions of years ago, the Soaring Dragon Continent was teeming with powerful ultimate-level warriors. They fought each other, and the ultimate-level warriors who died in battle had their flesh destroyed, but left behind a part of their thoughts, which would be the warrior souls. As long as a warrior manages to get them, they would be able to obtain the experience and powers of these ancient warriors. After cultivating them, there's an extremely high chance of becoming a new generation

ultimate-level warrior. Ms De, the beautiful teacher in our school is one of the three great sages who knows about the runic summoning arts! That is to say, she grasps one of the keys to the ancient doors of the gods' ruins! Think about it, if we nab her, wouldn't we be able to get both the person and the riches?" Fatty Hai smiled obscenely, and a long line of drool came out of his mouth.

"The Gods' Ruins... " Yue Yang had obtained a treasure map from the energy cauldron in the Aries Palace. It seemed as if it could really corroborate with what Fatty Hai had said.

As Fatty Hai was going to make the story more interesting to persuade Yue Yang, suddenly Ye Kong and the Li brothers ran up the stairs and pushed the door open. They urgently said, "The Warrior's Auction House is preparing to sell the Fruit of Wisdom and the branches from the Tree of Life, both are extremely helpful for Yue Bing's Treant Warrior's growth!"

When Yue Yang heard this, he jumped up immediately. "Find Yue Bing. We're going to the auction house now."

# Chapter 75 – It Won't Do To Not Be Covered By Boss!

---

Yue Yang rushed over to the clinic and found Yi Nan accompanying Yue Bing out after her check-up.

Once he told her about the Wisdom Fruit and the Lustrous Branch of the Tree of Life, Yue Bing could not help but feel her heartbeat quicken. But she knew that these two items were worth thousands of gold, especially for the 'Fruit of Wisdom', which could improve the intelligence of a beast. These items were always auctioned off at over two thousand, sometimes even reaching three thousand gold coins. These kinds of expensive items were simply too extravagant to request for herself.

As for the Lustrous Branch of the Tree of Life, it would be beneficial in increasing the level of the Treant Warrior.

But the Tree of Life, just like the Fruit of Wisdom, were important ingredients required to complete elixirs. For instance, the ingredients required for 'Spirit Beast Awakening Wisdom Pill' includes both the Fruit of Wisdom and the Lustrous Branch of the Tree of Life.

"Brother, forget it. The best goods in the auction house are competed for by the Four Great Sects and the Three Great Countries' royal families, so there's no way we can go up against them." Yue Bing said this tactfully. As she had stated, the Four Great Families were also one of the main competitors in the auction house. But despite this, Yue Yang and Yue Bing were from the fourth house, and the Yue family did not hold anyone of fourth

house to be of any value to them. It was simply impossible to pay a few thousand gold for these siblings to buy a Fruit of Wisdom and the Brilliant Branch from the Tree of Life. If it were Yue Tian, Yue Yan or the newly famous Yue Feng with immense potential, perhaps the Yue Family's elders would agree to use great amounts of gold to cultivate them.

“We’re just going to take a look.” Yue Yang also knew that he did not have money on him. But, he had never planned on using money to compete in the auction. He was actually preparing to see who had bid for it successfully, then steal it from them.

For his precious sister Yue Bing's future, Yue Yang didn't mind being a thief who blocked another person's road. In Yue Yang's eyes, strangers were NPCs that dropped treasures, so why couldn't he steal from them?

As they spoke, three people came out of the treatment room.

Yue Yang saw a few familiar faces and recognised them as the Three Great Killing Stars.

It looked like they had also been successful in defeating a Demon General and had returned victorious from their campaigns into the abyss.

However, the current Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang did not have the majestic appearances from before. Feng Qi Sha's armour was broken into pieces, and it seemed that he had suffered serious wounds. Although he had mostly recovered from his

injuries, his spirit was still reeling from the aftereffects of the battle. Yan Po Jun's hands were wrapped up like a dumpling, and his hand was still holding onto a treatment stone that was emanating white light. It seemed that his wounds had not yet fully recovered. Only Xue Tan Lang looked better. There were no wounds to be seen on his body, and his spirit was not bad either. He was still maintaining his image of 'I am an ice cube guy, so do not come close to me you strangers' (TL: total tsuntsun). The only notable change was that his clothes were tattered and seemed like a beggar's rags...

Although they had returned victorious, Yue Yang saw that they had not paid a small price for it, unlike him. He had destroyed a Demon General without any losses at all.

Seeing that everyone from Yue Yang's party had returned alive, Xue Tan Lan could not help but be startled. Then, seeing that Yue Yang was smiling brilliantly, the three felt that something weird was going on. It was not strange for the Yue Family's Third Young Master, this shameless guy to be able to escape back here, but how did his entire team of trash come back alive?

Could it be that the Demon General their team fought against was made out of tofu?

But this was a Demon General!

It had been tough for them to even go up against one. With only those few trash combatants, how could they escape without any casualties?



Seeing that Yue Yang appeared uninjured from head to toe and acted as if the campaign to the abyss was like a vacation, he coldly snorted.

The ice cube guy rushed in front of Yue Yang, staring intently into Yue Yang's eyes, and threw down an ultimatum, saying, "Let us fight to the death. You can pick the time and place." After finishing, before Yue Yang to opened his mouth to oppose it, he coolly turned around and walked away.

Yue Yang really had no way of dealing with this ice cube guy.

This was obviously a misunderstanding!

If that girl from the Xue Family really wanted to marry him, she could just sit in a big red marriage sedan and come over, paying respects to each other and going into the bridal room, enjoying a good life. (TL note: good life here has a double meaning – 性福 also means orgasm) Wouldn't it be over and done with like this? Why would they need to fight to the death? If she didn't want to marry him, then that would be even better! It did not matter who had wronged the other person in this rejected marriage. Since this marriage had been blown to smithereens, she had also regained her own freedom as well.

"Eh?" As Feng Qi Sha was preparing to leave, he shockingly discovered Hui Tai Lang who had turned into a Two-headed Demon Wolf. He was astonished. A Bronze-ranked Level 5 Two-headed Demon Wolf?

It was definitely a Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ironbacked Demon Wolf when they were on the campaign to the abyss. But in such a short period of time, it had effortlessly evolved to become a Bronze-ranked Level 5 Two-headed Demon Wolf. Wasn't this speed of growth far too terrifying?

Evolution and a level increase had happened at the same time. What supplements had this demon wolf taken?

He walked over, seemingly wanting to inquire about the evolution process for Hui Tai Lang.

But alas, Yue Yang acted as if he did not see him.

Ye Kong and the others also followed suit. If they were not looking up at the stars, they were looking down to count ants.

Fatty Hai had also acted as if nobody else was there and started whistling... It was nonsense after all. Beast evolutions were a great secret, so what kind of idiot would tell him anything?

Naturally, Yue Bing and Yi Nan knew of Feng Qi Sha and the others of the Three Great Killing Stars, but they were not fangirls or idol-worshippers who would scream loudly at the mere sight of them. Seeing that Yue Yang and Three Great Killing Stars weren't treating each other hospitably, they did not answer them either. Instead, the two of them were preoccupied with talking to one another in a low voice. Feng Qi Sha was aware that he had crossed the line a little, and felt a little awkward. However, he still

maintained his elegance and nodded his head slightly towards Yue Yang before leaving in subtle yet big strides.

After walking a fair distance, he looked back again to see Hui Tai Lang once more. He seemed to be extremely interested in Hui Tai Lang...

“Good day to you, Yue Bing.” Yan Po Jun’s first action was to greet Yue Bing. But, his eyes kept looking at Yue Yang. On his face, a bright smile appeared, and he said, “So the most outstanding youth within the Yue family was not the Eldest Young Master Yue Tian nor the Fourth Young Master Yue Yan, but rather the Third Young Master. It was truly a great pleasure to go on a campaign to the abyss with such an outstanding comrade like you. Let me introduce myself first. My name is Yan Po Jun, and I am the president of the Venus Elite Student Union in Shang Jin Academy... Third Young Master, I sincerely invite you to join our Shang Jing Academy, and our Venus Elite Student Union.”

“I apologise, but my family is poor and our house only has four walls. I do not have enough money to even attend school. It looks like I can only thank President Yan Po Jun for your good intention.” Yue Yang had almost wanted to express himself as an extremely poor person who had to weed the plants everyday, a mountain child who did not eat dumplings even during the new year. (TL note: Chinese have traditions of eating dumplings during Chinese New Year)

“.....” Yi Nan was rolling her eyes as she heard this. She thought it shameful that he even dared to make up these types of bad excuses.

“Pfft!” Yue Bing giggled.

“Third Young Master, you’re joking now! There’s no problem in attending school. We, the Venus Elite Student Union can make an exception for elite students. Not only can we let you attend the school for free, but we will also provide scholarship funds for you. If the Third Young Master is lacking in money, just tell us.” Yan Po Jun’s face slightly twitched. He actually really wanted to strangle this shameless guy in front of him alive. Didn’t he just want money? If so, he could have just said it directly. Why did he have to talk about his house only having four walls and nothing else? If the Yue Family of the Four Great Families only had houses with four walls, would there be such a thing as rich people in this world? Of course, Yan Po Jun could naturally tell using his own perception that this Third Young Master of the Yue family, this trash that was mocked by the world, was actually a shameless guy who disguised himself as a pig to eat tigers.

This fellow definitely had strength, yet he kept it a deep secret and refused to reveal it.

If he did not have strength, would Luo Hua City’s Mistress even allow him to lead a team to the campaign to the abyss? If he did not have strength, could he have come back unscathed? Not only that, he had also seized the crescent blades from the Demon General’s hands...

If not for having incredible strength, would Xue Tan Lang, who was like a block of ice, ever have opened his mouth to ask him for a fight to the death?

In short, if anyone were to believe that this shameless guy was trash, that guy was probably about to be as unlucky as they could be in their lives.

Yan Po Jun felt that if this scheming guy, who possessed so much power but tried to keep his strength a secret, it would shake the entire world eventually. Thus, it would be better for him to rope him in while the iron was hot. After all, helping this shameless Yue Family's Third Young Master to rise up quickly would also be a powerful suppression against Yue Tian and Yue Yan who had kept challenging his status.

Even a dead person could hear the conflict within the Yue Family.

If this Yue Family's Third Young Master was to emerge suddenly within the family, he would definitely not let these two brothers have an easy time...

“Cough cough. Actually, with regard to where he studies, he must listen to this big boss.” Fatty Hai suddenly stood out and arrogantly snorted, “He is my little brother! Wherever this boss goes, would he dare to not obediently follow me?”

“Who are you?” Yan Po Jun's expression towards him was like looking at an ant that was plumper than the usual ants.

“What? You really don't know me? At Tong Tian Tower's floors, have you been mingling around in places devoid of people? Who

wouldn't know me, Master Hai? Although it's true that I keep a low profile normally... even though I own a summoning grimoire and a Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron-skinned Rhinoceros, I don't go about showing them off. But, I have the strength after all. Even if I didn't want to become famous it'd be impossible that I didn't!" Fatty Hai expressed shock and exaggeratedly jumped with his hands raised up in the air. With his spittle flying around, he shouted, "I, Master Hai, am an elite in Ivy Academy! I'd recently brought a group of elites to steal the top 100 spots of the World's Hundred School Elite Tournament, yet you actually don't know me?"

Fatty Hai's expression on his face had a look that seemed to cry 'not knowing me is your loss'.

But, Yan Po Jun recalled in his head for a long time and furrowed his eyebrows. Finally, he remembered, "Ah, I remember now! Weren't you the fatty that was instantly defeated and eliminated in a single move by my little brother during last year's qualifying elimination tournament? Indeed, you're pretty famous. You've broken the record for the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, losing on stage within ten seconds.

"That was because I hadn't prepared well enough. Not only that, I'm a kind-hearted person! I was scared that if I attacked, I would have hurt your little brother!" As Fatty Hai said this, Yan Po Jun nearly puked blood.

"Really? Then I really have to be grateful to you for holding back." Yan Po Jun finally found out that this fatty had skin that was a hundred times thicker than what he had imagined it to be.

“You’re welcome! The greatest merit of my character is being kind! Being humble can only count as my second greatest merit.” Before Fatty Hai had finished saying it, the Li brothers could not take it anymore and went to find a place to puke.

“Are you attending Ivy Academy next year, Third Young Master?” Yan Po Jun ignored Fatty Hai who was full of himself, and with a face full of smiles, turned towards Yue Yang.

“It’s impossible for trash like me to go around without the boss covering. Whatever boss says, I’ll do it. If he tells me to go east, I won’t dare to go westwards.” Yue Yang smiled humbly.

“We’re all Da Xia warriors. Actually, it doesn’t matter which school we attend, I hope that we can learn through each other’s experience in a team next time.” Yan Po Jun knew that he himself had far too close relations with Yue Tian and Yue Yan last time. Furthermore, he had supported Shen Tu Hao to suppress Yue Bing. Wanting to pull this Yue Family’s Third Young Master to his side within such a short period was not realistic. But, he was not so hasty. As long as he utilised the strife within the Yue Family well, and let the three brothers duke it out between each other, he would succeed one day in beating down the Yue Family.

He rushed towards Yue Bing and smiled apologetically at her. He hoped to ease the burning anger within the girl and took the initiative to shake hands with Ye Kong and the others. Finally he left in an elegant manner.

After he had gone, Ye Kong's face immediately darkened, "This guy isn't simple to deal with at all..."

Yi Nan could not help but break into laughter, saying, "Aren't you talking rubbish now? He's one of the Three Great Killing Stars! There's no need to talk about how strong he is, and he's psychologically far more mature than the battle-crazed Feng Qi Sha and the cold and arrogant Xue Tan Lang. As one of the Three Great Killing Stars, even after going through your snubbing and being hard on him, he was still able to talk to you with a face full of smiles. Is that what a normal person can do? In his eyes, I'm afraid that you all are insignificant people, but he still took the initiative to shake hands with you in a cordial manner. If you were him, could you do this?"

Yue Bing also nodded her head, saying, "I've heard Grandfather's evaluation. Within the Three Great Killing Stars, the one that will be the hardest to deal with in the future and the one that'll achieve the greatest success will be this Yan Po Jun."

However, Yue Yang, the person who owned Divine Vision that could see through most of Yan Po Jun's strength, felt that he was unworthy of a high evaluation.

Yan Po Jun's schemes were not bad, but the really powerful one was still that cool ice cube guy Xue Tan Lang. However, he knew that silence was golden and did not speak of anything that his Divine Vision had seen.

Rushing towards the Warrior's Auction House, they found it to be full of disappointed mercenaries.



After asking around again, he found out that the Storm Mercenary Group that owned the Fruit of Wisdom and the Brilliant Branch decided to postpone the sale of these items till three days later due to issues not being settled, such as the base price and the packaging of the items at the auction.

Their requirements were extremely weird. They were aiming for a favourable exchange and not an auction. The Storm Mercenary Group hoped to exchange their Fruit of Wisdom and Brilliant Branch for a strong beast that was Bronze-ranked and with a rating of at least five stars or above. Not only that, they were requesting for a young beast, and not a beast egg.

“I have a plan. Let’s go, we’re moving over to do the Heart of the Oak Tree mission at Blackstone Labyrinth.” Yue Yang felt that if it was an exchange, then there was still hope.

“Does that have any relation to this?” Yi Nan was stunned when she heard this.

“Yes.” Yue Yang did not dare to say it out loud, as he was worried that he would scare Yue Bing and Yi Nan. This time, what he would complete was not only the Heart of the Oak Tree mission, but also to capture one of the Hydra’s juvenile beasts... This crazy action would not be easily achieved, but Yue Yang still felt that it was still possible to rack his small brains somewhat for it.

# Chapter 76 – Comprehending The Heart Of Nature

---

Initially, Fatty Hai had thought that Yue Yang would advance with everyone together. But instead, he split the team into two groups.

Ye Kong estimated that the difficulty of this training had just become at least three times higher just by bringing this fatty along.

If not for him now owning a beast again, Ye Kong would not dare to say that he could guarantee the safety of this stupid pig.

In another group, Yue Yang took Yue Bing and Yi Nan along and headed towards the southern road that he had walked through previously. Without stopping to rest, he began to recount to Yue Bing what he had experienced when he had passed the trial by himself. Yi Nan felt that it was a little weird, and said, “We’ll talk about it when we get to those checkpoints. It’s still far too early right now.”

The moment they came out of the auction house, she could feel that Yue Yang had planned to take big risks.

She was not able to guess what Yue Yang’s plan was, but she felt that it must be extremely tough and dangerous.

Initially, Yue Bing had thought of convincing Yue Yang not to do whatever it was he was planning, but he was her big brother after

all. No matter what, she felt that she should give 100% of her support to whatever Yue Yang did. Besides, she knew he was not a hot-headed person and would probably not act rashly. Most importantly, she saw faint trace of Yue Yang's determination, and it had strangely increased her confidence in his complete success..

Thus, Yue Bing decided not to bog her brother down.

Suddenly, Yue Yang grasped Yi Nan's shoulders and warned her softly, "Brother Yi Nan, although I'm leaving Yue Bing in your protection, I feel a little uneasy. She still hasn't grown up and is still a huge loli. You can't swing that way, do you understand? Also, you're now considered her brother, so you have to take care of her well. At most, I'll introduce you to some pretty girls next time!"

After waiting a moment for Yue Yang to bring Hui Tai Lang far away, Yi Nan lightly sighed, saying, "Yue Bing, your brother really is a huge idiot."

Yue Bing nodded her head and agreed, "Sister Yi Nan, there was no other way it could be. My brother was shut inside the house for far too long."

What they could not understand was that Yue Yang had actually intentionally done this. Regardless of whatever he did, he would just pretend that he could not recognise Yi Nan as a girl. Otherwise, how would she have let him hold her shoulders like that? Men and women were different. Once the differences were realized, it would probably be difficult for Yue Yang to grope and take some advantage of her. The situation right now was not bad at

all. He could embrace her, hug her and touch her as he pleased...

The first time he had passed through the Blackstone Labyrinth, Yue Yang, who had the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice, only used six hours to complete the route which would take others at least three days.

Since he was coming back here for the second time, he could easily breeze through even without the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice.

He dashed onwards, and rushed to the base of the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree within the next three hours.

When he arrived, he did not instantly move on to the Demon's Blood Pond to kill the Hydra, but rather rested on the treetops for a while. He was borrowing the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree's spiritual energy to improve his abilities, allowing him to attain his peak form before moving on to Demon's Blood Pond. His objective was not to kill a Hydra, but to capture a juvenile Hydra, and use it to trade for the Fruit of Wisdom and the Lustrous Branch of the Tree of Life alive. This level of difficulty was a headache even for Yue Yang who had already reached the Innate realm. The Hydra was not an ordinary monster. As long as it had matured, it was minimally a Bronze-ranked Level 7 or above beast. Adding its huge size, deadly poison, and the consecutive attacks from the nine heads, it caused people to be unable to defend against attacks coming from it.

If this Blackstone Labyrinth did not have a rule that prohibited the use of magic, then Yue Yang, who possessed the Innate Sword

Qi, would not have to feel nervous at all.

But within the Star's Domain, Yue Yang could only defend himself and was unable to attack.

Using Xiao Wen Li, the Barbaric Cow Shadow and Hui Tai Lang to overwhelm and kill the family of Hydras, then capturing a juvenile Hydra was a completely unrealistic move, nor was it smart to do so. Therefore, a good plan had to be thought up that could allow him to capture a juvenile Hydra alive and safely escape.

Therefore, long before they had come to the Blackstone Labyrinth, Yue Yang had already thought up of a good plan.

But, it was extremely dangerous.

A single misstep could cause his untimely demise.

This plan was to use the teleportation scroll. He would lure a juvenile Hydra out of the Blood Pond, then activate the teleportation scroll.

If the teleportation succeeded, the Hydra would be teleported with him in front of the Warrior's Guild, or at the teleportation area set up secretly during the campaign to the abyss.

Although he could use his own power back at the Warrior's Guild, it was extremely easy to expose his identity as an Innate Ranker. He could not say for certain that there would not be

greedy mercenaries trying to steal it as well. What if someone was hurt or died in the commotion, the Ancient Code might cause him to hold responsibility for it. If, through an interpretation of the Ancient Code, it was decided that the death was caused by him, he could be punished like Shi Ming was by these Ancient Code and be sentenced to death via explosion.

He did not understand the Ancient Code a single bit. If it was brain-dead and made whoever started everything responsible for murder, then he would be in deep trouble.

The second possibility was to teleport to the Ancient Battlefield in the abyss.

In that place, there was a high chance that there could be a hundred thousand demons that were preparing to storm into the Soaring Dragon Continent or Tong Tian Tower at any time. If he teleported there, he would most likely be brutally surrounded by a hundred thousand demons.

Since he was a man, he should be fearless and brave.

Compared to the incomprehensible and uncontrollable Ancient Code, Yue Yang would rather choose the abyss. It would be far better to fight against a hundred thousand demons than to helplessly explode and die. At least, in the abyss, he could cut a path out of the battlefield. With the Innate Sword Qi, two summoning grimoires, Xiao Wen Li, the Barbaric Cow Shadow, the mysterious Gold Beast and the Golden Thorny Flower, even the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice and Hui Tai Lang...

Would it really be impossible to come back after taking a trip to the abyss?

No.

Yue Yang had complete confidence in himself. As long as he did not meet a strong foe who was of Demon Lord class strength, even if it was a Demon General who initiated an all-out battle on him, he would not need to fear anything.

Leaving from under the shade of the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree, he saw a sky filled with stars.

Yue Yang felt that he was so close to the stars at this moment, it was as if he could pluck them out one by one, just by stretching his hands out. Then, looking again, he felt that they were so far away, only small dots of starlight, not knowing how many millions of light-years away it came from...

The universe that contained the sky and the earth and the myriad of living beings was far too mysterious.

After a brilliant sigh naturally formed in his heart, Yue Yang suddenly felt his mind begin to enter a strange yet wonderful state. It was as if his heart had opened up and expanded limitlessly, stretching to the furthest ends of heaven and earth. His body slowly disappeared, leaving his soul to fly freely around in the sky. Yet it felt like his soul was still continuously expanding, as if he was a giant looking at the myriad of rivers and valleys on the

earth. He was like a powerful creator, looking down at all the living beings on the earth, looking at the swaying of the plants, the birds flying around, and the vast variety of living beings which formed a circle of life that was wonderful without compare. It was a perfect, endless cycle.

Yue Yang felt that after seeing such an amazing natural scenery, it seemed like he had understood a kind of secret that was hard to express in words.

But the more secret he understood, the more he was bewildered.

He found out that the more he knew and the more he was able to achieve, what he had originally known was just a grain of sand in a vast ocean of knowledge.

And, compared to the power of the millions of beings roaming the heaven and the earth, he, who had seemed to be extremely strong, was obviously still an insignificant existence... Compared to the entire universe, he was just a small part of one of the millions and billions of planets, just like a drop of water in the big ocean.

A light of wisdom rose from his soul.

In that instant, something formed inside of his body, as if a kind of energy had condensed into a sphere; yet it was clearly different from his Innate Sword Qi.



When the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree started emitting a faint green radiance and resonated faintly with the condensed sphere of energy within Yue Yang's body, Yue Yang finally realised that he had understood the 'Heart of Nature' that he had never been able to clearly grasp before. The world's Innate Rankers were definitely the closest to nature. After all, only by controlling heaven and earth could one control everything.

After understanding the Heart of Nature, this was equivalent to opening a huge door within the Innate realm.

This... was also a sign of a new realm.

When Yue Yang's Heart of Nature resonated with the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree, he had found out astonishingly that the effects of the Ancient Code that restricted his body's power had lightened considerably.

Under the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree, he quietly cultivated for another day, before moving to the Demon's Blood Pond.

After understanding the Heart of Nature, Yue Yang felt more certain that he would succeed.

This time, Yue Yang would not send Hui Tai Lang out, but rather, he would let a Phantom Shadow float into the Blood Pond and prepare to assault a juvenile Hydra.

The female Hydra who had lost an egg had become extremely vigilant. It appeared almost instantly when the Phantom Shadow appeared. The female Hydra broke out of the surface of the pond and roared angrily. Instantly, the entire family of Hydras became restless.

When they appeared on the coast, Yue Yang immediately began his fiendish attack.

A second later, Yue Yang, along with a mature female Hydra, two semi-mature Hydras and two juvenile Hydras, were teleported at the same time to the ancient battlefield in the abyss.

When Yue Yang raised his head, he abruptly saw tens of thousands of demons, led by dozens of Demon Generals looking at him with their jaws dropped...

## Chapter 77 – Fertiliser

---

Only an idiot would dare to fight face to face with dozens of Demon Generals. Moreover, there were tens of thousands of monsters behind them.

Yue Yang's first reaction was to rush towards the closest juvenile Hydra. He was prepared to hug one whether he lived or died, then, by summoning his bronze grimoire, under the protection of the barrier, use the teleportation scroll to escape back under the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree. Under the situation where he could not attack, fighting a mature Hydra was strenuous, but there would be no problem when taking down a juvenile Hydra.

But would the Demon General let Yue Yang leave as he pleased?

Almost the instant when Yue Yang moved, all the Demon Generals moved as well.

Yue Yang found that the teleportation items in the abyss were different from those of the Soaring Dragon Continent. If the warriors in the Soaring Dragon Continent wanted to use a teleportation scroll, they would have to open it and summon it with their spiritual energy.

The previous time, he had been too focused on escaping and did not see it clearly. But this time, Yue Yang could see it clearly. All at once, the Demon Generals threw a black-coloured item. They seemed to be black balls that were about the size of a fist. Before touching anybody, they would shatter soundlessly, turning into

black pillars of light. Within the regions covered by the black pillars of light, each target would be instantly teleported to a designated location. If Yue Yang had not been greedy and insisted on hugging the juvenile Hydra, then with his movements, those teleportation balls would be hardly be able to hit him. But now..... Yue Yang who refused to yield and let go against the constantly struggling juvenile Hydra, was teleported to yet another Battlefield of Death. Not only that, this time, it was not just one Demon General he had to face but five demon generals at the same time.

After the five Demon Generals entered the Battlefield of Death, they set it in their hearts that this human male could not possibly leave this place alive. They came together to discuss how to trample Yue Yang.

Yue Yang could not understand what the Demon Generals were saying since they used the language of the abyss.

Even if he could understand them, he did not have the time to care about them.

The juvenile Hydra in his arms was struggling with all its might. Even though it was still a juvenile beast, and only had three heads, the size of the little Hydra was still larger than a bull, and the three long necks were akin to pythons. But the little Hydra's heads were larger than a python, and on top of that, strange horns and fins were also present. Its teeth were as sharp as daggers, and, each time it bit maniacally, it caused Yue Yang to be in a fluster.

“Ha ha ha!” Seeing such a comical scene, the five Demon Generals clutched their bellies and laughed.

They suddenly felt that this young human male was not trying to assault the abyss. Rather, he had been hunted down by the Hydras and fled for his life towards here.

The only thing they could not understand was how this brat possessed a teleportation scroll that could transport them into the ancient battlefield? Could he have come here before?

The five Demon Generals even suspected that if they kept watching and ignored this young human, he would probably be unable to survive and be swallowed alive by a Hydra. In the many times where humans had fought into the abyss, this brat was the weakest and funniest of them all. They had really never seen an idiot like this from all of the human warriors that came here.

Yue Yang used his barbaric strength and madly hit the Hydras with a flurry of punches. Finally, with great difficulty, he had knocked all three heads of the little Hydra out.

Over there, the Demon Generals laughed until their sides could not be straightened.

“Human, are you trying to kill us by laughter? Compared to using your strength, killing us by laughter might really be more effective!” One of the tallest Demon Generals stood up and spoke in the language of the Soaring Dragon Continent fluently. With this speech, the other four Demon Generals laughed maniacally again.

“Can I surrender?” As Yue Yang asked this, the opposing Demon

Generals laughed violently, tears of laughter flowing from their eyes.

Did this brat think that this was a pub?

On the Battlefield of Death, one side had to die before the other could leave. Otherwise, even a Demon Lord could not leave. The ancient laws could not be overcome.

The shortest, most well-built Demon General sincerely nodded his head saying, “I’ll allow you to surrender, that is, after you die... Ha ha ha!”

Yue Yang saw that he had no choice. It looked like the Soaring Dragon Continent and the abyss were still really the arch-enemies of each other, and there was no possibility of living harmoniously with one another. In a second, the world traveller turned from an advocate of peace into a battle maniac. His principle that had guided him from the start was, if he could refrain from fighting he would not fight. If a fight started, he would have the other’s life. Yue Yang summoned his bronze grimoire, and summoned the Golden Thorny Flower that was still digesting Demon Lord Ha Xin’s arm, allowing it to take root in the ground.

“An Apprentice? Thorny Flower?” The five opposing Demon Generals were dumbfounded. They were looking at him as if he were a lunatic. A person with the standard of an Apprentice dared to fight in the abyss?

“You can take your time to prepare. When you’re done, tell us!”

The tallest Demon General said this extremely generously.

“You can even choose the way you die! Being cut into pieces, hanged to death, drowned in water, or burned in fire. You can pick whichever way you want from all these, or you can think of a new unique way to die. There won’t be any problems at all! Oh that’s right, how do I write your name on the tombstone? Is it fine to write ‘Be careful, my idiocy will infect you’?” The shortest, most well-built Demon General also said this seriously.

“Honestly, I feel that you’ll be the first opponent I’ve met that I won’t get any sense of accomplishment after defeating you.....” The winged Demon General continuously sighed.

“I’ll go to sleep for a while. Call for me after you kill him.” The Demon General, who was as fat as a demon worm, simply lay down to rest.

“Since all of you don’t want to do it, then I’ll do it. Towards humans, I’ve never held back.” The shortest Demon General and the only one who did not wear magic armour but rather an odd skintight black jacket came out from the crowd. From his dried-up face, a stream of black qi emanated, and two red eyes flashed.

It brandished its hands with the claws of a demon, summoning a silver grimoire that lightly emitted black qi.

Then, from the silver grimoire, a red light of summoning appeared.

It seemed that it was whispering to itself.

After a long time, the sharp hiss, that could make one's hair stand on end, was issued from the monster.

Yue Yang trembled slightly as he saw the light. He felt the energy of the red light explode millions of times. If Hui Tai Lang had pounced into the centre of this red light, he would definitely be blasted into pieces. Thankfully, he knew the dangers of the abyss already, and had decided not to bring Hui Tai Lang along. He had instead left it underneath the Ten-thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree, allowing it to wait for Yue Bing and Yi Nan. At the same time, he hoped that it would become one of his chess pieces by setting the teleportation mark on the floor. If anything went wrong, then he would be stuck in the abyss forever, unable to return. So, to be doubly safe, Yue Yang also placed a teleportation target on Hui Tai Lang's body.

The red light exploded with a rumbling sound. The strong blazing wind had dissipated. The shockwave was so strong that it shook Yue Yang's light barrier until it was trembling.

The earth ruptured, and red lava spewed onto the ground.

The Demon General in the black jacket lightly pressed down on the silver grimoire with its fine claws, and muttered a summoning spell again. A ball of fire flew up from the where the lava came out, and a raging blaze instantly started to burn the surrounding area. The area where the lava was flowing out of was not large, and was only around ten or more metres wide. But, with the buff of the fiery light, this area expanded and eventually formed a small



stream of flames, flowing everywhere.

An elemental-type summoned beast had such power?

Yue Yang could not help but raise his eyebrows. As expected, Demon Generals with a summoning grimoire were hard to deal with.

Luckily, it currently looked like the only Demon General with a summoning grimoire was this thin demon and not the other four.

The Demon General in the black jacket was a true enemy. Even though he had displayed a sense of weakness just now, he still did not have any thoughts of underestimating Yue Yang. It looked like this guy would be the most formidable one and the hardest to deal with out of all the five Demon Generals.....

Through the Demon General's act, Yue Yang understood many things.

These Demon Generals understood the weak points of human beasts very well. Human beasts were mostly beast-types or bird-types. On the surface of this stream of lava and raging blaze, it was completely impossible for many of them to survive, not to mention fighting. If he had brought Hui Tai Lang, it would have probably only been able to act as decoration. Conversely many monsters in the abyss did not fear flames at all, especially the monsters who were from Hell. To them, the blazing flames would not kill them, but rather like a fish in water, allow their power to be increased many times over.

“Alright, we’ll play together with you. Sometimes, provoking a little worm is also quite meaningful!” The tallest Demon General summoned black flames on his greatsword, and walked out. As he walked with great strides within the raging flames, he was completely unhurt and only left a trail of flames as his footprints.

“I hope this brat won’t die so quickly.” The shortest, most well-built Demon General brandished his sharp axe and summoned a skull-head enchantment on top of his axe.

The axehead turned into a terrifying skull axe. Its demon eyes flashed with green, and black spots that seemed like carrion flies as they revolved around the skull axe. It looked revolting and strange.

Behind them, the winged Demon General and the fatty Demon General did not move and only spectated the fight with smiles on their faces.

They did not think that the young human in front of them would be able to defeat three Demon Generals who were fighting together. Moreover, they were also under the buffs of the elemental beasts ‘Lava Beast’ and ‘Hellfire Beast’. An Apprentice could only summon a single beast. That brat had already summoned a Thorny Flower, and could not summon a second beast. Even if the Thorny Flower was a plant-type beast, which had a natural advantage against the creatures in hell and was Gold-ranked as well, the level of the Thorny Flower was too low. It seemed like it could not be any higher than Level 2, and it was still only a juvenile that was growing... How useful could it be?

Summoning a Thorny Flower was just a futile struggle before he died after all.

“It looks like I have to be more careful. The Thorny Flower’s spit is always pretty powerful.” The tallest Demon General started to mock and laugh at Yue Yang.

“I say, old friend. Look closely, it’s not possible for this Thorny Flower to even spit if it wanted to. It’s still digesting something. I’m curious, what in the world did it eat? We’re already starting a battle, how come it hasn’t finished its digestion?” The shortest and most well-built Demon General coordinated with the tallest Demon General and surrounded Yue Yang as they attacked.

Their intention was to break Yue Yang’s barrier with the flame sword and skull axe, intimidating him, and using it as an opportunity to toy with him.

As for the attacking power of the Thorny Flower, they completely ignored it.

Seeing these two fellows walking over while chatting and completely ignoring their surroundings, a slight mysterious grin suddenly appeared on Yue Yang’s face.

“Eh?” The black jacket Demon general was constantly observing Yue Yang’s expression. He felt that this young human’s behaviour was very awkward, but he had never expressed any fear or despair. This was far too abnormal.

Could it be that he was acting as if he was a weakling intentionally?

This thought flashed across the black jacket Demon General's head. Especially after he had seen that mysterious grin on Yue Yang's face. It was as if a thunderbolt had flashed across him.

Before he could call out to warn his companions, Yue Yang had already dodged and flew out from his light barrier.

Cutting across them like a meteor...

Nobody could see Yue Yang's movements or his figure clearly.

When he reappeared again, the two Demon Generals behind him had already fallen with a loud bang.

"Ah, Such great fertilisers!" Yue Yang bent over and thrust his blades into the hearts of the two Demon Generals. Then, dragging the two Demon Generals who were bleeding profusely into the light barrier, he summoned two of the Golden Thorny Flower's offshoots. The offshoots opened their huge mouths and forcefully swallowed the two Demon Generals who were still alive struggling. Even the flaming greatsword and the skull axe were swallowed whole. The offshoots then grew long roots, connecting tightly with the main body, causing the energy obtained from the digestion to flow continuously into the main body.

“Ah... “

This turn of events was like a bolt from the blue, causing the remaining three Demon Generals to become utterly speechless.

Those were two Demon Generals! How could they be swallowed by the Thorny Flower without any resistance? What, what was going on? Just what had that young human done?

# Chapter 78 – Strong Enemy, Bone Dragon And Flame Lord

---

If he had fought them face-to-face, it would actually not be an easy feat for Yue Yang to take down a Demon General.

But, the demon general's strong body had a fatal weakness. If serious damage was inflicted upon their hearts, they would instantly fall, unable to get up.

Of course, in comparison, humans had many more weaknesses. The head, the heart, the lower abdomen, those precious gems below (TL: you know what it means), the spine, if any one of these received a strong blow, they would instantly lose their ability to fight. The Demon Generals only had the weakness of their hearts, and they were extremely tough already. A few Demon Generals belonging to the worm race could continue fighting even if their heads were cut off. Their regenerative ability were just that terrifying. The only weakness was that the demonic heart, which provided energy to the entire body, could not be heavily damaged... If not for going up against Yue Yang who had Innate Sword Qi, their powerful bodies and highly defensive magic armour would not have allowed them to lose any of their fighting capabilities even if their bodies received wounds everywhere, and their hands or legs were broken. Even more so, they would not be in any danger of death.

It was unfortunate for them to meet such an abnormal person like Yue Yang.

Who would have thought that an Apprentice was actually an

## Innate Ranker?

Yue Yang's Innate Sword Qi could easily penetrate a hole through the magic armour and injure the heart protected by their muscles. Its power was overwhelming. Below Level 6, nobody could defend against an Innate Ranker's Innate Qi attacks.

The only regret was that Yue Yang's sword qi could only release three swords now.

If Yue Yang could be like the Heavenly Sword Goddess, who could unleash thousands of sword qi, he would not even bother to act like a weakling on purpose just to bait two of the Demon Generals to come forward, so that when they were joking around he would be able to mount a sneak attack on them. If he were able to release ten swords, he would have thrown himself at the five Demon Generals and annihilated them.

The two swords took out the two careless Demon Generals.

The battle results were outstanding.

Most importantly, for the sake of increasing the level of Thorny Flower, Yue Yang had added one of the best fertilisers for it... Where else would he be able to find fertilisers like Demon Generals?

He estimated that if it completely digested these two Demon Generals, the Thorny Flower would rise in rank and undergo a

variant evolution into “Thorny Flower Demoness’. Then, after digesting Demon Lord Ha Xin’s arm, it might undergo another rank and variant evolution again. Cultivating a ‘Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen’ was not easy and required great amounts of fertiliser. Not only that, it would require more and more high level elites to be its fertiliser. This was undoubtedly one of the best solutions.

Right now, he could kill his foes and cultivate the Thorny Flower. He could even raise the rank of his summoning grimoire, gain military honor and be recognised for his contributions to the country.

This battle could serve multiple purposes!

“The only kind of people who could easily drill a hole in magic armour and destroy a demon’s heart are Innate Rankers!” The black jacket Demon General was the fastest to react, and roared with a sinister look on his face, “So you were an Innate Ranker after all! No wonder you dared to charge into the abyss by yourself... This was a plot all along! Although I was already suspicious from the very beginning, a normal thief could not possess a teleportation scroll that would send them to the abyss’ ancient battlefield and would definitely not possess the crescent blades of a Demon General. But, you disguised yourself too well! I was led to believe otherwise by the Hydras that were chasing you to the abyss, that bronze grimoire and Thorny Flower. It’s too late now, otherwise those two wouldn’t have suffered such miserable deaths. Human warrior who wants to use us to cultivate, an Innate Ranker who pretends to be a weak little thief, you still dare to leave the Battlefield of Death? No, you’re going down with us! Your Highness Lich King Grun, I offer up everything to you, please



grant unto me power...”

The black jacket Demon General’s words made Yue Yang’s heart sink. A bad premonition flashed across him.

This guy wanted to use all he had, and it was that kind of crazy life sacrifice.

Yue Yang took his crescent blades and shot out from the light barrier, towards the black jacket Demon General. This guy was a formidable opponent, he had to be killed first.

Although this black jacket Demon General had a light barrier protecting his body, his combat ability in the flesh would probably not be very strong. As long as his summoned beasts were killed, the light barrier would disappear. At that point of time, he would definitely be unable to take the fatal blow aimed at it. Now, Yue Yang had to quickly find out where the summoning beasts were hiding, and kill them to destroy that accursed barrier.

Even if it was an elemental-type summoned beast, it would definitely have a body, or at least the existence of an energy core.

As long as that energy core was shattered, the elemental-type summoned beast would die instantly...

But, where in the world did those two elemental-type summoned beasts hide?

“Hoaaa!”

The Demon General that were as fat as demon worms shouted as he rushed up.

When he rushed in front of Yue Yang, he had already completed his summoning technique. The fat covering his body merged with the summoned beast, becoming masses of black demon worms, swarming towards Yue Yang like a tidal wave.

At Royal Dragon Valley, Yue Yang had seen this kind of flesh-eating demon worms. They were completely not scared of fire, and liked eating human flesh. Their solid teeth could easily bite off the bones of a bull. The flesh-eating demon worms of Royal Dragon Valley were only Level 1, but the worms that came from the Demon General's summons along with the worms that were born from merging with his body, were all Bronze-ranked Level 3 demon worms. With their sharp teeth, fierce horns and spikes covering his entire head, and the black current of worms crawling quickly unharmed through the flames like a tidal wave, even a person with great guts would feel absolutely horrified.

In the sky, the winged Demon General summoned multiple crow-like summoned beasts, allowing it to be attached onto the arrowheads, turning them into black arrows that were emitting smoke.

Once the arrows were shot, all of them could automatically fly around.

Drawing out an arc, they mysteriously homed towards the back of Yue Yang's head.

“So you were here, found it!” Yue Yang's figure flickered. At the same time as he dodged the black arrow rain's attacks, he flew through the group of flesh-eating demon worms, and reached the most inconspicuous region of the Battlefield of Death at lightning fast speed.

When Yue Yang's figure was still flying in midair, that crazy black jacket Demon General had already mercilessly cut open his own chest and abdomen, using his blade to cut wildly. Instantly, his internal organs were shattered, his intestines ruptured, and various internal organs were bleeding profusely, with blood splashing out, causing a large amount of black blood to gush out that was so gross to the point it would make people vomit.

Before the blood had even splashed on the ground, a scarlet teleportation door appeared above.

It expanded greatly, then shrunk greatly again.

Within a few seconds, a skeletal Bone Dragon with two pitch-black eyes and four clawed limbs flew out from the scarlet teleportation door.

Before the teleportation door closed and disappeared, it dangerously squeezed out with its entire body.

A part of the Bone Dragon's long tail didn't make it out of the door in time and silently a part of it was cut off. The Bone Dragon opened up its bone wings made up of bones and rotten flesh, using great force to flap them, and swooped down towards Yue Yang... A Bronze-ranked Level 7 Bonehead. Yue Yang's divine eyes saw through the Bone Dragon's information in an instant.

This caused him to shiver.

Facing this Bone Dragon, perhaps it was not very different from a mature Hydra. It was even superior to it in some ways.

Yue Yang was unable to eliminate the Lava Monster and Hellfire Monster that were hidden, and with a spin of the crescent blade, he flashed past the bite of the Bone Dragon. At the same time, he struck the Bone Dragon ferociously, repeatedly slashing the bone wings that seemed to be very fragile.

“Clang!”

A shower of sparks flew out. Between the crescent blades and the bone wings, an ear-piercing metallic sound rang out.

This Bone Dragon's bones were actually tougher than metal, it was really ridiculous. Seeing that the crescent blades on Yue Yang's hands had broken, while the Bone Dragon was completely unharmed, his heart grew even colder. The Bronze-ranked Level 7 Bone Dragon was only two levels higher than the Bronze-ranked Hui Tai Lang, but the difference in their strength was like heaven and earth.

It looked like Level 6 was really the divide between first-class and second-class.

Below Level 6, whether it was humans, demons or monsters, they could only have second-rate strength at best.

No wonder this situation had happened.

Only by surpassing Level 6, could one really be called first-class... This Bronze-ranked Level 7 Bone Dragon could not be hacked to death with these two crescent blades.

Yue Yang had to think of a plan to shatter the demonified dragon crystal inside its skull. Otherwise, it was impossible to deal with this skeletal dragon who did not fear being cut down.

“Your Highness Lich King Grun, please listen to the appeal of your subordinate! Send a powerful beast, and exterminate the enemy in front of me!” The black jacket Demon General’s light barrier suddenly shattered and disappeared. His summoning grimoire also fell onto the ground with a ‘Dong’ sound. Yue Yang understood what was going on. This guy had summoned the Bone Dragon from the abyss to assist him, destroying the ancient laws within the space of the Battlefield of Death. He was not far from death, and would probably die by explosion. But, looking at this crazy black jacket Demon General, he seemed to not fear death and started laughing cruelly at Yue Yang, as if he had completed the one thing that he was most proud of in his life.

In the midst of that terrifying laughter, a large yet bony black hand came out from the abdomen of the black jacket Demon General, extending out directly from it.

Five pitch-black long, sharp fingernails gathered blue electricity which made crackling sounds.

Its palm held a ball of purple flames that were extremely condensed.

Although the Lich King could not come out, and only a mere hand had stretched, but the purple flames that this hand brought forward had a kind of energy that could destroy the heaven and the earth. Yue Yang felt his sense of danger exploding and shouted loudly. He was prepared to use all he had to stop the movements of this Lich King.

Like a bird, Yue Yang swept past a large distance.

The twin crescent blades were like wheels, cutting towards the bony black magic hand of the Lich King.

But, Yue Yang's attack was far too late. The hand of the Lich King had already gone back, leaving only that ball of fire thrown onto the lava and the blazing flames.

“Boom!”

With a resounding vibration, a huge explosion occurred.

Although Yue Yang's luck resisted this, his body was still thrown back by the dissipated shockwave.

He found out that the ball of purple flames had crazily devoured the crystal cores of the Lava Monster and the Hellfire Monster. In an instant, it had sucked up all the fire abilities, before growing to become a 6-odd metre tall Blazing Giant.

This Blazing Giant with blazing flames around it was made up completely of lava and rocks. Its upper body was humanoid, but its lower body was completely made out of flames.

With a wave of its arms, raging flames soared up to the sky.

Even the Bone Dragon who gave Yue Yang such a headache flew high up, away from this raging flame and hurriedly dodged, not daring to let its body close to that kind of fiery energy which could annihilate everything.

“Boom!”

In the midst of maniacal laughter, the black jacket Demon General was blasted into pieces.

His death had been extremely miserable. Under the destruction of the power of the law, not even a single shred of his body was left. Even his soul had been completely destroyed.

Yue Yang had long known that this guy would be dead for sure, but he was feeling a huge headache due to his crazy actions... Summoning a Bronze-ranked Level 7 Bone Dragon would have been enough. This guy still was not afraid of himself dying and summoned the Lich King too. Although the Lich King could not come in, the Lich King was extremely powerful. It used a few seconds' worth of time to throw a Flame Lord into the Battlefield of Death which had reached a level of Silver-ranked Level 7.

If Hui Tai Lang was here, meeting this Flame Lord, he would most likely be killed instantly.

Now, he had to face a Silver-ranked Level 7 Flame Lord, a Bronze-ranked Level 7 Bone Dragon, and two Demon Generals who had at least the strength of a Level 5 Grandmaster.

How would he fight this battle?

The most terrifying thing was, this was still the Battlefield of Death. He could not run away from this, and had to kill every single enemy on the field before he could leave... What did he have to do to win against these enemies who had overwhelming strength?



# Chapter 79 – Storm Mermaid

---

The Flame Lord created a ball of fire in its hands and viciously shot it towards Yue Yang.

Although it hadn't reached him yet, it was moving towards him with a lot of force.

The fireball that was shot out was just like a Flame Dragon's breath of fire. However, Yue Yang did not retreat. Contrary to expectations, he advanced and aimed at the Flame Lord's 'Molten Core', which was hidden secretly under its thick, giant chest. Yue Yang used Innate Qi to split its rock-hard chest open then stabbed his Crescent Blades inside the opening... An audible buzzing sound could be heard as the blades sunk even deeper through the soft surface, exposed to a temperature so high it was capable of melting it down. Seeing this made Yue Yang's heart sank slightly. The Flame Lord's body flickered suddenly as it waved its fist that had been holding a fireball, sending it crashing down onto Yue Yang. The strength and momentum was overwhelming. Yue Yang immediately abandoned the Crescent Blade in his hands that had been embedded into the Flame Lord, turned around and retreated backwards.

However, the Flame Lord did not chase after him. Instead, he slowly pulled out the Crescent Blade, whose body had already melted into bright red mass of molten iron, from its body.

The extremely hard Crescent Blade had now turned bright red all over, and became soft like dough.

The injury in the Flame Lord's chest spouted a wave of lava before suddenly returning to its original appearance. He opened his giant mouth filled with lava wide and unexpectedly gulped down the Crescent Blade like he was eating a snack.

Yue Yang never thought that he could injure the Flame Lord by using the Crescent Blade, but it seemed like there wasn't even an effect from this attack at all; As he considered this fact, he couldn't help but sigh in his heart. This silver-ranked level 7 Demon was simply too frightening. He had a whole body burning with raging fire; molten magma as his body, flowing lava as his blood, intense flame as his armor and purple flame as his heart. What on earth did he have to do in order to defeat such a monstrosity?

He only had one shot of his Innate Invisible Sword Qi left.

If it didn't have an effect, what would he be able to do next?

Furthermore, there was also the Bone Dragon who was flying in the air glaring intently, like a predator watching its prey, prepared to attack at any point of time...

Seeing that the Flame Lord had started chasing after him, Yue Yang immediately retreated back into his Halo Shield. The Flame Lord also seemed to have sentience, as it didn't advance foolishly forward, spending a useless effort in trying to attack the Halo Shield that was protecting Yue Yang. Instead, it releases fire throughout the whole Battlefield of Death, filling the whole battlefield with raging flames, an environment that was best suited for optimizing the formidable power of his flames.

The two Demon Generals hid far away in a corner. They didn't have to do anything now; they only need to wait for the Flame Lord and Bone Dragon to take care of Yue Yang.

Yue Yang decided to adopt the strategy of "Bully the weak and fear the powerful."

Because the Flame Lord was too powerful and the Bone Dragon's bones were too hard, Yue Yang had actually decided to take down the two Demon Generals first.

The situation was just what the two Demon Generals had hoped for. As long as they hindered this brat, he would definitely die when the Flame Lord and the Bone Dragon caught up.

Indeed, when the two Demon Generals assumed a defensive stature, the Bone Dragon flying in the sky immediately came down, its mouth filled with sharp teeth wide open, charging straight towards Yue Yang. There was a whole bunch of demon worms up front, and there were even black arrows that would automatically aim towards a target on the right and left side. The most frightening thing was that the Flame Lord would catch up really soon. Yue Yang's attack plan had failed. The plan that he envisioned where the Demon Generals would split to the east and west when they retreated did not happen, but instead, they faced the enemy unyieldingly. This made the Yue Yang who had a limited winning chance unable to unleash an attack that had the biggest advantage to kill off one of the Demon Generals.

Yue Yang's two feet stopped in their tracks as he leapt upwards agilely.

Like a white horse escaping through a crack of a narrow space, avoiding countless attacks, a mystery amongst mysteries, Yue Yang wonderfully avoided one attack after another, dodging all of the attacks targeted towards him.

Before the Flame Lord unleashed its fists, Yue Yang somersaulted in the air three times, like a piece of blown leaf on the ground.

The sheath of the Crescent Blade blocked all of the incoming black arrows.

The Bone Dragon tried to smash him with its long tail, but Yue Yang's moved his upper body backwards and dodged it successfully. He also used the Crescent Blade to draw support from the Bone Dragon's flying momentum and flew backwards even more, returning to his Halo Shield once again.

If it was another human Ranker who didn't have the ability to enter and exit his Halo Shield as they pleased, they would have been dead even if they had 10 lives.

The two Demon Generals watched with stupefied expressions...

This young human Ranker was even more unfathomable than any other human they had ever met before. He was obviously very young, but he turned out to be an Innate Ranker. That was not all;

he could even enter and exit his Grimoire's Halo Shield as he pleased. They had never heard of this kind of ability before. Every single Grimoire Summoner would lose their Halo Shield once they exited it, so how could he freely go out of his Halo Shield?

However, no matter how mysterious, how unfathomable the situation was, it was useless to worry about it.

After 10 minutes, the Halo Shield would automatically disappear. In the end, he would definitely not have a second hiding place.

Under the combined attack of the Bone Dragon and the Flame Lord, he would definitely perish. The two Demon Generals could also see another point, that was, this young Innate Ranker was not as strong as the other human Innate Rankers. His abilities were a little bit weaker. Most importantly, his beasts weren't strong at all.

Other human Innate Rankers would have Mythical Beasts or Holy Beasts at least. Their abilities were already strong on their own, and their beasts' formidable powers added to their strength.

Even the worst Innate Ranker would have a diamond or platinum-ranked beast.

Other than this brat, which other Ranker would have brought a Gold-ranked Thorny Flower?

They really couldn't understand what was wrong with this brat. Maybe he wasn't a true Innate Ranker, maybe they had seen it

wrongly just now...

The two Demon General looked at each other and nodded. After they killed Yue Yang, they would search through his body to see if they could find any sort of treasures. The two generals, the worm-like Demon and the winged Demon General, were skeptical that this young human had in fact not depended on his own abilities, but depended on some kind of treasure to get rid of their colleagues. And it might also be because of that treasure that others misunderstood him for an Innate Ranker.

Within this whole world, how could there be such a weak Innate Ranker?

“Looks like I can only use the Supreme Sword now.” Yue Yang could release Barbaric Cow Shadow, but its level and abilities were far too weak. Barbaric Cow Shadow wouldn’t be a good opponent no matter if it was against the Flame Lord or the Bone Dragon who could fly.

Yue Yang still needed Barbaric Cow Shadow as a surprise attack, so he decided not to reveal her in the meantime.

Just when Yue Yang was having a headache, Xiao Wen Li suddenly floated out in a red glow. She first looked at the Flame Lord with her doe eyes, then at Yue Yang. Her cute actions seemed like she was asking, “Why couldn’t you defeat such an easy monster?” Although Xiao Wen Li didn’t say it, Yue Yang could see it through those big, round eyes, which seemed to be able to speak to him.

Seeing Yue Yang give her a thumbs up, showing his praise to her, a smile blossomed on Xiao Wen Li's small face, beautiful like a flower. It looked especially pure and sweet.

She waved her dainty, flower-like hand and summoned her small and exquisite Diamond Grimoire out.

“Ah?”

Seeing the Diamond Grimoire that Xiao Wen Li had summoned out, the two Demon General were so shocked that they almost peed in their pants. Who the heck was this small thing?

Diamond Grimoire, what kind of powerful entity was this, that she could own such a grimoire?

In the Abyss, let alone Demon Generals, even Demon Commanders, or the Demon Masters who were two levels higher, couldn't possibly have a Diamond Grimoire. If a Ranker didn't have enough talent to step into the Innate Ranker realm, then Platinum Grimoires would be considered the limit for these non-Innate Rankers. Diamond Grimoires were an existence that all rankers could only hope for but never get in their lives.

Now, turned out this small thing actually had a Diamond Grimoire.

The more unbelievable thing was that she seemed to be that

brat's summoned beast...?

How, how, how could this be...?

How could a summoned beast own a summoning Grimoire? The two Demon Generals felt that they must have gone mad to see such a hallucination.

The Flame Lord seemed to be able to feel Xiao Wen Li's threat. It roared loudly and viciously advanced forward. However, Xiao Wen Li was standing inside the Bronze Grimoire's and the Diamond Grimoire's Halo Shield. With the protection of both shields, she could completely ignore the existence of the Flame Lord.

In reality, Xiao Wen Li didn't even care about the Silver-ranked level 7 Flame Lord. Seeing that, Yue Yang was flabbergasted. Was every Diamond-ranked level 1 beast this strong? Could they overcome such a big difference in levels? Although Xiao Wen Li was a diamond-ranked level 1 beast, the Flame Lord was a Silver-ranked level 7 beast. Furthermore, Xiao Wen Li was just a toddler that had just been born. Could she really defeat the Flame Lord?

A golden light first started to shine in the little loli's hands, then on the pages of the Diamond Grimoire. It continued to shine brightly.

Following that, a rainbow and flower like existence suddenly appeared.



It was different from summoning the Stone Element Medusa. This time, the summoning time was a little longer, furthermore, the beast that appeared wasn't that Medusa whose head was filled with snakes.

This time the beast that appeared from the summon was a girl that was covered with water. Her hair was like a waterfall of gold, her jade arms like a lotus' stem, She had an untarnished, snow white body. Other than a pair of pink scallop shells covering her chest, she was covered with nothing else. Under her beautiful waist was a graceful golden coloured fish tail.

When Yue Yang saw this beast, he almost drooled.

A Mermaid!

The beast that the little loli had summoned this time was a mermaid with a golden tail and a snow white body!

Could it be that she wanted to use this mermaid, who appeared to have no battle power at all, to defeat those two powerful monsters, the Flame Lord and Bone Dragon?

How, how could such a thing be possible?

Not only Yue Yang, even the two Demon Generals couldn't believe it too. Most mermaids are special-type summons to support battles, they almost have no battle power at all. If it was a mermaid warrior that wielded a Neptune's Halberd, it could still probably

pass the qualification as an opponent, but this mermaid was obviously not the battle-type...

“Hahaha!” The two Demon General started to laugh out loud in order to cover up their blunder just now, shocking Xiao Wen Li.

“Hu..hu...”

But when the Silver-ranked level 7 Flame Lord saw the mermaid appears, he immediately turned around and started to run away.

Even the Bone Dragon in the sky looked a little bit panicked. It didn't dare to fly high up in the sky, but fell down to the ground and used its wings to cover its body that was full of battered bones.

Ah? That's not right. What had actually happened?

Xiao Wen Li pointed with her snow white fingers, and the graceful, golden mermaid immediately nodded. A snow white conch shell with red stripes appeared out of nowhere, and the mermaid put it close to her mouth, blowing into it. In that moment, countless grey clouds appeared on the Battlefield of Death. The clouds then turned darker, and a violent wind that appeared out of nowhere started to wreck the whole of Battlefield of Death to shreds, like a Demon Claw.

Rumbling...

The sound of thunder suddenly exploded in the clouds and

numerous hurricanes that looked like giant dragons appeared, absorbing the water in the clouds.

The whole of Battlefield of Death turned into storms and whirlpools. Gales, rainstorm, thunder, lightning... Yue Yang stared dumbstruck. Isn't this overkill?

It was really unbelievable. A mermaid without a single piece of armour on her body could summon a storm just like that. With a single conch shell, she had turned the whole Battlefield of Death into the eye of a storm.

A strand of thought flashed through Yue Yang's mind. Right, Xiao Wen Li had four different Guardian Spirit Beast. One was the Stone Element Medusa, and the other was this Storm Mermaid. He didn't quite pay attention to it before, but he never thought that the Storm Mermaid could summon such a terrifying storm. No wonder Xiao Wen Li had looked down upon the Silver-ranked level 7 Flame Lord. No matter how powerful the Flame Lord was, when he met the Storm Mermaid, it was fated to be an instant defeat.

Countless drops of water rained down on the Flame Lord's body. At first, the Flame Lord could still resist it tenaciously, evaporating the water falling on him. It turned into a large amount of steam and slowly rose up.

But after suffering a few lightning strikes on its body, the Flame Lord couldn't take it anymore. It finally turned into lava and flowed away.

Stuck in the middle of the gale that pounded rainwater on its body from above and the rainwater that had turned into violent waves on the ground, the Flame Lord struggled painfully, but its struggles were almost useless.

Water extinguishes fire.

The Flame Lord who was originally aggressive and extremely arrogant, in the middle of the violent waves of rainwater, had turned into an extremely miserable existence...The whole of its big body started to solidify into stone slowly. However, after it's hot molten and lava body hardened, another lightning struck down on it, shattering half of its head. Black rocks flew in all directions, exposing the large amount of magma inside its body.

Following another conch whistle, another huge wave of rain suddenly appeared.

At the moment before its death, the Flame Lord made a weird action. It tried to reach inside his body from the opening on its head with its already hardened, giant hand, and took out a brightly flaming, red-coloured ball. It then threw it on the ground.

In the next moment, its giant body shattered in the storm, collapsing down to the ground with a loud rumble. Its disintegrated body quickly become pieces of black rocks and ashes.

In a blink of an eye, it was blown away, dispersed by the violent storm.

“There’s a treasure!” Seeing how the Flame Lord threw out that red-coloured thing right before its death, Yue Yang’s shrewd eyes immediately thought that it was its most precious treasure. He couldn’t help but be extremely elated as he prepared to rush out into the storm, pick up the treasure and rush back into his shield. However, turned out somebody else was much faster than him. It was the Gold Beast that had turned into a bracelet on his wrist. It had turned back to its original appearance, slipped away and flew towards the red-coloured thing. Seems like it was prepared to steal the treasure away from Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was furious. With a kick from his foot, he sent the Gold Beast flying to nine clouds and above.

As a summoned beast, he already forgave it for not helping its master at all, but it actually dared to vie for its master’s treasure? Such a bad habit, did it learn it from Hui Tai Lang?

The Demon Generals standing on the sides immediately fainted after receiving a lightning strike. Their bodies were blown by the storm all over the place. On the other hand, the Bone Dragon wasn’t that weak. Even after enduring through countless lightning strikes, other than a little black spot on its head and a few shattered bones, its body was still fully intact.

The Bone Dragon wasn’t a beast with a fire attribute. It also had a body made of bones. A storm and a gale wouldn’t do that much damage to its body.

It was only enduring through those lightning strikes that made it painful for the Bone Dragon to bear.

Luckily, what the Storm Mermaid had summoned was a storm, not lightning...Yue Yang reckoned that if Xiao Wen Li didn't summon the Storm Mermaid but summoned the Thunderbolt Naga instead, this Bone Dragon would probably not be able to take its attacks.

Yue Yang's agile hands quickly picked up the red-coloured ball that the Flame Lord threw out right before its death. However, before he could inspect it using his Divine Vision, he suddenly saw the Gold Beast, who had a fetish towards treasures and Demon Crystals, throw itself on top of the Bone Dragon's forehead. Ignoring the Bone Dragon's struggle to resist, it started to take big chomps on the Bone Dragon's impregnable bones. Seemed like it still wanted to eat the Bone Dragon's Demonic Dragon Crystal.

“My Dragon Crystal~” Yue Yang became extremely anxious. This prodigal brat, it was even worse than Hui Tai Lang a thousand times, no, ten thousand times.

It refused to eat other things and insisted on eating a Dragon Crystal instead.

This Dragon Crystal, something that other people could only dream but not hope for, was now going to be nibbled raw like a crispy cucumber salad by this prodigal Gold Beast...

# Chapter 80 – Imperial Sister Swordsman

---

With its head bitten, the Bone Dragon flailed its claws wildly. It kept trying to fly and then bang its head onto the ground repeatedly.

The little Gold Beast was crushed by the Bone Dragon's immense power until it became deformed. But it quickly recovered to its original state, completely unaffected by the attack. On the contrary, it stuck like a maggot on the head of the Bone Dragon, biting huge chunks off the Bone Dragon's skull. Squeezing into the hole it made on the Bone Dragon's skull with its little figure, it then absorbed the demonified dragon crystal's energy inside at a mad pace.

The Bone Dragon wobbled as if it was drunk on alcohol.

When it flew up, it kept falling back down halfway in midair.

It was also swaying from side to side as it walked.

It was unable to use its claws to catch the Gold Beast. On the contrary, its struggles allowed the Gold Beast to absorb even more energy.

Yue Yang had rushed there, but was unable to get close to it.

The Bone Dragon suddenly seemed to lose all its support, and its whole body that was made up of bones suddenly loosened up. Its

spine fractured and broke, its wings disappeared with a puff of black smoke, its leg bones were broken into pieces, and the nails on its claws also fell onto the ground. Finally, only one large dragon skull was left, and it fell onto the ground with a thud. When Yue Yang was just about to stretch his hand to pull the Gold Beast out of there, the Bone Dragon's head exploded unexpectedly... A black ball of light shot towards Yue Yang like a comet. When Yue Yang wanted to use his Innate Sword Qi to destroy it, he found that the black ball suddenly turned, and flew straight into the red-coloured item in his hand like a comet.

With plumes of black smoke rising, that strange red-coloured item gradually turned violet-black and slowly changed in shape.

As Yue Yang observed it, the red item that looked a little like a full moon at first had morphed into a badly damaged crescent-shaped blade. At the place where the crescent-shaped blade was badly damaged, there was an additional little purple ball fitted in.

(Shiro: this part is a bit confusing, so let me explain a bit. There was a black ball shooting out from the Bone dragon's head, that was its dragon's crystal. It fused with the Flame Lord's molten core (red-coloured item) in Yue Yang's hands. They turned into a small, broken crescent blade.)

The broken portion of the other blade had then grown a bony end densely packed with magical qi.

On top of it, there was also a black ball shaped like a skull embedded at the hilt of the crescent blade.



The new broken Crescent Blade was covered with purple ink and had mysterious, complex veins running across it. Around the two balls embedded on the blade, there also seemed to be the strange existence of blood vessels. This caused Yue Yang to misunderstand; he thought that the broken crescent blade had life and used his Divine Vision to analyse it. Yue Yang found out that the purple flame ball that had the greatest energy was the Flame Lord's inner core. In order to protect the inner core from being destroyed, it chose to attach itself onto the newly remodelled crescent blade.

The other smaller skull-shaped black ball was a part of the Bone Dragon's inner demonified dragon crystal inside its head.

In order to survive, the Bone Dragon had also chosen to be attached onto the broken crescent blade, completely giving up on its original Bone Dragon body.

In reality, if the Bone Dragon did not escape quickly, it would probably take less than a minute for the Gold Beast to suck all its energy dry. Like a glutton, the Gold Beast stared at the broken crescent blades in Yue Yang's hands while drooling.

Yue Yang kicked it flying.

Now that this broken crescent blade had fused with the Flame Lord's inner Molten Core and the Bone Dragon's Demon Dragon's Crystal, it had completely turned into a magic blade that 'possessed life'. This was because the Flame Lord's inner Molten Core and the Bone Dragon's Demon Dragon's Crystal had suffered a grave

injury, and they needed a great amount of energy to recover. Yue Yang reckoned that the more energy they absorbed, the higher the quality of the Magic Blade would be. Even now, this broken crescent blade had already made demonic soldiers evolved and be promoted to silver-ranked. Yue Yang thought that if the Flame Lord's inner Molten Core and the Bone Dragon's Demon Dragon's Crystal had absorbed enough energy and recovered to their initial condition, or if another strong monster's core was added to this blade, then wouldn't this gold-ranked Hui Jin Magic Blade's quality rise even more?

Although the magic blade's quality that had undergone a change after the fusion only differed by a single rank, it was more than ten times stronger than Yue Yang's.

Testing the sharp magic blades lightly, the back of Yue Yang's 'egg blades' which was originally extremely solid was easily cut into pieces like a hot knife going through butter. Through this comparison, Yue Yang could see the true power of this magic blade. It was essentially like the [Heaven Sword and Dragon Saber](#) of another world!

“Although the quality of this item is still quite low, it's still a war prize that's undergone a variation change. I'll use this as my weapon for the moment.”

After three seconds of deliberation, Yue Yang gave the name 'Hui Jin' to this magic blade. It could not be denied that Yue Yang was inclined towards cracking jokes.

(Shiro: I think his joke is Hui – bone ashes, Jin – embers)

This magic blade Hui Jin was much smaller than the original egg blades. Although the broken parts were restored, it was still smaller than the original by about a third or so. If Yue Yang bought a buckled metal belt, he could hang Hui Jin by his waist. However, the leftover egg blade was out of the question. Its blade was too huge, and far too long. It could only be carried on his back.

After defeating the strong enemies, his Intermediate-ranked bronze grimoire rose in grade again.

There would most probably be nobody like Yue Yang in the entire Soaring Dragon Continent who could increase the rank of his summoning grimoire in a single huge battle...

However, after the summoning grimoire rose in rank, the blank pages that Yue Yang desired did not appear.

Yue Yang had heard Yi Nan reveal this secret before. When some people's grimoire rose in rank, they would receive a blank page where they could store items. Everyone's Spiritual Energy was different, and the amount of items they could store differed as well. Normally, it would not be more than five kinds of items, and the capacity of the page was quite small. It was only appropriate for using it to store some small precious items.

Yue Yang had drooled a lot for the blank pages that could store items, but he could not get them at all.

It had to be known that there were Dimensional Storage Rings in

Soaring Dragon Continent. But those were [Sage]-level treasures. They were so rare that even the Da Xia Empire's emperor would be incapable of ever hoping to get one.

The blank storage page did not appear. But, the Ancient Code granted Yue Yang's Guardian Beast 'Phantom Shadow' its second special ability, [Reconstruction].

[Reconstruction]: After taking a certain beast's body as its new body, it can absorb the body and energy of the same type of beasts to reconstruct its body. The target must be alive. The success rate is linked to the target's power and will.

For the time being, Yue Yang was unable to make heads or tails out of the use of [Reconstruction]. Was it only an ability that could alter the body's appearance?

The Barbaric Cow Shadow was only used for raw battle, and did not need to look pretty. It seemed to be of little value to reconstruct her body.

Of course, Yue Yang did not have any objections if the Barbaric Cow Shadow could be prettier.

The two unconscious Demon Generals, Demon Worm and Demon Wings, were both swallowed into the stomach of the Golden Thorny Flower, becoming rich, nutritious fertilisers for it. Yue Yang reckoned that even if the Golden Thorny Flower did not finish digesting Demon Lord Ha Xin's arm, it would successfully levelled up and become a Thorny Flower Demoness within three

days. With four Level 5 and above Demon Generals as fertilisers, it would be hard for the Thorny Flower not to undergo a variant evolution even if it did not want to... The only thing Yue Yang could not imagine was how the Thorny Flower Demoness which took on human form would grow to be like. It couldn't be as ugly as the Barbaric Cow Shadow, right?

Xiao Wen Li still stuck to her old routine. She turned into rainbows, and floated into Yue Yang's body to rest.

However, the Gold Beast did not. When it realised that Yue Yang would not let it bite the Hui Jin no matter what, it turned back into a wrist guard again.

Perhaps it was due to absorbing the Demonified Crystal's energy from the Bone Dragon or something else, but the Gold Beast underwent a huge improvement in abilities this time. Before this, when the Gold Beast turned into a wrist guard, it looked exquisite and was brimming with energy. It was possible to discern that it was not something ordinary with a single look. Now, the wristguard it had turned into was completely ordinary, similar to normal mercenaries' wristguards. If Yue Yang did not see this with his own eyes, even he would not dare to believe that it was the Gold Beast.

Yue Yang opened a teleportation scroll and returned to the Warriors' Guild while hugging onto the little Hydra.

As he had went through a huge battle and drenched by a rainstorm, Yue Yang was \*\* from head to toe (TL: censored in raws). Additionally, he was holding onto the little Hydra which

was larger than a calf. The scene looked extremely unpleasant.

Some mercenaries were curious as to how a kappa-like person had teleported back. But as they looked closer, they cried out while pointing to the little Hydra, asking, “This, this is?”

“A cat.” Yue Yang was the best at lying with his eyes open.

“.....” All the mercenaries that heard it fell onto the ground.

Who would not recognise a Hydra?

If this were a cat, then the Mammoth Elephant was a rat!

Yue Yang did not want to care about these idlers who sat in all day long in front of the Warriors’ Guild drinking beer and chatting. He held the little Hydra and ran at a breakneck speed. He rushed towards a warriors’ inn in the Auction House and directly looked for the captain of the Storm Mercenary Group, prepared to initiate the exchange between him and the other party using the little Hydra.

The captain of the Storm Mercenary Group was a 25 or 26 year old male. According to the adolescence period of Soaring Dragon Continent’s people and their slightly longer lifespans, he was still counted as a young lad who had just matured. He was very similar to the young adults on Earth aged around 17 or 18. In fact, if a guy on the Soaring Dragon Continent married at the age of 30, it was still considered marrying early. Many males from commoner

families would only get married at around 35 or 36 years old, or even at the age of 40. Only girls would marry earlier. This Storm Troop Captain's face was still very young, but he had intentionally grown a full beard to show maturity and heroism. Even his actions and speech were mimicking a 30-40 years old adult. When Yue Yang looked at him, why did he feel that this guy was a little like a child posing as an adult?

Of course, how other people dressed up was unrelated to him. It would be fine as long as he managed to trade for the Fruit of Wisdom and the Lustrous Branch.

“I’m sorry, but I’ve already given the Fruit of Wisdom to someone, so... I can only offer the Lustrous Branch in exchange. If you feel that it’s not suitable, how about three hundred gold coins to make up for it?” This captain named Feng Rui really liked the little Hydra that Yue Yang had brought back, but he felt a little awkward towards the conditions that Yue Yang offered.

“What would I need money for?!” Yue Yang was irritated.

After spending all that effort risking his life to capture the little Hydra, the Fruit of Wisdom was gone.

Actually, Yue Yang was really lacking in money. After purchasing the teleportation scrolls and the beast eggs for Ye Kong and the others, he had already spent all of his previous savings along with the hundred gold reward.

But, in comparison to the Fruit of Wisdom that was worth

thousands of gold, compensating for it with three hundred gold was essentially a huge joke.

Even if he did not have gold, Yue Yang could slowly accumulate it, but the Fruit of Wisdom was difficult to obtain, and would not be possible to be bought with money... If Yue Bing's Treant Warrior had the Fruit of Wisdom and the Lustrous Branch, he believed that its strength would rise by a few times. If the Heart of the Oak Tree was added, then it might even be able to rise in level from Bronze-ranked Level 3 to Bronze-ranked Level 5. Not only that, the most important aspect for beasts was intelligence.

So, this Fruit of Wisdom had to be acquired no matter what.

It had to be one of the conditions for the trade.

“Brother, this Hydra is really ugly, it's better if we don't take it! My classmate bought a Winged Rabbit egg, if it's incubated, the cute little Winged Rabbit after eating the Green Leaf of Life from this Lustrous Branch might evolve, so let's not exchange after all!” A big loli that was not much older from Yue Bing stood behind, attracting the attention of her older brother.

“Hey, don't cause trouble.” When that captain Feng Rui heard her words, black line formed in his forehead. Not exchanging for a Hydra, but to use the Lustrous Branch's leaves to feed a Winged Rabbit with completely no battle ability?

There was a huge, majestic man that was accompanying her at her side. He was probably the Guard Captain of Feng Rui's group.



He tried to persuade Yue Yang, saying, “Friend, we’ve already given the Fruit of Wisdom to someone. No matter what, it’s not going to come back. From what I can see, we shouldn’t give up on the trade. Right now, we don’t have much money to make up for it, but we can still owe you one first. When we get another Fruit of Wisdom next time, we’ll give it to you. Of course, we can give you gold if you want. We can pay you no less than two thousand gold, but this will have to wait until the year ends since we don’t have that much money at the moment. If you are willing, then we can sign an official agreement at the Warriors’ Guild.”

“Who did you give your Fruit of Wisdom to?” After Yue Yang learned that he could not get the Fruit of Wisdom, he started to have the crooked mindset of stealing the treasure from others.

“It was given to me. What are you going to do about it? Do you want it?”

At this point, a royal swordswoman clad entirely in plate armour with a greatsword behind her back that was clanking resoundingly with her armour appeared. As she appeared, that huge man immediately shrunk towards the corner, becoming a little cat.

Captain Feng Rui, who was acting like an adult, had also become so terrified to the point that he was choking, not daring to make a single sound.

Yue Yang did not understand. Who in the world was this woman? How could she be full of airs? Could it be that she was a

princess from the royal family?

# Chapter 81 – Six Records Inherent Skill

---

The Royal Swordswoman and Yue Yang stared at each other. Both of them couldn't help but shouted "Ah?" together and at the same time, an incomparably shocked expression coloured their faces.

Yue Yang was shocked because he had never seen anyone in the Soaring Dragon Continent who focused on cultivating their physical skills like him. The first person he met was this short Royal Swordswoman.

In Soaring Dragon Continent, physical skills were lowest of the low. Other than mercenaries who did hard labour, no one else cultivated their physical skills.

Amongst his clan's people, other than the pitiful guy who couldn't make a contract with a summoning grimoire, Yue Yang had never seen anyone from the clan who was willing to cultivate their physical skills. This girl, how could she focus on cultivating her physical skills and gave up on her summoning skills?

This Royal Swordswoman had a pair of sharp and brave eyes that were pitch black like lacquer. With her bright eyes full of expressions, it would seem like her gaze was penetrating into the other person's soul when she looked into their eyes. She had a weirdly tall build. She was a girl, but she was taller than most men by a head, taller than men with Yue Yang's height. However, although she was covered with heavy armour from head to toe, her beautiful waist could not be hidden. If one could peel off that heavy armour from her body, what kind of perfect, untarnished,

lovable body would be hidden inside.... When she used those long pair of legs of hers to walk, she looked graceful beyond compare; agile like a dancer, like a red-crowned crane flying in the snow.

Yue Yang didn't doubt the possibility that the Luo Hua City Mistress could defeat the Royal Swordswoman if she summoned a beast to attack her in a long distance fight.

However, it would be a different case in a short distance fight.

This Royal Swordswoman gave Yue Yang the feeling that even Feng Qi Sha, who had a reputation of being unbeatable in close combat, would not be her opponent in close combat. Yue Yang was able to deduce this from her loftiness, the way she walked, breathed, etc. This Royal Swordswoman, was purely a warrior who used physical skills.

Yue Yang wondered what materials the mysterious black giant sword on her back was made out of.

With his level 2 Divine Vision, Yue Yang still could not see through its level and quality. Hence, it could be seen that this sword was at least a gold-ranked treasure.

Yue Yang could use his Divine Vision to faintly see the special characteristics of this girl's body and the unknown beasts that she had kept hidden in her body. They were all suited to cultivate physical skills...Most importantly, this girl's physical skills were at a very high level, it could even be higher than the Yue Clan's Spear Technique. But Yue Yang had never seen any physical skills that

were better than the Yue Clan's Spear Technique, so he couldn't deduce what kind of physical skills she had cultivated.

The gaze that the Royal Swordswoman used to look at Yue Yang was also filled with astonishment.

She knew. She knew that Yue Yang was an especially weird guy.

Although there were all types of people in this world, and nothing was too bizarre, she had also never seen anyone who focused on cultivating their physical skills like she did.

The thing that made the Royal Swordswoman even more surprised was that the threat that she was feeling from this guy in front of her was the first time she had ever felt from people of her age. If she didn't have the 'Six Records Inherent Skill', she would have been fooled by this guy who looked like a thief on the surface.

After a closer observation, to her surprise, he was carrying a Hydra that had not been contracted, and was going to exchange it with Feng Rui.

She became even more astonished. Where did he get this little Hydra?

"Yes, yes. The Wisdom Fruit belongs to big sister Qian Qian." Feng Rui's tone was like a bullied daughter-in-law, he almost wept.

"I wasn't trying to snatch what's yours. You owed me one

Wisdom Fruit last time, can't I want it back now?" The Royal Swordswoman raised her eyebrows, her brave eyes shooting daggers at Feng Rui. This time, Feng Rui was so intimidated that he acted like a little kitten shrinking in a corner, not daring to even squeak again.

"..." Yue Yang felt that this girl was not a simple person. If she could turn one of the Feng Clan's member into a little kitten, she was definitely not an ordinary person.

"What's your name?" The Royal Swordswoman didn't pay attention to Feng Rui but instead turned to ask Yue Yang.

"Titan." When Yue Yang lied, he neither turn red nor blink his eyes, as if his name was truly Titan since birth.

"Eh, that's not right. Tell me the truth... Forget it, that's not important...What do you need the Wisdom Fruit for?" The Royal Swordswoman had her strong skill, the Six Records, hence her senses were ten times sharper than a normal person's. She was able to discern that Yue Yang was not telling the truth.

"Of course I'm going to eat the Wisdom Fruit. It adds to my intelligence, right?" Yue Yang was secretly shocked, could it be that this girl had a powerful ability? No wonder Feng Rui and the others were like quails in front of her, not daring to even speak. Turned out she had the ability to see through lies. He had really met a worthy opponent this time. He was an expert in lying to others. If he could be seen through by her, then he couldn't even lie anymore. There were indeed a lot of extraordinary people in the Soaring Dragon Continent. There were really all kinds of Inherent

Skills, even a skill to differentiate lies such as this one.

“Nonsense. I think you are really an idiot, you can’t even lie.” The Royal Swordswoman glared with her heroic, big eyes again, her gaze sharp as sword as she stared intently at Yue Yang. “Wisdom Fruit could only be fed to beasts. If an ordinary warrior eats it, he would become stupid like a beast. Don’t you even know that? Or are you just saying nonsense on purpose?”

“Wisdom Fruit could only be fed to beasts?” Yue Yang was shocked. He had heard of Wisdom Fruit before, but he didn’t know that human could not eat it.

“Don’t tell me you trained your physical skills too much that your brain has turned into muscle?” Seeing that this brat was actually telling the truth, the Royal Swordswoman was really worried about his basic knowledge in her heart.

He didn’t even know such a basic knowledge, what kind of environment did he grow up in?

Seemed like this brat had been too engrossed in training that he didn’t pay attention to learn about beasts at all. That might be why he didn’t even know about this kind of basic knowledge that even eight years old kid would know. But the weird thing was, he was able to train his physical skills to such an extent. In her generation, there were only a few people who could do that in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent.

This brat, he felt even more dangerous compared to Feng Qi Sha.

A person like him could not possibly come from an ordinary family.

But if he was born into one of the four Great Clans, how could he not understand things that even a fool would understand?

The Royal Swordswoman felt that she was at a loss. This brat in front of her was simply too confusing, he was completely unlike a normal person. His abilities were formidable but his basic knowledge was like a fool's.

“I can give you my Wisdom Fruit, but you must help me do a favour.” The Royal Swordswoman then glared at Feng Tuo, “What are you waiting for? Why aren't you taking out the Lustrous Branch of Life? I have seen fools before, but I have never seen a fool like you. The Wisdom Fruit and Lustrous Branch of Life were auctioned together. Has your brain turned into mush? And why are you still not taking off that fake, hideous looking beard pasted on your face? Don't you know that not only do you look horrible with that, you even looked more like a fool? Fortunately you are my brother-in-law. If you were my fiance, I would have chopped you with my sword!”

“Don't be angry.... Won't the matter be resolved if I give it to you?” Feng Rui took off the fake beard on his face in a fluster, then quickly took out an embroidered box from his clothes.

The Royal Swordswoman took it as fast as lightning and glared at him once more, “You should reflect on yourself again. You are already an adult yet you have no decency at all. You are even still playing with these kids, setting up that Storm Mercenary Troop. I



think you have been eating far more than what you are worth,”

The big loli hiding behind the door adorably stretched out her head and whispered, “Big sister Qian Qian, we established the Storm Mercenary to prove our worth...”

However, when the Royal Swordswoman turned around and glared at her, she quickly hid back behind the door like a little kitten.

Yue Yang was dumbstruck.

Awesome. She was indeed an unbeatable swordswoman.

Yue Yang had not even had enough time to react when the Royal Swordswoman suddenly glared at him with her sharp eyes, “Why are you standing there like a fool? Put down the little Hydra and follow me.”

Yue Yang secretly wept in his heart. Why is this girl even taking control of him now?

“Where are we going?” Yue Yang was fully aware that the place this girl was taking him to could not be a good place, but the Wisdom Fruit and the Lustrous Branch of Life were right in her hands.

“You are really a weird person. I have some questions to ask you. Don’t worry, after I finished asking my questions I will give you

the Wisdom Fruit and the Lustrous Branch of Life.” The Royal Swordswoman dropped her words and immediately went out of the door, the giant sword on her back clanging with her armour as she walked.

“Can you first give me the Lustrous Branch of Life? If I had that thing in my hands, my heart would be more at peace, and I could answer your questions even more smoothly.” Yue Yang hurriedly tried to catch up.

He thought that as long as he could get the Lustrous Branch of Life, he could immediately run away.

And leave this scary swordswoman far, far away.

He could think about the Wisdom Fruit next time. Otherwise, being interrogated by her...she might even guess his previous world.

It would be fine if she was an ordinary person, but alas, she was a swordswoman oneechan who could discern the truth from the lies. Then it would be easy for her to expose his secrets.

Before Yue yang could even finish his words, he suddenly saw the Royal Swordswoman who was standing not even three inches in front of him turn around and use those pitch black, ferocious tiger-like eyes to stare at him intently. Yue Yang couldn't help but flinch in alarm. This Royal Swordswoman was really scary. She was his nemesis for having the ability to discern the truth from lies. If he couldn't lie, or if he would be seen through every time he lied, he

would lead a really miserable life.

The Royal Swordswoman only replied with a sentence in a huff, “Liar. You, you have never said a truthful word since we’ve met. Do you think I won’t be able to know it? If you intend to run away, I won’t give the Lustrous Branch of Life and the Wisdom Fruit to you. I would only give it if you answer my question honestly.”

“Yes, I guarantee that I would be even more honest than the coffin seller in the Black Stone City who always sell their coffins at 80% off and even offers buy one get one free” Yue Yang felt beads of sweat forming on his forehead.

“You lied again. There has never been such a person in the Black Stone City.” The Royal Swordswoman suddenly laughed. Her laughter was as fresh as the spring blossoms and morning sun.

“How do you know?” Yue Yang was bewildered. Could it be that he really couldn’t say a single lie in front of this girl?

“Because there are no coffin seller at all in the Black Stone City. They don’t have a custom of burying the dead, they were cremated instead.” The Royal Swordswoman said with a certain tone. “But I see that whenever you speak, although none of them was true, your words are a bit teasing. Do you usually use these words to tease girls? Forget it, all these were unimportant. I only wanted to know, what family are you from?”

“I am not from any clans, I am just a peasant. All eighteen generations of my family are farmers to the core. We had always

been commoners, none of us has ever become an official.” Yue Yang then gave an example, “ Don’t you see how haggard I look? You could see from this that I didn’t have enough to eat and lead an arduous life, lacking in food and meat. You should also see my coarse hands, this shows the hard work I did everyday tilling the ground. In order to feed myself, I was always constantly working, from sunrise to sunset, even when I got drenched from the rain... If you don’t believe me, I could even compose a poem to proof myself. Listen well, [‘Farmers weeding at noon, sweat down the field soon, who knows food on a tray, thanks to their toiling day?’](#) You say, if I weren’t a farmer, how would I be able to understand the laborious hardships of the farmers?”

The Royal Swordswoman quietly listened and couldn’t help but frown.

Yue Yang was doing this on purpose. He spoke a bunch of nonsense and even recited a poem, the purpose was to disrupt this girl’s ability to discern the truth.

If she was attracted to that poem, then her concentration would be dispersed. As long as he held her interest, he believed he could sway her easily later on.

Just when Yue Yang was pleased with himself secretly, the Royal Swordswoman suddenly said this, “That’s unexpected. I thought you were a spoilt brat from one of the Great Families. I didn’t know that you still knew that there are such a thing called farmers in this world. This poem, did you plagiarize it from someone? It was quite a good poem, but you recited it without feeling, you couldn’t even understand those pitiful farmers. Amongst the

members from the great families, there are almost no one that I didn't know. But why haven't I seen you before? You couldn't be from the smaller clans, because they wouldn't have a good physical skill, and they would definitely not have the ability to raise you to such a level...So what's your name actually?

"Titan." Yue Yang definitely would not tell her his real name.

It was definitely not a good thing to be associated with this girl, he should keep her at a distance.

If not for her having a physical ability and the difficulty of success trying to snatch the items from her, Yue Yang would have tried to snatch the embroidered box containing the Lustrous Branch of Life a long time ago, and quickly disappeared into the night.

Yue Yang pondered in his mind on the ways to snatch the embroidered box, but the Royal Swordswoman seemed to be able to guess his thoughts and immediately held the embroidered box tightly in her arms.

Yue Yang prepared to find a place with no people and kill the girl...Suddenly, a girl came running out from the Warrior's Guild and hugged Yue Yang's arms affectionately, shouting excitedly, "It was really you, Xiao San! Did you come to Tong Tian Tower too?" Yue Yang's mind exploded for a little while when he heard that. He's doomed, he totally did not recognise who this girl was!

From her tone and demeanour, it looked like she was very close

with the pitiful guy.

Could it be that she was the missy from the Xue Family who turned their engagement down? Or was she the pitiful guy's hidden lover? But the pitiful guy didn't write anything about this girl in his diary...

This, who is this girl actually?!

## Chapter 82 – Handsome 100,000 Times Over

---

The royal swordswoman did not expect this as well. Looking at the girl that was embracing Yue Yang, she asked, “Sister Yu, do you know him?”

That girl had a delicate appearance that was radiating brilliance. With bright eyes and white teeth, she reached her petite little hand out, and stroked Yue Yang’s head with affection. An incomparably joyous expression was displayed on her face as she answered, “Qian Qian, this is our family’s Xiao San! Normally, he’s cooped up in his house and never walks out of the door. I didn’t think that I’d be able to meet him today... Xiao San, this is Princess Qian Qian.”

Her manner of speaking was delicate and fine. When the gentle, good-natured girl introduced her like this, Yue Yang instantly realised the truth.

It was not some secret lover after all.

This gentle woman was his older cousin Yue Yu. (TL note: 堂姐, cousin from father’s side)

Luckily, she had called out to Yue Yang. Otherwise, the inter-dimensional traveller would have definitely been unable to recognise her. He might have even ended up revealing a flaw in his identity.

Hearing that she was his cousin, Yue Yang heaved a sigh of relief. What he was most afraid of was that she was the tragic guy’s secret

lover, the kind that pledged eternal love to each other under the moonlight. If he did not recognise her, then it would all definitely be over. As for this royal swordswoman, Yue Yang felt that it was a really close shave too.

At least, the right to initiate the talk was still within his control. It wouldn't be easy if she wanted to uncover his secret by talking to him.

He would have to be more careful right now, since he met this cousin instead.

He can not afford to make a mistake when talking about his clan.

“Princess Qian Qian?” When Yue Yang heard Yue Yu's introduction, he understood that his previous self didn't know the royal swordswoman. His heart became a little calmer. Luckily she was not the Xue Family's daughter, otherwise he wouldn't have been able to explain it at all. So, turns out this royal swordswoman was a royal princess. He wondered if she was a princess from Da Xia, Tian Luo or Zi Jin, these three great Kingdoms.

“You don't know Princess Qian qian?” This time, even his cousin Yue Yu was astonished. Amongst the younger generations in this world, was there even anyone who wouldn't recognise Princess Qian Qian? He was indeed the NEET Third Master of the Yue Clan who never stepped out of his house...

“So you are the Yue Clan's tras... Third Master?”



The royal swordswoman who looked towards Yue Yang with doubt previously immediately looked at him like she had finally solved a complicated puzzle when she heard Yue Yu's introduction.

No wonder this brat was regarded as trash by his clan members and other people. It would be weird if someone like him who cultivated physical skills like her instead of focusing on cultivating his summoning skills would not be called trash by others. His knowledge on summon beasts was practically the worst of the worst. He didn't even know that Wisdom Fruit could only be fed to beasts and that humans would become a fool if they ate it. No wonder his clan elders were so disappointed with him, and regarded him as trash... However, was this brat really trash? According to the feeling she got from her Six Records Inherent Skill, this brat's hidden powers could even be above hers. If he could be matched with an outstanding beast, he would definitely be able to climb up towards the top realm of Rankers.

Thinking about it again, it actually made sense.

His father, Yue Qiu became a level 7 [Overlord] before he was forty. He was already near the Innate realm. How could his son be a trash?

This Yue Clan's Third Master must have someone supporting him behind the scene, similar to her, who was taught by a talented master. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to have such a shocking amount of power. She reckoned that his low-keyed behaviour was something his master purposely wanted him to do. The royal swordswoman looked at the Crescent Blades on Yue Yang's back and the Hui Jin on his waist, and she became even more sure of her

theory.

Although she thought that this brat must have many more secrets hidden than this, the royal swordswoman didn't intend to investigate it further.

She knew that the strong Rankers often had weird customs, just like her master, who had prohibited her from showing her summons to others, not even to her royal father... If that wasn't the case, then why would this Third Master hide inside his house, refusing to go outside for all these years? If it wasn't for establishing a low-key profile, why would he be willing to be called trash by others, instead of showcasing his strength to the world?

“I am Jun Yuan, that fellow's the worry-free monarch's eighteenth daughter. I don't like other people calling me princess, so my friends usually call me by my nickname, Qian Qian. As for you, your situation is a little bit special. You have a glib tongue; I will consider allowing you to call me Qian Qian when you start speaking the truth.”

When the royal swordswoman finished speaking, she turned towards Yue Yu again and complained, “Big sister Yu, this brother of yours never speaks one word of truth. I'm having a headache just by talking to him.”

Yue Yu hurriedly pacified her using a gentle tone, “Qian Qian, everyone would try to protect their interests. Xiao San is usually a loner who isolates himself at home and has never seen the world. He was probably so afraid of you that he didn't dare to speak the truth. Xiao San, apologize to Princess Qian Qian, she hates people

who lie the most. That's because she will have a headache when she hears a lie. Honesty is important in a friendship and there is no need to hide anything between friends. Furthermore, Princess Qian Qian would probably not try to pry on your secrets if you have one, but if you have not been speaking even one word of truth, that isn't really a good habit."

"Yes, I guarantee I will speak the truth, do good things, and then be a monk. I guarantee I will be as real as a pearl." Yue Yang looked solemn when he said this, but he was secretly leaping with joy in his heart.

Speaking truthfully to that girl?

That's seeking death.

Now that he knew that this girl couldn't listen to lies, that was good news for him. He would speak only lies in the future to make this girl's head explode with pain.

In the future, she would have headache the moment she saw him... if that was the case, he would be safe.

Yue Yang, who was thinking of evil doings, felt like he had gained a high ground in their battle as he finally knew the royal swordswoman's weakness after suffering through great difficulties.

"Let's test it out right now. Where did you get your Crescent

Blades?” Hearing that everything that this brat had said were all lies, the royal swordswoman was sweating profusely in her heart. But she still decided to give him the chance to speak the truth.

“I picked it up.” Yue Yang neither blinked nor turned red when he lied.

“Where did you pick it up?” the royal swordswoman continued to question Yue Yang.

“At my front door.” Yue Yang replied.

“The physical skills that you cultivated, is it your Yue Clan’s Spear Technique or other sect’s?” The royal swordswoman almost banged her head to the floor. How the heck would you be able to pick up a Demon General’s weapon at your front door? But she couldn’t do anything with this shameless brat, so she could only change her question.

“I cultivated the Beheading Iron Technique.” Yue Yang replied and immediately, the royal swordswoman and Yue Yu fell to the ground at the same time.

Beheading Iron Technique was a tedious skill that not even the lowest of mercenaries would learn. If there was a ranking for the worst physical skill technique in this world, the Beheading Iron Technique would undoubtedly clinch the first place.

The royal swordswoman slowly paused and asked again, “Where

did you get your little Hydra?”

Yue Yang put on a ‘my-name-is-old-honest-zhang’ look and replied in an extremely serious tone, “I stole it.”

The royal swordswoman didn’t give Yue Yang the chance to think and continued to shoot him questions, “Who do you steal it from?”

Who knew that Yue Yang did not need to think to lie. He opened his mouth immediately and replied: “[Sikong Zaixing](#).”

Yue Yu thought that it was a lie at first. But when she heard that the name had a surname, she started to think that what he said was real. She couldn’t help but be shocked, “Xiao San, how could you steal other people’s property? Furthermore, it was such a good beast like Hydra. Quickly give it back to the person you stole it from!”

The royal swordswoman was struck speechless in her heart. Not even questioning the existence of this Sikong Zaixing, how could you even steal a hydra?

But she was quite amazed at the Yue Clan’s Third Master’s ability to lie without blinking.

This brat was born to be a Liar King, he didn’t feel any guilt even after lying that much.

“Do you think you are handsome or ugly?” The royal swordswoman now prepared to use facts to prove his lies. As long as he replied, she would be able to expose him.

“I actually think I look ordinary. But I think I’m a little bit more handsome than Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang.” Yue Yang was extremely humble.

“How much is a little?” the royal swordswoman asked.

“A little more is 99,999 times better.” When Yue Yang replied, Yue Yu, who got a headache hearing his words dropped to the ground again.

“Why not 100,000 times?” The royal swordswoman was curious.

“If they are disfigured, then it would be 100,000 times.” With Yue Yang’s reply, the royal swordswoman also had a headache that made her want to bang her head to the ground loudly.

“So what you meant was that compared to you, they are not any different than disfigured people?” Looking at this brat’s face that looked extremely honorable, the royal swordswoman sighed heavily in her heart. What a shameless person...

“How could you say that, Yan Po Jun and the others are much more handsome than disfigured people.” Yue Yang shook his head, showing his disagreement.

“...” The royal swordswoman was totally speechless when she heard that.

Seeing Yue Yang’s smirking face that had a smile as brilliant as a sun, she suddenly felt an urge to send him flying with a punch.

She had met shameless people before, but she had never seen someone as shameless as this brat.

How could there be a person in this world that had never even spoken a word of truth? If low-keyed was his master’s orders, then shamelessness must be his original personality. It couldn’t possibly have come from his master’s teachings.

Yue Yu knew that if this went on, even if they asked a million questions, they wouldn’t get a word of truth. This naughty little brother was teasing Princess Qian Qian on purpose.

She quickly did the honorable thing and asked, “Xiao San, do you have a group to go to Tong Tian Tower? If you don’t, you can join ours,”

Her words made Yue Yang jump with shock. Joining Yue Yu’s party, if she somehow asked about their clan’s matters, what would he do?

Furthermore, with the royal swordswoman who can tell lies at his side, he must be careful with the words he said. Such a way of living was simply too miserable. It was much better if he stuck

with Ye Kong, Fatty and the others and trained together. Furthermore, there was also that Yi Nan whom he could take liberties on. His happy life had just started. When he thought about this, Yue Yang hurriedly shook his head, “Fourth Mother wanted me to come here to search for Sister Yue Bing, and now I plan on taking her home...This Princess Qian Qian here is a violent robber, she snatched my Wisdom Fruit and Lustrous Branch of Life. Those were presents that I planned to give to Yue Bing,”

“After listening to your bullshit for so long, I finally heard truthful words. Although some of them were still lies, that was hard to come by.” The royal swordswoman immediately sighed happily as if a bright sky had cleared the previously dark clouds hanging over her head. She patted Yue Yang’s back, “I didn’t know that you, a shameless brat, can be such a good brother.”

“A good brother would have an embroidered box that contained the Lustrous Branch of Life and a Wisdom Fruit in his hands,” Yue Yang reminded her that she had snatched his treasures. If she didn’t quickly give it to him, he would start to kill for the treasure.

“I can give you the Lustrous Branch of Life, since you have finally said something truthful.” the royal swordswoman gave the embroidered box that was still warm from her body heat and fragrant from her virgin scent to Yue Yang.

“What about the Wisdom Fruit?” Yue Yang shoved his hand out, continuing to demand for his treasure.



## Chapter 83 – A Beggar With A Crystal Card

---

“I will give you the Wisdom Fruit only if you speak your first truthful words to me...” The Royal Swordswoman’s words made Yue Yang really frustrated. If Yue Yu was not here, he would have used the magic blade Hui Jin to kill her.

“Xiao San, there’s no more Wisdom Fruit. Princess Qian Qian had given it to me to feed it to my Aquarius Celestial Goddess. I wouldn’t have wasted such a precious Wisdom Fruit if I had known that the Seventh Sister also wanted it. Don’t worry, I will go to Tong Tian Tower’s third floor with Princess Qian Qian and finish the World Tree’s quest. I will definitely get the Wisdom Fruit for Seventh Sister.” Yue Yu felt really guilty after hearing Yue Yang. She then pulled on Yue Yang’s arms and asked, “Where is Seventh Sister now? Why isn’t she with you?”

“She’s training in the Black Stone Labyrinth. Anyway, forget about the Wisdom Fruit, I will think of another way.” Since the Wisdom Fruit had already been eaten by Yue Yu’s beast, Yue Yang could only give up in the end.

However, the feeling of giving the Wisdom Fruit to his sister, Yue Bing, had become even stronger in his heart.

Since the royal swordswoman had given the Wisdom Fruit to his cousin Yue Yu, who had then given it to her Aquarius Celestial Goddess to eat, he couldn’t get it even if he wanted it back. Seeing that the royal swordswoman was about to use her penetrating eyes to glare at him, as if she wanted to see right through him, Yue Yang immediately thought about how he could quickly get away

from this place.

He did not feel safe at all staying here with this girl, so he wanted to get away as soon as possible.

It would be best if he didn't interact much with his cousin Yue Yu in the meantime, so that she would not be suspicious of the gaps in his story.

“Speaking of that, we are actually short of a thief who can find the way in our group. Why don't you bring Yue Bing along, and we can finish the World Tree's quest together.” The royal swordswoman almost seemed like she had made some sort of decision.

“Your Highness, though receiving the privilege to lead a member of the royal family is this humble commoner's greatest honor, please allow this humble commoner to go to the toilet first.” Yue Yang would never join this dangerous royal swordswoman's group. He immediately fished out another excuse of going to the toilet and quickly ran away without waiting for the royal swordswoman to stop him. Even if there was no Wisdom Fruit, getting this Lustrous Branch of Life was enough. If they could get Yue Bing's Treant Warrior to level up, he could think of a way to bring her along to Tong Tian Tower's second floor; they could even go to the third floor. Since doing the World Tree quest would yield Wisdom Fruit as a reward, there was a way to obtain it. It was not as if there was no other way.

Being in the same group as the royal swordswoman?

It would be better to fight on his own. With her around, he couldn't expose Xiao Wen Li, Barbarian Cow Shadow or Golden Thorny Flower. Since he could only use Hui Tai Lang alone, how would he have any kind of battle power?

However, the Tong Tian Tower's World Tree quest was not that simple.

Yue Yang remembered that the pitiful guy had recorded it in his diary before. The World Tree quest consisted of 36 chain quests, and the last quest required one to climb up to the sixth floor to be completed. In hundreds of years, amongst the Yue Clan members, only the pitiful guy's father, Yue Qiu, was able to complete the quest. It can be said that the World Tree was a chain quest that had a difficulty comparable to the Tong Tian Tower's fifth floor quest, the Twelve Horoscopes and second floor quest, Three World Shrines.

Seems like acquiring the Wisdom Fruit would not be an easy task...

It was no wonder that the Wisdom Fruit was so expensive.

Seeing that Yue Yang was about to go, the royal swordswoman sighed lightly, "Sister Yu, did the elders in your clan really think that your younger brother was trash? Did they get so old that their eyes can't see clearly anymore?"

Yue Yu slowly shook her head, "I don't really know either, seems

like Xiao San has become a different person from the past. In the past he had always been low-profiled and low-keyed, but he has become very confident right now. Furthermore, his face is glowing with vitality. If I didn't meet him in Tong Tian Tower, I wouldn't even believe that he could have such a face. Seems like the reason is because he has successfully contracted a grimoire. He has finally succeeded in contracting a grimoire and clean his reputation of being a useless person, so his personality has changed into a lively one...I don't really understand it, but this is good news. I am happy for him. Seeing him right now, I wouldn't have to worry about him jumping into the river and committing suicide anymore,”

The royal swordswoman raised her brows and thought for quite a while. Then, she asked curiously, “How could a person like him initiate breaking his engagement with the miss from the Xue Family?”

Yue Yu was as clueless as others with regards to this question. With regards to this, Yue Yu also didn't understand it at all. “I don't understand either. The weirdest thing was that he tried to jump into the river and commit suicide not long after breaking the engagement.”

“I feel that there must be something fishy going on.” the royal swordswoman felt with her Six Records Inherent Skill that there was something wrong with the situation, but she couldn't grab hold of the problem.

“When Xiao San jumped into the river, I was having an examination in my academy. When I heard the grievous news, I

almost fainted. I had almost wanted to go back to see the situation, but before I managed to go, Fourth Uncle had already sent someone to tell us that he was saved in time and had escaped death. And it seemed like he gained a good thing from his mishap by successfully contracting his grimoire.” Yue Yu also felt that the whole situation was weird, but she was more grateful for her younger brother successfully contracting his grimoire. Her brother who was looked down by others could finally clean his ‘useless person’ reputation.

“It still doesn’t make sense. I think your brother is hiding a lot of secrets. Maybe he has an Innate Ranker supporting him from behind the scenes, teaching him physical skills. He might have a situation similar to mine.” When the royal swordswoman said this, Yue Yu was greatly surprised.

“It couldn’t be! How could Xiao San be similar to you?” Yue Yu knew that this Princess Qian Qian was a physical skill talent that the royal family had longed for thousands of years.

If she weren’t a girl, but a guy instead, she would definitely be the Emperor in the future.

Even in Soaring Dragon Continent where males were regarded more highly than females, even in the Da Xia Royal Family that had always followed their traditions, everybody had been discussing whether they should change the laws their ancestors had decided upon. They had been talking about whether they should change their laws to allow females to rule as a regent and allow Princess Qian Qian to ascend the Emperor’s throne, becoming the first female Emperor in thousands of years of

history. If it weren't for strong objections from a group of government officials, with the addition of the good health of the current Emperor, who was still in his robust years and had more than twenty princes, Princess Qian Qian's path to be the first female Emperor would probably already be set in stone.

Other than receiving the tutelage of two Heavenly Imperial Guardians since young, she was also taught by a mysterious master.

She was also the only person who could sit with the Emperor to dine over the years.

That honour, let alone the Crown Prince, not even the most favoured Imperial Concubine could bear that honour. They all could only watch in envy.

Someone who exceeded the Three Great Killing Stars, clinching the title of Level 6 Junior Elder at the tender age of twenty, that kind of one in a million talent, Princess Qian Qian, could even say that her brother, who was looked down upon by everyone, regarded as useless by the whole family, was someone similar to her...

That, that was really unimaginable.

Yue Yu couldn't believe her ears. This, is this real?

"I have a feeling that your Third Uncle didn't actually die that

year. Maybe he had suffered an injury and stayed hidden behind the scenes, quietly teaching his son in secret. How could a talented warrior like him, the most talented person amongst the four great families, die in a single battle? That old grandpa in my residence had always thought that your Third Uncle didn't actually die. He talked about it many times to me, and even searched the records for that battle and analysed it. Although it was indeed an extremely dangerous situation that time, your Third Uncle wasn't a normal warrior after all., Hhe must have had a way to escape in the last minute, sister Yu. Your brother is also most definitely not a trash, he is just not as well-known as your Third Uncle. He must have someone teaching him in secret, a dark horse." The royal swordswoman stated her theory.

"I also hoped that Third Uncle was still alive. His disappearance made grandpa really sad so much so that he looked like he had gained a few years overnight. It also turned Xiao San into an orphan. If it weren't for the protection of Fourth Uncle and Aunt, I'm afraid he would long be..." Yue Yu sighed slowly. "Sometimes I'd rather Xiao San be a useless person, be less well-known, that way he could live a better life, get married and have kids, leading a normal life. Third Uncle had always been the Clan's hope, he had to go into countless battles without resting for his Clan. It could even be said that he worked himself to death. If Yue Yang really is powerful, I'd rather wish that he would be low-keyed like this. He should never become as well-known as Third Uncle. He became the source of envy for many and got killed by others before even living half of his life."

"Don't worry, I won't tell others." The royal swordswoman laughed a little, but frowned a little again, "However, I think it's best if we visit the Xue Clan's Miss and ask her what the engagement was actually about. There must be something wrong

with this.”

“Qian Qian, thank you. I was just about to find the Xue Clan’s Miss to talk about this.” Yue Yu looked towards the direction where Yue Yang had disappeared to, “I hope it was just a misunderstanding...”

Yue Yang had actually wanted to teleport to the Ten Thousand Year Old Ancient Oak Tree to meet up with Yi Nan and Yue Bing again, but he had used up all of his teleportation scrolls.

The only teleportation scroll he had was left with him was the one that would still teleport him to Hui Tai Lang., Bbut if Yue Yang didn’t really need it, he didn’t want to use it unless there was an emergency. Activating the teleportation spell to teleport to a living thing some distance away could be very easy and complicated at the same time. The required condition was for the living thing to be in sync with the spell caster, their spirits and breathing connected with each other. When the teleportation was taking an effect, the targeted living thing must guide the spell caster that was teleporting from a distance with his spirit.

Furthermore, when activated, the teleportation skill required a large amount of spiritual energy. Although Yue Yang had reached the spiritual energy level of Innate realm, activating a teleport spell still made his head dizzy and vision blurry.

Thirdly, the further the teleportation target was, the more boundaries and spaces that the teleportation spell caster had to pass through, hence requiring the teleportation target to be even stronger. That was because the further the teleportation distance,



the more energy the targeted living thing must exert in order to guide the spirit of the teleportation spell caster. Yue Yang reckoned that if he used the teleportation scroll to teleport from the Abyss to Hui Tai Lang, Hui Tai Lang would vomit blood and faint... If he teleported a Demon King, Hui Tai Lang would probably explode immediately.

Of course, Yue Yang still couldn't understand the exact truth on this profound mystery of travelling through spaces until now. He could only vaguely research a little about it.

Without the teleportation scroll, Yue Yang searched through his body again.

His wallet was like it had been washed, completely cleaned.

Previously the few dozens of gold he got from the tragic guy's savings and the one hundred gold he got as a reward was completely used up to buy beast eggs and teleportation scrolls. Without money, it would be extremely difficult for him to take even a single step forward. Hence, Yue Yang decided to earn some money. Of course, he didn't intend to steal with his nimble hands. The mercenaries were mostly poor beggars, they would only have enough money to buy low-grade alcohols on their body.

Normally, they would finish up their alcohol and get drunk, then sleep, then get drunk again after waking up. When they have used up their money, they would look for easy quests and get the reward money to buy alcohol again.

Day after day, this was the lifestyle of a mercenary.

Yue Yang thought about it as he ran straight back to the Warrior Guild's third floor.

This place was pretty much the mercenary's restricted area, since only those that had given special contributions or honorable achievements for the country had the privilege to come and accept a mission.

“Welcome, brave young one. Are you here to accept a quest or have you finished one and come to record the achievement?” The attendants welcoming him weren't the same as those armored and forthright warriors on the lower level, but two cute beauties. They wore skin-tight, sexy dresses that exposed a lot of their white bosom, and their attitudes were respectful and humble. When they spoke, their words were gentle and soft, making anyone listening feel particularly accomplished. It was as if they were a great hero that had just returned from obtaining victory over many lands.

“Can you convert outstanding military service to gold?” Yue Yang asked something that people probably never asked.

“Ah... you, you want to convert military service to gold?” When the two beauties heard this, they were completely shocked, and also had the urge to rush forward and strangle the thief in front of them to death.

“I seem to have seen somewhere before that killing a demon general has a reward of 100 gold coins. Is that true?” Yue Yang

asked.

“That’s right, that’s exactly it.” The two beauties were about to burst. What kind of ranker that could kill a demon general would be lacking in money? Who would convert military service to money? That kind of dishonorable action was something only boorish mercenaries would do. Killing a demon general was extremely difficult, and so this was an honor that brought glory even to one’s ancestors. Yet this thief wanted to take this glory and change it to money. Was there something wrong with this person’s head?

“Then please help me convert it to 500 gold coins” Yue Yang passed over a crystal card.

“Heavens!” The two beauty almost fainted at the sight. Where in this world would there be a beggar with a crystal card? Had this guy stolen it from somewhere?

# Chapter 84 – I Want To Violently Beat You Up Too!

---

It did not matter if it was a bronze, silver, gold or crystal card. They were impossible to counterfeit.

There was an extremely simple test. All one had to do was to touch it against the Achievement Crystal Pillar, which would then accurately display any related information.

When the two girls saw the faint white glow the crystal card was emitting, they realized that the card was indeed that guy's and immediately dismissed their feelings of contempt. Those able to use a crystal card couldn't possibly be ordinary people. They had boundless prospects as either the child of some clan or someone from the royal family. When they looked closer, they suddenly realized that the card had recorded him killing six demon generals. The eyes of the two girls practically bulged out from their shock. Putting aside killing a Demon General, killing only a low level green-skinned imp was already enough for many mercenaries to brag to others for years. Yet this guy had killed six Demon Generals? What kind of god was he?

His name was Titan?

Why hadn't they heard of his existence before?

Even the Three Great Killing Stars had never had such achievements. Yet this unknown, minor thief that hadn't even been registered for half a month had already killed six Demon

Generals.

This...how was this possible?

“I also know that I cannot change all of my achievements to gold. That’s why you only need to convert the achievements of killing 5 of the Demon Generals.” Yue Yang had heard Ye Kong say before that there had been mercenaries that had exchanged all of their achievements as money before to buy drinks. However, once they were discovered, they would be punished by affiliates from the nation. In the worst case scenario, their mercenary title would be wiped, and their rank would be lowered.

“However, if you aren’t exchanging them, allow us to report this to the nation. For sure, the Ranker Hall will reward you heavily with these kinds of achievements. I dare say that you’ll get rewards worth much more than 500 gold. Why convert them into gold?” The somewhat taller beauty quickly tried to dissuade Yue Yang from converting.

“If you’re lacking money at the moment, I can lend you some. Although I don’t have much, I still have at least 10 gold.” The slightly shorter, but paler beauty was practically crying.

“.....” Yue Yang was speechless.

At that moment, a white robed man strode over.

His manner was like that of a famous scholar; he acted leisurely

and at ease, unhurried and elegant. He waved a green sandalwood fan back and forth in his hands, giving him the appearance of a calm and clear-headed, very capable person.

The two beauties hurriedly rushed over, and began to talk over each other trying to beg the man to come and dissuade Yue Yang. The most important thing was to make sure that Yue Yang wouldn't convert his achievements, no matter what. This was a glory that couldn't be sullied. He shouldn't give up this glory even if he was desperate for money right now.

The scholar-looking white robed man extended a hand to stop the girls' chatter.

Fanning himself, he walked up to Yue Yang.

With his nose raised high, the man arrogantly opened his mouth and lectured, "I say, young man, don't just run to us, the Glorious Third Floor, and show off when you've only killed a green-skinned imp, got it? I actually understand how youngsters like you all yearn to become famous, that others will welcome you and admire you, and beauties will cry out your name....but not everyone can be as outstanding as the Three Great Killing Stars. The most important thing for a person is to clearly understand their limitations, and recognize their standing. For example, a thief like you should just do thief-like things, and guide others the way you're supposed to, or scout out information. Don't go playing into the gallery, and definitely don't come here asking to convert achievements to gold after only killing green-skinned imps....those are only level 1 monsters. Killing one is only worth a few coppers. We only convert achievements that are worth at least a gold coin.

No, that isn't right. We've never supported the conversion of achievements to money. I've seen many little thieves like you that get all pleased with themselves after killing only a minor monster. You can go and brag about it to your friends outside the Warrior Guild; that's your glory, so we won't object. However, coming here to show off isn't acceptable. Although I'm not a battle-type Ranker, I've also killed five long-horned demons before. Those are level 3 demons, yet do you see me going around bragging about it? No, I've never done that, I'm not that kind of person. One must conduct themselves in a low-profile manner, do you understand, youngster?"

"Ah?" Yue Yang's vision seemed to have blurred. Why did this guy's words seem to be similar to Fatty Hai's?

Could this guy be Fatty Hai's relative?

The two beauties quickly reminded the white robed man who had a scholarly appearance, but was actually just a talkative, gossiping person, "Director, what he killed wasn't a green-skinned imp."

The white robed man snorted in disdain, "Then was it a yellow-skinned? Yellow-skins and green-skins are the same; both are level 1 monsters. Although it can throw some rocks around, it's still nothing much."

"No, it wasn't a yellow-skin either." The two beauties were preparing to explain in detail, but the white robed man stopped them from speaking any more.

“Even if he killed some level 2 tusked demons, it’s no big deal. I killed tons of those things back in the day, at least 9 of them, and yet I never went around flaunting that; actually, I have never even considered doing so. Someone with a low-profile like me, who would ever thought or knew that I had killed five level 3 long-horned demons and nine level 2 tusked demons? Nobody. I was just that low-profile, living while being indifferent to fame and fortune.” the white-robed man who looked like a scholar immediately swing the green fan in his hands.

“...” Yue Yang suddenly felt the urge to violently strike the guy in front of him.

“That’s not it at all, director, what he killed wasn’t a level 2 tusked demon.” The two beauties lowered their heads in dismay. This kind of boss was really shameful.

“Then it’s a level 2 Rotting Zombie?” The white robed man said, unstoppable, “A Rotting Zombie is really easy to fight. Aside from its large body which has pretty good endurance, it is otherwise pretty useless. Back then, my group killed many of them. If we hadn’t forgotten to bring our card with us that time, it probably would’ve been a dozen or more.”

“It isn’t a level 2 Rotting Zombie, nor a level 3 long-horned demon. It’s a demon....” Before the two beauties had finished speaking, the white robed man waved his hand to stop them once more.



“Wait, are you saying it’s a level 3 Demon Hound? An Infernal Demon Hound?” The white robed man finally began to show some surprise.

“No.” The two beauties were already about to give up. Couldn’t he just let them finish speaking?

“Then a level 4 Demon Giant?” The white robed man was astounded.

“It’s a level 5 Demon General.” The two girls were at a loss. Although they had finally gotten a chance to say the truth, it was a bit too late. Yue Yang’s expression was already quite ugly because of this, and he looked as if he was about to rush forward and beat the guy up.

“Demon General? How is that possible? His tiny body wouldn’t even be able to endure a Demon General’s slap.” The white robed man was beyond shocked, and his expression was one of extreme doubt. He turned back to reprimand the two beauties, “Did you two see it wrong? How can you let him just bluff his way out like that? You two should be able to tell with a single glance that a minor thief like him couldn’t possibly kill a Demon General. Do you think a Demon General is made of tofu or something?”

“Director, he didn’t kill only one Demon General, he killed six.” The slightly taller beauty weakly replied. Having a superior like this was really shameful.

“What, WHAT? Did I hear wrong?” The white robed man

exclaimed, his head spinning.

“I don’t know if you heard wrong or not, but we didn’t say anything wrong.” The slightly shorter, paler beauty said with certainty.

“That’s not possible. That’s definitely impossible.” The white robed man began to wonder if he was dreaming.

“Hey, hey, hey, it’s finally my turn to say something. Can you guys please give me the gold coins I converted? I’m short on time.” Yue Yang had the urge to slash at the guy in front of him, but sadly, killing wasn’t allowed on the first or second floor of the Tong Tian Tower. Otherwise, Yue Yang would’ve definitely used his magic blade, Hui Jin, to cut the guy down.

“Yes, we apologize.” The two beauties held back tears as they passed the gold coins over, and erased the recorded achievement on the card with pain in their hearts. The only thing remaining was the number of enemies that had been killed.

“He, he, he, he uses a crystal card?” The white robed man remained petrified, even long after Yue Yang had walked away. He finally regained his senses and asked while shaking, “How does he have a crystal card? You two were too impudent; a great ranker that possesses a crystal card came here, yet the two of you were completely disrespectful. You’ve completely sullied our Glorious Third Floor’s...Eh? What was he doing here earlier?”

“He was converting his outstanding military achievements into

gold coins.” The two girls really wanted to use a small blade and slowly stab their superior to death, one cut at a time.

“How could you two let him do that? Perhaps he was just momentarily lacking money. How could you just let him exchange it for gold? That’s glory, you know. Do you know what glory is? That’s something even more important than a man’s life, a supreme pride. That’s right, how much of his achievements did he exchange? What? Five Demon Generals? Could it be that what I heard just now wasn’t a dream?” The white robed man suddenly began to blame the two beauties, “Why didn’t you two notify me? If I knew, I definitely would’ve stopped him...do you two know that destroying a man’s glory is like sullyng a god’s achievement.....Aiya, who hit me just now?”

The white robed man turned around, and saw that Yue Yang was standing behind him. Confused, he asked, “Why did you come back? No, sorry, it should be sir. Sir, do you have any requests?”

Yue Yang smiled. “Lie down on the ground, and stick your butt up as much as possible.”

The white robed man was stunned, and asked uncertainly, “Ah? Why do you want me to do this? Does this have any special meaning behind it?”

Yue Yang’s smile became more brilliant. He shook his head and waved his hand, “There’s no meaning behind it. However, it’ll help me kick your ass a bit more easily. You don’t know this, but after being out for so long and thinking about it over and over, I still felt that I should beat you up. If I don’t beat you up now, I

would be in a bad mood for the entire day. That's why, I'd like you to please lie down and stick your butt up in the air, alright? I'm discontent right now, and even though I was already in a bad mood, you still continued to croak "gua gua gua" like a crow....tell me, isn't that simply looking for a beating?"

When Yue Yang is angry, he turned hostile even faster than a girl's changing moods. He immediately began to raise his fists.

The white robed man was knocked down by Yue Yang's wild fists.

The man had no time to beg for mercy, let alone resist. Yue Yang violently beat him up until the ground was littered with his teeth that would never regrow. The two beauties watching the scene were beyond excited, and were cheering and clapping at the same time, indifferent to their relationship with their superior. Actually, they had wanted to hit him for a very long time now; they just hadn't been fortunate enough to get the chance.

"Do you two want to come and try? It feels quite good on the hands." Yue Yang warmly invited them.

"No, the two of us are fine." The girls began to decline. However, they were unable to resist Yue Yang's energetic urges, and eventually stepped forward and kicked the white-robed man a few times with their faces flushed red with extreme excitement.

"You two can take your time hitting him. I have things to do, so I'll be leaving first." Yue Yang hit the opposing party painfully one

last time, and with a light mood, he slipped out of the building.

10 minutes later.

Luo Hua City's Mistress arrived at Glorious Third Floor, and asked what was going on.

The two girls jumped in surprise and fear, and hurriedly began to explain everything that had happened. When Luo Hua City's Mistress heard this, she burst out in anger, and then thundered at the beaten black and blue white robed man, "Lie down this instant and raise your butt up. I command you to do it now."

"Why?" The white robed man was dumbfounded; why did all the Rankers have this kind of request?

"Because I'm in an extremely bad mood, and also want to beat you up." Luo Hua City's Mistress angrily charged forwards and knocked the man down. She then promptly beat him up. Afterwards, she ordered the the girls to continue beating him for her, "The two of you beat him up in my place while I try to catch up with that fellow. Perhaps this Titan is that young one. Was he really lacking money? Whatever, I won't bother pondering it further. It's best if I just hurry and catch up to him first."

## Chapter 85 – Luo Hua City Mistress

---

Yue Yang stored his gold and used the surplus cash to buy multiple goods. He was about to teleport to the Star's Domain and continue his Blackstone Labyrinth Quest.

He reckoned that Yi Nan and Yue Bing must have reached the Ten Thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree by now, and might have already started doing the Ancient Oak Tree quest. With Hui Tai Lang there, they would be able to feel assured when doing quests while waiting for him. With regards to Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, Yue Yang reckoned that they would only be able to reach the Ten Thousand Years Ancient Oak Tree after another day passed. So there would still be time to meet up with them if he quickly returned now.

“Aih, so it was indeed you.” Suddenly, Luo Hua City Mistress caught up with him from behind, and she quickly grabbed Yue Yang's ears and pulled at it, “Little thief, why do you always try to run away at the sight of me?”

“Esteemed City Mistress, please do not be that strict on me. I didn't do anything bad,” Yue Yang quickly avoided her snow white fingers.

Seeing that the Luo Hua City Mistress could find him that easily, he was quite astounded in his heart.

But seeing that there was a cute little Three-tailed Snow Fox trailing at the Luo Hua City Mistress' feet, he finally had a

revelation. So this little fox spirit was not only a good battling companion, it was also an expert in pursuing other's trail. The only thing that Yue Yang did not understand was the reason why the Luo Hua City Mistress had come to find him.

Luo Hua City Mistress scowled grumpily as she looked at the Hui Jin blade that hung on Yue Yang's waist. Her voice sounded displeased as she said, "You idiot, why did you exchange your achievement points with gold? If you were lacking in money, why didn't you come and find me? Although I'm not a very rich person, I am still a City Mistress. I can lend you a few hundred gold coins if you need it. There are many better, special uses for achievement points, do you know that? At the Third Floor of Tong Tian Tower, there would be many places that require achievement points to enter. It won't be as easy as entering whenever you wanted to. Normally, where would there be so many Demon Generals waiting to be killed? Above the Third Floor, the demons above Demon Generals, Demon Commanders and Demon Masters, usually travel in groups. Those fellows are a strong force due to their great numbers. They are also ten times stronger than a normal human warrior. If you do not ambush them, it would be quite difficult to win the battle."

Hearing this, Yue Yang started to sweat bullets. He didn't know about this at all.

Who knew that battle achievement points had so many uses? This time, he was also forced to go to the Warrior Guild's Glorious Third Floor to exchange his achievements for gold. If he had money, who would listen to that 'white-robed elder brother's' nagging? That fellow really deserved a beating, even more than Fatty Hai. But speaking of that, could he really be Fatty Hai's

relative?

Seeing Yue Yang's face full of sweat and worry, Luo Hua City Mistress's angry expression suddenly changed and she began to laugh out loud. She laughed until her fragrant shoulders shook and her beautiful body trembled.

Laughing candidly had always been one of her distinguishing characteristics.

When this girl laughed without restriction, she looked really sexy. Yue Yang felt a kind of wolfy desire surfacing in his heart. If it wasn't for some mercenaries sometimes passing by beside them, Yue Yang had really wanted to push the Luo Hua City Mistress down to the ground and force himself on her. Of course, this feeling was just a passing desire that surfaced from her sexy laughter, nothing else. Yue Yang would probably say that his heart was made of iron. He saw every woman as an NPC in a game. However, the familial affection he had for Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and the little girl was something he couldn't even deny himself.

As for the bright-eyed Yi Nan, if somebody were to ask Yue Yang, he would definitely say he had no feelings for her.

But whether it was the truth in his heart or not, because of Yue Yang's [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill, nobody would ever know.

"If I say that you are clever, it's true that you are actually a sophisticated liar who can run circles on everyone you lied to; If I



say you are an idiot, you are also an idiot who doesn't have any of the basic knowledge in life. If you haven't heard about it, why don't you ask around? You have a Crystal Card, you could go to the Warrior's Gold Bank to get an advance on your pay. Let alone the Da Xia Kingdom's Banks, even the Tian Luo and Zi Jin people would definitely not be stingy and lend you some gold, using the opportunity to curry favour with a strong ranker. You really made me laugh to death. Could you amuse me more?" Luo Hua City Mistress kept laughing loudly non-stop. Her small hands patted on Yue Yang's shoulders, seemingly saying 'If I were to die from laughing you would have to take responsibility'.

"Esteemed City Mistress, what brings you to find me?" Yue Yang had an open thinking, even if he didn't want to convert now, he had already converted it. It was useless to regret his past actions.

Furthermore, didn't he only exchange the battle achievements for five Demon Generals?

He could just kill another five later on. Demon Generals didn't have summoning grimoires nor Halo Shields to protect themselves, so Yue Yang still had the confidence that he could take them down.

As for the Demon Commanders and Demon Masters above Demon Generals, Yue Yang had never seen them before, so he didn't know their abilities. But he had fought with the Demon King Ha Xin and Lich King Grun before. Although Yue Yang couldn't match up to them on his own, with Xiao Wen Li's help, he could still retreat with his whole body intact, instead of being killed.

As for Demon Kings, Yue Yang decided not to think about becoming a Ranker that could fight on par with Demon Kings right now.

Demon Masters was already high-leveled enough. Yue Yang felt that 99% of Demon Masters would definitely have a summoning grimoire. He shouldn't bite more than he could chew. If he had the opportunity, he would like to battle with Demon Commanders. That was Yue Yang's little wish.

Luo Hua City Mistress slowly calmed her bold and sexy laugh and hugged Yue Yang's shoulders in a brother-style, saying, "Seeing that you are my future Guard Captain, you would definitely benefit if I have something good. I was preparing to fight with a formidable demon, and I need a helper. Come, let's think about some tactics to defeat the demon,"

"I'm not going," Yue Yang rejected her immediately.

That was a redundant invitation. With this girl's violent strength, she wouldn't be going after easy monsters. Fighting a strong opponent, wouldn't that be seeking death?

Also, discussing about tactics was not interesting to Yue Yang, unless Luo Hua City Mistress was inviting him to discuss about tactics in bed. He would definitely agree with her, gladly.

Luo Hua City Mistress seemed to have predicted that Yue Yang would reply that way. She didn't mind it at all as she smiled,

“Don’t throw a child’s tantrum on me... I wouldn’t hurt you. Listening to my advice is the right thing to do. If you behave like a good boy, this big sister will give you some candies...”

Yue Yang’s forehead was filled with black lines, “...”

He wanted to throw off the Luo Hua City Mistress who was hugging his shoulders and walk away, but the kind of soft, silky feeling that she gave was so wonderful that he hated to part with it a little.

A faint, delicate fragrance came from her side, penetrating deeply into his heart.

Although Yue Yang looked decent on the outside, in reality, he was already embarrassingly hard in some places.

Luo Hua City Mistress’s snow white fingers hooked on Yue Yang’s chin as she blew off a sweet scent, “Little thief, don’t you want beauties? A strong and beautiful beauty?”

“I do,” Yue Yang thought in his heart, isn’t that obvious? Among all men, other than those that swing the other way, who would not like beauties? Could it be that his happy life had finally started? Was this Luo Hua City Mistress feeling lonely, and urgently needed him to comfort her? However, this girl doesn’t seem like one of those kinds of girls who likes to seduce guys and have one-night stands. Her body scent was sort of similar to Yi Nan’s; seemed like she was still a maiden. How could she ask him to have sex with her after only seeing him for two to three times?

“I know of a place where there is a strong yet beautiful beauty, let’s go together and take her down,” Luo Hua City Mistress was sparing no effort to incite Yue Yang’s wolfy heart.

“You are saying, both of us?” Yue Yang started sweating. Could this Luo Hua City Mistress be a lily?

(Shiro: Lily = lesbian)

“If I don’t help you out, with your standard as a little thief, would you be able to take down a gold-ranked level 5 Bloody Queen?” When Luo Hua City Mistress said that, Yue Yang immediately fell to the ground.

Indeed, this girl didn’t find him to go to bed with him. It was also not to chase girls. She was looking for him to make him do hard labour.

Gold-ranked level 5?

That strength was almost similar to that three-headed chimera, and the monster’s name itself already sounded terrifying, Bloody Queen...Looks like it was at least a Golden King Beast, if not, it should be on par with the Abyss King-level demons. If it was only him and the Luo Hua City Mistress, he didn’t even know if he would be the one being pushed down by the Bloody Queen or the other way around.

Yue Yang immediately struggled to get away from Luo Hua City

Mistress' arms and walked away, "Not going. I don't take pleasure in masochism,"

Luo Hua City Mistress chased after him and kept up her marketing campaign, "Little thief, I don't need you to work hard. I will be the main attacker, and you would only be responsible to clear the small fries around. When we win, I will give the Bloody Queen to you. Think about it, If you could make a contract with her, with a golden-ranked level five Bloody Queen, it wouldn't even be a normal battle when you summoned it out. It would sweep away everything on its path. I see that you are lacking a strong summon. Although that two-headed wolf has a bright future, it is still a beast-type. It would only be able to fight on land. What would you do if you meet an avian-type beast? Don't tell me you would be defeated by a mere Wind Breath Seabird. It would be a different case if you had the Bloody Queen, because it is an existence second only to Giant Dragons."

"Then what does your excellency the City Mistress need when we win?" Yue Yang didn't understand the situation. Could it be that there was a selfless person like [Lei Feng](#) in this Soaring Dragon Continent?

"Stop spouting nonsense. Of course I want the best thing!" When Luo Hua City Mistress said this, Yue Yang secretly cried 'I knew it'. However, when Luo Hua City Mistress continued her speech, Yue Yang stared at her with a dumb look again. This was because the Luo Hua City Mistress had said, "What I want is the Bloody Queen's imaginary, beautiful demonic flower. You didn't know, but I only lacked the beautiful demonic flower as a decoration in my window..."

“Deal.” When Yue Yang heard this, afraid that the Luo Hua City Mistress would regret her words, he immediately grabbed her small hands and seized the opportunity to take advantage of her and get away with a cheap deal.

“I knew that you, this little thief, wouldn’t be able to resist the temptation,” Luo Hua City Mistress almost seemed like she already knew that Yue Yang would agree, and laughed out loud, “You, a fellow with no future, how could you believe in other’s words so easily? Don’t you know girls can be liars too?”

“...” Receiving her lesson in life, Yue Yang couldn’t help but sweat bullets. She continued to lecture about the good and the bad.

“Don’t worry, I wouldn’t lie to such a foolish little thief like you. Because you are my future Guard Captain,” Luo Hua City Mistress giggled softly, “I was just reminding you not to believe in others so easily, no matter if they are male or female. If you have things to do now, I’ll give you half a day to finish them.”

“No need,” Yue Yang’s heart twitched a little. It wouldn’t be too late if he killed the Bloody Queen first before meeting up with Yue Bing and Yi Nan, right?

Yue Bing and Yi Nan both are not weak, they should be safe within the Blackstone Labyrinth.

Furthermore, they could also level up their Treant Warrior and little Silver Pegasus while waiting.

As for himself, he was indeed lacking a flying beast. If he could get Phantom Shadow to take over the Bloody Queen's body and turn it into an existence like the Barbarian Cow Shadow, his battle power would definitely rise a lot. A golden-ranked level 5 Bloody Queen, he might not be able to say for others, but the strength of the Bloody Queen was definitely not small. If he really was successful, then when he went back to the Yue Clan's Castle, he would be able to trample on the Yue Clan's First and Second Branch, those self-interested people. He believed that he wouldn't need to use his Innate [Invisible Sword Qi] or Xiao Wen Li to easily get back at them on behalf of Fourth Mother.

Seeing Yue Yang starting to shake his head, Luo Hua City Mistress immediately grabbed on his hands, "Don't worry, we will get back soon enough. Your sister's strength is not that bad, it wouldn't be a problem if she trained at the Blackstone Labyrinth. Furthermore, you shouldn't protect her so much, you should give her a chance to be independent sometimes. Shall we go now? Don't let it be stolen by the fellows in the Abyss now,"

"Abyss?" Yue Yang froze. What has the Bloody Queen got to do with the Abyss? Could it be that the Bloody Queen lived in the Abyss?

"The Bloody Queen is the new Gold King Beast. It is easiest to defeat now, if we wait for a few more months, let it grow stronger even more and rise to gold-ranked level 6, it would be a difficult problem. Every single beast, once they reach level 6, their abilities would increase by ten times from their previous state. However, once a Bronze, Silver and Gold monster level up to level 6, they wouldn't be able to go through a Variant Evolution. Even Platinum-ranked, only a few of them had the chance to go through

a variant evolution....That Two-headed Demon Wolf of yours, don't let it rise to bronze-ranked level 6. You must let it go through a Variant Evolution to a silver-ranked beast first, otherwise it would be fated as a useless hard labourer," Luo Hua City Mistress pulled Yue Yang along and ran quickly as she explained. Yue Yang listened to her seriously. He could only hear these secrets on cultivating beasts from her. If not for her, he didn't know who else would tell him all these things.

If it ever rose to bronze-ranked level 6, he reckoned that he should fire Hui Tai Lang.

Fortunately, Hui Tai Lang is only bronze-ranked level 5 now, there was still chance for him to evolve to a silver-ranked beast.

"What will a two-headed Demon Wolf need to do to go through a variant evolution to silver-ranked?" Yue Yang couldn't help the urge for his thirst for knowledge and asked. He knew that these are the deepest secret of secrets that others wouldn't tell him easily, but he still asked Luo Hua City Mistress straight away anyway.



## Chapter 86 – Bloody Queen?

---

“If it were any other person, I would definitely not say it. But if it’s you, foolish little thief, whatever, I shall be a teacher once again,” When Luo Hua City Mistress said this, Yue Yang was shocked. Is this girl speaking truthfully? Did this girl actually fall for him? Why does this seem not so possible? A person like her would have seen strong Rankers all this time; why would she be interested in a young guy like him with no name? Furthermore, looking at her eyes, they weren’t like Yi Nan’s bright eyes which made her seem like she was reluctant to reveal something. Her eyes were more like Yue Yu’s troubled expression.

Could it be that this girl liked to act like someone’s older sister, and had taken him as a little brother?

Along the way, in between her unique outbursts of laughter, Luo Hua City Mistress gave Yue Yang a lot of secret advice on cultivating beasts. She told him everything, one thing after another, making Yue Yang gain a lot of benefits.

When they reached the teleportation port, she took out a small seal.

After talking with the teleportation port guard for a while, Yue Yang was then also allowed on board the teleportation port. Before teleporting, Luo Hua City Mistress used a strict and serious tone to warn Yue Yang, “Little thief, I’d like to warn you to be careful. At any point of time, you must prioritize your life, do you understand? Right now there isn’t a Heavenly Resurrection Crystal, if you die in battle, I won’t be able to save you,”

“Heavenly Resurrection Crystal?” Yue Yang froze when he heard it.

“Legend says that it was the ‘Godly Crystal’ that a top human Ranker brought back from the legendary Heaven Realm. As long as a person hasn’t been dead for long, and most importantly have all their body parts intact, you could use the supreme magical strength stored inside the crystal to resurrect the dead person. As there were many invasions from demons coming from the Demon Abyss during the past thousands of years, many important Rankers died in battle. In order to keep the people’s hopes alive, the Heavenly Resurrection Crystals were all used up to revive the most important, most valuable and most promising Rankers. That’s why, the originally small number of Heavenly Resurrection Crystal was already used up a few hundred years ago. We have to be serious and bravely overcome dangers when we fight, but we must also tread carefully, because we won’t have the chance to resurrect again,” Luo Hua City Mistress’s expression was currently full of strictness and solemnity.

“Is the existence of the Heaven Realm real?” Yue Yang thought about how his master had said there was three realms. Other than the Soaring Dragon Continent and the Demon Abyss, could the third one be Heaven Realm?

“It should be, but the top Ranker didn’t say anything about it, he only said that when the later generations managed to reach the 8th level of Tong Tian Tower, they would understand it by themselves. I think the Heaven Realm really does exist, because every time you climbed one level up the Tong Tian Tower, the space on the floor above would be at least ten times bigger than the space below. On

the eighth floor, I reckoned the space would be even bigger than the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent. Then there's still the ninth floor. Seems like the existence of the Heaven Realm is located at a place very far away from the Demon Abyss, it might even be located in the "Outer Realm" above the high levels of Tong Tian Tower," Luo Hua City Mistress also couldn't be certain of that.

"Can't we go to the Heaven Realm and get the Heavenly Resurrection Crystal now?" Yue Yang asked.

"I heard that the Heavenly Resurrection Crystal is brought back from the floors above the tenth floor. In these past thousand years, there had been no Rankers in the Soaring Dragon Continent that had the ability to reach the tenth floor. " Luo Hua City Mistress shook her head, "In the mean time, thinking about this is useless. We must concentrate on being careful for our next battle."

As they spoke, Yue Yang saw a flash of white light before being teleported to another place.

His whole body tightened, it was as if there was an invisible force pressuring his body.

His body felt like it was sinking, as if his weight increased by twofold. The feeling that his body was as quick and agile as a bird had completely disappeared.

A thought flashed through Yue Yang's mind, and suddenly he seemed to have a revelation as he shouted, "Twofold gravity? This

space, could it have a twofold gravity?”

Luo Hua City Mistress looked at Yue Yang with mirth in her eyes, “It is a restriction of the Ancient Code. The pressure would start to get stronger and stronger from the second floor of Tong Tian Tower onwards. If you use the word gravity to describe this phenomenon, it could probably, with great difficulty, be called as such. However, our weight did not increase, it was only the effect of our bodies suffering the restrictions of the Ancient Code. You might not be used to it at first, but try to adapt to it. When we teleport to the third floor in a bit, there will be even stronger penalties...Wait for a moment, I have to report to the customs to prove your identity so that you will be able to enter.”

Yue Yang was a little surprised as he saw Luo Hua City Mistress jogging lightly to the old man who was wearing a long robe and holding a walking stick. Seems like this twofold gravity did not have much effect on her.

The transported guy’s pride was pricked as he thought about how was he faring worse than a girl.

Calming down his breathing, Yue yang slowly moved his body around as he used Innate Qi to circulate around his whole body. He slowly increased his body’s condition to his optimal level.

Slowly, the uncomfortable pressuring force weakened, and finally disappeared.

Seems like Tong Tian Tower’s second floor’s restrictions was

actually quite trivial. As long as a Ranker's body could reach their optimal standard, it wouldn't affect them at all. However, how many people on earth would have the ability to use Innate Qi to adjust their body condition rapidly like he did?

If Ye Kong or Fatty Hai came here, he reckoned that they wouldn't need to fight at all, even walking would probably tire them out so much that they would crawl on the ground.

When Luo Hua City Mistress came back, Yue Yang was already somersaulting on the ground, his movement agile beyond compare.

This really stunned her greatly.

This brat's body seemed to be really impressive, he could adapt in such a short amount of time...How exactly did he train himself before? Did he only train physical skills? Even if he only trained his physical abilities, how could he adapt to that level in such a short moment? She herself had needed one whole day to adapt to the second floor's restrictions, before she finally, slowly, dispelled the effects of the penalty. Who would have ever thought that this brat only needed a few minutes to dispel the effects of the penalty. He was really impressive.

“Right, that's it. Keep your body condition at its peak. When we reach the Third Floor, there will be even stronger restrictions. Furthermore, as soon as we exit the human's castle, there will be a high chance of being attacked by monsters from the Demon Abyss. You have be at your highest caution at all times as if you are in constant battle.”

Luo Hua City Mistress further warned Yue Yang as they both entered the teleportation port to the third floor of Tong Tian Tower.

Yue Yang realised that this castle was even larger than the White Stone City. The teleportation gate was located right at the top of the mountain, and below, almost over a hundred golden-armoured guards were protecting it. At a further distance, there was a tall, gigantic wall, almost 40-50m tall, built adjacent to the mountain. Seems like a lot of the wall was built by using the mountain walls as a foundation. On top of the wall, many archer towers and guard posts were visible.

Looking down, the buildings below were also the same. They were built based on the mountain, there were no bricks and tiles, it essentially looked sturdy and simple.

The houses were arranged like a beehive. It looked messy from the outside, but it was actually the most reasonable arrangement.

It was resource-saving as well as an arrangement that made rational use of the surrounding mountain.

There were also three gigantic black stones with a different flag erected on each of them. Yue Yang recognised the flag on the middle as the Da Xia Kingdom's Ironblood Golden Dragon's Flag. The one on the left side was a silver wolf with a purple gold moon. Yue Yang reckoned that it was the Zi Jin Kingdom's Moon Howling Greywolf's flag. On the right, the flag was sky blue coloured

decorated with a stalk of red peony that was decorated with threads of gold on its core. That should be the Tian Luo's Conquering Roses's flag. It was only at this third floor of Tong Tian Tower that all three scheming Kingdoms would established their flags side by side...Because this was not the Soaring Dragon Continent. Every human ranker must come together in order to withstand the Demons' madness-like attacks. No matter if it's Da Xia, Zi Jin, Tian Luo or any other small kingdoms, they wouldn't be able to face against the demon legion all on their own....

(Shiro: Zi Jin means purple gold, Tian means sky)

“Let's go. In this Ironfist City, we would probably be safe as long as there isn't any attacks by the demon legion.” Luo Hua City Mistress led Yue Yang, who had quickly adjusted his body condition to resist against the threefold penalty of the third floor of Tong Tian Tower, and walked towards a teleportation gate located under a small mountain.

“How often does the Demon Legion attack this place?” Yue Yang observed that there was a lot of marks left as the aftermath of the battles. A potent, bloody scent was also still lingering in the air, refusing to wear off.

“The Demon Legion would attack at least once every one to three months for sure. The warriors defending this place didn't even have the time to gasp for breath. A battle may last for several days and nights, that was the normal occurrence. However, fortunately the three Kingdom's elite forces was sort of united, and smaller Kingdoms sometimes came to help out as well, hence this place could still stand from the beginning to the end of the battles.” When Luo Hua City Mistress said this, Yue Yang started to have questions in his mind.

“If a Demon King-levelled strong demon came to attack, would those guards be able to resist?” Yue Yang was really doubtful. This place would definitely not be able to resist a demon king-level attack.

“You are spouting nonsense again. Why would a strong existence such as the Demon King come to the third floor to attack this city? They are mostly at the sixth or seventh floor, fighting against the higher levelled rankers. Furthermore, there is no use in attacking this place. When the human Rankers come back here, they would still be able to drive them away. Although the demons could gain the upper hand, it doesn’t mean that they can destroy us humans. The demon’s advance was only a form of training for the demon elites, and at the same time, making us mankind use up our strength...In any case, this is a competition between mankind and demons. Otherwise, why would they attack this place? The demons take our presence here as their sharpening stone, which is also the same case with us. This place is the filter between ordinary people and strong Rankers. If one could come out of this place alive, then he would have hope.” Luo Hua City Mistress said as she led Yue Yang through the streets towards the teleportation gates in a valley up front.

“Esteemed City Mistress, please be careful, there might be demons hiding along your journey,” One of the guarding gold-armoured generals bowed respectfully to Luo Hua City Mistress.

“Are you the City Mistress of this city?” Yue Yang was shocked when he heard it. This girl was simply too formidable, this City Mistress was indeed OP.



“No, how could I be the City Mistress of this lousy third floor city? My city is on the fourth floor,” Yue Yang immediately fell to the ground when the Luo Hua City Mistress said this. Powerful. This girl was ten times more powerful than what he had initially thought.

Other than the gravity increasing threefold compared to the first floor, the third floor’s space was also hundred times bigger than the first floor.

When Yue Yang saw the third floor’s map, about 60% of it was occupied by the demons and 40% by humans. Both sides were separated by a huge river. The Ironfist City that he had arrived at was not the only city there, there are three more similar cities. But the scale of those cities were not as large as the Ironfist City, they simply acted as natural strongholds. On the map, there are close to 100 neutral areas that was denoted with silver circles. Seems like these were the Gold King Beasts’ domains. Since neither humans or demons could easily fight against them, these neutral areas were maintained.

The Bloody Queen that Luo Hua City Mistress was bringing Yue Yang to kill was definitely locked up inside one of these neutral areas.

However, if the strength of the Gold King Beast was shown by the diameter of the neutral area, from the looks of it, this Bloody Queen, amongst many other Gold King Beast on the third floor of Tong Tian Tower, ought to be one of the weakest ones. This is because according to the map, the area that it influences with the

strength that it emitted was almost the smallest amongst the Golden King Beasts.

“Don’t get the wrong idea. Above the Bloody Queen, there were originally a stronger Empress whose area of influence was the biggest on the third floor. It’s just that she had left the third floor and moved to the fourth floor instead. Her daughter ascended as the Bloody Queen. As she had just gone through a variant evolution, she is still weaker and smaller compared to others. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be able to fight against it. Although the Bloody Queen’s mother went away, she left two demon commanders which would be difficult to fight with. One of them is bronze-ranked level 6 Ghost-clawed Rainbow-Winged Banshee, and the other is a bronze-ranked level 7 Blade Massacring Demoness. We must eradicate them both. Furthermore, there are also a few dozens bronze-ranked level 2 Harpies and bronze-ranked level 3 Spider Blade Demoness, which are really troublesome to deal with,” When Luo Hua City Mistress said this, Yue Yang felt like he was going to faint.

So it wasn’t just a Bloody Queen.

This Bloody Queen had underlings under her, both strong and great in numbers. How are we going to fight this battle?

## Chapter 87 – I’ll Just Pick This In The Middle!

---

“Come, let’s discuss our battle tactics...” Luo Hua City Mistress was a democratic person, so she didn’t mind discussing with others. It was a pity that she didn’t know Yue Yang was only interested in discussing about tactics in bed. As for true battle tactics, Yue Yang completely didn’t understand a single thing.

Furthermore, she was asking an otaku, who never really fought on a battlefield before, someone who never truly led an army before, to discuss battle tactics.

That was even more dangerous than having no tactics at all.

“Actually, I have read [Sun Tzu’s Art of War](#) before; isn’t the highest realm of tactics to break the enemy’s resistance without fighting? However, it seems like this is not a possible option. I have also read the [Red Army’s guerrilla tactics](#), it’s a pity that we won’t be able to use guerilla tactics here either. We can’t use landmines or trenches...” Yue Yang thought again. Amongst the [Thirty-Six Stratagems](#), which one was the most applicable to be used here? Even after thinking for a long time on ideas like ‘besieging Wèi to rescue Zhào’, ‘deceiving the heavens to cross the ocean’, ‘killing with a borrowed sword’, or ‘luring the tiger off its mountain lair’, they are all inapplicable to this situation. As for the ‘empty fort strategy’, ‘inflicting injury on oneself to win the enemy’s trust’ and ‘the beauty trap’, Yue Yang doubted that they would work on the Bloody Queen. After pondering for quite a while, Yue Yang felt that the last stratagem of the Thirty-Six Stratagems, “If all else fails, retreat”, was their best bet.

Yue Yang had fought against a bronze-ranked level 7 Bone Dragon before. Its skull was extremely hard, and he wouldn't have been able to penetrate it without his Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Now there's another bronze-ranked level 7 monster, the Blade Massacring Demoness. He reckoned that it was better not to irritate this monster as well. There was even a bronze-ranked level 6 ghostclaw rainbow-winged banshee who was helping from the air. It was still okay if it was just these two monsters, but, on top of all this, there was the gold-ranked level 5 Bloody Queen too.

What kind of existence was a gold-ranked beast like? Yue Yang could already imagine it from fighting the three-headed chimera in the Aries Temple.

Furthermore, this Bloody Queen was also a Gold King Beast.

However weak she was, she was still a queen.

Luo Hua City Mistress kept motivating Yue Yang on their way, advising him to think more about having a gold-ranked beast to show off to others, so that he wouldn't give up so easily. The two of them passed through mountains and rivers, walking for more than two hours, before finally arriving near the domain of the Bloody Queen, the Flying Mountain.

Flying Mountain is a name for a type of island that floats in the sky.

They did not exist in the Soaring Dragon Continent but instead existed on every floor of Tong Tian Tower. At least one was located on every floor, even from places like the surrounding walls of Blackstone Labyrinth of Star's Domain, you could see that there were stones blocking your view of the sky, floating in the air. Of course, those are called floating stones. If a sky island was large enough and looked like a mountain, it would be called a 'Flying Mountain'.

Still, a Flying Mountain-grade island in the sky wasn't really a huge sky island; it actually belonged to the smaller type of sky islands. It was said that, not only could a city can be built on top of a huge sky island, even kingdoms were possible.

For example, Luo Hua City Mistress's Waterfall City, is built on a sky island.

Under the Flying Mountain, there were two high cliffs linking to each other. There were also a lot of floating stones that took shape of a spiral ladder winding upstairs.

On the tall mountain's summit, which almost reached the clouds, there was a beautiful pavilion. It was not known how many years it had taken the mother of the Bloody Queen to build that kind of pavilion, which unexpectedly looked similar to humanities' architecture.

"If we can occupy this place, build a villa and let others come for a holiday, it seemed like a profitable business could be started,"

Yue Yang started to fantasize. Didn't Avatar simply just digitally create a few sky islands, find some actors to wear costumes, shoot a movie and suddenly become famous throughout the whole world? If he created a sky pavilion as a holiday resort, though it wouldn't compare to the Avatar's Holy Mountain, it would probably not be worse than the man-made coconut island of Dubai.

"Your idea is not bad, but I don't think anyone would want to take such risks to go to the third floor of Tong Tian Tower for a holiday. That's not going for a holiday, that's going to your death!" Luo Hua City Mistress started laughing until her back was sore.

The two of them continued to chat and laugh together as they followed along the mountain cove. All the while, they were preparing to find a concealed place to climb up the mountain secretly. Suddenly, Luo Hua City Mistress saw that the pagoda on top of the mountain was letting out black smoke. She immediately became furious as she hurriedly ran up, saying, "Little thief, come quickly. Someone is stealing our target. I tell you, you shouldn't be soft-hearted. Kill anyone that you see. As long as it is something that I want, nobody can take it away from me."

"What if it is not demons from the Demon Abyss, but humans instead?" Yue Yang felt that since this territory was still within the human's domain, it could be human warriors that were stealing the monster.

"Nonsense. In my eyes, there's only one type of enemy, and that is someone who's against me." Luo Hua City Mistress tapped Yue Yang with her fragrant hands before adding in a heavy tone, "No matter who they are, as long as they refuse to leave, chop their

arms and legs off for me. I will take responsibility for whatever happens.”

“...” Yue Yang had initially thought that Luo Hua City Mistress was someone who was reasonable. Who would know that she was even more violent than a Celestial Crab, a tyrant beyond compare?

Yue Yang immediately took out the crescent blade from his back. Bloody Queen was a summon beast that he had already put his name on, so naturally he would kill anyone who dared to snatch it from him.

Anyway, the Luo Hua City Mistress had said that she would take responsibility. Why not kill without repercussions?

There were some places in the spiral floating-stone staircase where the floating stone had been destroyed, creating a big, terrifying pitfall on the path. Some floating stones were covered with blood and bird feathers, broken limbs and broken blades were scattered all over the ground. While Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress were busy making their way to the top, they could see Harpy corpses from time to time. There were also some abandoned bodies of level 3 monsters that was shot by the Harpy's feathers. A lot of the corpses were lying in a pool of blood, still moving. It was clear that they had not died yet.

A spider's huge corpse was strewn all over the place in a hideous mess, some parts were still even on fire.

The smell of burnt flesh and blood filled the air, stinging noses

and making you want to vomit.

It was obvious that this wasn't a human's attack but a large scale, demon-led attack.

Reaching the Flying Mountain's last Floating Stone step, Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress found a level 4 Demon Giant's corpse. It's head was already cut off by a terrifying strength, it's way of dying was simply bloody and horrifying.

"This time, there would definitely be a Demon General, or even a Demon Commander leading the army." Luo Hua City Mistress further indicated for Yue Yang to be more careful.

"Ai?"

When they reached the Flying Mountain, they passed through a narrow mountain path and climbed halfway up to the mountain. There, they saw over a hundred monsters from the Demon Abyss surrounding the Harpies, who had already been whittled down in numbers. There were at least three Demon Generals who were taking turns to attack, mounting a sneak attack on a blade-wielding giant, whose body was already covered in blood in this deathly battle. This blade-wielding giant looked a bit like a female Ox-head monster, but it was much taller. Waving its giant blade that looked like a guillotine, it charged up against the demons, slaughtering dozens of low-levelled demons, its strength was undefendable.

Other than the few attacks from the Demon Generals that could



cause injury to it, no other demons could stop this blade-wielding giant's charge.

Even the level 3 Longhorned Demons were killed with just one swing of this blade-wielding giant, their corpses splitting into two.

On the other side of the battlefield, there was a Bright-winged Banshee that was much bigger than the size of a normal person. It was twined by countless spider threads, and was unable to flap its wings to fly into the air. There were two Demon Generals holding large, sharp axes in their hands, violently attacking the Banshee. Although they couldn't kill the Bright-winged banshee that easily, the banshee's body became filled with injuries under the storm-like rain of attacks.

The Bright-winged Banshee let out a miserable cry, using all its might to struggle free from the spider silk; yet its wish couldn't hope to be fulfilled.

It was clear that it had already been completely restrained by its opponent.

Yue Yang reckoned that the Demon Generals had summoned a Tarantula or Trawl-net in order to fight against the Bright-winged Banshee, a flying-type beast. It seemed that the strategy had been to bind the agile Banshee, whose flying speed was ultrasonic, with their spider's thread. Then, when the Banshee fell to the ground and with its battle power greatly reduced, that was when they started to kill it... In Luo Hua City's Mistress's eyes, she would probably be able to make a much stronger deduction with her experience. For example, she could guess that the blade-wielding

giant must surely be suffering from the effects of the Weakening Demonic Moth, Bone Sucking Maggot and Manic Red Ant. Otherwise, as a bronze-ranked level 7 monster, it would not be injured so easily by the three Demon Generals. It was even more unlikely to have lost its sense of reason or be fighting disorderly instead.

“Ayayaya...”

An ear-piercing scream suddenly rang out through the air, almost causing a shockwave of sound.

No matter if it was a normal monster or a Demon General, after hearing the extremely sharp, high-pitched and ear-piercing scream, everyone fainted and fell to the ground one by one, like harvested wheats cut down to the ground.

Some low-levelled monsters even died immediately, their heads exploding like busted watermelons. Blobs of brains and flesh were strewn all over the place.

Even the strong blade-wielding giant and the bronze-ranked level 7 Blade Massacring Demoness dropped to the ground painfully, clutching onto its head.

When Yue Yang heard it, he also felt a little dizzy.

His vision turned black for a whole two to three seconds, as if someone had just knocked him from behind.

However, the Innate Qi in his body immediately responded to the ear-piercing sound in reflex, covering his whole body, and finally forming into something like a cyclone to protect his head, slowly revolving. The dizziness in his brain slowly dissipated, replaced by a refreshing feeling that could not be described with words. The refreshing feeling filled his whole head; not only had his condition improved, his head felt like it was a hundred times clearer than usual.

This Innate Qi's reflexive reaction made Yue Yang very happy.

Could it be that this is the second level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, "Five Insights Back To One"?

He had cultivated the second level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi for so long, but there were a lot of mysteries that he couldn't understand. Yue Yang always felt that he understood it somewhat, but at the same time, was somewhat clueless about it too. Under the Ten Thousand Year Old Oak Tree, Yue Yang had a revelation about Nature's Heart that increased his mental realm by a big step. At the same time, he had also understood the method to go to the third level. Right now, after receiving the terrifying scream attack, due to his Innate Qi's reflex movement to protect him, he suddenly understood the eyes, ears, mouth, nose and tongue, the "Five Insights Back To One". He had hugely increased the abilities of his five senses.

Compared to him, Luo Hua City Mistress couldn't remove the effects as fast. She covered her forehead with her hands as she moaned painfully, "This... this is the Bloody Queen's Banshee

Scream. Looks like she had met a powerful opponent. I need one minute to fully recover back to my optimal condition...If you can move, then quickly take advantage while the stun effect of the Banshee Scream is still in effect, and kill those Demon Generals... Wait, don't go, there are some people in the air... Careful, this fellow is called Ma Li Ang, he's one of the three prominent Demon Generals. He's a Flying Dragon Demon Knight, his abilities might even be on par with mine so... This battle might be extremely hard to fight. You must remember what I said before, in whatever situation you are facing, you must first prioritise saving your own life."

In the air, a dark figure suddenly descended on the ground with a thunderous sound.

Thudding heavily onto the ground, the figure caused a burst of ashes and broken stones to disperse upon its impact.

Yue Yang composed himself as he saw a demon knight riding on a black-coloured flying dragon's back, wearing a full suit of armor. He and his dragon had fallen to the ground together.

The black flying dragon's eyes had immediately turned white as it fainted to the ground. Dark blood oozed out of its mouth, eyes and ears. As for the Demon Knight on its back, he was clasp his head as he looked up to the sky and screamed painfully, as if someone had punctured an iron nail into his head. He looked like he was suffering terribly.

Towards such a result, Yue yang didn't feel that it was weird at all.

Separated by such a short distance, even he, who had reached the innate realm, felt like someone had knocked the back of his head with a hammer after hearing that ear-piercing cry. This fellow had received a direct attack from the cry at a short distance. It was already impressive enough that his head hadn't exploded and turned into mush. Seems like this fellow was that Ma Li Ang; so he was one of the three prominent Demon Commanders?

Three Prominent?

Sounds like they were powerful beings.

In the sky, there was also another gold-winged girl tumbling in the air. Her body was covered with blood, staining her snow white breasts and the the rest of her body, which was equipped with a demoness armor.

Something that appeared to be a dagger was embedded deep into her chest area.

Fresh blood flowed endlessly, dyeing her whole body red.

She hovered in the air with great difficulty, shuddering and trembling as she flew. She looked as if she wanted to escape from the battle. However, it seemed like she didn't even have energy to even flap her wings. In the end, she flew even lower and lower to the ground, and finally dropped to the ground in front of Yue Yang with a loud thudding sound... It looked like it was struggling to crawl up, but just as it was about to get up, it violently vomited a

whole mouthful of blood and fainted to the ground in pain.

Were both sides heavily injured?

Had this Bloody Queen and Demon Commander both fought until they were so heavily injured?

Yue Yang felt his heart thumping, he was so excited that his heartbeat had increased three times the normal rate. Doesn't this show that the heavens had sent him a Bloody Queen on a silver platter? If he still rejected this gift, he would probably receive divine punishment.

“You two can fight it out slowly, and I'll just pick this in the middle...” He immediately flew towards the Bloody Queen that had fainted, and was preparing to use Phantom Shadow to seize her body.

Suddenly, a fleeting breeze blew by.

A figure had appeared at his back at some point in time. The figure was wielding a Demon Blade that was weirdly shaped and shining with a bright golden light, and was preparing to swing it towards the back of Yue Yang's head...

# Chapter 88 – Killing Demon Generals

## Instantly

---

The figure cut Yue Yang in two with the demon blade. At the same time, the figure smirked coldly, “Idiot.”

However, he immediately froze.

He froze because Yue Yang’s body had magically disappeared.

The thing he had hacked in two wasn’t actually Yue Yang’s body; it was just something resembling Yue Yang. So where had the real Yue Yang gone?

“I agree. You are an idiot.” A Crescent Blade that shone brightly with a raging flame and glowed ominously with dark smoke suddenly appeared. In an instant, the blade was suddenly swung down fiercely towards the back of the figure, who was still holding his own blade, brilliantly splitting through the air. While the Crescent Blade was cutting through the demon’s armor, a foot suddenly stuck out, vulgarly giving the figure’s butt a violent kick. The figure involuntarily flew forward from the impact of the kick, flying straight on the ground like an arrow, hitting every single demon corpse on its path before finally crashing hard onto a mountain wall, making a loud, thundering sound upon the impact.

The mountain wall shook as dust flew all over the place.

On the ground, a long straight path caused by the figure dragging

through the ground was left behind.

Taking advantage of the enemy looking down on him, Yue Yang, whose sneak attack had been successful, cried for the loss in his heart. If he had his Giant Shadow to increase his strength by a hundred times, then this awesome Ma Li Ang would probably have died.

Right now, his strength was not high enough to injure him fatally...

A loud boom resounded from the mountain wall as a dark figure brandishing a magic blade suddenly charged out. It was indeed the knight that was previously riding on a black flying dragon before.

He was one of the three prominent Demon Commanders, Ma Li Ang.

Although he had suffered the heavy brunt from Yue Yang's sneak attack, his face was still full of arrogance. He leisurely brush the rocks off of his shoulders and looked towards Yue Yang in disdain, "Little worm, you have speed but your strength is too weak. What's your name?"

"Don't talk to him. He has a strange beast called Roaring Flying Dragon, which is a Blind Flying Dragon's soul. As long as you speak to him, then you would be silenced for at least five minutes. He wanted to stop you from summoning your grimoire. Quickly kill the Demon Generals, this fellow is mine!" As Luo Hua City Mistress finished speaking, Yue Yang could see through his Divine



Vision that from Ma Li Ang's armour at his back, a dark ball of energy was coming out, transforming slowly into a flying dragon's figure, charging towards Luo Hua City Mistress. As for Luo Hua City Mistress, she was already prepared from the beginning. Raising her hands, she summoned her gold-ranked grimoire. A shield glowing with a bright golden colour suddenly appeared, blocking the black energy that was shaped like a flying dragon just in time, keeping it outside the shield.

“Luo Hua City Mistress, long time no see. There's no meaning in fighting you; we've fought a dozen times but always end up in a draw. I believe this time would be no different. I am really skeptical. Will this subordinate of yours be able to last for more than a minute, fighting against my five Demon Generals who have joined together to attack him?” Ma Li Ang had also summoned a gold-ranked grimoire.

As he was speaking, the five Demon Generals all started shaking their head, their expressions filled with pain as they slowly stood up one by one.

They hadn't been able to endure the Bloody Queen's Banshee Scream no matter how strong their abilities had been.

Luo Hua City Mistress looked at Yue Yang and saw that the little brat had not suffered from any kind of effects, and her mind started to calm down. She didn't know why, but despite having only interacted with this brat for a few times, she could feel with her woman's natural sixth sense that this guy was worth depending upon. In her heart, she felt an unexplainable confidence in him.

If it had been any other person, she wouldn't have take a random little thief who was still going through Refining on the first floor to go to the third floor of Tong Tian Tower in advance, let alone bringing that person along to kill the Bloody Queen.

Against all expectations, without her even knowing why, she just had a confidence in him just by looking at him.

It was as if he was her best choice for a partner to collaborate with...

“Kill him for me!” Ma Li Ang had been observing Luo Hua City Mistress's expression closely, but he found that she wasn't showing any kind of fear. He immediately felt annoyed in the depths of his heart. Could it be that she was that confident in that agile little thief? Facing against the five Demon Generals that he personally picked to be his trusted aides, coupled with almost a hundred elite soldiers that he handpicked personally, could that agile thief really stand against them? Or could it be that this Luo Hua City Mistress was just pretending to be confident? With her astute calmness, she wouldn't have show fear even if she was in a disadvantage, so this could easily be a bluff.

“Yes Sir.” The five Demon Generals loudly pledged.

The five Demon Generals didn't attack together immediately, for they also did not feel that a little human thief deserves to fight against the strength of all five of them put together.

If not for Ma Li Ang's order, they would at most ordered a few Long-horned Demons over and use their sharp claws to tear this little brat to shreds. One Demon General started to step out from the crowd, preparing to attack, while another one watched over him from the back, just in case Luo Hua City Mistress suddenly mounted a sneak attack.

The other three continued to observe the battlefield, prepared to ambush the Blade Massacring Demoness.

The Ghost-clawed Rainbow-winged Banshee had successfully struggled free from the spider's net at some point in time, but it didn't continue to battle. Instead, it flew straight to the sky in panic.

Maybe it was because the Bloody Queen had suffered a grave injury and was going to die soon. Furthermore, the battle situation didn't look good at all. This Ghost-clawed Rainbow-winged banshee had actually abandoned its Bloody Queen and the land it was protecting, escaping on its own.

On the other hand, the Blade Massacring Demoness that was waking up from its dizziness. The one that looked like an ugly giant ox-head, decided not to retreat even when facing death. It charged furiously against the army of monsters, devouring them and attacking savagely. It refused to leave the battlefield no matter what. More than once, it tried to charge forward to help its gravely injured Bloody Queen, but due to its low intelligence, it received another poison-laced attack from the Manic Red Ant. It became an easy target for the Demon Generals to attack. It was provoked to the point that it was in extreme fury and forgot its mission to save

its Bloody Queen, only caring to pursue the Demon Generals instead. Otherwise, it would savagely attack the monsters beside it.

Seeing that the monster army couldn't stand against this bronze-ranked level 7 Blade Massacring Demoness at all, and had suffered great injuries, Ma Li Ang summoned a Silver-Spotted Flying Dragon to join the fray. It flew in the sky as it attacked, its motive was to control the Blade Massacring Demoness' rampage.

However, Ma Li Ang's main attention was still focused on Luo Hua City Mistress.

Having fought Luo Hua City Mistress a dozen times, he knew that this human girl's beasts had formidable damage power. They could kill their opponent in the blink of an eye.

If not for her needing time to charge some energy first, then he reckoned that other than himself, no other living thing would be able to survive her attacks.

"Corroding Flying Dragon." Ma Li Ang summoned another flying dragon.

Yue Yang realized that this fellow was practically a mad flying dragon collector who specialized in contracting flying dragons.

He rode on a black flying dragon, had a Roaring Flying Dragon that could secretly attack his opponents, a Silver-Spotted Flying Dragon that could discharge electricity to attack the female ox-

head, and he still summoned a Corroding Flying Dragon to attack Luo Hua City Mistress... How many flying dragons did this fellow actually have contracted? Yue Yang was really speechless. Of course, flying dragon are good beasts, but is there a need to make all his contracted beasts flying dragons?

Luo Hua City Mistress let the three-tailed Snow Fox between her feet stay inside her shield. This Corroding Flying Dragon was Ma Li Ang's method to fight against the Six-tailed Fox Spirit that her Three-tailed Snow Fox would transform into.

Six-tailed Fox Spirit was extremely pure, hence it was afraid of contamination. If its pure spirit was contaminated, then it's battle power would be greatly reduced.

She humphed coldly as she summoned a Bright Fairy. She ordered it to hover inside, absorbing and storing its light ability rapidly.

"Be careful, if it gets really dangerous, summon your grimoire and hide inside the shield." Luo Hua City Mistress warned Yue Yang as she closed her eyes and concentrated, preparing to use the quickest method to store light energy and use it to immediately kill the monster army and the Demon Generals.

"Kill." Ma Li Ang obviously knew the terrifying power of her aura attack. He immediately raised his hands towards Yue Yang and made a signal to the Demon Generals to kill him.

"Wtf? Do you think I'm a pig who would be slaughtered by your

orders...?” Yue Yang was extremely dissatisfied, if he hadn’t been thinking about seizing the Bloody Queen’s body using his Phantom Shadow, he would already have killed those Demon Generals with his Hui Jin Magic Blade. Who would even let them have the chance to display their powers? However, the Bloody Queen’s willpower was extremely strong, and Yue Yang had been secretly using his Phantom Shadow to seize her, but it was as if she knew that she would become a puppet after being seized, so she used all her willpower to keep her soul.

Even if she was nearing death, she was still a gold-ranked level 5 queen. No matter how many times Yue Yang had tried, he wasn’t able to succeed.

Seeing that the Bloody Queen’s willpower was simply too strong, and that she’d rather die than submit, Yue Yang was left with no other way other than to give up his intention to seize her soul. He prepared to keep his shadow and kill the rest of the Demon Generals who was brandishing their blades as they charged towards him. He would think about seizing her soul later.

It would be a pity if the Bloody Queen died, but he couldn’t seize her soul no matter what he did, so Yue Yang couldn’t force his intention.

Seizing souls had a limited success rate, furthermore, his target was a gold-ranked level 5 queen beast. It was not a bronze-ranked level 5 Barbarian Cow, so it was perfectly normal for the Phantom Shadow to fail in seizing her soul.

Yue Yang had just turned around, and he had already blocked an

incoming attack from a Demon General's swords as he waved his Crescent Blade using an insanely quick speed. He then swung his Hui Jin down to kill...suddenly, a bright golden light shone from behind him, making everyone shocked beyond compare, locking their gazes on the source of the light.

The thing that made Yue Yang almost go mad with joy while also making him stunned speechless was that once he had given up seizing the Bloody Queen's body, the Queen immediately initiated to fuse together with the Phantom Shadow, and was contracted in just a moment. Seemed like she was afraid of death, but her pride as a queen made her want to die instead of letting her body become a puppet. That was the reason why she resisted the seizing even on her deathbed. However, when Yue Yang gave up on trying to seize her body and prepared to keep his Phantom Shadow, she immediately took the Phantom Shadow into her embrace. Its whole body fused together with the Phantom Shadow's, smoothly and easily, making a contract with Yue Yang in just a short moment.

The Phantom Shadow was originally Yue Yang's Guardian Spirit Beast, but when the Blood Queen fused together with it, she still had to make a contract again. This really baffled Yue Yang.

Right now, does she count as his Guardian Spirit Beast, or a normal summon beast?

The thing that baffled Yue Yang the most was that he could control the Bloody Queen's body, and he could feel how weak her body was, but he couldn't feel her thoughts at all...This was yet another unanswerable question.

“Kill him, quickly!” Ma Li Ang immediately bellowed.

If the Bloody Queen didn't die, she would be the hardest opponent to face against once she recovered from her injuries.

Previously, if it wasn't for a sneak attack that successfully plunged a gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger into her chest, Ma Li Ang thought that the battle situation right now would be the other way around.

Right at the moment when the five Demon Generals, whose expressions had all changed, charged towards Yue Yang altogether. Yue Yang reached out and pulled out the Dragon Slaying Dagger that was still stuck into the Bloody Queen's heart. At the same time, he smashed a Healing Stone to heal her injuries. Actually even without a Healing Stone, the gold-ranked Bloody Queen would definitely not die so easily. The thing that was the most dangerous to her life was that Dragon Slaying Dagger that even Giant Dragons were afraid of... Now that the Dragon Slaying Dagger was already pulled out, the Bloody Queen's injuries were healing rapidly. Furthermore, bathed under the Healing Stone's recovery light, she recovered even more quickly.

Although her body was still very weak, her life was not in danger.

Furthermore, Yue Yang reckoned that she was still counted as his Guardian Spirit Beast. Possibly, she wouldn't truly ever die from this moment onwards.



As the five Demon Generals attacked altogether, Yue Yang, who felt a large amount of energy to summon in his body, immediately summoned his bronze grimoire and the Barbarian Cow Shadow at the same time. Could it be that after gaining the Nature's heart and the Five Insights Back to One, there was an improvement in his summoning skills?

The Barbarian Cow Shadow exerted an imposing presence right at the moment it came out. Fire flared out from her mouth and nose as her eyes burned brightly with a red glow.

A Demon General which she had stared at suddenly cried miserably as its whole body dropped to the ground from mid-air. It lie paralyzed on the ground as its legs looked like a cockroach that had been trampled flat.

Although it didn't die immediately, there was no hope to save this fellow anymore.

Killing Demon Generals instantly?

Ma Li Ang was dumbstruck. How, how could this happen?

The rest of the four Demon Generals swung their weapons onto the Bronze Grimoire's shield, but was all reflected and pushed a few metres back. Watching their colleague's body being slowly trampled flat in panic, they were scared out of their wits. It wasn't scary if their opponents were strong, they would only need to give it their all to fight against them. But how could they fight an opponent that could kill them in an instant?

## Chapter 89 – Banshee’s Scream

---

The Barbarian Cow Shadow charged towards the four Demon Generals. Her mind, conditioned not to feel any ounce of fear nor caution, was completely unaffected by external factors.

Yue Yang stayed inside his shield, calmly communicating with her using his mind. It was his first time trying out physical skills using the Barbarian Cow Shadow’s body. Of course, he couldn’t make her unleash something like an Innate skill. But Yue Yang wouldn’t use an Innate Skill on Ma Li Ang anyway, unless he had complete confidence that he would be able to kill him in one shot. It must be understood that Ma Li Ang owned a golden grimoire and an unknown number of flying dragons. Even if all of his flying dragon were dead, he could still use a teleportation scroll to run away. To kill a Demon Commander that owned a grimoire, unless they were fighting on the Battlefield of Certain Death, was otherwise quite impossible.

In order to kill Ma Li Ang, he had to wait for an opportunity when Ma Li Ang went out from his shield...

Let alone Innate skills, even the Yue Clan’s Spear Technique that Yue Yang tried to make the Barbarian Cow Shadow follow, she couldn’t perform it at all.

With much difficulty, the only physical skills that Yue Yang could control Barbarian Cow Shadow to attack with is the “Beheading Iron Blade Technique”, the world’s worst physical skill, and the similarly bad physical skill, “Crushing Stone Hammer Technique”.

However, compared to the the Barbarian Cow Shadow's attacking power previously, she had already undergone a huge improvement. At least, she wouldn't be awkwardly brandishing her weapon with both of her arms flailing wildly towards her opponent like last time. Right now, under Yue Yang's control, she had calculations on whether to advance or retreat, and her footwork always left her room to maneuver. The way she swung both of her arms was different now, she swung it with just the right amount of strength. Although the technique she used was the worst physical skill, "Crushing Stone Hammer Technique", she delivered powerful blows with strength that was a hundred times stronger than a normal person's.

Facing against someone giving all her effort and unafraid of death, the four Demon Generals had already submitted to their fate fighting against the Barbarian Cow Shadow. But against all of their expectations, the undefeatable monster could even perform physical skills.

The four Demon Generals fought until they were depressed.

The moment they were not careful, another Demon General would fall into the Barbarian Cow Shadow's attack, collapsing to the ground...

One Demon General with a tall and lanky built had the quickest speed. He managed to plunge his sword into the Barbarian Cow Shadow's chest, injuring her heart.

In his mind, Barbarian Cow Shadow was a humanoid beast, so she could probably be killed by injuring her critical spots. But he never thought that she was actually a phantom shadow. She only turned that way after her body was seized. Both her body and life did not possess the weaknesses of a normal beast.

Furthermore, the Barbarian Cow Shadow was still his Guardian Spirit Beast. Even if her body was completely destroyed, she would still be fine. If her energy was used up, she would only return to the bronze grimoire to rest.

Unless Yue Yang died, she would never truly die.

When the tall and lanky Demon General succeeded in thrusting his sword into the Barbarian Cow's heart, he twisted the sword ruthlessly around, intending to forcefully twist the Barbarian Cow Shadow's heart to shreds.

A cruel smile appeared on his face.

However, his smile was frozen immediately just after it had appeared.

This was because he saw the Barbarian Cow Shadow whose heart had been pierced with a sword still looking fine as she reached out with one of her huge hands and grasped his shoulders tight in an iron-like grip. In the next moment, her other hand violently sent a heavy blow onto the tall and lanky Demon General's elbow. The Demon General who had wanted to struggle free by using force initially let out a miserable cry as his whole arm suddenly turned

limp. Under the violent torrent of blind attacks from the other three Demon Generals, the Barbarian Cow Shadow ignored her gravely lacerated skin injuries, and held on tightly to the tall and lanky Demon General instead. Looking down, she shook her head a little and immediately banged her forehead on the tall and lanky Demon General's forehead.

A shocking sound of collision resounded, and the three Demon Generals could hear the sound of their colleague's skull being broken in.

Inside the "Crushing Stone Hammer Technique" skill book that sells for 10 coppers each, there wasn't a skill called "headbutting".

Yue Yang had modified the Crushing Stone Hammer Technique a little, using the Cow's head as a hammer's head instead. The resulting battle power was actually not that bad.

Although Crushing Stone Hammer Technique did not have a headbutting skill, there was still one type of violent whirling technique... The initial technique was to pull the hammer's head as far back as possible, then whirl it using a great momentum to hit the opponent's head.

Yue Yang had decided to modify it a little. He made the Barbarian Cow Shadow grab the tall and lanky Demon General's body and threw his body as far back as possible, just like a hammer. In the next moment, he made the Barbarian Cow Shadow pull the General's body to the opposite direction, smashing him down heavily to the ground. The next step was simple. Yue Yang simply let go of his mind control on the Barbarian Cow Shadow, letting

her use her own abilities. The Barbarian Cow Shadow charged at the Demon General, whose head had burst open and status as a living organism was questionable, and jumped high above him. Her large cow hoof landed on the Demon General as she unleashed her trampling skill, “Stone Crushing a Crab”.

This time, let alone Yue Yang, even this Demon General’s three other buddies, or anyone else in that matter, felt that this Demon General could still survive.

After acquiring a little intelligence, the Barbarian Cow Shadow also seemed to be able to use weaponry.

But she couldn’t differentiate which things were weapons, and grabbed the corpse of the tall and lanky Demon General instead to pound wildly on the three terrified Demon Generals that were pale as death. By the time the three Demon Generals had escaped backwards out of fear, the tall and lanky Demon General had already been smashed to the point that only half of his badly mutilated corpse was left.

The three Demon Generals saw that their future was completely bleak.

The beasts that they summoned did not have an effect on the Barbarian Cow Shadow at all. It did not matter if it was the Weakening Demonic Moth, Bone Sucking Maggot or the Manic Red Ant, they were useless against the Barbarian Cow Shadow. When the Tarantula and the Trawl-net spit out their silk nets, the three Demon Generals thought that they would be able to restrain the Barbaric Cow Shadow. But who would know that the Barbarian

Cow Shadow could breathe fire? The spider nets were completely burnt away. The large-bodied Tarantula that could only move slowly couldn't escape on time. It cried miserably as it was killed instantly by another [Doom's Eyes] attack.

Today, Yue Yang's mood was quite good. The Barbarian Cow Shadow had unleashed [Doom's Eyes] twice in one battle today. His mood was really good, especially brilliant.

However, this had instead become the start of the three Demon General's nightmare.

Although they knew that this kind of attack that could kill instantly had an extremely low chance of success, they still couldn't confidently say that they wouldn't be the unlucky one.

On the other side, Luo Hua City Mistress who had finished charging her energy, unleashed a devastating Aurora that exploded towards the demon army.

As the blazing white light flashed, it instantly killed ten longhorned demons. Even the Blade Massacring Demoness that couldn't escape in time and the Silver-spotted Flying Dragon were completely engulfed by the aurora, their bodies destroyed. They instantly fell to the ground, crying out in anguish.

Ma Li Ang was seething with anger from the sudden turn in the battle situation. Why did he have to meet Luo Hua City Mistress, this strong opponent, here and had no way to escape from this situation?

He summoned a Flying Dragon that was even many times bigger than the normal flying dragons, the Roundhorned Flying Dragon. He had wanted to use the Roundhorned Flying Dragon to swallow the Barbarian Cow Shadow whole, but upon seeing that the Luo Hua City Mistress was storing her energy again, he immediately ordered the Roundhorned and the Corroding Flying Dragon to attack Luo Hua City Mistress, trying not to give her the opportunity to bring out the Six-tailed Fox Spirit's formidable power. He knew that the moment the Six-tailed Fox Spirit transform, this Luo Hua City Mistress's battle power would increase by hundred folds with the help of the Six-tailed Fox Spirit.

If he let her charge her energy for another Aurora attack, even if he could withstand it with his shield, his flying dragons and subordinates would probably all die off.

“Quickly kill him, don't bother with that Barbarian Cow Woman. This kind of beast that are not afraid of death would definitely have a summoning time limit. Furthermore, it must have consumed a lot of spiritual energy. As long as you guys break his shield and break his mental concentration, the Barbarian Cow Woman would probably disappear on her own. Without the Barbarian Cow Woman, he wouldn't even be worth mentioning,” Ma Li Ang shouted.

“Yes. Come here and kill me quickly, I can't wait anymore,” Yue Yang invited them full of sincerity.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow indeed had a time limit, and its existing time limit was a little bit lower than the ten days limit she



had before. However, she could probably stay for 5 to 6 days from the day she was summoned without a problem. If Ma Li Ang were to know about this cheat time limit, he would probably be vomiting blood and die out of anger.

Ma Li Ang really wanted to order the Roundhorned Flying Dragon to fly over and swallow the Barbarian Cow Woman, ending the battle on Yue Yang's side.

However, he was worried that Luo Hua City Mistress would use that opportunity to release another Aurora that would kill his flying dragon that had the most battle power.

In his eyes, the little thief Yue Yang who owned a Bronze Grimoire wouldn't even compare to one of Luo Hua City Mistress's hands even if there were ten of him here. Hence, he had ordered the three Demon Generals to kill this little thief. The battle's main objective was still on how to take down that Luo Hua City Mistress. With regards to the heavily injured Bloody Queen, even if she wouldn't die, she would probably not be able to recover her battle capabilities immediately.

Although he despised his three subordinates incompetencies, Ma Li Ang still needed them right now to finish their tasks.

Furthermore, he understood clearly that it wasn't because his subordinates were useless, it was because they had just went through a huge battle beforehand. If their summoned beasts had not been killed by the Blade Massacring Demoness in the previous battle just now, their battle power wouldn't be as bad as this.

“You guys can hack on slowly while I sleep for a while, wake me up when you break through the shield,” Yue Yang said as he ignored the three Demon Generals hacking on his Halo Shield. Yue Yang did not need to understand the Nature’s Heart for this, even with the strength he received from stepping into the Innate realm, he would not be affected by the little attacks to his Halo Shield. This attack might work for normal Rankers, but it would not work for Yue Yang at all.

He moved a stone over and lied on the ground, comfortably sleeping with the stone as a pillow. He placed both of his hands at the back of his head as he rest his leg on top of the other. He was even shaking his leg leisurely.

Of course, he only did this for appearance. His main aim was to confuse his enemies and get their attention.

Yue Yang’s real intention was to control the Barbarian Cow Shadow to move towards the Blade Massacring Demoness who was heavily injured from the Aurora. Yue Yang didn’t know if this fellow’s Demon Crystal would be beneficial for the Barbarian Cow Sharow, but if it was really useful, then the Barbarian Cow Shadow might even rise in level. Furthermore, there was still the Reconstruction skill that he had never tried before. This Blade Massacring Demoness also had an ox-head, so it might even belong to the ox category.

(Shiro: “Reconstruction” from chapter 80, Phantom Shadow’s new skill – After taking a certain beast’s body as its new body, it can absorb the body and energy of the same type of beasts to

reconstruct its body. The target must be a living organism. The success rate is linked to the target's power and will.)

At least, she's more cow like than a snail or a longhorned beetle. She even looked a little like an ox Demon Queen.

(Shiro: cow/ox in chinese is niu, snail is wo niu and longhorned beetle is tian niu)

Suddenly, Luo Hua City Mistress let out a ball of light like the Aurora attack, exploding straight towards the Corroding Flying Dragon and making it a Barbecued Flying Dragon.

Once its nemesis was dead, the Three-tailed Snow Fox immediately transformed.

Its body to more than ten times its original size.

Its six long tails shook a little as the Six-tailed Fox Spirit let out a sweet smelling scent. It sent a mouthful of white fog of perfume towards the Roundhorned Flying Dragon. The Roundhorned Flying Dragon's huge body immediately fell to the ground with a loud boom. It completely didn't have the strength to fly in the air, hence it could only fight the Six-tailed Fox Spirit on the ground. Although the Six-tailed Fox Spirit's body was big, it had a quick speed. Its six tails were like giant whips relentlessly attacking the Roundhorned Flying Dragon, making it scream in pain. Ma Li Ang's face darkened as he stopped paying attention to Yue Yang. He summoned another smaller Dual-Winged Flaming Flying Dragon and ordered it to assist the Roundhorned Flying Dragon in attacking the Six-tailed Fox Spirit.

Although the battle on Ma Li Ang and Luo Hua City Mistress's side was tense and vigorous, Yue Yang was leisurely relaxing on his side instead.

He had controlled the Barbarian Cow Shadow to first trample on the Silver-spotted Flying Dragon alive, before dragging back the body of the Blade Massacring Demoness that had been half destroyed from the Aurora attack.

The three Demon General who didn't understand why Yue Yang had done that, were alarmed and retreated quickly...Yue Yang who had gotten up with one jump didn't show any mercy towards the Blade Massacring Demoness who kept on struggling as it was dragged back. He activated Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill and restrained it to the ground, before striking its chest with the golden dagger. When the gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger penetrated inside it, even the strong bronze-ranked level 7 Blade Massacring Demoness could not withstand the attack and fell dead on the ground.

"What the heck are they doing?" Ma Li Ang stole a glance in the midst of his fierce battle and saw that his three subordinates were staring at the little thief like fools instead of attacking him. Ma Li Ang was immediately furious; he was so angry that steam almost come out of his ears.

He could understand their actions if the little brat was hiding inside his shield, but he had walked several metres away from his shield. Why aren't they attacking him?

He did not have the time to notice that Yue Yang's shield still exist even after he walked away from his shield.

Similarly, Luo Hua City Mistress also couldn't multi-task and pay attention to Yue Yang's battle situation. She closed her eyes and meditate, preparing to condense her Spiritual Energy, charging her next Aurora Sphere. She could hear Yue Yang's voice, so she knew in her heart that Yue Yang was fine. She had always thought that Yue Yang had been hiding inside his shield and jeering at his enemies; she didn't know that he had won a complete victory.

Hearing Ma Li Ang's furious bellow, the three Demon Generals was so frightened that they started to tremble. They hurriedly charged forward, targeting Yue Yang instead of the Barbarian Cow Shadow.

As long as they kill this bizarre little thief, their battle would end.

Just as they started to imagine their victory, a golden light suddenly shone from within the shield. That Bloody Queen that had been unconscious after suffering from her heavy injury slowly opened her light blue eyes that carried a tinge of purple. She opened her mouth and let out an extremely mournful scream...

Immediately, it didn't matter if it was Luo Hua City Mistress, Ma Li Ang or the Six-tailed Fox Spirit and the Roundhorned Flying Dragon that were fighting each other, it was as if everyone had been struck by lightning as they fell to the ground, stunned.

The three Demon Generals that were the closest to the scream

started to bleed out from their eyes, nose, mouth and ears. They fell to the ground one by one.

Yue Yang surprisedly found that although he had also heard the scream, he did not need to use his Innate Qi to protect his ears. He was also completely unaffected by the scream's effect.

Lifting his head, he suddenly realised that Ma Li Ang's shield had disappeared. Yue Yang did not care about the three Demon Generals in front of him who had been killed instantly and flew quickly towards the unconscious Ma Li Ang. The Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands drew a long line of flame and smoke as he stabbed it mercilessly right into Ma Li Ang's heart. Three prominent heads? Demon Commander? As long as you are not within your shield's protection, then you are just trash.

## Chapter 90 – Level Up, Silver Grimoire!

---

The magic blade Hui Jin was faster than lightning, stabbing into Ma Li Ang's heart ferociously.

As if they had life, the Heart of Melting Fire and the Demonified Crystal both trembled at the same time as they manically absorbed the energy from Ma Li Ang's demon heart.

Yue Yang thought that Ma Li Ang was done for... But then, an unexpected turn of events made Yue Yang astonished.. Ma Li Ang who had a knife stabbed into his demon heart did not fall like ordinary Demon Generals. Instead, he had awoken from his daze, and painfully cried out. Ma Li Ang's cry shocked Yue Yang and he quickly retreated back, pulling out the magic blade Hui Jin from Ma Li Ang's heart. Like a wild beast trying to escape death, Ma Li Ang retreated at a frantic pace as he purposely twisted his body on the ground. Before Yue Yang could react and pursue him, Ma Li Ang had no other choice but to roll backwards over and over again, battered and gravely injured. Yue Yang had also reacted quickly, but was just a moment too slow. When the magic blade Hui Jin had pursued with its second strike, on the verge of hitting him, a black teleportation pillar of light had covered Ma Li Ang's body.

The magic blade Hui Jin had almost sliced Ma Li Ang's chest in half, but it was unable to deal the deathblow to this Demon Commander.

Ma Li Ang had suffered serious injuries and was almost instantly killed by Yue Yang.

However, right at the final moment, the teleportation pillar soared up, allowing him to escape the deathblow... When he was rolling on the ground just now, Ma Li Ang, who was fleeing for his life, had broken the 'Teleportation Ball' which was special to the Demon Abyss.

If he was a human warrior, he would have definitely died.

Yue Yang would definitely not let him have a chance to open a teleportation scroll. But, the efficiency of the teleportation ball was far too high.

More importantly, Ma Li Ang's speed of retreat and his body's unique structure made Yue Yang unable to predict his moves accurately. He did not manage to seize the opportunity to eliminate Ma Li Ang in a single strike.

As for why Ma Li Ang could still move even though his demon heart had suffered serious injuries, Yue Yang was also extremely stunned. When he pursued him with the second strike, at the very moment when the magic blade Hui Jin had cut open Ma Li Ang's chest, he had discovered from that bloody wound that there were actually two demon hearts in him. If he had only managed to destroy one of them, he could only cause serious injuries to Ma Li Ang. However, he would not be able to completely kill him, one of the three Great Demon Commanders.

If he had known earlier that Ma Li Ang had two demon hearts, then Yue Yang would definitely not let this Demon Commander live.



Inexperience. This was the regret of inexperience.

Ma Li Ang who was at death's door had disappeared after the teleportation. His gold grimoire had also disappeared with him. It looked like the summoning grimoire would not be far from the master. However, the Flying Dragons that Ma Li Ang had summoned met with their calamity. Yue Yang, who was in a rage, had thrown his crescent blade towards the unconscious Black Flying Dragon, killing it off with his giant Crescent Blade. Then, Yue Yang threw his Hui Jin Magic Blade into the heart of the Flaming Flying Dragon. The largest Roundhorned Flying Dragon was instantly killed by Yue Yang's Innate Sword Qi, who was coming down to the ground from up in the air.

Yue Yang would definitely not let these flying dragons wake up again and escape from this place alive. It did not matter whether Ma Li Ang had the ability to de-summon them, but he would definitely kill them all, to prevent them from becoming a nuisance in the future.

On the other side, the Barbaric Cow Shadow had already flattened the heads of the three fainted Demon Generals.

Luo Hua City's Mistress was still dazed, and her Six-tailed Fox Spirit was also closing its eyes as it moaned weakly. It was evident that the Banshee's Scream was extremely painful for them. The Luo Hua City's Mistress' Halo Shield had disappeared, but the sapphire ring on her slender finger had been emitting a faint blue light ever since she was knocked unconscious. A soul with the appearance of countless drops of water balls surrounded her body,

as if they were protecting her.

“Could it be that this ring was the legendary treasure with the spirit attribute? A Spirit Equipment?” Yue Yang had not seen such a treasure who had the intention to protect its master. But, from the diary of the tragic guy, Yue Yang had read before when he mentioned about the priceless treasure, the Spirit Equipment.

For example, the sword that the tragic guy’s father possessed was a Spirit Equipment.

Yue Yang did not understand much about matters regarding Spirit Equipment. According to what the tragic guy had written down, these types of equipment were formed when the summoned beast had died in battle but its soul could not bear to leave its master. Thus, it would merge into certain treasures, forming a spiritual body to continue accompanying its master, fighting with them. Spirit Equipment could be said to be equivalent to a summoned beast which could participate in battle without requiring a summon. But, because it had lost its body, its power would be greatly diminished, so it could only support the master in limited ways...

When Luo Hua City’s Mistress had fainted, it looked like the soul in the ring had the intention to protect its master and automatically came out to do so.

Even if its protective ability was not powerful enough, it was at least a hard-earned feeling from the soul.

“Then, doesn’t my Hui Jin count as a Spirit Equipment?” Yue Yang had a bit of a headache now. The magic blade Hui Jin did not possess the souls of his beloved beasts that had died, but rather the Flame Lord and the Bone Dragon. If they still had consciousness, they would most likely hate Yue Yang to the bone, and definitely not protect Yue Yang if he ever fainted.

He was unclear about matters regarding the magic blade Hui Jin. Yue Yang then looked at the Bloody Queen, so what had actually happened to her?

Did she count as his own Phantom Shadow?

Or was she just a normal beast?

The only thing that Yue Yang could clearly sense was that this Bloody Queen was completely different from the Barbaric Cow Shadow. She had her own thoughts and could move freely. For example, when she flew out of the protective barrier, it was completely of her own volition. Yue Yang had not given an order for her to do so at all. What was different from Xiao Wen Li was that Xiao Wen Li was not controllable by Yue Yang. The little snake loli would come out whenever she wanted to, and rest in Yue Yang’s body as she wished... If Yue Yang wanted her to join in the battle, he would have to call her in his heart, and could not control her.

Yue Yang could forcibly control the body of this Bloody Queen. This was slightly similar to the Barbaric Cow Shadow.

Even if her body was extremely weak, the Bloody Queen stood up, straightening her body and opened her violet-blue eyes that could move other's hearts, looking straight at Yue Yang.

Only now did Yue Yang manage to see clearly what the Bloody Queen really looked like. A headful of blazing red hair was draped over her shoulders and back. Her curls looked like fire, and from time to time, a beam of gold would flash from her body. These beams of gold was to signify the aura of a Gold-ranked beast. At her back, there was a pair of angelic wings, but the colour of the wings was a brilliant gold instead of white. At the tips of the wings, sharp ends that looked like the wings of a devil were present, giving the sense of strangeness where good and evil coexisted together. (Sephillia: metatron)

Most of the skin in front was bare. However, she had a few golden bands around her arms.

Her chest was covered by some type of crimson plate armour. On top, a violet-black cufflink connected a few pieces of silk between her two breasts. This crimson plate armour was clearly a special clothing. It barely covered the top of her areola that looked like a flower bud, giving people a kind of alluring sexual appeal.

If she let out even more attraction than this, it would be fatal to anyone.

Her stomach was smooth, with a deep and full navel, splitting her body into sections with a golden ratio. Her bewitching body looked even more perfect under this contrast.

Below, the same kind of armour covered her. It was just small enough to cover her most sacred little garden.

This, this was essentially the bikini of the other world! It was sexy yet deadly! Seeing the exquisite mounds and the flawless white skin of the Bloody Queen, Yue Yang could not help but swallow his saliva.

A contracted beast. Looks like finding beautiful beasts would be better... There was no need to talk about their combat ability first. At least, they were a feast for the eyes. If he had contracted a tiger or a lion and had to feed them meat daily, then wouldn't he become a pet trainer in this other world? At the same time, Yue Yang also had a great dream. That was, aside from cultivating his physical skills, he must contract the most beautiful bishoujo beasts in the world. Those beasts like Hui Tai Lang could only stay in a corner. There were extremely limited spots for contracting beasts, all of them should be reserved for those bishoujo beasts...

Petting Hui Tai Lang when he had free time?

That was too disgusting, he should be pinching these bishoujo beasts' cheeks during his free time.

The Bloody Queen probably did not know how lecherous her master was. Instead, she started spewing a long chain of sentences in the language of the demon abyss. Yue Yang could not understand a single word.

There was a language barrier. No matter what the Bloody Queen said, Yue Yang could not understand it at all. He waved his hands, saving the Bloody Queen the trouble of speaking. Before finding an acceptable interpreter, all that she said would be nonsense to him. Seeing that Yue Yang had ignored her and only bothering with digging out the magic crystals from the massacre done by his blades, coupled with seeing the battlefield covered in smoke and her home burning in flames, she suddenly covered her face and cried loudly...

“Ah? You can still cry, eh?” Yue Yang did not expect the Bloody Queen to possess a rich amount of emotions. Before this, he had always thought that she was the kind of perfect puppet as if she were a female android.

“Uuu...” The Bloody Queen cried even more when she heard this.

“Actually, I understand it well! From a queen that ruled high above, you turned into my slave. The feeling will definitely not be nice, but you were the one who initiated the contract with me first. You can’t blame me for this. Not only that, if you didn’t contract with me just now, your life would be over. Strictly speaking, I saved your life!” Yue Yang had originally wanted to console the Bloody Queen saying, “Don’t cry, I’ll make sure you lead a happy life”, but if he said this the other side would probably cry even louder. So, he left this sentence out.

(Shiro: I’ll make sure you lead a happy life – is often said by a groom to his bride during their wedding)

Towards the Bloody Queen who was crying bitterly, Yue Yang did not console her further.

This was because the more he tried to console her, the more she would cry.

Yue Yang dug out all of the magic crystals of the flying dragons and the Blade Massacring Demoness before offering them up to the Barbaric Cow Shadow. In the end, she only took the Blade Massacring Demon as she levelled up along with Yue Yang's bronze grimoire.

The bronze grimoire was finally history. This time, when the grimoire had levelled up, it turned from Advanced-ranked Bronze to Beginner-ranked Silver...

After the summoning grimoire rose in grade, the Ancient Code granted the Phantom Shadow the third ability, 'Shadow Evasion'. The extra pages that Yue Yang had been hoping for for a long time still did not appear.

**Shadow Evasion:** The Phantom Shadow can freely blend into the darkness. The naked eye is unable to see its existence. Under special environments, the host can provide a large amount of spiritual qi to create a black fog, to forcefully blend into the darkness. This skill cannot be used in front of an enemy with strength surpassing the host.

"Does this mean only the Phantom Shadow could do it, or both the Barbaric Cow Shadow and the Bloody Queen could too?" Seeing that the sun was high up in the sky, Yue Yang realized he could not test it out right now. Otherwise, he would want to test

this Shadow Evasion out.

Yue Yang did not have enough time to examine the changes after his grimoire rose to a silver grimoire.

Now, he hurriedly rushed over to the Barbaric Cow Shadow's side instead, helping her who had levelled up to reconstruct her body... At first, Yue Yang had thought that he would need to do the reconstruction himself, so he had fantasised in his heart. He was prepared to turn the Barbaric Cow Shadow into a busty Draenei warrior. Alas, who would have known that the reconstruction was completely done by the Barbaric Cow Shadow's instinct?

The Barbaric Cow Shadow frantically absorbed the energy that Yue Yang's palm was supplying. Her entire body started to slowly change shape.

The reconstruction process was actually very fast. Within a minute, it had stopped.

Yue Yang was extremely tired. In the end, he discovered that the Barbaric Cow Shadow did not become a busty cowhorned beauty; she was still an ox-head.

However, looking closer, the Barbaric Cow Shadow's body was much better than before. her entire body was more subtle and slimmer. Although it was still muscular with muscles flaring outwards, her face bore much closer resemblance to a human, even to the point of starting to have the foundations of a beauty. The outline was ten times better than just now. Of course, strictly



speaking, she was still an ox-head. If he wanted her to become a beautiful cowgirl, it would take at least eight to ten times of reconstruction when she levelled up, otherwise she would not be able to change completely into a busty cowhorn beauty.

“Take your time to level up, it’s not like I can hurry it up anyway. The most important thing to think about right now is how to initiate the variant evolution.” Yue Yang found out that after the Barbaric Cow Shadow had eaten the Bronze-ranked Level 7 Blade Massacring Demoness’ magic crystal, she actually rose to Bronze-ranked Level 5.

He thought in his heart that he had to find a way to let her variant evolve into a Silver-ranked beast, otherwise once she rose to become Bronze-ranked Level 6, there would not be much of a future for her anymore.

According to the plan that Luo Hua City’s Mistress had talked about, the best way to go about turning that Bronze-ranked Level 5 beast into Silver-ranked, was for her to swallow a Gold-ranked Level 6 or above Barbaric Bull magic crystal... This was easier said than done. Where could Yue Yang get his hands on a magic crystal of a Gold-ranked Level 6 Barbaric Bull? Not to mention Gold-ranked Level 6, even Silver-ranked Level 6 Barbaric Bulls could not be found anywhere... Yue Yang originally wanted to give up on his ideas, but then an inspiration struck his head.

Ah, that place might have it!

# Chapter 91 – Bloody Queen's Secret

---

Yue Yang turned around and looked at Luo Hua City's Mistress who was still lying on the ground. This girl had been unconscious for so long, should he take this opportunity to dally with her a little...no, should he go over and perform CPR and give her a chest massage?

Just as he had walked over and was about to touch her with his wolfy paws, the Six-tailed Fox Spirit suddenly woke up and jumped back to Luo Hua City's Mistress's side.

It didn't look at Yue Yang with hostility, but used its black, intelligent doe-eyes to look at him warmly instead. Those eyes looked extremely similar to a person's eyes, full of spirit and intelligence. Yue Yang suspected that it had the ability to have a spiritual connection with Luo Hua City's Mistress. If he tried to grope her with his wolfy paws, maybe the fox spirit would record it down and report it to its master later on. At that time, his image of a decent man would probably receive a huge damage.

On the other hand, the Bloody Queen who had finished her crying bout was also secretly observing Yue Yang's movements, as if she was examining her future master's character.

He could let the Six-tailed Fox Spirit pass, since it could not talk anyway.

But the Bloody Queen could talk. If by any chance she was unhappy one day and decided to leak the secret to Luo Hua City's

Mistress, then his perverted nature would come to light. Yue Yang's eyeballs made a turn as he set his heart down. He assumed an air of calmness as he reached out and feel the pulse on Luo Hua City's Mistress's wrist, just like those old physicians in Ancient China. He shook his head slowly, and had almost said, "The pulse felt fluent like a pearl on a plate. It's a happy pulse", these kinds of shocking words. Indeed, when he reached out to feel Luo Hua City's Mistress's pulse, the Six-tailed Fox Spirit immediately lied on its stomach on the ground and wagged its long tails, as if it felt really assured with Yue Yang's presence. There wasn't an ounce of wariness in its eyes.

(Shiro: happy pulse: pulse of a pregnant woman)

As for the Bloody Queen on the other side who saw that Yue Yang did not take this opportunity to take advantage of Luo Hua City's Mistress, she also seemed to change her expression a little.

It was unknown whether it was astonishment or delight.

A golden light suddenly flashed out of Yue Yang's Silver Grimoire. A golden shadow flashed once and disappeared.

The [Counterfeit] Inherent skill that had not responded nor risen in level before had magically levelled up. This had made Yue Yang really confused; he couldn't understand the situation. He wasn't trying to pretend at all, so how did this [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill rise a level on its own?

Could it be that it would rise in level if he lied to people?

If that was really true, how many times would he need to lie in order to level up? And who must he lie to? Beasts? Or Warriors?

Yue Yang totally could not understand the usage of this [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill. In reality, he also didn't know what other uses does this [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill have other than modifying the pictures of the beasts on his grimoire. The [Divine Vision], on the other hand, still had a measuring standard. There were some things that could be seen by his [Divine Vision]. But heaven knows what could this [Counterfeit] skill be used for. Furthermore, he couldn't tell from the other's reaction whether his skill had taken an effect... Even his family, Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and the little girl, did not doubt him at all.

After he finished pretending to be a good person, before Yue Yang took back his hands, he rubbed Luo Hua City's Mistress's hand without batting an eyelid...He felt that her skin was almost as smooth as a piece of fine jade...the feeling of her skin was amazing. If only he could rub a few other places, he believed that his heart would be melted away from the nice sensation of her skin that he was feeling from her hands.

Suddenly, the Bloody Queen let out a cry of alarm. Turns out the pavilion that was burning had collapsed on one side.

Yue Yang suddenly remembered that Luo Hua City's Mistress's target was the Beautiful Demonic Flower. She must not return with empty hands, otherwise, a woman's lamentations and nagging could be extremely scary.

“Beautiful Demonic Flower, I want a Beautiful Demonic Flower,

do you understand?” Yue Yang shouted at the Bloody Queen. Seeing that the burning pavilion was on the verge of collapsing, Yue Yang did not care about it anymore as he carried Luo Hua City’s Mistress on his back, at the same time enjoying the amazing feel of her soft and sweet smelling body. The Bloody Queen replied with a long strand of Demon Abyss’ language; Yue Yang couldn’t understand even a word. Sweating speechless, he pulled a handful of grass from the mountain cliff and said, “I want a flower, a plant, do you understand? The most precious Beautiful Demonic Flower, can you get it for me?”

“Rumble...”

In the sky, the burning pavilion slowly collapsed to the ground, causing countless stones to drop down.

Yue Yang couldn’t care less about any flower or plant anymore, his little life was more important.

He carried Luo Hua City’s Mistress on his back as he retreated and ran away quickly. The Six-tailed Fox Spirit followed closely behind him, no, the current fox spirit had already turned back into a Three-tailed Snow Fox. The Barbarian Cow Shadow carried the Blade Massacring Demoness’ large blade in one hand and Yue Yang’s Crescent Blade on the other. She didn’t even know how to carry three weapons at the same time, Yue Yang was almost stunned speechless. Fortunately the Bloody Queen knew that the gold-ranked Dragon Slaying dagger and the Hui Jin Magic Blade were treasures. She quickly flit across and retrieved them for Yue Yang.

But she didn't quickly fly back to Yue Yang's side. Instead, she opened her wings and flew up high, flying towards the burning pavilion.

Yue Yang wasn't worried that she would try to run away, because, firstly she was his Guardian Beast; and secondly, she was an orphan with no home to return to.

Although the sky was filled with falling pieces of rocks and burning wood, Yue Yang enjoyed the romantic and dangerous situation. The soft feeling on his back was really too amazing to be described in words... When Yue Yang was avoiding the falling rocks, he tried to jump more so that he could feel the heavenly sensation on his back more.

At this time, his wolfy paws had already secretly rubbed Luo Hua City's Mistress's perfectly round and sweet-smelling butt, but no one had realized it.

The feeling in his hands was really refreshing.

If Luo Hua City's Mistress did not wake up, he's willing to carry her like this on his back and take advantage of the situation. He wouldn't mind running for a hundred km with her on his back if he could perform CPR or give her a chest massage during their breaks in between. Unfortunately, Luo Hua City's Mistress let out a small moan as if she had started to wake up.

Yue Yang had been rubbing her small butt a second ago, but he suddenly turned into a dashing hero saving a beauty in the last

second, his expression decent and honorable.

At the same time, he pretended not to realize that Luo Hua City's Mistress had woken up. He continued to run with full strength, and did not take a longer route anymore.

"What happened?" Luo Hua City's Mistress was shocked. How did she end up being carried on someone's back? She was taken aback by the masculine scent on Yue Yang's body that whiffed up to her nose. Immediately, she realized that it was the mysterious little thief, and her heart calmed down big time. Luckily it's him. When she turned her head, she saw the pavilion had collapsed. She then thought that Ma Li Ang had chased after them from behind and this little brat had escaped while carrying her on his back. She couldn't help but feel really moved in her heart.

"The pavilion is completely burnt. There was no other way, I could only carry you on my back and escape. I couldn't get the Beautiful Demonic Flower.." Yue Yang knew clearly that he should put Luo Hua City's Mistress down at this time, but he couldn't bear to part with the soft and sweet feeling of her body from his back. He pretended to forget to put her down, and continued to carry her on his back.

"Forget it, I have already told you before, you must place your life as the utmost priority. You have done the correct thing," Luo Hua City's Mistress saw that even when this little brat was trying to escape, he had tried to think about her wellbeing. A warm feeling appeared in her heart again.

At the foot of the mountain, she struggled to get down. Looking

back to the peak of the Flying Mountain, she felt that something was wrong.

Why haven't Ma Li Ang and his Demon Generals chased after them?

Could it be that they had stolen the treasure in the pavilion and had left?

How would she know that all the Demon Generals and Flying Dragons had all been killed by Yue Yang? Initially, she was still a little doubtful about Yue Yang's capabilities, but after seeing the Barbarian Cow Shadow that followed him from behind, a bronze-ranked level 5 beast who was also his Guardian Beast, the doubt in her heart had completely disappeared. With this Barbarian Cow Shadow that was equipped with a physical skill, he could kill five Demon Generals...The specific secrets that he didn't say, according to the Ranker's norms, she should respect his privacy. She should just forget about this matter.

In the sky, a golden light suddenly flashed.

The Bloody Queen kept her wings as she lightly descended in front of Yue Yang. She didn't carry any kind of Beautiful Demonic Flowers in her hand, but she had a small silk pouch.

When Luo Hua City's Mistress saw the contracted sign on the Bloody Queen's heart and the spirit energy that was faintly connected to Yue Yang, her small mouth immediately opened wide for a long time as she asked, "Little thief, did you contract the



Bloody Queen? It couldn't be?" When Yue Yang was contracting the Bloody Queen, Luo Hua City's Mistress was concentrating on her meditation to store her spirit energy. She completely did not notice that the golden light was caused by the Bloody Queen and the Phantom Shadow's fusion contract. She was only joking with Yue Yang previously, and she never thought that he would successfully contract a gold-ranked King Beast. After all, the chances of success of the contract was extremely low. Who would have known that this lucky little thief had really managed to make a contract with the Bloody Queen?

"She took the initiative to contract with me. At that time she was near death and if she did not contract with me then she would have died," Yue Yang explained it a bit.

"Sounds like that was quite possible...Congratulations, little thief. With this, you have completely stripped away your useless guy's reputation. When you bring a Gold King Beast home, with that grandpa of yours that loves good fame and reputation so much, his beard would probably stick up and he would faint out of happiness," it seemed like Luo Hua City's Mistress was familiar with Yue Yang's family.

Of course, this wasn't something weird.

Other than this guy who had transcended dimensions, who wouldn't know of the Yue Clan who was one of the Four Great Clans in this world? Besides, this was the Yue Clan master who was the leader of the clan.

Then, suddenly Luo Hua City's Mistress snatched over the silk

pouch that the Bloody Queen brought. Opening it, she immediately shouted with joy.

“Ahh!!”

As Yue Yang was enduring the scream that was louder than the Banshee’s Scream, he didn’t have the time to react before Luo Hua City’s Mistress suddenly hugged his arms, pulled him down excitedly and kissed him on the cheeks. She cried loudly, “This is the Beautiful Demonic Flower’s seed, there’s so many of them. My room, my window, no, there was also my garden, I can plant all these Beautiful Demonic Flowers now, little thief! You are really my lucky star!”

With regards to Luo Hua City’s Mistress’s reaction, Yue Yang could only be stunned speechless.

Isn’t it just the seed of some flower...

As for being so happy... of course it’s a good thing that she was happy. After all, she had seemed to forget everything just now and given him a kiss.

Seems like if her mind was clear-minded, she would definitely not do something like this. Since she liked flower so much, maybe he would give her an expensive flower next time. Maybe she would be so happy that she would push him down instead...

As Yue Yang started to imagine stuff, he started to get hard in

some places.

While Luo Hua City's Mistress was still like a little girl hopping up and down, the Bloody Queen had silently put the Dragon Slaying dagger into the small silk chain on her waist. The Hui Jin Magic Blade in her hands was also not given to Yue Yang like how the Barbarian Cow Shadow had with the other two blades. When Yue Yang saw that she had started an unhealthy habit, he immediately ordered her to take it out. Treasures are owned by the masters, and only when the master bestowed it to his slave, would it be the slave's.

The Bloody Queen hesitated a little before returning the Hui Jin Magic Blade to Yue Yang. However, she wouldn't give him the gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger even if she died.

Her mouth kept blabbering a chain of words as she refused to give him the Dragon Slaying Dagger.

"Ah? You can speak? What a highly intelligent beast, not bad," Luo Hua City's Mistress knew a little Demon Abyss' Language, but after talking to the Bloody Queen for a while, she turned towards Yue Yang with a headache, "I think it's best if we find a translator. Demon Abyss is simply too big, it is ten times larger than our Soaring Dragon Continent. This kind of language, I could only understand one or two words, and that was only guessing...Hmm... where can we find a good Demon Abyss Language translator? Yeah, there's one person, he is qualified to translate, just that his appearance deserves a little spanking."

"Who is it?" Yue Yang didn't believe there was anyone on earth

that deserves spanking more than Fatty Hai.

“It’s that San He that you had beaten up in the Warrior’s guild Glorious Third Floor. That fellow was a travelling minstrel previously; he travelled through almost the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent and was proficient in many languages. Even the Demon Abyss Language, he was proficient in over 100 Demon Abyss Languages. If he can’t translate it, then we don’t have to find another person to translate anymore,” Luo Hua City’s Mistress giggled amusedly, “But that fellow is rather crabby, since you have beaten him up so much, he would probably harbor hard feelings towards you. If you wanted to ask his help to translate, I’m afraid it would be a little difficult...This, we need to think of a good idea,”

“Don’t worry, I have a way to handle crabby people,” Yue Yang felt that he was an expert in handling crabby ass people, didn’t they only need a beating?

“Then, what are we waiting for. Let’ go and ask what this Bloody Queen actually wants to say. Maybe it’s something important,” Seeing that Yue Yang was still looking at the crumbling pavilion on the mountain, reluctant to go, Luo Hua City’s Mistress comforted him,”Don’t worry, the Iron Fist City would order some people here to clear up the mess. If there is any good stuff, they would safeguard it for us. This is our credit, they wouldn’t dare to be greedy about it. At the most, they would just ask for a little reward... Say, what could this Bloody Queen want to tell you about?”

Luo Hua City’s Mistress’s inner gossip girl’s heart had suddenly burst open and indicated to Yue Yang to use a teleportation scroll

to teleport straight back to the Third Floor, then teleport again to find that ‘white-robed brother’.

Yue Yang was also a little curious. What secret does this Bloody Queen actually have?

## Chapter 92 – Agreement

---

Returning to the Iron Fist City, Luo Hua City's Mistress placed an extravagant amount of 20 gold in the Warrior's Guild for a credit retrieval mission. In the end, two rather strong looking mercenaries accepted it. Moving corpses and cleaning up battlefields were not a difficult mission, but they wouldn't know when Demon Abyss soldiers might appear, or if they would encounter any mishaps on the way. Hence, the gold reward must be ten times more than the usual.

"If you can clean up the remnants of the battlefield well, I will give you 1% of the total as a bonus," Yue Yang felt that although the pavilion had been burnt by the great fire, the remaining things would probably be worth some money. Giving them a bonus would increase these people's proactivity and productivity.

"Yes, we will honestly carry out City Mistress' orders,"

The two mercenaries looked at the gold-ranked Bloody Queen beside Yue Yang and were immediately filled with respect for him.

With regards to the newly promoted Bloody Queen, anyone from the Third Floor would know about it. But no one had dared to harbor any intentions towards the Bloody Queen, it was a Gold King Beast after all. Even though she had just been promoted, and was only level 5, killing ordinary mercenaries instantly would be an easy thing for her. Furthermore, she also had a bronze-ranked level 6 and a level 7 commander under her orders. Ordinary mercenaries couldn't hope to climb up to the pavilion and battle with the Bloody Queen, even when they were just starting to climb

the mountains, they would probably be ganged up and beat up alive by the hundred over bronze-ranked level 3 Harpies. The unfathomable thing right now was that this Bloody Queen had actually been subdued by another person, and had been successfully contracted. In this world, how many people would be able to make a contract with a Gold King Beast? A strong Ranker who managed to do that, don't they need to serve him with the utmost respect and attitude?

Although the mercenaries didn't recognise Yue Yang and didn't know what kind of person this bizarre little thief was, they still recognized Luo Hua City's Mistress.

Luo Hua City's Mistress was the City Mistress of Tong Tian Tower's Fourth Floor. Of course, she was also a Ranker that they wouldn't dare to face upward to.

Hence, when they heard Yue Yang giving them an additional bonus, they immediately thanked him profusely.

In reality, Luo Hua City's Mistress was not worried that these people would think deviously or wouldn't do their work properly. Doing missions in the Soaring Dragon Continent might allow for a greedy intention, but inside the Tong Tian Tower, this would get you nowhere. The moment these people accepted this mission, even if they tried to deceive one single copper, their Honor points would become negative. A person with a negative honor point, no matter if they were army deserters or swindlers, wouldn't be able to use the teleportation gates to get away.

Furthermore, in the Warriors or Mercenaries Guild, there would

be a completed mission evaluation. When they were about to report their completed mission, the Crimson Piercing Eyes would evaluate if there was any corruption done. If it detected a dishonest act, it would immediately order the guards to arrest them and put them in jail.

Seeing that Yue Yang's sexy, enchanting, fatally alluring Bloody Queen had caused a sensation, Luo Hua City's Mistress quickly went to an Armor Shop and bought a new clean Silver Armor, giving it to the Bloody Queen to wear.

The Bloody Queen didn't want to wear it at first, but when Yue Yang saw that, he forced her to receive and wear it.

In the end, the Bloody Queen spouted a whole lot of Demon Abyss language before finally wearing the armour, feeling dissatisfied and wronged.

Yue Yang reckoned that she was protesting against him bullying her, a little female slave. But after Yue Yang pretended not to hear her complaints and the Bloody Queen wore the Silver Armour, she gave off a much different feeling than the usual. The feeling she gave off right now was an innocent kind of sexual appeal, it was even more desirable than her previously sexy look. But this look was at least better than her semi-nude appearance just now, she wouldn't attract that much attention now. Luo Hua City's Mistress couldn't think of a better idea in such a short time, so they just had to make do with this...Anyway, no one would dare to harbour any intentions towards a Gold King Beast. They simply couldn't stop people from drooling a waterfall when they saw the Bloody Queen.



Returning to the First Floor and going to the Warrior's Guild Glorious Hall, they found that the white-robed brother called 'San He' had just come back from the Medicine Hall.

He didn't have the time to sit down and rest before he suddenly saw Yue Yang charge towards him looking furious like a demon from hell.

Without making an explanation, Yue Yang started to beat him up again.

"This, what's the reason for this again?" The white-robed brother felt that he was wronged. His teeth had been beaten to the point that they were a bit loose, but he still didn't understand the reason for being beaten up.

"Do you know what kind of people I hated the most? In this life, I hate a person who can speak different kinds of languages the most. When I heard that you could speak over a hundred languages, I just felt really angry in my heart. Why is it that such a handsome and smart person like me couldn't even speak the Soaring Dragon Continent's Language properly, yet an idiotic fellow with such a disgusting appearance like you could speak over a hundred languages? Say, who do you think I should beat up if it's not you?" Yue Yang violently trampled on the white-robed brother's butt as he explained his illogical reason.

"..." It was only at this moment that the white-robed brother felt that his talent in languages had brought him a calamity.

However, even though he was beaten up, he felt a little proud in his heart.

Isn't he a powerful Ranker? Didn't he kill six Demon Generals before? Wasn't he so awesome that beauties called out to him? But he was just an idiot who couldn't even speak the language in Soaring Dragon Continent properly. As for me, I'm different than you. Although I couldn't kill six Demon Generals, I could speak over a hundred languages, no, I could even speak a hundred different kinds of languages in the Demon Abyss language alone.

If it wasn't for Yue Yang that was spanking his butt, the white-robed brother would stand straight and waved the fan in his hands, walking elegantly and handsomely, speaking the Demon Abyss' Blood Prison language, the hardest language that was used ten thousand years ago.

At this time, Luo Hua City's Mistress entered and pulled at Yue Yang's hands, advising him, "Don't be angry, you only failed at a language test, as long as you study more, you will be able to pass for sure."

When Yue Yang heard this, it was as if his anger rose to a whole new level as he pulled out his Crescent Blade with a loud clang.

"Let me just kill this annoying fellow and that teacher that deserves to die. I'll chop them to pieces and feed their body to the dogs. Let's see who would dare to mention languages to me in the future," Yue Yang strike a pose as if he was about to chop the white-robed brother up, making the white-robed brother so afraid that he almost pissed his pants. He didn't have any place to avoid

or hide, if he really received this little brat's blade, he would probably need to stay in the Medicine Hall for half a month. Why was he so unlucky?

"You should talk it out instead of taking action blindly. Actually, I think you have a talent in languages, it's just that you lacked a good teacher," Luo Hua City's Mistress hurriedly pulled at Yue Yang's hands.

"I, I can teach this young master languages for free, if he still couldn't pass his exams, I am willing to be subjected to the ten thousand ant bites torture. You guys might not know, there was this mute missy before, and I was the one who taught her how to speak. You guys think about it, I could even teach a mute person to speak, so how could this master not be able to pass a language test? That's a simple task for me," the white-robed brother hurriedly crawled up and brought out his most knowledgeable and capable look, trying his very best to open his eyes that had been beaten black and blue by Yue Yang, looking straight into Yue Yang's eyes, "This young master, I understand your grievances and vexation... However, please believe me, languages are really not a difficult subject. I guarantee that you would be able to learn it well,"

"Go away, who wants to be taught by you?" Yue Yang sent him a flying kick, and had almost sent the white-robed brother flying out of the Glorious Third Floor's window.

"Don't be angry, let's not study these troublesome stuff. Wouldn't it be fine that way?" Luo Hua City's Mistress said nicely as she pulled Yue Yang to go down the second floor.

After a while, she came up again and gave the white-robed brother 10 gold for his recovery fee, “San He, you are called San He right? I remembered you. I’d like to apologize for the situation just now, that fellow’s temperament wasn’t that good. Furthermore, he had been stressed out because of his language test these few days. He had actually paid a high price for someone to cheat for him, but who would have known that he still couldn’t pass in the end...”

The white-robed brother thanked Luo Hua City’s Mistress with tears in his eyes, “If he asked someone to cheat for him, why didn’t he ask me instead? No, I mean, it’s the young master’s bad luck. I am extremely knowledgeable about languages, and I am confident in it. If Luo Hua City’s Mistress could trust me, then please leave that young master to me. Let alone one language, I could even teach him ten different types of languages. However, could you help me tell him that using violence to resolve a situation wouldn’t solve problems. We could sit down and talk it out peacefully instead. As long as the young master don’t start beating me up, then everything could be resolved with words,”

Luo Hua City’s Mistress gave the white-robed brother another 10 gold, counting it as a language teacher’s advanced salary, “I will try to advise him with all of my efforts. Don’t worry, normally, he is a really good kid. For example, he was really quiet when he was a baby.”

The white-robed brother almost cried, who would beat people up when they were still babies?

Which baby wouldn’t sleep in peace...Could it be that this brat

started to beat people up after his toddler years? A natural-born little bully?

He didn't know that this Yue Yang and Luo Hua City's Mistress was acting out a play. If they had brought the Bloody Queen and asked the white-robed brother politely to translate the secret that the Bloody Queen wanted to say, then it would be weird if his nose didn't grow as high as the roof.

Hence, Yue Yang adopted an idea. This idea had been used by the female Emperor Wu Ze Tian of Ancient China before, and the effect was actually very good.

Now that he and Luo Hua City's Mistress used it, it seemed that the effect was not that strong. However, at least they had successfully wrapped this white-robed brother around their fingers.

Luo Hua City's Mistress then talked to the white-robed brother for a while, imitating what the Bloody Queen had said. She tried to test out the white-robed brother's reaction. The white-robed brother's reaction was extremely positive, "The young master's test was regarding a story of a treasure in the Demon Abyss. I guessed it's that way, but there was only one-sided speech, so I am not one hundred percent sure...In this type of Demon Abyss Language, there were some phrases that are related to treasures, such as Dragon's Nest, Godly Stone, Connecting Realms, Dragon Slaying Dagger and teleportation gate...I am 90% sure that this is a story about a Demon Abyss treasure hunt. The content of the school's test are mostly the same, it is either seeking for treasures or refining, otherwise it would be a love story between a prince

and a princess. One of the most extreme ones would be poems. If you give me time, I have the confidence to be able to teach the young master this language in a month. no, I can teach him three different types of Demon Abyss languages. After a few variations, these three Demon Abyss Languages would allow him to understand any kind of commonly used Demon Abyss Languages.”

The white-robed brother wasn't suspicious at all, but Luo Hua City's Mistress's heart had started to thump.

If she tried to connect Dragon's Nest, Godly Stone, Connecting Realms, Dragon Slaying Dagger and teleportation gate, there was no need to translate anymore, she could more or less guess what the Bloody Queen had meant.

The Bloody Queen had held a big secret. Maybe she had wanted to use this secret to exchange something with the little thief. Previously, Luo Hua City's Mistress had not understood how the Blood Queen's Royal Mother could evolve so quickly. Not only did she become the strongest Gold King Beast, far above the others, she could even leave the Third Floor and fly up to the Fourth Floor.

Seems like it was because that Royal mother had gotten a secret treasure and gained a huge advantage. That was the reason for her quick growth.

Right now, since the Bloody Queen had turned into a summon beast and had to left her sky pavilion, she couldn't be a queen anymore. Hence she wanted to tell this secret to her master and initiate an exchange with him. She wanted him to increase her level at the same time when he was raising his capabilities. She

would also gain more respect from her master this way.

When Luo Hua City's Mistress left the Warrior's Guild and went to the Warrior's Inn to find Yue Yang, she told him everything and added with a worried tone, "If it was really a treasure that was protected by a dragon, then it would definitely not be easy. Furthermore, I feel that we shouldn't be too anxious about this matter. It's best if we don't let San He understand the whole situation. You also knew that a person like him wouldn't be able to keep any kind of secrets. If he knew the whole truth, that would definitely not be a good thing. How about you learn some Demon Abyss Language from him, then talk it out with the Bloody Queen slowly? With regards to the treasure, if you want to brave the danger together, then fresh flowers, spirit grasses and seeds, these kinds of items must be given to me first; I want to at least have that priority. As for Demon Crystals and gold, on the contrary, I'm not that interested in them. You are the man here, so you should make the final decision,"

"Alright, let's do it that way." Yue Yang listened to her logical plan and nodded, showing his agreement.

"Then we should separate for the time being. I would go back to my house to plant these flowers, while you could rise the Bloody Queen's abilities in the meantime. I see that she had fallen down in rank after contracting with you, right now she was only gold-ranked level 3. You should first raise her rank to gold-ranked level 4 or 5, then we could go and find the treasure together. With regards to the cleaning up mission, I asked them to report to you on the First Floor instead, so I'll leave it to you to handle it. If there's anything, leave a message for me in the Warrior's Guild. If your handwriting doesn't look like a dog's scrawl, you could also

write a letter to me. Otherwise, we could promise to meet within three months. With the Beautiful Demonic flower, my beasts would probably be able to level up too. If we look for the treasure then, we will have more assurance's to get the treasure. Little thief, at the end, I'd like to thank you for saving me. You are really an unpredictable little fellow... Train hard properly, you are a guy, so you shouldn't be like me who only plant flowers day and night. You have to aspire to travel the world, go for an expedition to explore the Demon Abyss and Heaven Realm," Luo Hua City's Mistress hooked her slender fingers on Yue Yang's chin, her bright eyes locking into Yue Yang's. Her face was so close to Yue Yang's that he could feel her sweet, hot breath. Just as Yue Yang thought that she was going to kiss him, she suddenly loosened her hands. She laughed loudly; her laughter sounded so sweet that flowers seemed to blossom around her.

Finally, she walked out the door, still laughing out loud.

Leaving behind a trail of her sweet scent, amidst her special straightforward laughter, she waved her hand and walked out elegantly and unrestrainedly.

Yue Yang was a little at a loss with Luo Hua City's Mistress. Did she actually have an interest in him? Or did she actually not feel anything for him at all, and was only teasing him for fun?

Thinking about it again, Yue Yang decided to forget about it. If he could push her down in the future, she would pant and moan underneath him sooner or later. There's no hurry now, they could flirt with each other first. When Yue Yang recalled the earlier, extremely wonderful feeling of carrying her on his back as he ran



down the path, a certain place had shamefully grew hard...from that Luo Hua City's Mistress's outer appearance, it was hard to see her ample bosom; it seemed like 34C, and just a bit less than 36D. However, after coming into contact with them, he realized that they were extremely well-developed underneath her cotton clothes. In combination with her slender figure, she was really just perfect.

As for the white-robed elder, Yue Yang wouldn't bother to waste time learning the Demon Abyss language from him.

He could just order Ye Kong and the others to learn it. People like He Zi Yun and Qi Yang rely on their speaking abilities to earn money, they would probably learn the language fast. When they have finished learning the language and completely wring out every bit of knowledge from the white-robed brother, they could slowly teach him about it. There was still time for that.

Right now, what he needed to do was to help Yue Bing and Yi Nan to finish the "Oak Tree's Heart" Quest, then bring Yue Bing back home.

New years had almost come, when he and Fourth Mother returned to the Yue Clan's Castle, he would definitely properly trample on the members of the Second Branch and help Fourth Mother take revenge on her past grievances. He must make the whole of Yue Clan members, who originally drove her away, beg on the floor for Fourth Mother's return. Moreover he will let the everyone of the Yue Clan, who originally drove her away, feel ashamed, regret, be so ashamed that they won't show their face...

Hmm, what reaction would Yi Nan had when she saw the sexy and enchanting Bloody Queen?

Hate? Jealous? Or would she pretend to be calm?

Yue Yang was looking forward to Yi Nan's expression. It surely would be quite marvelous.

## Chapter 93 – Treant Warrior, Level Up

---

When Yue Yang rushed to the Ten Thousand Years Oak Tree's Heart, he found Yi Nan and Yue Bing chattering animatedly. It was unclear what they were talking about, but their laughter sounded clear and beautiful like bells ringing.

Hui Tai Lang's reaction was the fastest. The moment it saw Yue Yang appear, it immediately showed the expression of a loyal watchdog and flew straight to Yue Yang to welcome him. It even wagged its tail energetically as it surrounded Yue Yang's legs and encircled him endlessly. When Yue Yang gave it a kick, Hui Tai Lang felt so much pleasure that it turned over and exposed its stomach, showing a face filled with satisfaction and ecstasy. Maybe the Demon Qi in its body was tormenting it and making it feel a little uncomfortable. Yue Yang's kick came just at the right time, it was so comfortable...

Seeing that Yue yang had returned, Yi Nan and Yue Bing was also overjoyed.

Yue Bing flew towards Yue Yang emotionally, as if she wanted to throw herself into Yue Yang's embrace. However, she realized that it might not be good to do that afterwards, so the little miss slowed down her steps.

When Yue Yang reached his hands out to caress her head and gave her the embroidered box containing the Lustrous Branch from the Tree of Life, Yue Bing couldn't endure it anymore and threw herself into her brother's embrace, hugging him tightly. Her tears fell continuously like a pearl necklace that had snapped off.

She had thirsted for a strong and warm brother who could protect her, but her wish had never come true.

Until she saw her brother again in the Tong Tian Tower, when she finally realized that he had become the family's main pillar without her knowing.

The feeling of having a brother to look after you was really good.

Yi Nan had also came forward and consoled her with a few words. Yue Bing had a strong personality; she immediately wiped off her tears and looked towards Yue Yang with a smile amidst her tears. After a rain, the sky looked much clearer and captivating.

The current Yue Bing did not wear that black veil in front of Yue Yang anymore. She understood in her heart that her brother would never give her up. Even if her fate wasn't that good, and she became a widow before even becoming a wife, she was still his cherished sister that he would love and protect.

Compared to Yue Bing, Yi Nan was paying more attention to the Bloody Queen that was wearing a silver armour, following right behind Yue Yang.

At the start, she was a little uncomfortable, to the point that she didn't even want to welcome him. Although she clearly was not related to him in any way, she still feel an unexplainable sour feeling in her heart. If not for Yue Bing here, she would probably throw a tantrum at him and walked away with a sulk, then find a

place with no one present and cry her heart out. She had been waiting for him here, but he had brought another woman back instead...But when she looked at her more clearly, she realized that there was something not that right with her. So she looked at her even more closely, observing the Bloody Queen from head to toe as she consoled Yue Bing. Only then did she realize a contracted beast seal pattern on her forehead...

“You, you, you, eh? You are a humanoid beast?” Yi Nan had never seen humanoid beast before, but she had never seen such a sexy and enchanting beast like this Bloody Queen.

“Gold-ranked humanoid beast,” When Yue Bing saw her, she had a feeling like she was about to faint.

“Where did you get her?” Yi Nan knew that there wouldn’t be any shop supplying a gold-ranked beast in this floor. Where did he get this sexy and enchanting gold-ranked humanoid beast?

“Actually, this is what happened... Today, Luo Hua City’s Mistress needed a thief who can scout ahead and met me on the way. So she hired me and brought me to the Third Floor of Tong Tian Tower, because she wanted to go to a pavilion in a floating island to search for a Beautiful Demonic Flower. Unfortunately, we met a Demon Commander called Ma Li Ang who brought a few Demon Generals to kill the Bloody Queen. At that time, the Bloody Queen was almost dead, so when she saw me coming near, she immediately initiated to make a contract with me. Then I came back here,” Yue Yang played down what really happened when telling them the story.

“Bloody Queen?” Yue Bing was so excited that she almost jumped. So it was not only a gold-ranked beast, it was a Gold King Beast?

“Third Floor? Demon Commander bringing a few Demon Generals?” Yi Nan was a little petrified when she heard this.

“In addition, there seemed to be over a hundred demons, but they were all killed instantly by Luo Hua City’s Mistress,” Yue Yang tried hard to put all the credits on Luo Hua City’s Mistress.

“Where’s Luo Hua City’s Mistress now?” Yi Nan couldn’t help but ask.

“After acquiring the Beautiful Demonic Flower, she had returned to her home to plant them,” Yue Yang vaguely hinted that Luo Hua City’s Mistress and him were only passing strangers, they were not close at all.

“Then where’s that Demon Commander called Ma-something?” Yi Nan was curious, how could he come back safely without any injuries after meeting a Demon Commander and a few Demon Generals?

“Ma Li Ang suffered a grave injury, he ran away the moment he saw me,” Yue Yang also didn’t say that Ma Li Ang’s injuries were actually caused by his Hui Jin Magic Blade, and only told them the most important part. These words made the two girls misunderstood that Ma Li Ang had fought with the Bloody Queen until the two of them were gravely injured, so he ran away the

moment he saw Luo Hua City's Mistress, and they didn't battle at all.

“Fortunately...Otherwise it would have been very dangerous. You are indeed quite lucky, a Gold King Beast that was nearing death had actually initiated to make a contract with you,” Yi Nan thought that this little brat was indeed born under the world's number one lucky star.

If words spread that he had a bronze-ranked level 5 Hui Tai Lang who kept following him no matter what without even being contracted, a lot of people would probably die of envy.

Right now, there was this Gold King Beast who initiated to contract him...

This, isn't he too lucky?

What's the reason for anyone striving to live if he existed?

Yi Nan could imagine Ma Li Ang's depression. He had painstakingly taken down the Bloody Queen with a grave injury, but he couldn't reap the benefits, and instead allowed this little brat to make a contract with the Bloody Queen. Seems like he would be vomiting three days and three nights worth of blood when he got back, otherwise he would probably die of depression.

Yue Bing was so ecstatic that she almost fainted.

She already thought that it was impressive for her brother to own Hui Tai Lang, a bronze-ranked level 5 beast. She reckoned that if her clan member's saw Hui Tai Lang, they would probably be extremely jealous of him. Now he had actually brought an additional Gold King Beast back, they would definitely faint out of shock... Furthermore, the Bloody Queen was a humanoid Gold King Beast with intelligence. Maybe she could even go through a Variant Evolution and turn into a Platinum, Diamond-ranked beast.

It was really unimaginable, what kind of marvelous expressions would her clan's elders and members have when the Bloody Queen appeared in front of them?

“Wau,” Hui Tai Lang wasn't really bothered with the Bloody Queen, because she was not its opponent.

She is also not someone he could fight against.

Furthermore, it was not as if it had never seen a strong humanoid beast. For example, that snake loli was even a diamond-ranked. This gold-ranked beast wasn't something special at all... Hui Tai Lang wagged its tail; the most important thing to him is still to gain favour from Yue Yang, his master.

Yue Bing and Yi Nan both cheered aloud for the success of contracting the Bloody Queen, unable to contain their joys.

Let alone Yue Bing, who had tears overflowing her face, even Yi Nan couldn't help but to secretly wipe the corners of her eyes.



Having a bronze-ranked beast was enough to fulfil the qualification of someone impressive and outstanding. If he had another Gold King Beast as a summon, then it would even be difficult to downplay his contributions in the future. Let alone normal warriors, even princes and kings of small countries could only have a few Gold King Beast at most. It was even a humanoid Gold King Beast!

As the Bloody Queen, a Gold King Beast with a humanoid appearance, intelligence and gold-ranked, it seemed like her star evaluation should be at least seven stars?

It can even be eight stars evaluation!

Apparently, this third Master of the Yue Clan that others had thought was trash, his future...even if he wanted to keep being trash, it would be difficult to do so...

“Seventh Sister, you should first summon your Treant Warrior out. Although we don’t have the Wisdom Fruit, there is still the Lustrous Branch. It should be able enough for it to level up,” In reality, Yue Yang’s purpose wasn’t to make the Treant Warrior level up. He was preparing to use [Divine Vision] to see through the Treant Warrior’s special characteristics. He was preparing to teach Yue Bing properly and help her increase her battle power.

“This time we have successfully completed the Refining, so my Treant Warrior had risen a level. It is now bronze-ranked level 4, but I’m still nothing compared to brother,” Yue Bing’s tone carried a little pride for her own achievements. After all, the matter of her Treant warrior leveling signified the proof of her diligence in

cultivation. With a good result to report to her brother, of course she would be proud of herself.

“Not bad. Seventh sister’s Refining was really successful this time, “ Yue Yang’s praise made Yue Bing’s face bloom with smiles.

Yue Yang took this chance to conveniently praise Yi Nan too, praising her for her successful nurturing of her little Silver Pegasus, who had improved considerably. She became very happy listening to his praises too. The only thing that made Yi Nan a little angry was that Yue Yang kept referring her as ‘Brother Yi Nan’. It made her heart feel dissatisfied, as she thought about how could this idiot be so blind. when Yue Yang saw her expression, he was secretly laughing in his heart, but he pretended not to notice it.

He gathered his Innate Qi and focused his Divine Vision, preparing to see through the Treant Warrior that Yue Bing had summoned out.

At the same time, he held the Lustrous Branch in his hands and channeled his Innate Qi to the Treant Warrior with his other hand, testing the reaction to its abilities...

Yue Yang handed over the Lustrous Branch that was shining brilliantly to the Treant Warrior, who was already impatient to receive it and immediately swallowed it. When Yue Yang used this opportunity to feel with his innate Qi and used his [Divine Vision] that had seen through the Ten Thousand Years Ancient Oak Tree on the Treant Warrior, who was digesting the Lustrous Branch, he suddenly felt its capabilities condense. A ray of green light fell down on the Treant Warrior, bathing Yue Yang, Yue Bing and Yi

Nan altogether in its light. One part of the Treant Warrior had absorbed the light the most. When it had swallowed the Lustrous Branch, its head, and the four limbs of the Treant warrior immediately grew countless leaves. Thick and young leaves sprouted out, it could be seen with naked eye that the young buds of leaves sprouted, grew, turned coarse, and turned into lush branches and leaves in the end.

A pillar of green light started to shine brightly.

The Treant Warrior's body first crouched into a ball, its thick leaves and vines twisting around its body. It quickly underwent a transformation under the green light.

the moment it stood back up again, it broke through its nest of leaves and had evolved from a 3-metre tall Treant warrior into a 5-metre Hundred Year Treant Defender. Its level has also increased from bronze-rank level 4 to bronze-rank level 5.

The Treant right now had a pitch black body, its wood looking like iron. Lush leaves grew from its head and shoulders. Its whole torso and head looked a little like a person's figure.

Of course, it was still far from reaching a humanoid appearance.

However, it had already evolved into something towards the humanoid direction.

Hundred Years Treant Defender, it should become a Thousand

Years Treant General when it levels up next time. It could even level up to become the legendary Ten Thousand Years Ancient Tree King...

“Bronze-ranked level 5, brother, my Treant Warrior, it levelled up to bronze-ranked level 5,” Yue Bing thought that her lifetime of happiness had all been spent on this day.

“It had even evolved to Hundred Year Treant Defender. If there was more Lustrous Branches and Wisdom Fruits, it could even level up to silver-ranked Thousand Year Treant General, or gold-ranked Ten Thousand Years Ancient Tree King,” Yi Nan was also happy for Yue Bing. This girl’s future was also limitless. Most importantly, she had a brother that cherished her so much. She didn’t know how much Yue Yang had to sacrifice in order to get the Lustrous Branch for Yue Bing... With such a brother, why would Yue Bing worry about her beasts not levelling up?

Yi Nan also felt a little bit envious and that she couldn’t compare to Yue Bing. Yue Bing had a brother that loved her so much, but she didn’t.

If she also had a brother that cherished her growth, how good would that be?

She looked at Yue Bing, her bright pair of eyes showing an envious expression involuntarily. She then looked at Yue yang, and felt a kind of warm, special feeling in her heart, that wasn’t present when she first met him... Although this brat’s eyes were as blind as a bat, he was extremely loving and attentive towards his sister and family.

At least, he was a good brother.

“Seventh Sister, do you still remember my [Camouflage] Inherent Skill?” Yue Yang decided to tell Yue Bing about the Hundred Years Treant Defender’s knowledge that he had seen from his [Divine Vision].

Using living people to nurture Thorny Flowers, Yue Yang would never tell it to Yue Bing.

However, with regards to Yue Bing’s Guardian Beast, he would definitely spend his utmost effort to help her nurture it. He hoped his sister would improve even more. Yue Bing was indeed a genius, she just lacked something valuable, which was a teacher that would teach her properly. If he could give her some hints, and secretly lend her a helping hand, her future would definitely be limitless, and her growth immeasurable.

“Did brother see a secret ability in the Hundred Years Treant Defender?” Yue Bing was so happy that she could sing. Today was indeed a lucky day, good things had happened continuously.

“Eh?” Yi Nan listened to Yue Bing saying something about Yue yang, and she couldn’t help but to be curious. What ability could this useless third master have?

## Chapter 94 – Confession?

---

“The Treant has quite a few abilities. Other than the passive skills [Take Root], [Sprout Branch], [Tree’s Heart], and [Seed], there are also the active skills [Tree’s Thorns and Brambles], [Coiling Roots], and [Ancient Tree Iron Wood]. There might be more, but my [Camouflage] Inherent Skill was only level 2 at the time, so I couldn’t see everything,” When Yue Yang said this, the little miss Yue Bing’s jaw cutely dropped.

She had studied in the Academy for four years, but she only knew about [Take Root] and [Sprout Branch].

She had heard of [Coiling Roots] before, but she heard that it was only a battle skill that very high-levelled Treants could execute. Even the teachers in her academy couldn’t grasp the skill very well.

Since the teachers couldn’t teach it, whoever wanted to learn it had to pay one hundred gold to learn the skill.

Previously, her mother had saved a thousand gold to buy the Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill that would increase the chances of her brother being able to contract a grimoire. How could she possibly have a hundred gold to learn a skill... As for the reward money she received from her clan, she had also given it to her father to buy the Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill.

Luckily, her brother had finally grown stronger. Not only did he manage to contract a grimoire, he had also become the family’s

pillar.

Now that her brother could teach her skills instead, that was even better.

Yue Bing was thoroughly overjoyed. She turned into a model student as she quietly listened to her brother's teachings.

“You can use [Take Root] fairly well, however with regards to [Sprout Branch], other than using the Treant's arms to attack your opponents, you can make the Treant sprout a new branch and remove it from its body. Then, the Treant can use the branch to attack its opponents. Most importantly, [Sprout Branch] can allow the Treant to generate a new limb. For example, if the Treant's arms were cut off by its opponent, it could use [Sprout Branch] to regrow its arm. That's the real use of [Sprout Branch],” When Yue Yang said this, even the knowledgeable Yi Nan was astounded. Yi Nan couldn't help but cry out and said, “If that's true, then plant-category beasts aren't actually weak, but very strong instead? If a beast or bird-category had their limbs torn off in a battle, they definitely would not be able to re-grow them. Once they are destroyed, they would be destroyed forever. If the plant-category beasts could regrow their body parts through [Sprout Branch], then wouldn't they be undefeatable?”

“Plant-category beasts were originally very strong,” Yue Yang smiled lightly, “They are considered weak because the people who use them misuse them. If others can't utilise them, it doesn't mean that plant-category beasts are weak,”

“Brother, please teach me about the [Tree's Heart] and [Seed].”

Yue Bing was anxious and couldn't wait to learn the Treant's secrets.

[Seed] and [Tree's Heart] are higher levelled skills. When a Treant evolves into a Thousand Year Old Treant General, it will have a Tree's Heart. As long as the Tree's Heart is not destroyed, the Treant will not die. When it evolved into a Ten Thousand Year Old Ancient Tree King, it should be able to use [Seeds]. As long as you plant these seeds in a suitable place, you will be able to summon Treant Warriors from these seeds. I will teach you when we get there," Yue Yang stroked Yue Bing's head lightly and smiled, "As for the [Ancient Tree Iron Wood] skill, it is a skill that a Hundred Year Old Treant Defender will naturally have. It will increase its defense by a lot, there is no need to explain it in detail, I will just teach you the main points. As long as you learn [Tree's Thorns and Brambles] and [Coiling Roots], I can guarantee that anyone who fights against you in the future will die of depression,"

"Really?" Yue Bing was so excited that she almost jumped three-metres high.

"..." Yi Nan saw how cleverly Yue Yang had amused the little miss and saw that he really was a good brother. Tsk, he had become quite a good brother, indeed.

"[Tree's Thorns and Brambles] is the Treant's AOE attack that can be used in both long-ranged or short-ranged situations. It will use it's Thorns for short range and Brambles for long ranged attacks. The moment it pierces an opponent with its Thorns, you can use your [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill to kill the opponent. As for Brambles, other than having the ability to surround and



restrict your opponent, when your Treant levels up and becomes a Thousand Year Old Treant General, it can even suck the opponent's blood. You can control the Treant to use its Brambles to surround your opponents with its thorns from all directions, then release poison and suck their blood. No matter how strong the opponent's beast is, it probably won't be able to withstand that attack," When Yue Yang said this, the little miss Yue Bing nodded her head profusely.

The Treant had a weakness, and its weakness was its extremely slow speed. It wouldn't be able to chase after its opponents easily.

But right now, with the [Tree's Thorns and Brambles] that could be used in both short and long range situations, its biggest weakness has been covered. If such a Treant fought against an opponent's beast, it would be weird if the opponent didn't die from depression.

Yi Nan slowly frowned, "The beast-category beasts are indeed afraid of poison, but the demon, underworld, or ghost-category beasts do not fear poison-type beasts, especially the beasts in the ghost-category. Those disgusting beasts are a poison in itself with its corpse body and rotting flesh..."

Yue Yang waved his hand and indicated for her to not be so anxious, "As far as I know, plant-category beasts are the nemesis of the demons. Although it's not every beast, but demon, underworld, and ghost-category beasts will become quite pitiful if they were to meet a plant-category beast. This is because plant-category beast's are the best in emitting Spirit Qi. Emitting Spirit Qi will not have an effect on beast or bird-category beasts, in fact,

they could even be healed as an effect from the Spirit Qi. However, the demon and ghost-category beasts will have a really bad time, because their Demonic Qi will be purified. As an example, a Demon General's weakness is his heart. As long as you can destroy its heart with the Treant's Thorns and channel Spirit Qi into it non-stop, the purification would destroy the Demon General's heart, and that Demon General would definitely die,”

“But the Demon General's speed is too fast, how could we target him?” Yue Bing asked like a curious student.

“Using [Coiling Roots].” Yue Yang smiled slowly, “[Coiling Roots] is a skill that will make your opponents depressed. As long as one root had successfully coiled around the opponent, unless the Treant dies, it will be extremely difficult to struggle free from its grasp... It is usually not used as an offensive maneuver, but rather it's used as a sneak attack instead. When the opponent draws near to attack, or if the Brambles attack is successful, you should immediately order the Treant to unleash its skills. First [Take Root] in front of the opponent, then use [Coiling Root] to bind them. After that you can just attack the opponent continuously without mercy. If the opponent is a ghost-category beast, order your Treant to emit its Spirit Qi and purify its opponent...No matter what kind of opponent you face, even if it's a Flying Dragon, if you bind them with [Coiling Root] then it will definitely die a tragic death,” Yue Yang taught Yue Bing about every single ability that the Treant had.

Last time, Yue Yang still had some reservations towards her because he had just been transported to this world. However, right now, he had been moved by Fourth Mother and was determined to blend into this warm family. Hence, he naturally didn't hide

anything from his younger sister.

Of course, he only told her about the abilities of the Treant warrior.

As for the secret method of nurturing Thorny Flowers by feeding it living people, he would never tell her such a scary method.

Yue Yang would never tell anyone the secret to obtaining a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. He would make that his own secret weapon.

When Yue Bing and Yi Nan heard about it, they were stunned to the point of speechlessness for quite a while, before mumbling the same thing at the same time, “So the plant-category beasts were actually this strong?”

Yue Yang laughed, “Actually, plant-category beasts still have a weakness. For example, this Treant, its weakness is not actually not slow speed. It’s in group fights. In a one-on-one battle, the Treant will have an absolute advantage as the [Coiling Root] would lead to victory no matter what. However, in a group battle, it would need to [Take Root] in front of its target, and can only focus on one target. So it would be very difficult to unleash [Coiling Root] in a group battle. Its effects are limited. Treant’s biggest weakness is also its low numbers. Seventh Sister, you can only summon at most two Treant as of now right? That’s why Treants would have an advantage in one-on-one battle and lose out in group battles,”

But the guy who transcended dimensions did not say that the Treant's weakness did not exist in Thorny Flower.

This was because when the Thorny Flower leveled up enough, it could use [Division Propagation] and multiply in great numbers. Other than its main body, it had a secondary body and a cluster of stalks. When it turned into a Thorny Flower Demoness, it would have multiple secondary bodies and dozens of young clusters of stalks; When it turned into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, it would become even more frightening. As a Queen, it would have countless Thorny Flowers under her control, it could even be described as a sea of Thorny Flowers.

Therefore, three thousand years ago, the Thorny Flower Fairy had used the sea of flowers to drown an entire Demon Legion.

Even if it was an army, they would meet their tragic death against the sea of Thorny Flower.

The Treant also had a fatal weakness. It was not afraid of fire or ice, but it was afraid of thunder.

Any Treant would definitely die if it suffered from a few thunder attacks... Of course, this weakness was not present in Yue Bing's Treant, because her Hundred Years Old Treant Defender was a Guardian Beast which would never truly die.

With regards to this, Yue Yang had also reminded Yue Bing a little. If she were to meet a thunder-type beast, she must prioritize killing it first. Otherwise, her Treant would easily suffer grave

injuries.

Yi Nan had also yearned for Yue Yang's pointers, but she didn't feel comfortable asking him.

But Yue Bing was attentive. Seeing that Yi Nan's expression was a little different, Yue Bing had immediately helped Yi Nan to ask. Yue Yang was actually even more fond of Yi Nan than Yue Bing. She was still the one person whom he had not pushed down yet. He also didn't know what thought she had about him, so of course he would tell her anything she wanted. Yue Yang told her about a few abilities of her little Silver Pegasus, and also its weaknesses. He told her to focus more on her beast cultivating methods, then gave an excuse that his [Camouflage] Inherent Skill's level was too low and wasn't able to see any deeper. He retained the majority of the secrets.

Even so, Yi Nan was extremely happy as she nodded her head excitedly. She now trusted this selfish guy completely.

The two girls continued to chatter in exhilaration about the different summoning skill practices.

Especially Yue Bing, after receiving her brother's pointers, her control over her Hundred Year Old Treant Defender immediately improved by leaps and bounds. Everyone believed that in due time, she would definitely be an opponent that would make others suffer painful headaches. At least, the demon, underworld, and ghost-type, all these Demon Abyss beasts, would probably be depressed meeting her...

Night slowly descended.

Yue Yang brought Yue Bing and Yi Nan over underneath the Ten Thousand Year Ancient Oak Tree and spent a peaceful and happy “three person’s world”.

Yue Yang’s jokes made the two girls laugh non-stop. Although they knew that Yue Yang was only amusing them for their pleasure, they also wanted to enjoy the moment. Laughter that sounded like silver bells ringing resounded from time to time, underneath the Ten Thousand Years Ancient Oak Tree. As the dark night passed and dawn started to rise from the east, Yue Yang saw that the exhausted Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, and the Li Brothers had arrived.

From the start, Fatty Hai was like a half dead person. Ye Kong needed to trample on him from time to time before he would move a little. However when he saw the Bloody Queen, he immediately changed.

He flew towards the Bloody Queen with a speed that a normal human would never reach.

Along the way, he even took out his comb and fixed his disheveled hair neatly and immaculately.

He also tidied his clothes which were a complete mess, and made them look as good as new.

He also assumed the appearance of “I am a gentleman”, and bowed to the Bloody Queen in a refined manner. He revealed a smile that he thought was his most sincere and amiable smile as he said, “This beauty over here, may I ask if you have anything you want me to help you with? For a beauty such as thou, even if thou asketh me to jump into a sea of burning oil or blades, go through fire or water, I would definitely not frown a single brow,”

“...” The Bloody Queen looked at Yue Yang, seemingly asking him how he made such a stupid person a friend.

“My name is Hai Da Fu, dearly called Master Hai by others. I’m 22 years old this year, still single so far. I’ve been waiting for ten thousand years to find a true girlfriend, no, Beauty, I’ve been waiting a hundred thousands years, for you alone. I had deeply fallen for you the moment I laid my eyes on you. Maybe you noticed my dashing outer appearance, but let me tell you, other than having an extremely great body, I also have the strong, unyielding heart of a Ranker. What? Don’t you believe that I’m a Ranker? No, you are mistaken. A person as low-key as myself is often mistaken by others, but I have never corrected them before. Did you think I would easily say to others that I am a grimoire contractor who owns a bronze-ranked level 2 Iron Rhinoceros? No, I’m not that kind of person,” Fatty Hai had not yet finished his speech when he was already sent flying by the Bloody Queen’s kick, who could not take his nonsense anymore. His figure flew high up with the curve of a parabola as he landed ten-metres away.

“Master Hai, you are so silly. How could you not be able to differentiate between a person and a summoned beast?” Yi Nan was secretly laughing in her heart. She herself had almost seen

wrongly, but luckily she didn't get jealous at that time. Otherwise, it would have been very awkward. Yue Yang would also probably think that she was a girl who liked to sulk and get jealous easily... Whatever, didn't he still think of her as brother Yi Nan? This blind asshole, she really couldn't stand his presence.

When Yi Nan looked at Yue Yang, her attitude was completely feminine as she stared at him with a girl's rebuking eyes.

Yue Yang had definitely seen it, but he pretended not to see.

When Yue Bing saw this, she immediately covered her mouth and laughed secretly.

Seems like with this idiot brother of hers, sister Yi Nan would have to confess to him like how Fatty Hai did with the Bloody Queen.

Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to see that his 'brother Yi Nan' was actually a girl.

On the other hand, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers dropped their weapons to the ground as their jaws dropped open, wide enough for a Mammoth Elephant to be stuffed inside, "Gold-ranked humanoid beast?!!"



# Chapter 95 – A Letter From Home Is A Priceless Treasure

---

After knowing that the Bloody Queen was a Gold-ranked human beast, Fatty Hai could not stop crying.

According to him, this was the first time he had expressed his love to a girl. Fatty Hai did not think that his heart would hurt so much. Yue Yang consoled him, “Master Hai, you have so many school beauties infatuated with you, with each of them willing to die for you, you’re better off thinking of a way to deal with them. Don’t be too greedy and lust for the possessions of others!” Fatty Hai cried even more after that.

Actually, everyone knew that nobody liked this Fatty Hai. Whatever things he said about school beauties loving him, were just lustful imaginations in his mind.

After crying loudly for a while, Fatty Hai suddenly expressed his wish to protect his first love.

He clenched his fist and swore that race was not a problem. Even if man and beast had differences, it could not stop pure love. In the end, before he could even finish talking, Ye Kong and the others took him behind the Ten-thousand Year Oak Tree and gave him a good beating. The reason for this was that Ye Kong and the others felt that the existence of a pig head like Fatty Hai had completely destroyed the dignity of the human race.

Fatty Hai’s love between man and beast was destined to be an ill-

fated relationship. Let alone now, even if he was a hundred or a thousand times stronger, the Bloody Queen would probably see him as unqualified.

Very quickly, Fatty Hai who was given a beating did not mention anything about his first love anymore.

“It’s decided then, as your boss, I want to make an example for you to follow! In the future, if I want to contract beasts, I will contract strong beautiful beasts! I don’t want those of Bronze-ranked and Silver-ranked, they must at least be Gold-ranked! Monkey Ye Kong, all of you have to follow the boss’ example!” Fatty Hai’s words caused everyone to roll their eyes. Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were even more direct, giving him the middle finger. This vulgar and aggressive action was something they learned from Yue Yang. They felt that giving the middle finger was the pinnacle of insults, being better than the millions of phrases available to them. It was a wondrous territory of being able to win an argument soundlessly.

But Fatty Hai possessed the almighty armor of thick skin; the middle finger was completely ineffective against him.

He did not dare to provoke the Bloody Queen again, as she could easily send his huge body dozens of metres flying away with a single kick.

But as for Yue Yang, the world’s luckiest person, Fatty Hai still wanted to bribe him, saying, “As the boss, I’ve covered you for several days, but I haven’t been able to treat you all for a meal. Today, I’ll treat everyone! Do your best, get the most expensive

stuff on the menu! We definitely won't go find a warrior's inn that only those shitty mercenaries visit, we'll go to the 'Zhen Wei Restaurant'! After eating and drinking our fill, we can go out and find a beast store! You can find me a Gold-ranked egg, and take note, it has to be a bishoujo beast... You say, if I, the boss, don't bring along a bishoujo beast, how would that work out?"

"This is how you act as a boss?" Yi Nan was sweating to death from this.

"In your dreams!" Yue Bing could not take this anymore.

If the beast stores were selling Gold-ranked beast eggs, would there be any weaklings in this world? Not to mention bishoujo beasts, if Fatty Hai wanted to stick to this desire of contracting only bishoujo beasts, he would probably never contract anything again except for his Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron Rhinoceros.

Yue Yang was better at smooth-talking. He did not strike a blow in Fatty Hai's sexual fantasies, but had instead consoled him, saying, "Your Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron Rhinoceros is also a female! If you cultivate it, who knows? It might become a Gold-ranked Rhinoceros Beauty! But, this needs your hard work and effort to achieve! You're the boss after all, I'll definitely support you. Relax, I'll support you fully from the side!"

After saying this, Yi Nan and Yue Bing both snickered while covering their mouths.

Not to mention the difficulty of evolving the Bronze-ranked Level

2 Iron Rhinoceros, just by looking at the build of the rhinoceros, how would it be possible for it to turn into a bishoujo beast?

This difficulty was probably much greater than cultivating a normal house rat to become a Divine Beast which could raze the heaven and the earth... Ye Kong really wanted to tell Fatty Hai this: If he was able to evolve a Bronze-ranked Level 2 Iron Rhinoceros into a Gold-ranked bishoujo beast, then he would run an entire round around the Soaring Dragon Continent naked.

“Ah. Why didn’t I think of this?” Fatty Hai revealed an expression of enlightenment. He gripped Yue Yang’s hand tightly, saying, “When my Rhinoceros Beauty comes out, then the two of us brothers can make a Bishoujo Beast Killer Duo!”

“This name...” Yue Yang was nearly struck to death by Fatty Hai’s words.

“What’s wrong?” Puzzled, Fatty Hai looked at Yue Yang’s weird expression and asked.

“I’m full of praises for you! It’s settled then, work hard to cultivate a Rhinoceros Beauty! I’m looking forward very much to the birth of the Bishoujo Beast Killer Duo!” Yue Yang answered this completely deadpan, causing Yi Nan and Yue Bing to laugh until their tears were flowing out. Ye Kong and the Li brothers instead rolled their eyes. They felt that if Fatty Hai really wanted to cultivate the Iron Rhinoceros into a Rhinoceros Beauty, it would be better to just cultivate himself into a male rhinoceros. The difficulty level would be much lower that way.

While waiting for Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others to complete the missions for the Oak Tree's Heart, another day had passed.

This time, Yue Bing had already learned [Tree's Thorns and Brambles] and [Coiling Roots]. The only problem was that her activation speed was slightly slower.

If it Yue Bing wasn't ambushed by a sneak attack, her beast-type opponents who could not fly would probably die a horrible death.

After completing the missions of the Oak Tree's Heart, Ye Kong and the Li brothers had a rise in level.

Only Fatty Hai's Iron Rhinoceros stayed as a Bronze-ranked Level 2.

However, the green light from the Oak Tree's Heart had still worked on it. The Iron Rhinoceros' build had become larger. Its horns had seemed to have grown a bit too. Everyone felt that although it was impossible to hope for it to turn into a bishoujo beast, but there would be no problem for it to turn into a war machine that could charge head-on against the enemy. If it rose to Bronze-ranked Level 5 or above, its build would not differ much with beasts that were specialised for war.

Yue Yang also felt that Fatty Hai's White Rhinoceros still had some potential for the future, since it was a Guardian Beast.

If he were to use a peak Ranker's words to express this, "There is no useless gift in the world nor useless beasts, only useless people." Yue Yang agreed wholeheartedly with this.

The Thorny Flower could be considered trash among trash in the hands of other people. However, he could turn it into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who had the power to decimate an entire Demon Legion. The Treant Warrior was also considered to be trash among trash, but in the hands of Yue Bing, it would be able to cause her enemies to be extremely depressed. Fatty Hai's White Rhinoceros if used better could turn from being trash too... The reason why Fatty Hai did not use it well was mainly because he wanted it to be his mount. Not only that, he completely overlooked the fact that this Iron Rhinoceros was weak against water. If Fatty Hai could grasp how the special characteristics of the Iron Rhinoceros grew, he could potentially more than double its strength.

After returning to the Warriors' Guild, the two mercenary captains had already transported the Blade Massacring Demoness, the Flying Dragons and the Demon Generals' corpses to the warehouse designated by Luo Hua City's Mistress.

They had been waiting for Yue Yang to come back to turn in their mission.

"Luo Hua City's Mistress has already paid our wages. The roots and medicinal herbs that we obtained from clearing the battlefield was already taken by the Mistress. All that's left now are 600 gold and a few military armor's from the Demon Generals, please look through them. If you don't mind, we are willing to give up the

prize money to exchange for the corpses of those demons and the Rainbow-winged Banshee. Us brothers need a lot of commendations... “ The two mercenary captains knew that it was too much for them to ask for. Because, the value of those corpses was definitely over a hundred times higher than the prize money that Yue Yang pledged to them. These corpses were highly useful to them, but completely useless for the ranker. Therefore, they mustered their courage to request this from Yue Yang, hoping that this young ranker would be a bit kinder, and allow them to surprise their brothers who had taken all the effort to transport the corpses back.

“Your mission was completed very well. I accept your request.” The moment Yue Yang nodded his head, he gave a few gold as a reward for the Warriors’ Guild’s notary.

“We are deeply moved by your kindness... “ The two mercenary captains were so emotional that their tongues were tied.

As for the mercenaries who was waiting somewhere far away for good news, seeing their own captain waving the fist, doing the gesture that they had agreed on before, all of them started cheering.

After moving the demons and the Rainbow-winged Banshee’s corpses away, exchanging them for commendations at the Warriors’ Guild, the two mercenary captains even dug out the small magic cores embedded within the Magic Giants’ hearts, cleaned them, and gave them to Yue Yang in a neat stack.

Towards the possessions of an ranker, they did not dare to be

greedy at all. After all, Yue Yang had already given verbal consent for them to claim possession of those corpses.

The notary was also smiling from cheek to cheek. He had never seen such a kind ranker in his life.

His occupational duty was a notary, and did not require additional rewards. Not only that, providing for rankers was the honour for their Warriors' Guild. After happily accepting Yue Yang's reward, he respectfully bowed and said, "If you would permit, I can find the best leatherworker for you immediately, and the best auctioneer for you as well. From wyvern skin, wyvern leather armour can be created which even kings will like; From the meat and bones, it can be used to make exquisite dishes; As for the teeth and eyes, they can be auctioned, as for the Demon Generals..."

"I'll take care of the Demon Generals myself." Yue Yang wryly smiled. "I'll leave the wyverns for you to handle for these few days. If it's done remarkably, I'll reward you with another ten gold."

"I do not dare to ask for more rewards. It is my honour working for a ranker." The notary was extremely grateful, and after respectfully bowing to him, he flew off to find the people.

Facing the frozen corpses of Blade Massacring Demoness, five wyverns and five Demon Generals in the warehouse, Ye Kong and the others were dumbfounded. They did not know how to react to it for the better half of the day.



After a long, long time, they finally recovered.

Everyone looked at Yue Yang with extreme shock. “Did you kill all these?”

Seeing that everyone was scared stiff, he quickly waved his hands, saying, “No, it was Luo Hua City’s Mistress, but she didn’t like corpses, only flowers. So, she sent them to me. Most importantly, when the Bloody Queen screamed, the Demon Generals and Blade Massacring Demoness that were fighting each other until they were both heavily injured, all fell.”

Fatty Hai did not really believe this.

He felt that even if the Bloody Queen’s seduction was very useful, how could her voice be so powerful?

However, towards this, Yi Nan believed it firmly and nodded her head, “Fatty Hai, was the time attending school wasted on you? The Bloody Queen is a banshee, her scream is of course powerful. Also, with greater injuries, the scream becomes shriller, and the power of the scream becomes even greater. She was originally a Golden King Beast, screaming at the brink of death would probably have a power that’s ten times more fearsome than it normally is. These Demon Generals had already suffered serious injuries, dying from the scream is very normal.”

Yue Bing, Ye Kong and the others also nodded in agreement. Only, Yue Bing and the others missed out on a point. If the exploding scream from a banshee killed even the Demon Generals,

how did Yue Yang come out unscathed?

Because, they never doubted Yue Yang, in the end, they had forgotten about this little detail.

“I’m preparing to handle the wyverns. Ye Kong, I’ll hand over the Blade Massacring Demoness’ corpse to your beast. Although it still primarily relies on devouring magic crystals to improve, the Blade Massacring Demoness is a strong beast that’s Bronze-ranked Level 7, the corpse is also a little useful. You can use it to feed your beast. As for the magic armour from the Demon Generals, all of you can take and use it. It’s more important for everyone’s fighting capabilities to increase. No need to be shy! However, I want the corpses of the Demon Generals.” Saying this, Ye Kong and the others had thought that Yue Yang was going to exchange the corpses of the Demon Generals at the Warriors’ Guild for achievements. They would never think that Yue Yang would be using them to cultivate his Thorny Flower.

Then, Yue Yang gave a few magic cores of the Magic Giants to Ye Kong, allowing him to freely allocate them to the others.

As for Yue Bing and “Brother Yi Nan”, each of them was given a wyvern’s magic core. Yue Bing did not think too much, and happily received it, thanking her brother repeatedly.

As Yi Nan received it, she blushed slightly, “That’s too much, it’s embarrassing to receive it!” However, her little fist grabbed tightly onto that lightning wyvern’s magic stone, refusing to let go. This magic stone would benefit her little Silver Pegasus greatly.

Moreover, how would she refuse something that Yue Yang was giving her?

After a while, the notary brought a few people running towards Yue Yang.

Two old men threw themselves on top of the wyverns. They did not care about anybody else, even when the notary told them to greet Yue Yang first. Even then, they did not answer in a good mood, “We aren’t here to greet people! The wyvern skins are still fresh right now, if we tarry the resultant quality will fall! Don’t bother us!”

The notary had a huge headache, but he knew all too well the eccentricity of these two people.

He could only turn back and introduce Yue Yang to the other few merchants and the auction manager who would buy the wyvern meat and bones.

After all the negotiations were done, the notary then produced a letter with refined handwriting from his shirt, and offered it up respectfully to him, saying, “This letter from your house was received yesterday. But, I didn’t know your name nor Miss Yue Bing’s name before, and was unable to send it to you on time, please forgive my crime.”

“Mother’s letter?” Just by looking at the handwriting, Yue Bing knew from the first glance that it came from their mother.

“Could it be that something had happened at home?” Yue Yang was startled and quickly took the letter, opening it. He opened up the letter and saw that it was actually only a letter from the beautiful woman expressing her longing for her son and daughter. She asked how they were doing, and whether Yue Yang had found his sister. If he had found her, then he should return home early, to quell the concerns in her heart. This letter from home, although it was a simple and ordinary narrative from the beautiful woman, Yue Yang could still feel the warmth and affection from this ‘ordinary’ letter from home. He could feel how much Fourth Mother missed her daughter and son, how anxious and worried she had been...

A letter from home truly was a priceless treasure.

Perhaps the feelings of jubilation and affection that the Poet Sage [Du Fu](#) felt at that time, were the same as when Yue Yang had received Fourth Mother’s letter.

With someone caring for him, worrying about him, thinking about him, wishing blessings to him from a distant home, this feeling... was truly good.

After Yue Bing had finished looking through the letter, her eyes reddened slightly, nodding her head, yet not crying at all. She only spoke softly to Yue Yang, “Brother, let’s go home. The new year is almost here, we have to go home and give mother a surprise!”

Go home?

The current him had finally had a warm home to return to.

In the small home, there was Fourth Mother who was as gentle as water and the little gluttonous girl waiting for him to return...

What else could be more important than reuniting with his family members at home? Besides, the new year was drawing close, the beautiful woman would definitely have to return to the Yue family's castle to pay respects to her elders. Without Yue Yang and Yue Bing by her side, she would definitely be bullied by the others. He had to accompany her and support her as much as he could, so that he could help her release her resentments. He could go to Tong Tian Tower to cultivate at any time. After the new year, he could squash those geniuses from the Yue family and snatch some dignity back for the Fourth Mother. He would take back justice for this Fourth Mother who was expelled from the Yue Clan Castle for protecting the tragic guy. He would also uncover the truth behind the cancellation of engagement between the tragic guy who jumped into the river and Miss Xue. When he returned to Tong Tian Tower again afterwards, it would not be too late for him to cultivate.

Thinking about the beautiful woman who used all her assets, even her accessories, to buy the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill], making her only wearing hairpins were that were all made of wood, he could not help but be touched by the maternal love she displayed...

Fourth Mother, how would it be possible to find a second Fourth Mother in the world?

## Chapter 96 – Bowing Head In Shame, Turning Red With One Touch

---

Although they received the beautiful woman's letter, Yue Yang did not immediately bring Yue Bing home.

He decided to prepare well and give the beautiful woman a big surprise. At the same time, he wanted to teach the Yue Clan, those self-interested people, a lesson.

Yi Nan pulled Yue Bing away to buy some items. She didn't think that Yue Yang would understand which items would be suitable as presents for Fourth Mother. Furthermore, there were some stuff that a girl would be more suitable to buy, for example, hairpin ornaments, make up powder and so on. It would be strange if a guy knows how to buy these. They prepared to give Fourth Mother and the small girl some good clothing material to make a few new clothes for the New Years. Yue Yang also knew that buying the Spirit Beast Knowledge Awakening Pill for the pitiful guy had made the whole of Fourth Mother's family live frugally for a long time. Although he wasn't the pitiful guy, he had received all of their love. Naturally, he wanted to repay Fourth Mother back.

Yue Yang gave 50 gold to Yue Bing, telling her to buy everything she would need.

Yue Bing had obviously not gotten so much pocket money before, she kept rejecting them. In the end, she was persuaded by Yi Nan and accepted it happily.

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were preparing to fetch Wen Li Mo, He Zi Yun and Qi Yang, the three other three similarly-aged brothers here. Although they didn't have any battle capabilities, no one would be more suitable to learn the Demon Abyss Language than them.

Maybe they had decided to follow Yue Yang, this Yue Clan Third Master who had a bright future ahead, in the future. Ye Kong also didn't reject the money he received from Yue Yang. He accepted it and nodded, then went away with the Li Brothers. As for Fatty Hai, he was drooling in anticipation. He didn't lack money, but seeing that everyone received their pocket money, he couldn't help but feel envious towards them.

However, his identity was the group's 'Boss'. Even if he wanted pocket money as well, he couldn't say it to Yue Yang.

"I want to buy some stuff, but i don't know the place..." Yue Yang secretly laughed in his heart, preparing to trick this Fatty.

"What? As your boss, I can very responsibly tell you that in Tong Tian Tower, there is no one that I, Master Hai, don't know of. There is also no one who wouldn't recognize this Master Hai. Say, what do you want to buy?" The moment Fatty Hai heard that the items that Yue Yang wanted to buy were simple, daily necessities, he immediately slapped his plump chest with great strength, causing his fats to vibrate. He said in a heroic tone, "Let alone these items, even if you wanted to buy a whole mountain, I can help you buy it. Furthermore, we are all great brothers, how could I use your money to buy these small things... I actually wanted to see you off, but you pushed this money onto me. If you did it like

this, you aren't really respecting me as your Boss... Alright, even if I am your Boss, but I will respect your opinion,"

Fatty Hai hugged the 10 gold that he received from Yue Yang and went away happily.

The amount of money doesn't matter.

More importantly, Yue Yang had given him money too. Furthermore, he even asked for his help. This way, he, the Boss, could raise his head in front of Ye Kong and the others.

Yue Yang had actually used 10 gold to make Fatty Hai go away. That was because with Fatty Hai at his side, he couldn't summon the thorny Flower which was still digesting the Demon Generals. Thus, in order to hide this secret, Yue Yang would rather give him 10 gold and send him away on an errand.

Everyone in the storage house had left, only Yue Yang was left.

When the gold-ranked Thorny Flower was summoned, he saw that it would probably only need one more day at the most to evolve into a Thorny Flower Demoness. It hadn't finished digesting the Demon King Ha Xin's arms, but previously it had used [Division Propagation] and eaten four Demon Generals. These Demon Generals had almost been completely digested. The Thorny flower was currently 6 meters tall and its stalk was as thick as a bucket. Its flower was even larger than a round table. At its side, two secondary stalks with mouths as wide as bowls had also grown. It also had a cluster of stalks. They were all connected by



[Division Propagation], absorbing the nutrients carried from the [Division Propagation] continuously...

After Yue Yang made the Thorny Flower use its cluster of stalks to swallow the five Demon Generals, he only saw that this Thorny Flower that was about to evolve into a thorny Flower Demoness had suddenly shrunk.

Turned out that its thin leaves had turned bigger without him realizing

In the end, the leaves wrapped around the Thorny Flower who had curled into a ball, just like a piece of cabbage. Yue Yang couldn't understand what was happening. This didn't look like an evolution to become a Thorny Flower Demoness, could it be that it had broken through another realm?

Not only the main body, even the other two secondary stalks wrapped themselves with their leaves, turning into two small wrapped lumps of flowers.

This was definitely a Variant Evolution, but it was not within Yue Yang's knowledge and estimation.

After the Thorny Flower wrapped itself into a ball, it shone with a golden light as it voluntarily returned to the Silver Grimoire. Yue yang tried to open the summoning grimoire and found that it was in the middle of a transformation. But Yue Yang couldn't predict what it would evolve into. This kind of evolution that involved the flower wrapping itself with its leaves should only happen when it

was evolving into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. It was still too soon for that, with its current level and growth, it would definitely not be able to go through a Variant Evolution into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. It was not even a Thorny Flower Demoness yet... Could it be that before the Thorny Flower evolved into a Thorny Flower Demoness, there was another secret evolution path?

Yue Yang thought that it might be due to swallowing too many Demon Generals. He made the flower eat too much fertiliser and accidentally triggered a special evolution.

Now there was one big and two small wrapped balls of flowers, does that mean that there would be three Thorny Flower Demoness later on?

What was actually happening?

With regards to the Thorny Flower's special evolution, Yue yang completely couldn't predict it at all. He also couldn't see through it with his [Divine Vision]. The only thing that he knew was that this was an extremely good and beneficial thing; that it was not a bad thing at all..

In any case, nurturing a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was a long process, Yue Yang was not in a hurry to do so.

Right now he had a lot of powerful beasts with him, so he wasn't in a hurry and there wasn't a need to make the Thorny Flower participate in his battles. Let alone Xiao Wen Li, the Golden Beast

and the Bloody Queen, the humanoid Golden King Beast. Even Barbarian Shadow Cow and Hui Tai Lang, the bronze-ranked level 5 beasts could already make others give up immediately upon seeing them. This time when they return to their Clan's Castle, Yue Yang was really looking forward to fighting against Yue Tian, Yue Yan and the other in the Young Generation Tournament. He wanted to beat them up in front of the clan's members and make Fourth Mother proud of him. He also wanted to repay them for Yue Bing's grievances and make those fellows who looked down upon the Fourth Branch be so surprised that their eyes pop out of their sockets.

At that time, he would let them see the power of the 'Soaring Dragon Continent's Most Useless Trash'.

Another reason on why Yue Yang was not in a hurry to go home was because he was preparing to go to the Summoning Temple to buy a Summoning Grimoire for Yue Shuang the small girl, his other sister.

He had already had this intention when he was still in White Stone City, before he went out to search for Yue Bing. This time, since he had come to the Tong Tian Tower, he decided to bring the small girl a summoning grimoire when he got home. Maybe Yue Shuang could make a contract with a grimoire already, but she couldn't try it out because Fourth mother did not have the money to buy her one.

The Summoning Temple was an isolated, pagoda-like building.

It was located in a residential area, but other than grimoire

contractors, it did not allow other warriors to enter.

All of the members of the Four Great Clans and Three Royal Households would send their babies or their baby's' blood the moment they were born so that it could be identified whether they were grimoire contractors under the Grimoire Contractor Identifier. Due to their closed marriages, there hadn't been anyone from the later generations of the Four Great Clans who couldn't contract a grimoire in the past thousand years. As for the Royal Households, although there might be some who weren't grimoire contractors, these people would never be recognised by the Royal Households; they might not even be able to live. They would think that these people were bastards and not of pure lineage of the Emperor, which would make them fake princes and princesses. Once it was clear that they couldn't contract a grimoire, the Royal Household would quietly dispose of the mother and the baby. They would announce to the public that it was a difficult birth, and that neither the mother nor child managed to survive.

As for all the other families in this world, they would also do the same test for their child. The only difference was that most of their later generations couldn't contract a grimoire.

The Four Great Clan's outstanding bloodlines was something that ordinary people could only be extremely jealous of.

The only thing that make these ordinary people feel a little better was that there are not many people belonging to the Four Great Clans. The number of descendants that the Four Great Clans have is much lower than an ordinary family's. For example, in the current generation of the Yue Clan, there are only nine

grandchildren. That number was already large for the Yue Clan, but ordinary families, on the other hand, would have given birth to ten grandchildren at least. They could win with numbers. Although the success rate of contracting a grimoire was not high, with the addition of pills and strong medicines, every generation could ensure that there was one or two grimoire contractors in their generation.

When the guard of the Summoning Temple saw Yue Yang coming closer, he slowly said, “Young man, please show your summoning grimoire, otherwise you can’t enter.”

As Yue Yang summoned his Silver Grimoire out, the middle-aged man’s expressions changed. It was not that he had never seen a Silver Grimoire before, but it was rare to see a young grimoire contractor like Yue Yang who owned a Silver Grimoire.

Most importantly, he realized that he didn’t recognise Yue Yang.

How could he not recognize this young genius who owned a Silver Grimoire?

As he accompanied Yue Yang to enter, he asked again, “Are you searching for information on the major events in the beginning of the summoning era, Guardian Spirit Beasts or Innate Skills?”

“No, I came to buy a grimoire.” Yue Yang knew that he would need to show an introduction letter to search for information with regards to Guardian Spirit Beasts and Innate Skills etc. Furthermore, he would need to tell them about his own knowledge

so that it could be shared with others. Only then would he be able to search for information regarding Innate Skills and Guardian Spirit Beasts. He would never do that. He gave 100 gold to the guard and added a small silk pouch, “There are a few strand of hairs of the person who is going to buy the grimoire, Yue Shuang. She is one of the younger generation of the Yue Clan, please verify it,”

The middle-aged man received the gold and the silk pouch, went to the next floor and asked an elder to inspect and verify the hair.

A moment later, he came out clasping a Bronze Grimoire.

But he didn't give it to Yue Yang immediately, instead, he stood in front of Yue Yang with a Magic Crystal Cube that the elder had given him. Yue Yang knew that this was a compulsory procedure to check his identity. Even the emperor would not be able to avoid it. Thus, he took his Crystal Card and placed it on top of the cube.

A golden light flashes as a line of words appeared in the Magic Crystal Cube.

Grimoire Contractor's Name: Titan

With regards to the matter of Yue Yang owning a Crystal Card, the middle-aged person and the elder could only look at each other, a little shocked.

It might be possible to own a Silver Grimoire through hard work

and intense training, but hard work alone was not enough to own a Crystal Card. Only the most talented, most outstanding young talents could have a Crystal Card.

“According to our usual practice, we would like to ask a question that you must reply honestly. Young man, may we ask what relation do you have with Yue Shuang?” The middle-aged man indicated for Yue Yang to place his hands on top of the Magic Crystal Cube as he asked.

Yue Yang was shocked, could it be that this thing could even detect lies?

If he didn't reply honestly, what would happen? He was actually a guy from another world and did not have any blood relation to Yue Shuang at all. If he lied, was found out, and couldn't buy the grimoire, he might even stir up some trouble. Should he answer truthfully or lie? He was in a really difficult spot right now. He couldn't possibly say the truth, because he couldn't say that he was unrelated to Yue Shuang at all. Otherwise if another Yue Clan member came to investigate, everything would be revealed.

He also couldn't lie; this lie detector would probably catch his lie.

If he lied and was found out, he could even accidentally reveal his real identity.

“I am her brother, she calls me Brother Xiao San,” When Yue Yang said these, he tried to maintain a calm tone with all his might. His outer appearance was unquestionable, and he used his

Innate Qi to calm his wildly thumping heart.

He was even more nervous saying these words than when he was taking part in his high school exam. His back was drenched with sweat.

Of course, his face was completely calm, as if it was a matter of course and an unchangeable truth; that they were really brother and sister by blood.

At Yue Yang's reply, a golden light shone from the Magic Crystal.

The middle-aged person and the elder immediately nodded, "The Ancient Code recognized you to be Yue Shuang's grimoire proxy. You have completed the last recognition, young man. We have to enforce the last identification in order to protect other grimoire holders from getting their grimoire stolen. Even if the Emperor himself came to be a proxy, he must be first recognized by the Ancient Code. I have to warn you that if Yue Shuang's grimoire was lost before she managed to contract it, or if it was stolen, you must come here bearing the Yue Clan Master's letter to replace it. Furthermore, you must wait for at least a year before we can replace you with another grimoire,"

"I understand." When Yue Yang heard this, he secretly thought 'what a close call...'. He was really drenched with cold sweat.

However, as for the Ancient Code recognising himself as Yue Shuang's brother, it could be because he was speaking the truth.



He didn't say that he was the pitiful guy or was blood-related to Yue Shuang, he only said he was her brother... Fortunately he had a fast reaction and noticed a hole in the argument. Furthermore, now that his words had been recognized and verified, he could better hide his own identity.

When Yue Yang exited the building, the middle-aged man and the elder started shouting at each other with shock, "That brat just now, could he be the Yue Clan Third Young Master that everyone called Trash? Oh my god, didn't they say he couldn't contract a grimoire at all? He already owns a Silver Grimoire, but the rest of the world still think that he was trash! He was really a little fox that managed to keep his talents hidden. Did you see the beast he brought with him? It was a bronze-ranked level 5 Two-headed Demon Wolf, yet he didn't value it at all and did not form a contract with it. I dare say he has been pretending all this while to deceive others and make others think that he was trash. He is even more outstanding than his father, and more cunning to boot. He is different from his father who was honest and upright,"

"The one who issued his Crystal Card should be that person. All this years, only she managed to get a Crystal Card, the others could only get Gold Cards at the most. Even when the Three Great Killing Stars entered Tong Tian Tower, you also knew about it, they were only issued Gold Cards. I have really never seen anyone who managed to get a Crystal Card..." the elder's body suddenly trembled, "Didn't I say it before? How could Yue Qiu's son be trash? Seems like she was the only one who could truly see his potential,"

"Yeah..." When the middle-aged man heard that, he suddenly realized, "I was actually really baffled when I saw that brat taking

out a Crystal Card. So turns out she was the one who issued it to him...”

“This brat, although he holds the title of trash, she would definitely not see someone wrongly. Compared to her, we are no better than a blind man,” The elder was full of respect for the big-breasted royal oneechan that had welcomed Yue Yang when he first entered Tong Tian Tower. He didn’t even dare to say her name out loud.

“Elder Ma, we have been truly thoroughly deceived by rumors. If that brat is trash, then my son is shit that couldn’t even be compared to trash... My son had even dared to call himself a genius. That idiot, he doesn’t know what genius means. The real genius should be like that brat just now, who is already standing proudly above every other young Rankers without anyone even realising it...” the middle-aged man laughed bitterly as he shook his head, as if he felt ashamed for his own son.

“Yue Hai, that old man, is really fortunate. Why couldn’t I have such a good grandson too?” the elder sighed regretfully.

Yue Yang didn’t know that there were people talking behind his back as he brought Hui Tai Lang back to the Warrior’s Lodge.

Not long after, Ye Kong and the others who used a teleportation scroll returned. Wen Yu Mo, He Zi Yun and Qi Yang were extremely moved when they saw Yue Yang, because Yue Yang’s existence had thoroughly changed Ye Kong’s and everyone’s lives completely. But they were all men after all, they wouldn’t say it out even if they feel extremely grateful. They only nodded their

heads as they carved him into their hearts, and did not say anything else.

Meanwhile, Fatty Hai shouted to some mercenaries, pleased with himself, as they brought down all the things that Yue Yang had requested.

In front of Ye Kong and the others, Fatty Hai had the nerve to return the surplus money to Yue Yang. He even asked if Yue Yang had enough money to go home, and said that this boss could give him 5 gold for his journey home. Ye Kong and the others rolled their eyes at this, who was the one who couldn't blink his eyes when he saw 600 gold previously? He even had the nerve to hypocritically ask Yue Yang if he needed money for his journey home. This guy was really shameless.

Yi Nan and Yue Bing returned too, and they bought even more things than Yue Yang.

“New year is almost here. Everyone, go home to your hometowns; we'll train together next year. It has also been a long time since you guys went back home. You should go back during the new year, and reunite with your families,” Yue Yang divide the things that Fatty Hai had bought and gave each of them a portion, considering them as a souvenir brought by Ye Kong and the others for their parents during their visit to their homes.

“Sister Yi Nan-I mean, Brother Yi Nan, why don't you come and stay at our place for a few days? You can return to your aunt's place when New Years come,” Yue Bing invited her excitedly.

“No, I still have some things to do.” Yi Nan immediately shook her head and hands, rejecting her offer.

Suddenly, she bit her lips as her face turned bright red. She bowed her head and said towards Yue Yang in an embarrassed tone, “You, come out for a while. I have something to tell you.”

# Chapter 97 – Who Could Understand A Girl's Heart?

---

“Brother Yi Nan, what did you want to say that can't be said inside?” As Yue Yang followed Yi Nan out, he asked her curiously.

When she heard him call her Brother Yi Nan, she almost fainted in her mind.

At times, she really wanted to give him a beating and trample him with kicks. If she still could not feel appeased even after that, she could bite him hard too. She had seen idiots before, but she had never seen an idiot that was this stupid. Yi Nan was very angry in her heart, but she pasted a smile that was as refreshing as a spring breeze and said, “Actually, I'd like to ask you. With regards to the matter of you and Miss Xue breaking your engagement, what had actually happened?”

Yue Yang was also completely unaware of the situation, how would he know the answer?

He wasn't the pitiful guy; Who on earth would know what that guy did to break his engagement, making him commit suicide in the end? Now others seemed to think that he was the one who initiated the cancellation of the engagement. Since Yue Yang had seen the pitiful guy's diary, he knew that it was definitely not the pitiful guy who initiated breaking the engagement first. He also didn't write a Letter of Engagement Cancellation. Fourth mother and his whole family were also unaware of this, they had initially thought that the heartbreak from Miss Xue breaking their engagement had pushed the pitiful guy over the edge, trying to

drown himself in the river. Did he really commit suicide or was he pushed into the river by someone... Yue Yang was still investigating this matter, hence he was constantly on alert.

(Shiro: Letter of Engagement Cancellation or 休书 is a compulsory letter that a guy must write to a girl's family when he wants their engagement to be cancelled during Ancient Chinese period)

If there was really some enemy that ordered an assassin to kill the pitiful guy and make it seem like he had jumped into the river, then he should quickly dispose of this enemy. Otherwise, since he had replaced the pitiful guy's identity, others might start to get suspicious of him.

Of course, Yue Yang who has a powerful strength right now wasn't afraid of anyone pulling tricks on him. He would counter every trick with another trick. No matter what the enemy would use to attack him, he would always have a way to deal with it.

The only thing he was afraid of was that the beautiful woman, Yue Bing and the others would be sad when they found out about it...

Yue Yang would secretly try to find out what had actually happened. Sooner or later, he would find out the truth. Looking at the circumstantial evidence, it was highly probable that the pitiful guy had drowned himself. This is because if there really was an assassin who was after his life, after taking over the pitiful guy's identity for so long, why haven't Yue Yang met any enemies who tried to attack him?

Yue Yang decided to investigate the truth so that this complicated, unclear situation would come to light. This does not only concern Miss Xue's marriage, it also concerned his identity.

As for Yi Nan's question, of course Yue Yang didn't tell her the truth. He opened his arm and placed it around Yi Nan's shoulders suddenly, hugging her intimately, "Brat, you really made me worry for nothing! I thought you wanted to hit on my sister; so turned out you aren't... brother Yi Nan, my sister is still young. Furthermore, her birth chart isn't that good, so I would dissuade you to pursue her. Actually, there are a lot of pretty girls in the world, as long as you make the correct move, they would be queueing up in front of you naked waiting for you to make a move on them. Don't be too anxious, after the new years, I will accompany you to find girls. You can choose any girl you want; choose the one with the biggest boobs if you want. We'll work together to make you lose your virginity, then we'll slowly research on bed techniques. When our battle prowess has reached the Master level, we'll write our girl's encyclopedia together,"

Meanwhile, Yi Nan's body had been petrified because Yue Yang this shameless guy had hugged her.

Although she knew clearly that this brat didn't take her as a girl, and only thought of her as a brother who he can pour his heart's troubles to, she still couldn't stand him getting too intimate with her.

Her stomach was in butterflies after smelling a particularly masculine scent of a male from Yue Yang. Her body felt a little weak. If it wasn't for her forcing herself to calm her thumping

heart and continued to pretend to be his brother, she would probably be running away from embarrassment long ago.

With regards to Yue Yang's words, Yi Nan didn't think it was funny at all.

Although this brat was quite a good brother, but as for his treatment of girls...She reckoned that his thick skin would probably only be second to Fatty Hai's in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent.

At least, Fatty Hai could recognize that she was a girl. Yue Yang on the other hand, he was simply as blind as a bat.

But speaking truthfully, Yi Nan actually liked the silly Yue Yang who could not recognize her as a girl. This way, she could hear his innermost feelings. For example, he liked beauties with big breasts and butts, and always liked to check out girls whose ample breasts were shaking when they were walking. If he recognized that she was actually a girl, would he tell her about such things? That's definitely impossible. In front of Yue Bing, this brat had definitely pretended to be a good big brother. But behind Yue Bing, when he was alone with her like this for example, he would reveal his real perverted nature. Who else in this world would ask her along to get some girls, this fool...

The only thing that made Yi Nan a little depressed was that this guy liked sexy beauties with ample breasts and bum.

Her own body hadn't blossomed yet, her breasts were like apples.



She reckoned that even after growing them for another two years, they would probably be only as big as pears. She was fated not to have ample breasts like papayas or coconuts.

As for volleyballs and soccer balls, she probably can stop dreaming.

Furthermore, they wouldn't look that good if they grew too big. Girls with enormous breasts were simply monsters.

As for her buttocks, they were arched and filled with a good amount of flesh. She was very satisfied with them. But they were not that round, not full-bodied enough. Only a young woman would probably have a really full and well-rounded butt... She was still a girl, and her body had not fully developed yet. How could her butt be as full and round as a young woman's?

With regards to Yue Yang's criteria for big breasted beauties as a wife, Yi Nan was a little depressed in her heart. He liked big breasts so much; wasn't he afraid of being suffocated by them?

Yi Nan really felt like strangling this big pervert to death, or at least pinch off his wandering eyes. However, on the outside, she only revealed a smile, "You can write the girl's encyclopedia yourself, don't be anxious...Yeah, you, aren't you thinking of finding one? Since you have broken your engagement with Miss Xue, when you return to your clan full of achievements, there would definitely be a lot of people who would want you as their relative. Being related to the Fourth Branch of Yue Clan, maybe even the Da Xia Emperor would order someone to visit you and betroth some princesses to you. You...you, what do you think of

that?”

“Nonsense, if any girls offered themselves up to me, I’d be a fool to reject them!” Yue Yang tapped hard on Yi Nan’s soldiers, shocking her so much that she almost jumped.

His wolfy paws almost touched her breast; what a thick skinned guy.

When Yi Nan’s heart had calmed down, she misunderstood this fellow again.

Could it be that other than perverted stuff in his head, there were no other things at all? He was a normal guy, so it was normal for him to want girls, but he shouldn’t be thinking of perverted stuff all the time!

As a Ranker, why would he be afraid of having no women offering themselves up to his door? If he was going to accept every single girl that was offered to him, he wouldn’t be able to keep everyone even if he lived in a castle.

Suddenly, a kind of sour feeling started to bubble up in Yi Nan’s heart.

If she were to...she definitely couldn’t see that kind of thing happening.

Moreover, others who offered their girls to Yue Yang would

probably have ulterior motives. Which fool would send their beautiful daughters for nothing? They would probably be thinking of a scheme or have an ulterior motive, that's why they had sent their girls. If he accepted everyone without question, then there would probably going to be problems in the future.

Just as Yi Nan was thinking about how to stop this perverted guy, whose head was only filled with perverted stuff, from accepting beauties without question, Yue Yang tapped her shoulder lightly, "Brother Yi Nan, are you jealous? Don't worry, who are we? Aren't we brothers? If I really managed to have a lot of girls, I would definitely share it with you. You also know, I treat you differently than I treat Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others. If I have a lot of girls, I can give you one, but I would never do it if it was them. Did you see how differently I treat you compared to others? You don't know this, but I already liked you from the first moment I saw you. Otherwise, why would I invite you to study bed techniques and co-write a girl's encyclopedia together?"

"Really?" When Yi Nan heard that, her eyes shone brighter.

She had automatically omitted the bed techniques and girl's encyclopedia from Yue Yang's speech, and only took in "I already liked you from the first moment I saw you" instead. At the same time, an unsuppressible feeling of joy bubbled in her heart.

Although this fellow's eyes were just ornaments, his heart was good. It's just that he was a little bit of an idiot who had never thought that she was a girl.

If she had returned to wearing girl's clothings, this fellow would

probably drool a waterfall when he saw her.

Yi Nan secretly laughed, thinking about how he didn't know a beauty was standing right in front of him. Furthermore, he had wanted to bring the beauty along to get some girls. He was really a silly, silly idiot!

Yue yang's wolfy paws had slowly moved south as he pretended to be mysterious. He moved closer to Yi Nan's beautiful ears and blew a hot breath, "Of course, if I have girls, I will definitely share them with you,"

His close proximity and breath made Yi Nan's ears tickle. She really couldn't endure it anymore, but he held her waist so tightly that she couldn't budge.

Yi Nan whose heart had been thumping wildly felt a little bit frantic as she elbowed Yue Yang lightly, seemingly trying to resist him.

But why did she feel like wanting to act like a spoiled child towards him?

"Who would want your scraps? Keep them to yourself," Yi Nan felt the place that this fellow touched was burning, so she hurriedly pushed him away. Like an alarmed deer, she jumped two steps away. She then gathered her courage and tried to think about how to say the load on her mind that she had hidden for so long, "Actually, uhm, I.... Actually, I have a sister... Of course, you have now become strong, so maybe you wouldn't want to have any

relation with a girl from an ordinary family... I mean, if you really wanted to find a girl that was really serious towards you and did not have an ulterior motive, I can introduce you to my sister next time... It's okay if you don't like her when you meet her; she's far from the big breasted type of girl that you liked anyway. But just tell me something, would you be willing to take a look at her?"

"That's really moving, brother Yi Nan," Yue Yang pretended to be extremely moved as he pulled Yi Nan's whole body into his tight embrace, "Actually, I am more or less the same as Fatty Hai; no girls has liked us before. Living a life without a girl's love is so miserable..."

"..." Yi Nan thought she almost suffocated.

This fellow hugged her with simply too much strength.

Furthermore, she felt kind of light-headed...could it be that this is the legendary fainting from happiness?

Yue Yang took great advantage of the opportunity and hugged her for quite a while. When he felt that it was about time, just long enough so that he didn't blow his cover, he immediately released her. He wouldn't let her know that he was actually taking advantage of her. However, he immediately held Yi Nan's small hands tightly, "I didn't know you were actually Zhu Ying Tai; I'm simply overjoyed!"

Yi Nan struggled a little, but seeing that she couldn't free herself from Yue Yang's large hands, she could only pretended not to care

and tried her best to reply naturally, “Who is Zhu Ying Tai?”

(Shiro: lol, this joke requires you to understand [this chinese classic](#). Basically, long story short, Zhu Ying Tai is a girl (she’s the ninth kid in her family) who disguised herself as a guy to attend school. This was during the Ancient China period, so girls can’t go to school. Read the short synopsis on wiki to know more, you won’t regret it ;P)

Yue Yang’s reaction was obviously an expression of utter shock. He patted Yi Nan’s shoulders as he hugged her sweet-smelling shoulders once again, laughing heartily, “I can tell with one look that you are just a fool who never read books. Haven’t you heard of the story of Liang San Bo and Zhu Ying Tai in your school before? I’m really skeptical whether you really paid attention in class or simply just ogled at girls. How could you not hear about their beautiful love story before...”

“The love story about Liang San Bo and Zhu Ying Tai?” Yi Nan tried to search her memories for a long time, but she still didn’t know about these two main characters’ names.

“Wrong, it’s the love story between Liang San Bo and Zhu Ying Tai’s sister,” Yue Yang replied, full of realism and drama, “In an academy, there was an outstanding student called Liang San Bo. He had a good brother called Zhu Ying Tai. Both of them felt like old friends since the first time they met, so they decided to become sworn brothers. It’s more or less the same with our promise to research bed techniques; we have similar interest and like each other’s company. After they graduate, when Liang San Bo sent Zhu Ying Tai home, Zhu Ying Tai magnanimously introduced his ninth sister to Liang San Bo. Just like how you are going to introduce me to your sister...that’s why, I’m really very moved,”

“What happened afterwards?” Yi Nan thought that the story between Liang San Bo’s and Zhu Ying Tai’s sister would not finish that quickly.

“The story is a tragic one. Afterwards when Liang San Bo went to the Zhu Residence, he couldn’t meet with Zhu Ying Tai’s ninth sister because he didn’t have a token to prove his identity. In the end, the Zhu Family ended up marrying the ninth sister to a fellow called Ma Wen Cai. Afterwards when Liang San Bo’s engagement was cancelled, he was really depressed and like I did when Miss Xue broke off our engagement, he jumped into the river. No, he didn’t jump into the river, but he got sick and died in the end,” When Yue Yang said this, Yi Nan felt like lightning had suddenly struck in a clear blue sky.

“Then what happened to Zhu Ying Tai?” Yi Nan held Yue Yang’s large hands tightly as she asked.

“It was said that when Zhu Ying Tai heard about the news, he was extremely saddened and filled with regret. In the end, on the day when his ninth sister was getting married, he went to Liang San Bo’s grave and cried. His crying moved the heavens and made the Liang San Bo’s grave open. Zhu Ying Tai immediately jumped into the grave and died together with Liang San Bo. In the end, their souls fused together with the beasts, and they turned into butterflies...Have you ever seen butterflies that fly in a pair? Those are the spirits of Liang San Bo and Zhu Ying Tai that had transformed... You, why are you crying now?” When Yue Yang saw that Yi Nan had been shocked by his story to the point that her eyes started to redden, he felt a little guilty. He reached out his hands intending to wipe the tears in her eyes, consoling her.

“It’s nothing, some dust just flew into my eye,” Yi Nan was afraid that Yue Yang would find out that she was a girl, so she immediately blocked his large hands and wiped away the tears herself in a hurry.

“For the sake of getting girls, I have prepared a lot of stories. I can tell you about them next time. Getting girls is a profound and deep field of study. For the sake of our happiness, we have to understand them well,” Yue Yang patted Yi Nan’s shoulders lightly.

When Yi Nan heard that, her tears immediately turned into laughter.

This fellow was really an idiot. If she really let him know that she was a girl, she couldn’t imagine what kind of expression he would have.

Suddenly, she remembered about the keepsake from the story. She immediately removed the jade pendant necklace on her neck and put it on Yue Yang anxiously, “This is my... my sister’s keepsake; you must never lose it. Don’t ever become like Liang San Bo who had to break his engagement because he didn’t have a keepsake to prove his identity. Don’t ask me anything first, I will explain everything to you later. If you ever lose it, I will never forgive you-Ah, I mean, my sister will never forgive you,”

“That’s only a story, did you think it was real? Where on earth would there be a guy who followed another guy to the grave?



Those who believed that are idiots,” Yue Yang could only laugh out loud.

“You are the idiot,” Yi Nan gave her a pouty, supercilious look. If Zhu Ying Tai was a guy, she was also a guy.

Yi Nan was worried that Yue Yang would see through her real identity, so she quickly put on her black mask again. But she sneaked a peek at Yue Yang again, and upon seeing that this brat was still acting like the idiot who still had not recognized her, she involuntarily felt a little bitter in her heart. “I’m going now, aren’t you going to say anything to me? Right, what did Liang San Bo said to Zhu Ying Tai when they part?”

Yue Yang assumed the air of a hero, “He accompanied Zhu Ying Tai for eighteen miles when he saw him off, so he said many things when they parted. How would I remember everything? But all these parting words are included in the famous Eighteen Miles Away song about the Liang-Zhu. I think you have really been ogling girls at school, how could you not know about all these? There are many classical musical pieces about Liang-Zhu; Wandering Sworn Brothers, Schoolmates, Eighteen Miles Away, Engagement Cancellation and Forced Marriage, Meeting in the Balcony, Ying Tai’s Weep, Butterflies From The Grave, these are all very famous, don’t you know that?”

Listening to his speech, Yi Nan thought that it was unbelievable that this brat could even understand music.

She was a little curious about it, but she decided to put the matters regarding music down first and raised her request instead:

“Since Liang San Bo had sent Zhu Ying Tai off, you should also send me off.”

Yue Yang rejected it in one breath, “Nonsense. Liang San Bo accompanied Zhu Ying Tai for eighteen miles when he saw him off. I would be an idiot if I accompanied you for eighteen miles, but I can accompany you for 18 metres if you want.”

Yi Nan was a breadth away from fainting due to annoyance. Who asked him to send her off for eighteen miles? She only wanted him to make her feel the feeling of a romantic parting. Who knew that he actually had no intention to do so at all? He was really a big idiot! Yi Nan sent a hard kick towards Yue Yang’s shin, intending to send him flying one hundred metres away with a kick. But alas, Yue Yang managed to avoid it, causing her to kick empty air and almost fell to the ground instead. Immediately, Yi Nan used her nails to grab on Yue Yang’s arms and bite him hard. Then, she screamed loudly at him, “You are going to be the death of me...!!”

She didn’t wait for Yue Yang’s reaction and left quickly, fuming with anger. In just a blink of an eye, she had disappeared from Yue Yang’s line of sight.

Ye Kong and the others who had hidden behind the door to watch the lively scene were looking at each other in confusion. What had actually happened? They were talking nicely just a few moments ago, laughing as they talked, and they suddenly fought in the next second?

Yue Yang turned around and shrugged his shoulders very innocently, “There was a little problem at that brat’s, Yi Nan’s,

hometown. I was kind enough to send him off, but who would know that Yi Nan would bite me before he left.”

“You fool, why can’t you grasp hold of the chance to be with a girl? You wasted a great opportunity! Oh, I’ll be better off if i die,” Fatty Hai cried as he threw a tantrum on the ground, rolling here and there.

“Please die and be reborn quickly,” That’s Ye Kong’s opinion towards Fatty Hai.

After Yue Yang saw Yi Nan off, he bid farewell to Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others.

Yue Yang brought Yue Bing out of the Tong Tian Tower and returned to the island outside of Tong Tian Tower. After going through the teleportation gate to return to the Shang Wu Military Camp, they teleported to White Stone City. When they returned, before they even got a bearing of themselves, the guard in charge of the teleportation gate suddenly came forward to congratulate Yue Bing, “Aren’t you Seventh Miss from the Yue Clan? Previously, Old man Nan had even asked me to find people to inform you. I didn’t expect that you already knew on your own. Congratulations, your Yue Clan is going to have a happy occasion soon. Even the White Stone City Lord had said that he would personally come to congratulate your family,”

“Happy occasion?” Yue Yang and Yue Bing were at a complete loss when they heard it. This was really unbelievable, what happy occasion are they holding now?

(Shiro: Happy occasion or 喜事 can also mean marriage in Chinese tradition)

# Chapter 98 – Beating A Bastard Slave Violently

---

Yue Yang and Yue Bing hurried home.

Along the way, Yue Yang thought about the happy occasion and thought that maybe the Yue Clan had organized another marriage for him. Or perhaps it was Yue Bing. Did someone ask for her hand? Otherwise, could it be Yue Shuang, the little girl? Did someone actually ask for her hand? Never would Yue Yang thought that...he had completely guessed wrongly.

Back at home, as they entered the Main Hall, he saw five to six female servants surrounding the beautiful woman. They were all telling her something, every single one of them talking at once.

There were also some Yue Clan's Guards that had tall and sturdy bodies, and a middle-aged man with white flawless skin, who was sitting arrogantly in front of a table, drinking his tea. The old servant Uncle Nan and the others were waiting upon him very carefully. Yue Yang saw that the beautiful woman's eyes were red with tears. She hugged the little girl tightly, shaking her head continuously as if she was opposing something. However, she didn't vocally dispute the other women out loud.

The little girl who was usually extremely mischievous, was shrinking her body inside the beautiful woman's embrace instead; a look of terror filled her eyes.

The moment they saw Yue Bing and Yue Yang charging inside,

those female servants quieted down one by one.

The beautiful woman's expressions slightly changed, looking a little emotional, but it seemed like she was suppressing her feelings down, unwilling to reveal her emotions. Her body trembled as she slowly stood up, her eyes showing an indescribable glow of happiness. There was also a look of relief, as if she had put down a huge burden in her mind.

Her son and daughter had come home.

They had finally returned home, safe and sound.

If it was a normal day, she would definitely hug her son and daughter, who had returned from far away, as tightly as she could. But right now...the beautiful woman could only nod and reveal a smile as much as she could. Her voice was a little choked with emotion as she said, "It's great that you guys have returned, it's really great," The moment the little girl saw that Yue Yang was back, she shouted "Aiya!" and wriggled out of her mother's embrace. Her little feet dashed forward with an amazing speed across the Main Hall and she jumped straight into Yue Yang's embrace. Her small hands hugged his neck tightly as she then started crying out loud. It was as if she was an orphan who had no one to depend on and had suddenly found her relative.

The old servant Uncle Nan and the others also welcomed them emotionally, quickly taking Yue Yang's backpack from his back.

Only the middle-aged man with the flawless skin did not show

any reaction towards Yue Yang's arrival. He didn't even stand, he simply sat leisurely on his chair as he held the teacup in his hand and slowly drank his tea.

When Yue Yang walked closer, carrying the little girl in his arms, the middle-aged man glanced at Yue Yang with the corner of his eye, but continued to drink his tea leisurely. After a long time, he finally said in an arrogant tone, "So, the Third Young Master has returned. You came home just in time. I came by the orders of the Clan Master to inform you in advance, Third Young Master. In two days, you have to bring your whole family and return to the Yue Clan's Castle. Other than paying respects to the Clan Master and other Clan Elders, you also have to pay respect to the newly-wedded wife of the Fourth Master. This Fourth Mistress that is about to join your family is an extremely wealthy miss from He Yang Feng's family. However, this marriage will not be a simple matter of taking an ordinary concubine. In the future, the Fourth Branch legal Mistress (wife) would be this woman. When you pay respects to her later, you'll have to call her Fourth Mother, or Fourth Mistress."

(Shiro: Fourth Master – Yue Bing's dad, Yue Yang's Dad's brother/adoptive father. Yue Yang's dad was Third Master)

"My father is going to remarry?" Yue Bing almost fainted when she heard this. How could this have happened?

"...." When Yue Yang heard it, he was also extremely shocked.

Faintly, he could sense that this wasn't simply an ordinary marriage affair; this was a plot.

It must be a plot against the Fourth Branch.

Although the beautiful woman and Fourth Uncle seldom lived together, they had mutual respects for each other. They also lived harmoniously and did not quarrel with each other. Furthermore, according to the pitiful guy's diary, his Fourth Uncle wasn't the kind of man who was fickle-minded. On the contrary, he was a good man who was filial to his parents and loving to his children. He was a good husband that had never quarreled with his wife for more than ten years. Although he wasn't very strong and couldn't compare to his three older brothers, his morals, character and attitude was definitely not short of a true nobleman's.

A person like him, how could he abandon his current wife and take in another lover?

This matter was absolutely strange.

"The Clan Master has already decided to celebrate the wedding on the auspicious date of the 28th." When the white-skinned man continued, Yue Yang was even more astounded.

Marrying on the 28th? Today was already the 26th.

There was no teleportation gate from White Stone City to the Yue Clan's Castle. They might be able to make it if they ride fast horses, but the beautiful woman and the little girl couldn't ride a horse. They would need to ride on a horse carriage or a sedan chair. They would definitely not be able to make it.



Seems like the Yue Clan was not even going to give a chance for the beautiful woman to oppose the marriage.

If not for him hurrying home with Yue Bing, it seemed like this matter would have been completed without them even being able to do anything about it.

Why did the Yue Clan oppose the Fourth Branch so much? Was it the First and Second Branch who were playing these tricks, or was there another reason? Yue Yang couldn't understand it at all, but he was furious. He had wanted to return to the Yue Clan's Castle and fight for the justice of Fourth Mother's resentments, he wanted to help her take revenge on those people. However, they had actually bullied them to this extent instead. If he still didn't retaliate, then he was truly a trash among trashes.

“My mum is the true official Mistress of the Fourth Branch, so even if she wanted to enter into our family, she has to be a concubine. How could you make her the legal wife? Then what do you guys regard my mother as?” Yue Bing was so angry that her face had turned white.

Not only did the miss from the He Yang Feng's family want to marry into their family, she also wanted to become the legal wife? What kind of reasoning is this?

If they really let this matter go, then the Fourth Branch would really not have a position in the Clan anymore. Yue Bing decided to be violent. She would definitely not endure someone bullying the

Fourth Branch so much.

“Although Mistress Xian is a faithful and virtuous wife, everyone knows that Fourth Master didn’t have a son. Without a son, it would be difficult to continue the line... The Clan Master’s intention was to hold this happy occasion as soon as possible, since the Fourth Master is still young and has an affinity with Miss Feng. Otherwise she might get pregnant and give birth to a child before marriage. This matter would not sound very nice if it was spread to the public. Third Young Master and Seventh Young Mistress shouldn’t complain too much, this is a grown up matter. You two are still young, so you wouldn’t understand... Actually, when Miss Feng joins the family as the legal wife, Mistress Xian could only be treated as a concubine. However, Miss Feng is a highly intelligent woman with high principles and morals. She knows that Mistress Xian has worked hard for the Fourth Branch for many years, and can be credited for being a virtuous wife. She couldn’t bear to let Mistress Xian be a concubine, let alone making the Fourth Master write a divorce letter and send it home...Hence Miss Feng has already said that she is willing to call Mistress Xian older sister. In the future, she wanted to create a harmonious Fourth Branch and share a husband with Mistress Xian peacefully,” A middle-aged female servant suddenly stood up and chattered a whole bunch of rubbish.

“We actually have to thank her for not chasing my mother out of the house?” Hearing this, Yue Bing simply felt like a bolt of lightning had struck under a clear sky.

Is there such a reasoning? Isn’t this a hundred times more uncivilized than those cannibals who said that they wouldn’t be full unless they eat a person?

Yue Bing glared at the woman full of anger, “Didn’t my mother also marry my father as his legal wife? Didn’t she also come from a wealthy and prominent family? Furthermore, how could the Fourth Branch not have a descendants to continue our family line? Don’t we have Third Brother?”

Seeing Yue Bing’s angry glare, the female servant jumped with fright and retreated back.

The flawless-skinned middle-aged man let out a cold laugh instead, snorting without any ounce of care at all, “Seventh Young Mistress, did you know who matchmade Mistress Xian, and who vouched for her? Also, did you know who gave her dowry? If it wasn’t for the Third Master trying to protect the Fourth Master’s reputation before, he wouldn’t have stood up to become their matchmaker. Strictly speaking, Mistress Xian only followed Fourth Master back, without a name nor background. But seeing that she was kind and virtuous, everyone had let it go. If everyone make too many complaints about it and the news gets out to the public, the Yue Clan will become a joke,”

“Second Branch Butler, if the Yue Clan insisted on holding the marriage ceremony, I would actually not oppose it at all. However, please do not slander others. Although it was true that at that time Third Brother and Sister became our matchmaker, the old man Song He became our witness, and the Hundred Flower Valley Lord bestowed me with Seven-coloured Flower Basket and Red Sands Jade as my dowry, we, the two Hua sisters, married two Yue Clan’s brothers in front of over a hundred strong warriors. We were congratulated and watched by all these people, how could you say that I am a woman that had an illicit sexual relation with the

Fourth Master? Didn't the Yue Clan, be it the old or the young, welcome us with smiling faces at that time? The Clan Mistress (Shiro: Yue Yang's grandmother) even told me personally that she viewed us sisters as her most precious treasures, just like her own daughters... I would never thought that just because the old Clan Mistress, Third Brother and my sister had left us early, the clan's member would turn so hostile towards me, who has been the daughter-in-law of Yue Clan for decades. When did I ever do something wrong towards the Yue Clan? Wifely virtue, speech, appearance and services, when did I ever let the Clan down? Ever since I married into the Yue Clan, I have supported my husband and educated my children. I have always obeyed my husband. Other than not having a son, what have I done wrong to the Yue Clan? When my sister asked me to take care of San-er, I have also considered him to be my own. All of the members of the Yue Clan also agreed to change San-er's status to the descendant of the Fourth Branch. Why did the clan break their words now... Previously you said that my son was useless, but he has already succeeded in contracting a grimoire now, so his future is immeasurable. How could you belittle our San-er so much?" the beautiful woman, for her reputation, tried to justify herself emotionally. In the end, she became even more emotional as she spoke, pouring all of the grievances and pain that she had held inside for many years.

"Mistress Xian, it's not that this servant belittles Third Young Master. This servant was only fulfilling the Clan Master's orders. If Mistress Xian has some complaints to discuss, please say it to the Clan Master directly. How could you throw a tantrum to us lowly servants?" The white-skinned man laughed coldly, full of contempt.

"I can understand the situation more or less already." Yue Yang

had been trying to contain his anger, and listened to the whole situation first. He finally understood everything now.

Weren't they simply, obviously bullying the Fourth Branch?

Did they think that he was still the old pitiful guy, who was easy to bully?

Yue Yang passed the little girl over to Yue Bing who was so angry that she couldn't even speak anymore, and strode forward.

The white-skinned middle-aged man didn't even glance at him; he simply drank his tea leisurely. His arrogant look seemed to dare Yue Yang to try and hit him. Furthermore, the surrounding Yue Clan's guards had also stood on guard, standing right behind the middle-aged man, showing the same exact arrogant and condescending expression like their master.

"Aren't you only a butler? Why are you pretending to be so high and mighty?" Yue Yang suddenly slapped the middle-aged man hard, right on his face, sending him flying through the air. Fresh blood and broken teeth scattered all over the ground. The middle-aged man fell onto a table with a loud boom, breaking the table to pieces. He cried painfully, but before he had the time to struggle, Yue Yang had raised a chair and crash it down to his body mercilessly.

The Yue Clan guards started to attack, but Yue Yang's movements was faster than them a thousand times over... His hands rotated, and as if he had grown another ten arms, he

showered endless attacks to the surrounding guards. Every guard's face was at least violently slapped by Yue Yang a hundred times.

Two Guard Captains who had the best capabilities had summoned a strong beast-type beasts in secret before they came here, as a precaution. They immediately charged forward.

A glare as cold as a Death God's flashed across Yue Yang's eyes as he caught their fists with his palms, then crushing them with his powerful grip. Immediately, the two Guard Captains let out an extremely loud scream as their bones, flesh and skin were crushed into mush. Before the two Guard Captain's miserable cry had ended, Yue Yang had already sent hard kicks right towards their family jewels. A person with good hearing would probably hear some kind of a solemn cracking sound like an egg breaking from Yue Yang's attack.

The two Guard Captains couldn't even let out a squeak as they fainted to the ground. Their large physique's collapsed and landed on the ground with a loud boom.

Seeing that the matter had turned in a bad direction, the middle-aged man hurriedly ran outside, trying to run away.

But Yue Bing, who was carrying her sister, immediately kicked at his heels. If it wasn't because she saw her brother preparing to kill this fellow, and tried to save the middle-aged man's life by stopping him from running away, she would have already summoned her Hundred Year Treant Defender, and trampled on this fellow.

“You want to kill me? I was sent directly by the Clan Master...” the middle-aged man violently cried out in an indiscernible speech as his face had been beaten black and blue by Yue Yang, and most of his teeth had fallen out.

“Aih, isn’t this our Second Branch Butler? Who has beaten you up so badly? So pitiful, who was it actually that had so much guts, who dared to beat up our Second Branch Butler black and blue? Who is it? Who has beaten up our family’s dog? Are our Yue Clan’s dogs something that can be beaten up as one pleases? Even if they were beaten up, only us, the masters, have the authority to beat them up,” Yue Yang laughed coldly as he started kicking the middle-aged man’s body madly.

With each kick that Yue Yang gave, the middle-aged man let out a cry that sounded like a pig in slaughter.

The middle-aged man was in so much pain that he’d rather die. He knew that if this continues, he would really die. Seeing that the beautiful woman was right in front of him, he immediately struggled to crawl towards her, wanting to beg her to spare his life.

Who would know that before he even reached the beautiful woman, Yue Yang had jumped high and landed right on his back, shouting angrily, “What a brazen bastard of a slave, you dared to try and harm your mistress? You actually dared to make a move and try to assassinate my Fourth Mother under everyone’s onlooking eyes? You, ungrateful bastard of a dog, how would you pay for your sins? Servants, drag him out and beat him to death! Then chop him up and feed him to the dogs!”

Uncle Nan and the others were so shocked that they could only stare blindly.

But seeing their young master's impressive, general-like bearing and power, they immediately felt a bubble of anger burst from within them. They became pumped up and daring.

Upon hearing Yue Yang's orders, they immediately charged forward in an uproar, dragging the bloodied, fainted Yue Clan guards outside one by one... Meanwhile, Yue Yang broke off a table's leg, and swung it down hard few times. In just a moment, a few of the guard's arms and legs had been broken by him.

The female servant who spoke out just now was so scared right now that she was paralyzed on the ground, so frightened that she started to wet herself.

There were some who had already fainted immediately out of fear, their eyes white as they lost their consciousness.

When the beautiful woman saw Yue Yang brandishing that table leg that had been drenched by blood and was preparing to kill that female servant, she immediately held him tightly, "Enough, San-er, stop. These people are all vicious servants, there's no advantage for you at all if you kill them all. They were sent here by someone else's orders. Fourth Mother knows that you are a good boy who wants to help me vent my anger and teach these vicious servants a lesson, but you shouldn't overdo it. You should just let her slap her mouth; you must never kill her,"



When she heard this, that female servant who was half unconscious started to slap herself with all of her strength without even waiting for Yue Yang's orders.

What a joke, if she let this Third Young Master, who was called useless but was extremely ruthless, beat her up, how would she still be alive?

Yue Yang who was held by the beautiful woman couldn't beat the female servant up, so he could only stretch his foot and kicked two of the closest servants. This made the female servant so scared that her soul almost flew away, and she started to beg him to spare her life. The beautiful woman held onto her son tightly and refused to let go, stopping him from using the bloody table leg to beat the female servant up.

She was a little scared in her mind, but she was also extremely touched that her son had vented her anger for her sake. The tears that she had held inside all these years started falling down continuously, and she started to sob uncontrollably.

Seeing this, Yue Bing and the little girl immediately jumped forward. The two daughters and their mother, three people, hugged each other as they cried.

"Don't cry, I will bring you all to the Yue Clan Castle immediately and we'll ask Fourth Uncle what really happened. Fourth Mother, don't be afraid...don't cry. With me here, no one would be able to bully you," When Yue Yang said this, his words

moved the beautiful woman even more and she started to cry even louder than before. In such a time where she didn't have anyone to rely upon, her own son had stood up on her behalf, bravely becoming the family's supporting pillar. If he wasn't around, she wouldn't have known what to do...

# Chapter 99 – Kill Them All For Me!

---

Shiro: So I see some confusion...let me try to explain the terms? Think of the third master, fourth master thing as a title. So Yue Yang's would be Third Young Master Yue Yang.

Third Young Master/Yue Yang: He is the third oldest amongst the grandchildren generation in the Yue Clan.

Seventh Young Mistress/Yue Bing: She is the seventh oldest amongst the grandchildren generation in the Yue Clan.

Third Master/Yue Qiu: He is the pitiful guy's birth father, legendary but died early. Married Fourth Mother's sister.

Fourth Master: He is the pitiful guy's adoptive father.

Fourth Mother/Fourth Mistress/Lady Xian/the beautiful woman: Fourth Master's wife

Second Butler: Second Branch's family butler.

---

In White Stone City, the official in charge of the teleportation gate was preparing to close it before heading to the Eastern Tavern for a drink. Suddenly, he heard a rumble and saw more than ten men rushing over, surrounding him.

“What are you guys doing? I am... “ The official in charge of the teleportation circle had not finished speaking before the tallest man already grabbed him, asking him in a stern voice at the same time: “Where are the members of the Yue Clan's Fourth Branch?”

“Ah, just now the Third Young Master and the Seventh Young Mistress came back, and took Fourth Madam away. There was also a group of servants with them, they teleported to Black Clay City...

“ Before the official in charge of the teleportation circle had even finished speaking, the leader of the group gave a shout, “Shit!”. Randomly throwing aside the official, he led the team to depart with loud stamping sounds. The official in charge of the teleportation portal unhurriedly got up from the ground, patting his chest: “ As expected, the Third Young Master was right. There really are a few blind, wretched fellows who are causing troubles for the Yue Clan. Did they actually think that with just a dozen or so of fools like them they would be sufficient confront the Yue Clan of the Four Major Clans? But anyway, since there’s money to keep, I’ll follow the instructions that the Third Young Master left behind!”

When he discovered that the gold coins in his pocket were still there, he was immediately in a better mood.

He had been rewarded with an ample amount of 5 gold coins simply by helping the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master tell a small lie. Where else would he be able to find such a good deal?

Yue Yang did not guide the beautiful woman to Black Clay City, but rather, to Green Bamboo City. After reaching Green Bamboo City, Yue Yang gave the old servant Uncle Nan and the others 5 gold as living expenses, telling them to go back to the Yue Clan Castle only when the new year began. For now, they would first find a place to rest for two days.

Uncle Nan and the other servants also knew that they were a burden to the Young Master, so they nodded and agreed to find a place to stay at in Green Bamboo City.

Yue Yang carried the little girl, who had been so tired that she ended up falling asleep, brought the beautiful woman and Yue Bing to rent the biggest, most comfortable, enclosed four-wheel carriage he could find and headed straight for the Yue Clan Castle.

If it was just Yue Yang alone, or even bringing just Yue Bing, Yue Yang would have definitely chosen to teleport directly to Black Clay City, which was the nearest city to the Yue Clan Castle. There were reasons as to why he had chosen to go to Green Bamboo City, the first was because Green Bamboo City was not much further than Black Clay City, and there was a main road that would lead directly to the Yue Clan Castle; the second was that according to a normal person's line of thought, one would think that Yue Yang, Yue Bing, and the others who were rushing, would head straight to Black Clay City, and thus overlook Green Bamboo City, which was slightly further away.

Although he did not know if people would come to intercept them mid-journey, it was still best to be prepared.

Now that he was bringing along the beautiful woman and the little girl, his speed could not be too fast. Apart from ensuring that the trip would not be too exhausting for them, he also could not let them be put in any danger.

Thus, Yue Yang got the best four-wheeled carriage he could find and had the beautiful woman, Yue Bing, and the little girl to sit inside, while he alone sat next to the coachman, taking note of the changes in their surroundings. If there were any people attacking, Yue Yang would just let Hui Tai Lang play with them.

Lately, Hui Tai Lang was living like a prince, doing nothing but eating and sleeping, and there were even hints of him getting fatter.

He even gave the coachman a huge amount of gold to get him to drive through the night.

After driving through the entire night, at the break of dawn on the second day, they managed to arrive at the Yue Clan Village, which was 10 miles away from the Yue Clan Castle.

These were the living quarters of the Yue Clan branch members, the descendants of extended family, and distant relatives. Although this was called the Yue Clan Village, it was similar in size to White Stone City. Within the village, there were even city walls and facilities such as a Mercenary Guild, a Warrior Guild and taverns.

The Yue Clan Village was actually the first gate of the Yue Clan Castle and was located in the middle of a deep valley. After passing through it, there would be two large roads winding up towards the Yue Clan Castle, which towered halfway up the mountain.

“Young Master, there is someone blocking the road ahead of us...” The coachman was so scared that his entire body was trembling.

Of course, it was not his first time going to the Yue Clan Castle, but he had never seen such a situation like this before.

Almost a hundred Yue Clan guards were defending the front of the Yue Clan Village, all looking ferocious at his arrival. It wasn't usually like this. Although there had always been someone to interrogate at the Yue Clan Village, apart from their attitudes being slightly arrogant, they would never obstruct. Right now, it seemed as if this Young Master was not a member of the younger generation of the Yue Clan, but more like someone who had come to carry out a vendetta... But if he had come to carry out a vendetta, why would he bring three women, both big and small? What was this all about?

The more he thought about it, the more scared the coachman became. Soon, he had become a trembling lump and was no longer willing to urge the horses forward.

Once Yue Yang saw this fellow's good-for-nothingness, he smoothly grabbed a handful of gold coins, shoved them into the coachman's pocket, then kicked him off with one leg and took control of the carriage himself.

"Xiao San, what, what is the meaning of this? Don't tell me you want to force your way in?" From within the guards of the Yue Clan, a mighty and dignified purple-robed warrior strode out with a smiling face and stopped in front of the carriage: "According to the servant's reports, not only did you oppose your father's marriage and disregard the Clan Master and the Clan Elders' decision, you even cruelly beat up the Second Butler that the Clan Master had sent to persuade you and turned him into a disabled... Now the Elders are furious, and they entreated the Clan Master to give an order to punish you severely. You can go up the mountain, but you must get off the carriage, offer a humble apology and walk up one step at a time."

“Eight Mistress’ husband, why do you impose on us a criminal charge without distinguishing right from wrong?” Yue Bing pushed aside the curtain covering the carriage entrance and got out of the carriage, asking indignantly: “It was obviously the First House’s dogs that were relying on brute force to bully others when they were showing off their strength at our house. My elder brother took action to teach those evil servants a lesson, what’s wrong with that? We definitely won’t offer a “humble” apology; what’s more outlandish is that you even have the gall to come and cause us difficulties?!”

“You are part of the younger generation, yet you do not respect your superiors. Is this how Lady Xian raised her children?” Again, a lanky male emerged from the crowd.

“Xian does not know how to support her husband, nor does she know how to educate her children; and it just so happens that she is going to see esteemed father and will beg forgiveness in his presence.” The beautiful woman had already received Yue Yang’s instructions beforehand, and only replied with one sentence, she had entrusted Yue Yang to take care of everything.

The beautiful woman felt that her son had grown up so much and was no longer the shy, little boy who did not dare to let go of her hand all those years ago.

“I’m disrespectful? I’m afraid that it’s some people who have no respect for the old. There are some things that if said, will only let the whole world ridicule them and let the younger generation be humiliated!” Yue Bing had never contradicted her elders and



originally was still slightly inwardly timid. Once she saw that her elder brother was next to her nodding in encouragement she suddenly felt a surge of courage and not even worried that she was facing two elders. She displayed not a single sign of weakness. The young lady thought, since she and her elder brother had not committed any wrongdoings, they were only being bullied intolerably. It wasn't as if only the Main House and Second House were allowed to bully people, and the rest were not allowed to resist, was it?

“Whether you are right or wrong, the Clan Head and Elders will determine so. We will not ask anymore. Right now, unless you want to sacrifice your life, follow the Clan Master's orders: get off the carriage, obediently climb up the mountain then beg for forgiveness from the Clan Elders!” The purple-clad warrior gave a heavy snort.

“May I know, what are the consequences for our crimes? It couldn't be beheading, right?” Yue Yang gave a small smile, since they're going to play, let's play with bigger stakes!

“The Clan Master issued his commands: ‘Lady Xian was unable to raise her children properly, Xing Hall asks for 10 strikes with a rod. On account of the many years of being virtuous, filial daughter-in-law and not causing any trouble, your name can be cleared, and your children are permitted to substitute half of the beatings for you. Yue Bing provoked her elders and assisted her elder brother in assault. On the account of being underage and ignorant, 15 rod beating. Shuang-er is still young and ignorant, so she can be pardoned. As for you, Xiao San, you are the main culprit, you badly injured others, were vicious, threatened the clan's unity, ruined the clan's reputation, and, the most grave of these offenses,

disrespecting the Clan Master's order. It is hard to appease the public without harsher punishment, so in addition to 100 rod beating, you will be confined so that you can reflect on your sins for a year. You will also be paying for the medicine as a compensation. The Fourth House will also have to pay another hundred gold, as compensation for the injured butler and guards, to settle the incident." When the lanky male read all this out loud, his lips curved into a smile.

He felt that Yue Yang would definitely not accept this punishment. If this trash Third Young Master was impetuous and refused to accept, or even tried to break through forcefully, then there would be even more injuries, and it would become an even bigger crime.

When it came to that, even if they were "reasonable" before, it would still become a huge blunder.

Once Yue Bing heard this, her small face became deathly pale.

This, was essentially forcing them to rebel. Putting aside herself and her elder brother, they even wanted to beat her mother? They had really gone too far!

Regarding everything that they were seeing and hearing, Yue Yang felt that it was very normal. This was just a big trap, and they wanted for him to jump into it. If not, it wouldn't matter who was sent to report the news; even sending just a letter was fine. Why was it that they sent the arrogant butler? It seemed that the other side had already calculated everything, no matter whether the Fourth House acted or not, it was still be hard to escape from this

scheme.

For example, the two in front of them, if they really wanted to settle the incident, why did they not send two kind-hearted and amiable elders to mediate?

With such unyielding attitudes and threatening people in such a way, the reason couldn't have been more simple. It was to oppress them!

Once this plan was successful, perhaps Fourth Mother would have no foothold in the Yue Clan. She and himself, along with Yue Bing and Yue Shuang, would probably be evicted, and the Feng Clan's Young Mistress, she would smoothly marry into the Yue Clan, becoming Fourth Uncle's official lady...

However, no matter how well they have tried to prepare themselves, they still could not predict the future!

The current Yue Yang was not the same person as the pitiful guy, and absolutely not that previously weak and powerless San-er. Instead, he was an extremely daring guy from another world.

He possessed the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, the Serpent Loli Xiao Wen Li, the Golden Beast, the Golden King Beast Bloody Queen, Barbaric Cow Shadow, Hui Tai Lang, the future Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, and two Summoning Grimoires. With all this, did he still need to be scared of them? Don't even mention that First Uncle Yue Shan, who was only a temporary Clan Master. Even if the real Clan Master, Da Xia Empire's Marshal

Yue Hai, that old man, wanted to give an order to flog Fourth Mother, Yue Yang would definitely become hostile and rebel. As long as he, her son, was there, no one would be allowed to even think of touching one strand of hair on Fourth Mother's head!

The Soaring Dragon Continent was a world of warriors.

Whoever's fist was bigger, whoever's strength was mightier, that person's word was law!

Yue Yang now wanted to use fists to tell the Yue Clan's clansmen, 'now it's this trash's turn to speak, if you don't like it, come and ask my fist!'

In the carriage, Yue Shuang and the beautiful woman's bodies were trembling slightly. She was used to resigning herself to adversity, but she was not a stupid woman. She had been well aware of all that the Main House and Second House had been doing; but she had kept exercising patience, hoping for the safety of her sons and daughters, waiting for them to grow up quickly. Never once did she think that even though she had made concessions, and exercised patience, there would come a day where she would be forced to a point where she could no longer be patient and accommodating.

"San-er, Bing-er, why don't we just return to White Stone City. The Yue Clan's matters, we will not care about it any more, we also can't take care of it!" The beautiful lady was willing to let herself suffer all kinds of grievances, but was not willing to see her son and daughter take risks for her. Although her children had worked hard, they were still too young!

“Fourth Mother, don’t be scared, with your son here, you can go anywhere below the sky! Unless I’m dead, there will be no one who can touch even one hair on you or my two younger sisters!” Yue Yang shouted resolutely. Immediately after this, he stood up from the carriage, and shouted loudly: “Hui Tai Lang, you lowly dog, what are you still waiting for? Forward! Who dares to block my path, kill without hesitation! I am the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, returning to the Yue Clan Castle, whoever dares to block me, sacrifice your life! This is my last warning, all of you get out of my way, or I will kill all of you!”

Hui Tai Lang, had been hiding behind the carriage all along.

This was because once it appeared, it would cause the two horses to be so afraid that their entire bodies shuddered, and would be unstable when travelling.

Just now when it was hiding and resting behind the carriage with its eyes shut, it heard Yue Yang’s thundering voice, and immediately shot out like an arrow, throwing itself in front of the carriage, giving a long howl towards the sky, and roaring at the Yue Clan guards opposite of it. Both of its heads spat out black magical smoke, its body was alight with flames, which intimidated the Yue Clan guards’ low leveled beasts. They were so opposed to the idea of fighting it, that they were scared witless. The weakest might as well have fainted from fright. Besides the low leveled beasts, even the purple-clad warrior and lanky male’s beasts were so scared, that their entire bodies were trembling, bowing their heads and flattening their ears, not daring to look at the majestic Hui Tai Lang directly.

“You dare to disobey the Clan Master’s order?” The lanky male was inwardly hoping for Yue Yang to act rashly and had looked forward to seeing him rebel. Originally, he was very happy, but once he saw that the summoned beast was a Two-headed Demonic Wolf, and it was even a Level 5 Bronze beast, he got a big shock, and immediately felt remorse as his entire being nervously swallowed its own slavish words.

“Then add on the crime of being a bloody slaughterer of clansmen!” Yue Yang shouted loudly: “Hui Tai Lang, kill all of the trash that are blocking this carriage!”

# Chapter 100 – Put Him In A Coffin

## Immediately

---

Upon hearing Yue Yang's orders, Hui Tai Lang immediately shot out like an arrow and charged straight towards the purple-robed warrior.

The purple-robed warrior had actually hoped that this Yue Clan's Third Young Master was only a useless trash that was pretending to be strong. He thought that this brat would probably not have the guts to go against the whole clan even if he wanted to. He didn't expect that Yue Yang didn't even say anything further and immediately ordered to kill. The purple-robed warrior was extremely worried in his heart. He jumped and soared in the air, avoiding Hui Tai Lang's attack. The beasts that he left behind, that ordinary level four Tusked Wild Boar, had instead met an unfortunate end!

The ordinary level four Tusked Wild Boar didn't dare to fight against a bronze-ranked level 5 Hui Tai Lang, but under its master's orders, it forced itself to charge towards Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Tai Lang didn't bother with the Tusked Wild Boar's attack and tried to end the battle quickly instead. It leapt up agilely and slashed its claws in the air. Multiple claw marks immediately appeared on the Tusked Wild Boar's face; one of its small eyeballs had even been clawed out.

Although the Tusked Wild Boar had thick skin and tough flesh, its eyes were actually the weakest part of its body.

Hui Tai Lang didn't wait for the Tusked Wild Boar to even let out a cry of pain, it immediately slashed his claws once again and clawed out the Tusked Wild Boar's other eye.

"Ah, no!" the purple-robed warrior was extremely distressed as he watched his beast suffer a grave injury. Suddenly, a dark figure flashed. In the air, a fist had suddenly punched him ruthlessly.

"You should be Eighth Mistress' Husband right? At such an age, you should be resting in old folk's home and wait for your death. Why are you even flying in the air!" Immediately after Yue Yang threw his punch, he made a turn in the air and kicked the purple-robed warrior's lower abdomen. As the purple-robed warrior was thrown up into the air from the impact of the kick, Yue Yang lifted both of his hands up high and jumped up to him. He then clapped his hands together and smashed them down towards the purple-robed warrior's chest.

When the purple-robed warrior received Yue Yang's heavy blow, he immediately shot towards the ground like a meteor.

Below, Hui Tai Lang was also matching its tempo with Yue Yang. When the purple-robed warrior almost crashed to the ground, it immediately charged towards him. It used its strength and body, that was even more powerful than a bison's, and knocked heavily against the purple-robed warrior's body.

The purple-robed warrior's body was sent flying from the impact of the collision. He flew right towards the horse carriage.



Meanwhile, Yue Yang turned in the air and had already been waiting right at the spot where the purple-robed warrior was sent flying to, with a long rod ready in his hands. In the next moment, he sent the purple-robed warrior flying through the sky as if he were playing baseball.

“You had actually dared to disrespect your superiors, and even tried to kill your elders?” The tall, lanky man was so scared that his soul almost flew away. He never thought that the Eighth Mistress’ Husband, who was a level 3 [Hero], couldn’t even react when this useless Third Young Master attacked and was defeated instantly. Even the Battle Wolf at his heels had already fled the battle when it saw Hui Tai Lang. He immediately summoned a level 3 Armored Puppet in order to protect himself.

“Eight Mistress’ Husband didn’t care about the relationship between brothers, and repeatedly tried to kill my family’s Fourth Mother and two sisters. He had committed extremely atrocious deeds that would even anger the heaven’s above. I, as the younger generation, could not stand his actions anymore; I had to clean up this filth! Since you have spoken on his behalf, then you must be his accomplice. Hui Tai Lang, what are you waiting for, kill him!” Yue Yang’s unyielding attitude terrified the tall and lanky man to death. He didn’t dare to face Yue Yang as his opponent anymore and immediately ran towards the crowd of people behind him. He intended to seek protection from the Yue Clan’s guards and abandon the battle.

Hui Tai Lang did not foolishly attack the Armored Puppet that the tall, lanky man had left behind. Instead, it chased straight after the tall and lanky guy, refusing to let him off.

It chased after him and followed him into the crowd of people that was immediately thrown into chaos, as if a tiger had entered into a crowd of sheep. Hui Tai Lang's two heads devoured blindly as its claws slashed the air, sweeping everything that was blocking its path away. Pools of blood immediately started to appear underneath the crowd of people.

All of the Yue Clan's guards that could not run away in time were cut down like wheat being harvested immediately, falling down one by one.

Meanwhile, the other low-levelled beasts were so terrified that they started to scatter about. There were even some who felt so cornered that they started to bite people that restricted their escape, even their own masters... Hui Tai Lang realised that these people in front of it could not even withstand its single blow, they were so much weaker than those Sheep-headed Monsters in the Aries Temple. It became even more excited and pleased with itself that it began to give its all in the massacre. It swept its claws violently and swatted the people and beasts who could not run away in time like houseflies, to the side. However, it still kept its target on the tall, lanky man.

The Yue Clan Guards were so frightened that they ran for their lives, dispersing in all directions. How they wished they could grow another pair of legs to run faster.

Even so, there still were some unlucky ones which were swatted away like a fly by Hui Tai Lang. Upon impact, their muscles were torn and bones were broken. Blood flowed continuously as they

gasped with their laboured breaths.

Although they were feared by others and had lived a good life assisting someone that was doing evil deeds, after meeting Yue Yang, this extremely powerful brat who was not afraid of any consequences in killing people, their good life had come to an end!

The tall, lanky man tried to escape frantically. But how could he escape Hui Tai Lang's chase? When he turned his head back in despair, he found that Hui Tai Lang had almost caught up to him. He started crying out in fear, but how could Hui Tai Lang be courteous to him? With a slash of its claws, both the tall, lanky man's clothes and flesh were torn as they scattered in the air. The tall and lanky man cried miserably as he immediately tried to roll away like a gourd. A trail of blood was left on the ground as he rolled. Before he could even cry out and beg for forgiveness, Hui Tai Lang's two heads had bent down on him, and with a 'kacha kacha' sound, it broke two of his legs. The tall and lanky man's cries resounded through the whole of Yue Clan's Village, making others who heard his cry tremble in fear.

If Hui Tai Lang wanted to kill the tall and lanky man, it simply need to open its mouth wide, but it was a clever dog that knew how to seek favour from his master.

It didn't devour him immediately, but instead forcefully dragged the tall and lanky man to Yue Yang. Placing him right in front of Yue Yang, it wagged its tail wildly, giving off the feeling that it was saying 'I'm a qualified thug, aren't I?'

"Spare my life, Third Young Master, please spare me..." The tall

and lanky man cried in fright.

“Cry out louder, I can’t hear you!” Yue Yang’s heart was definitely made of stone. In his eyes, in the Yue Clan, other than Fourth Mother and his family, the other members were all just NPCs. If he was in a good mood, he could probably chat with them a little, but if they tried to seek trouble with him, it would be pointless to listen to their excuses, he would kill them immediately!

A group of people hiding within the Yue Clan Village could no longer sit and hide in secret as they watched the scene and saw what was happening. They immediately charged out, one by one.

The leader of this group of people was a bald, elderly man riding a Tiger Puppet Beast.

Seeing the appearance of this hidden group of people, Yue Yang laughed bitterly in his heart.

Just as expected, this was a plot. They had already predicted that he and his family would retaliate against the Clan Elders. However, they might not have anticipated that the one attacking would be him, the useless Third Young Master. They had miscalculated; those low-levelled, but agile beasts were probably summoned to fight against Yue Bing’s Treant originally. Who would have imagined that he would use Hui Tai Lang instead, which happened to be these beasts’ exact nemesis. With regards to the appearance of this Baldy Elder, Yue Yang was not surprised at all. It could even be said that this was the moment he had been waiting for. Since he had decided to fall out with his Clan, then he should play the game

with higher stakes. He would kill his way to the Yue Clan Castle and use his fists to talk with the people living in the Yue Clan Castle. He thought, 'Right now, my fists are the strongest and my strength is the mightiest. Try to bully us if you want, let's see who will end up bullying whom!'

The Baldy Elder's face darkened as he ordered the elite soldiers behind him to summon their puppet beasts with a wave of his hands.

Ordinary beasts would not have any effect against Hui Tai Lang. Their level difference was too big. Any living beast would immediately run away and flee from the battle with one look from Hui Tai Lang, a bronze-ranked level 5 beast. Only Puppet Beasts, who were not living organisms and did not possess fear, would be a little bit more useful!

"Xiao San, you really have guts. You actually dared to commit murder in the Yue Clan Village? I order you to release Lin Yao, otherwise don't blame me for punishing you severely by law!" The Baldy Elder seemed to be an influential person. He was riding on a bronze-ranked level 4 Tiger Puppet Beast. The two red-clad guards behind him also had bronze-ranked level 3 Tusked Battle Tigers ready.

Behind them, amongst the elite guards who had summoned their Puppet Beasts, although there were not many bronze-ranked beasts, most of them had summoned level 3 or level 4 Battle Wolves Puppets or Battle Leopard Puppets.

Hui Tai Lang was the highest levelled beast in the area, but his

oppressing aura did not have any effect on these puppets who did not possess any intelligence.

The Baldy Elder was fully confident that he could take control of the whole situation.

He didn't know how that useless Third Young Master got his hands on a bronze-ranked level 5 Two-Headed Demon Wolf. However, he felt that although the situation had changed a little, challenging the whole of Yue Clan, one of the Four Great Clans, with just one Two-Headed Demon Wolf was simply a big joke! The Baldy Elder also didn't believe that Yue Yang would dare to oppose him, who was an Elder with a high position in the Clan. This trash, in the past, Yue Yang would immediately tremble with one look from him; he couldn't even speak properly in his presence. With just the power of this brat alone, he still wanted to pick a fight with him?

“Old geezer, what did you say? Say it louder, I couldn't hear ya!” Yue Yang pretended that he couldn't hear properly as he continued to use the wooden rod to forcefully beat the tall, lanky man. Yue Yang used just the right amount of force to break the bones in his body. He ensured that the tall and lanky man wouldn't be beaten to death or beaten unconscious; Yue Yang wanted to let him suffer a pain so painful that he would rather die but wouldn't be able to!

“Xiao San, you actually went as far as going against my orders! A Xian, (Shiro: Fourth Mother), if you don't stop Xiao San immediately, I will take him down by our Clan's Law!” Seeing that Yue Yang had ignored him, the Baldy Elder bellowed towards the

beautiful woman who was sitting right inside the horse carriage, flustered and exasperated.

“Xian believes in the Confucianism teaching, and had vowed to strictly adhere to the [Three Obediences and Four Virtues](#). I will obey my father as a daughter, my husband as a wife, and my son when my husband isn't present. Since my father and my husband are both not here, I would naturally listen to my son. Whatever my son desires, I will follow his will. My son is the honorable Yue Clan's Third Young Master, it is a matter of course if he wants to return to the Yue Clan Castle. However, a vicious servant had blocked his path and prohibited him from returning back. Where would there be logic in that? My son has already grown up to become a successful adult, a strong and capable man with an indomitable spirit. He has his own will and opinions, and I will not interfere with them! Speaking about crimes, why don't you wait until we returned to the Yue Clan Castle and discuss it with the other Elders? Surrounding us like this intending to kill my son, is this what you call the Clan's Laws?” The beautiful woman rejected the Baldy Elder's orders with one breath.

“A Xian, you actually followed your son and become his accomplice in this heinous crime? Well, well. You've really have a lot of guts!” The Baldy Elder was so furious that his face had turned red and green, just like a chameleon.

“Hui Tai Lang, kill this old fart who intends to sexually assault my Fourth Mother!” Yue Yang decided to place the crime of sexually assaulting a daughter-in-law from the Clan on this Baldy Elder first. As for whether or not this crime could be established, it would depend on whether his fists were strong enough to speak for themselves!

“Xiao San, you, you, how dare you slander others!” The Baldy Elder didn’t think that Yue Yang would be this shameless. He bellowed loudly, furious to the point that his lungs almost burst.

“Old fart, are you senile, or braindead? Do you think that a fool like you can call me Xiao San? Address me as Third Young Master! Old dog, have you forgotten how to greet your masters when you see them? Now call me Third Young Master!” If it was the pitiful guy in the past, he would probably be afraid of the Baldy Elder. Unfortunately, Yue Yang was a guy from another world. He completely didn’t recognize who this Baldy Elder was.

Since they had already fallen out with the Clan, Yue Yang didn’t even bother with being courteous any more. With his rampant and aggressive speech, he made the Baldy Elder so angry that he almost burst his veins. The Baldy Elder’s vision turned dark for a moment and he fell down from his Tiger Puppet Beast’s back.

“San-ge,” Yue Bing sweated with worry. It seemed like her brother had gone mad with all the killings. He even called the Torture Chamber Elder, whom he was so afraid of in the past, an ‘old dog’!

“Who’s this idiot?” Yue Yang was curious, could it be that this fellow was a person that he couldn’t afford to offend?

“He, he is the Torture Chamber Elder...” Yue Bing explained worriedly. She had wanted to tell Yue Yang that this was the person that he was most afraid of in the past, but who would know



that Yue Yang had immediately laughed out loud the moment he heard that, “Isn’t he just a Torture Chamber Elder? You gave me a fright. He’s just an insignificant old geezer; he is so old that he already went senile and even has difficulty stabilizing! What are you afraid of? Don’t be afraid, brother will put him in a coffin immediately.”

“Everyone, take this little brute who has no respect for elders and the Clan’s Law down! I, I will uphold our Clan’s Law!” the Baldy Elder was saved by his subordinates, but upon hearing Yue Yang’s words, he immediately vomited a mouthful of blood.

Someone like him who had always been respected and looked up to, it was really the first time in his life suffering through such vicious ridicule and humiliation.

Under such embarrassment and humiliation, he was so angry that he had actually threw up blood.

“I think you are already tired of living. An old dog like you would only waste food and resources living in this world. Elder, let this junior pay his last respects to you! All of you, come! I’ll kill whoever opposing me, it doesn’t matter if I kill one or everyone one of you. That way I could end this battle faster. Hui Tai Lang, send this Elder to his way!” Yue Yang smirked a little. This old fellow must be one of the conspirators against the Fourth Branch. He must have an undeniable relation with regards to the matter of Fourth Uncle marrying a new wife and the cancellation of the pitiful guy’s engagement that made him drown himself in the river. If Yue Yang didn’t kill him, then was he really expected to treat this fellow as an elder?

Beating a bastard slave in the open wasn't awesome enough. If he wanted to beat someone, he should beat them up from the most powerful, the mightiest elder onwards.

A flash of demon-like glint crossed Yue Yang's eyes. "The show is just starting now!"